ZEBULON B. VANCE, GOVERNOR, 1862-1865.

HISTORIES

OF THE

SEVERAL REGIMENTS AND BATTALIONS

FROM

NORTH CAROLINA

IN THE

GREAT WAR 1861-'65.

WRITTEN BY MEMBERS OF THE RESPECTIVE COMMANDS

EDITED BY

WALTER CLARK,

(Lieut.-Colonel Seventieth Regiment N. C. T.)

VOL. III.

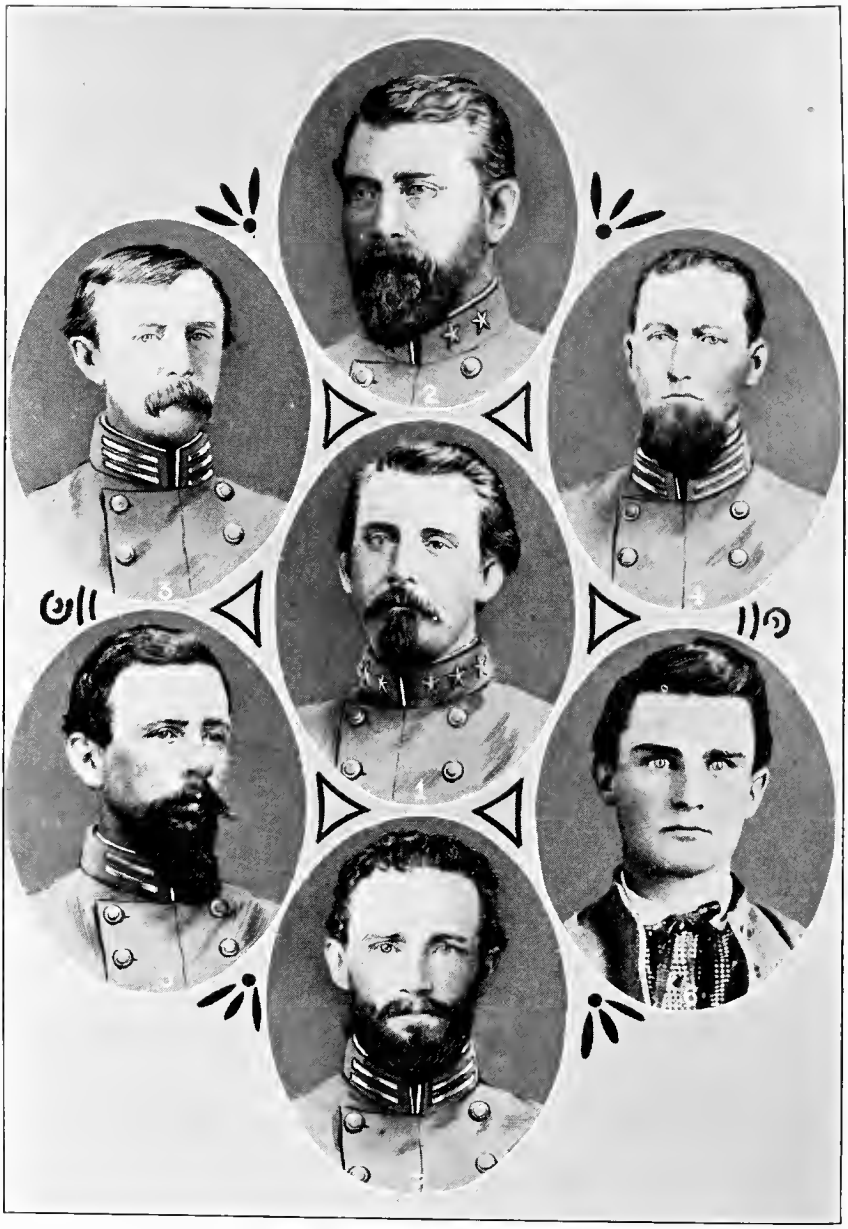
PUBLISHED BY THE STATE.

NASH BROTHERS,
BOOK AND JOB PRINTERS,
GOLDSBORO, N. C.
1901

CONTENTS.

PAGE.

FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT, *by Colonel Thomas S. Kenan*, ... 1
FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (COMPANY A.) *by Colonel Thomas S. Kenan* 19
FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, *by Major Charles M. Stedman*. 21
FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT, *by Sergeant Cyrus B. Watson*.. 35
FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant J. M. Waddill* 63
FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, *by Captain John H. Thorp*..... 83
FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant J. Rowan Rogers* 103
FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, *by Captain W. H. H. Lawhon*..... 113
FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant Thomas R. Roulhac*..... 125
FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT. *by Captain B. F. Dixon*. 151
FIFTIETH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant J. C. Ellington*..... 161
FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant A. A. McKethan* 205
FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT, *by Adjutant John H. Robinson*..... 223
FIFTY THIRD REGIMENT. *by Colonel James T. Morehead*.. 255
FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant J. Marshall Williams*. 267
FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT, *by Adjutant Charles M. Cooke* 287
FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, *by Captain Robert D. Graham* 313
FIFTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, *by Colonel Hamilton C. Jones*..... 405
FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, *by Major G. W. F. Harper*. 431
FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, *by Captain Isaac H. Bailey*..... 447
FIFTY-NINTH REGIMENT, (FOURTH CAV.,) *by Lieutenant W. P. Shaw*.. 455
SIXTIETH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Ray*..... 473
SIXTIETH REGIMENT, *by Captain Thomas W. Patton*.. 499
SIXTY FIRST REGIMENT, *by Captain N. A. Ramsey*. 503
SIXTY-SECOND REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant-Colonel B. G. McDowell* 515
SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (FIFTH CAV.), *by Major John M. Galloway*.. 529
SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (FIFTH CAV.), *by Private Paul B. Means*... 545
SIXTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, *by Captain B T. Morris* 659
SIXTY-FIFTH REGIMENT. (SIXTH CAV.), *by Captain M. V. Moore*... 673
SIXTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, *by Adjutant George M. Rose* 685
SIXTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant-Colonel Rufus W. Wharton* 703
SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, *by Corporal J. W. Evans* 713
SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, *by Sergeant W T. Caho* 725
SIXTY-NINTH REGIMENT, *by Lieutenant-Colonel W. W. Stringfield*..... 729



FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. Thos. S. Kenan, Colonel.
2. W. Gaston Lewis, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. James G. Kenan, Captain, Co. A.
4. Ruffin Barnes, Captain, Co. C.
5. Drury Lacy, Adjutant.
6. Wm. R. Kenan, 2d Lieut. and Adjutant.
7. R. H. Battle, 1st Lieut., Co. I.

FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT

By COLONEL THOMAS S. KENAN.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, about three miles west of Raleigh, in March, 1862, by electing Junius Daniel, Colonel; Thomas S. Kenan (Captain Company A, formerly Captain Company C, Second North Carolina Volunteers), Lieutenant-Colonel; and Walter J. Boggan (Captain Company H), Major, commissions bearing date 25 March, 1862. Daniel was at the time Colonel of the Fourteenth Regiment, and soon thereafter was also chosen Colonel of the Forty-fifth, and accepted. Upon his reporting for duty he was placed in command of a brigade, of which the Forty-third afterwards formed a part. Daniel was subsequently promoted to Brigadier-General. About 20 April, Kenan was notified that he had been chosen Colonel of the Thirty-eighth upon its reorganization at Goldsboro, the information being officially conveyed by the hands of Lieutenant D. M. Pearsall, of the Thirty-eighth; but he remained with the Forty-third and was elected its Colonel a few days thereafter, and William Gaston Lewis (Major of the Thirty-third) was elected Lieutenant-Colonel, commissions bearing date 24 April, 1862.

The staff and company officers, and their successors by promotion from time to time in the order named, as appears from the "Roster of North Carolina Troops," pp. 196-225, and gathered from memoranda of participants in the operations of the regiment, were:

ADJUTANTS—Drury Lacy, W R. Kenan.

SURGEONS—Bedford Brown, Jr., William T. Brewer, Joel B. Lewis.

QUARTERMASTERS—John W Hinson, Joseph B. Stafford.

COMMISSARY—W B. Williams.

CHAPLAINS—Joseph W Murphy, Eugene W Thompson.

SERGEANT-MAJORS—W T. Smith, Hezekiah Brown, Thos. H. Williams, Robert T. Burwell, W R. Kenan.

CAPTAINS.

COMPANY A—*From Duplin*—James G. Kenan (succeeded T. S. Kenan); number of enlisted men, 117 The company entered the service in April, 1861, and was Company C, Second North Carolina Volunteers (Colonel Sol. Williams), stationed near Norfolk. Upon the expiration of its six-months term of service it was reorganized and assigned to the Forty-third. Captain Kenan, of this company, was wounded and captured at Gettysburg, and was a prisoner when the war ended, and many of the officers, hereinafter named, met a similar fate, or were killed or disabled there or in subsequent engagements, but a correct list of casualties cannot now be had—and they were so numerous that during the latter part of the war the regiment was commanded by Captains, and companies by Lieutenants, Sergeants and Corporals.

COMPANY B—*From Mecklenburg*—Robert P Waring, William E. Stitt. Enlisted men, 73.

COMPANY C—*From Wilson*—James S. Woodard, Ruffin Barnes. Enlisted men, 102.

COMPANY D—*From Halifax*—Cary Whitaker. Enlisted men, 93.

COMPANY E—*From Edgecombe*—John A. Vines, Jas. R. Thigpen, Wiley J. Cobb. Enlisted men, 96.

COMPANY F—*From Halifax*—William R. Williams, Wm. C. Ousby, Henry A. Macon. Enlisted men, 101.

COMPANY G—*From Warren*—Wm. A. Dowtin, Levi P Coleman, Alfred W Bridgers. Enlisted men, 110.

COMPANY H—*From Anson*—John H. Coppedge (succeeded W J Boggan), Hampton Beverly. Enlisted men, 112.

COMPANY I—*From Anson*—Robert T. Hall, John Ballard. Enlisted men, 139.

COMPANY K—*From Anson*—James Boggan, Caswell H. Sturdivant. Enlisted men, 120.

FIRST LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A, James G. Kenan, Robert B. Carr.

COMPANY B, Henry Ringstaff, William E. Stitt.

COMPANY C, Henry King, Ruffin Barnes, L. D. Killett.

COMPANY D, Thomas W Baker, John S. Whitaker.

COMPANY E, James R. Thigpen, Wiley J. Cobb, Charles Vines.

COMPANY F, William C. Ousby Henry A. Macon, J. H. Morris.

COMPANY G, Levi P Coleman, Alfred W Bridgers.

COMPANY H, John H. Coppedge, Hampton Beverly, Benjamin F Moore.

COMPANY I, Richard H. Battle, Jr., John H. Threadgill.

COMPANY K, Caswell H. Sturdivant, Henry E. Shepherd.

SECOND LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A, Robert B. Carr, John W Hinson, Thomas J. Bostic, Stephen D. Farrior.

COMPANY B, William E. Stitt, Julius Alexander, Robert T. Burwell.

COMPANY C, William T. Brewer, Ruffin Barnes, L. D. Killett, Bennett Barnes, Hezekiah Brown.

COMPANY D, John S. Whitaker, William Beavans, George W Wills.

COMPANY E, Wiley J Cobb, Van B. Sharpe, John H. Leigh, Charles Vines, Willis R. Dupree, Thomas H. Williams.

COMPANY F, Henry A. Macon, William R. Bond, J. H. Morris, W L. M. Perkins, Jesse A. Macon.

COMPANY G, William B. Williams, Alexander L. Steed, John B. Powell, Luther R. Crocker.

COMPANY H, Hampton Beverly, Benjamin F. Moore, W W Boggan, Henry C. Beaman, Peter B. Lilly.

COMPANY I, John H. Threadgill, John Ballard, Stephen W Ellerbee, Leonidas L. Polk.

COMPANY K, John A. Boggan, Stephen Huntley, Francis E. Flake.

The regiment was ordered to Wilmington and Fort Johnson at Smithville, on the Cape Fear river, where it remained about a month in General French's command, and thence to Virginia. Daniel's Brigade, composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth, Fiftieth and Fifty-third Regiments, was placed in the command of Major-General Holmes, and on the last of the seven days' operations around Richmond was ordered to occupy the road near the James river, where it was subjected to a fierce shelling from the gunboats on the right and the batteries on Malvern Hill in front, but was not in the regular engagement; was afterwards ordered to Drewry's Bluff, and constituted part of the forces under Major-General G. W Smith for the protection of Richmond and vicinity during the advance of the army under General Lee into Maryland in September, 1862; and about the same time a demonstration was made against Suffolk, Va., by troops under General French (this regiment being a portion of them), probably for the purpose of preventing the Federals from sending reinforcements from that territory to oppose the movement of the Confederates in Maryland. They returned in about ten days, and the regiment resumed its position at Drewry's Bluff, where it was engaged in drilling and putting up breastworks under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis, who, being a civil engineer by profession, was ordered by the brigade commander to supervise their construction. Shortly after quarters were prepared for the winter, the brigade was ordered to Goldsboro, in December, 1862, to reinforce the Confederates in opposing the advance of the Union troops from New Bern under General Foster; but on the day before its arrival they succeeded in burning the railroad bridge over the Neuse river, and, after a sharp engagement with the Confederates on the south side of the river, retreated to their base of operations at New Bern. The bridge was immediately rebuilt on trestles by a detail of men from the brigade, Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis superintending the work.

During the spring of 1863 it was stationed at Kinston and detachments sent out to prevent the approach of the enemy into the interior. Major-General D. H. Hill having assumed

command of the department, directed demonstrations to be made in aid of military operations at other points and to compel the enemy to abandon their outposts. In the affair at Deep Gully, a small creek, upon the eastern bank of which the enemy were entrenched, the Forty-third was ordered to attack, and after a few rounds the enemy abandoned the works and retreated. The brigade was then ordered to Washington, N. C., and was there subjected to the artillery fire of the Union forces occupying that place, but, with the exception of some skirmishing, no engagement was brought on. It then returned to its former quarters at Kinston, and, later on, went to Fredericksburg, Va., and was assigned to Rodes' Division of the Second Corps (Ewell's), the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fifty-third Regiments and the Second North Carolina Battalion then constituting the brigade—the Fiftieth Regiment having been assigned to another brigade. The Army of Northern Virginia was there reviewed by General Lee and ordered to commence the memorable Pennsylvania campaign in June, 1863.

ON THE MARCH.

Upon arriving at Brandy Station the brigade was placed in line of battle to meet any attempted advance of Union infantry to support its cavalry, but was not engaged—the main fighting in that terrific battle (9 June) being between the cavalry of the opposing armies. At Berryville the enemy were driven by the cavalry, supported by this brigade, and camp equipage, etc., captured. It then marched by way of Martinsburg, Williamsport, Hagerstown and Chambersburg to Carlisle, Pa., and occupied the barracks at that place, from which it was ordered to Gettysburg.

IN THE THREE DAYS' FIGHT.

Upon arriving at Gettysburg, on Wednesday, 1 July, 1863, about 1 o'clock p. m., a line of battle was formed near Forney's house, northwest of the town and to the left of Pender's Division of Hill's Corps, which had repulsed the enemy in the forenoon, and the troops advanced to the attack. The

fight was continued till late in the afternoon and the enemy driven back, the brigade being handled with consummate skill by the brave General Daniel. Seminary Ridge was gained and occupied—the right of the Forty-third resting on the railroad cut. The fight was terrific and the loss heavy on both sides. On Thursday morning, 2 July, the regiments were assigned to various positions upon the line. The Forty-third supported a battery, during the artillery duel which continued nearly the whole day, at a point on the Ridge just north of the Seminary building, and the shot and shell from the guns of the enemy on Cemetery Heights caused serious loss. It was during this cannonade that General Lee and staff passed to the front along the road near by, and the troops saluted him by raising their hats in silence, and were encouraged by his presence. From this point a movement was commenced at night in line of battle, in the direction of the enemy's works, the skirmishers firing upon the Confederates and retreating, but inflicting no loss. The moon was shining brightly, and it seemed that a night attack upon Cemetery Heights was contemplated; but when the brigade crossed the valley in front, orders were given to march by the left flank near the southern and eastern limits of the town, and about daybreak on Friday, 3 July, it reported to Major-General Johnson, who commanded the Division of Ewell's Corps on the extreme left of the Confederate line. Daniel's Brigade, with other troops, had been ordered to reinforce Johnson's position on Culp's Hill. It marched nearly all night, and formed a line of battle near Benner's House, crossed Rock Creek, and, through the undergrowth, among large boulders and up the heavily timbered hill, the attack upon the enemy was made, the line of works (formed by felled trees) taken, but the charge upon the main line was repulsed. Colonel Kenan, of the Forty-third, was wounded in leading this charge, and taken from the field (captured on the retreat and imprisoned until the close of the war), and the command devolved on Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis.

The forces under Johnson held their positions until night, when they were withdrawn—the Forty-third occupying its first position on Seminary Ridge until the army moved to

Hagerstown. On the retreat it was assigned the rear position, and in consequence was repeatedly engaged with the Union advance. After remaining at Hagerstown a few days the Confederates crossed the swollen Potomac (carrying their guns and their ammunition on their heads, the water being up to their armpits), and fell back to the village of Darksville. Later, they were in front of the Federal army, on the south bank of the Rapidan river, guarding the fords, and engaged the enemy at Mine Run when an advance towards Richmond was made. After the retreat of the Federals to the north of the Rapidan, and active operations having comparatively ceased, winter quarters were built, but they were not long occupied by this regiment, for it was detached for duty with General Hoke's Brigade in the winter campaign in 1863-'64 in Eastern North Carolina, Major-General Pickett being in command of all the forces.

In this campaign Hoke's Brigade consisted of the Sixth, Twenty-first, Fifty-fourth and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments and the First North Carolina Battalion, and attached to it were the Forty-third North Carolina and Twenty-first Georgia. In approaching New Bern this regiment arrived at Bachelor's creek, about seven miles from the city, and made a night attack upon the enemy's works, but, discovering that the flooring of a bridge across the creek, about seventy-five feet long, had been removed Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis informed General Hoke that if he would send him plank from the pontoon train he would renew the attack as soon as practicable. Hoke complied, and the attack was made at daylight the next day—one of the companies laying the plank, under fire, and the others crossing over, also under fire, driving the enemy and causing a retreat to New Bern.

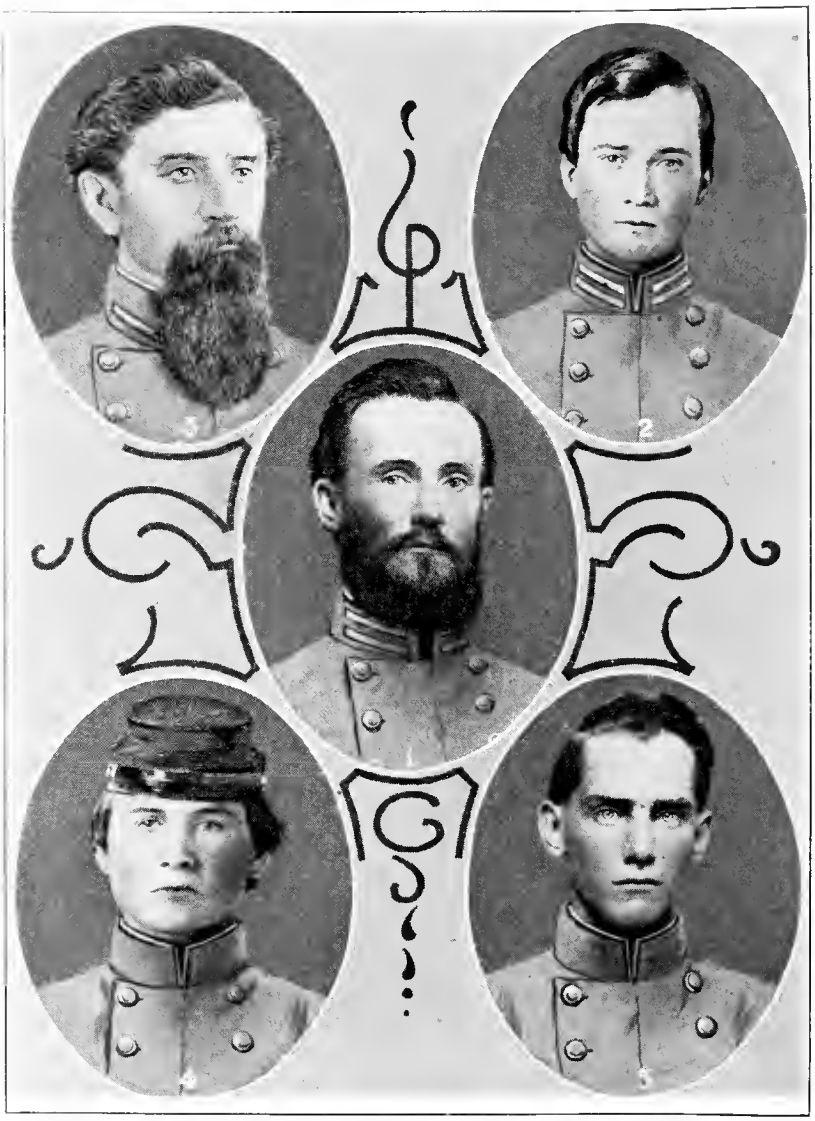
There were also some Union troops at Clark's brickyard, on the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad, nine miles above the city, and information was received that a train of cars had been sent from New Bern to bring them in. The regiment was ordered to capture this train, without wrecking it, if possible, and accordingly a three-mile march at quick and double-quick time was made to intercept it. When the regiment got within about twenty or thirty yards of the track

the train was passing at its highest speed, and shots were exchanged between the opposing parties. If success had attended this movement, the purpose of General Hoke was to place his troops on the train, run into the town and surprise the garrison. Pickett's expedition, however, was not successful, and the troops fell back to Kinston, remaining there a few weeks, and then marched on Plymouth.

THE BATTLE OF PLYMOUTH.

April 18, 19 and 20, 1864: General Hoke, who succeeded to the command of all the forces in this department, directed the campaign, and was also authorized by the Navy Department to secure the co-operation of the Confederate ram, *Albemarle,* then near Hamilton on the Roanoke river, in an unfinished state and in charge of Commander Cooke. Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia, commanded Hoke's Brigade. He was killed in a charge at night upon a fort about half a mile in advance of the enemy's line of works at Plymouth, and Lewis, of the Forty-third, assumed command and was subsequently promoted to Brigadier-General. The fort was taken and the *Albemarle* simultaneously steamed down the river and engaged the enemy, sinking one of their gunboats and driving their flotilla a considerable distance below Plymouth, thus relieving the land forces in future movements of the apprehended attack from them. During the night the different commands were placed in position for the general assault upon the works around the town, and this necessitated the moving of the troops by circuitous routes to avoid being discovered by the enemy, and consumed all of the 19th. Accordingly, on the morning of the 20th General Matt. Ransom attacked on the east side of the town, Lewis on the west and Hoke, with the other brigades, moved upon the enemy's center. The town was taken in a short while, the garrison and an immense amount of supplies being captured. The brilliancy and dash of this movement, which was planned and faithfully executed according to the directions of the commanding officer, received recognition in the following:

Resolved by the Congress of the Confederate States of



FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. R. B. Carr, 1st Lieut., Co. A.
2. Robt. Turnbull Burwell, 1st Lieut., Co. B.
3. L. L. Polk, 2d Lieut., Co. I.
4. B. F. Hall, Sergeant, Co. A.
5. Robert J. Southerland, Sergeant, Co. A.

America, That the thanks of Congress and the country are due and are tendered to Major-General Robert F. Hoke and Commander James W Cooke, and the officers and men under their command, for the brilliant victory over the enemy at Plymouth, N. C

Joint resolution, approved 17 May, 1864. *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies*, Vol. 60, page, 305.

Washington, N C., was next threatened, and after an artillery duel during the day the enemy evacuated it. The forces then moved upon New Bern again. The Forty-third engaged the enemy about nine miles from the city during the afternoon of 2 May, and again on the morning of the next day. The enemy were forced back in a running fight within sight of the town. At this juncture, when the capture of the town seemed probable, orders were received to march immediately back to Kinston and thence to Petersburg, which point General Butler, of the Union army, was threatening with a large force. The distance covered by the regiment on this day's march, including the running fight towards New Bern and the return to Kinston, was thirty-seven miles in about twelve hours. Of the reinforcements ordered to Petersburg the Forty-third was the first regiment to arrive, and, there being but few other troops on the ground, orders were given to occupy the entrenchments in front of the city by deploying at twenty paces, and, in order to impress the enemy with the belief that they were confronted by a large force, instructions were given to make as much noise as possible and fire off guns at frequent intervals. From this time till 15 May the regiment was moved to different portions of the line, from the south of Petersburg to the north of Richmond, a distance of about thirty miles, seldom remaining more than one day at any point. These frequent movements were deemed necessary on account of the small force available to meet real or supposed movements of the Union army. In the meantime reinforcements were brought in, and General Beauregard commanded the Confederate forces in the engagement which took place the next day.

THE BATTLE OF DREWRY'S BLUFF, 16 MAY, 1864.

The attack was made by the Confederates about daylight under cover of a dense fog. When within about forty paces of the enemy's main line the Forty-third encountered (as did also the other troops of the division) a line of telegraph wires fastened to stumps about twelve inches above the ground, which caused most of the men to trip and fall. This checked the forward movement, but from this position a heavy fire was poured into the enemy until they were dislodged. Finding their ammunition nearly exhausted, as the enemy commenced retreating the regiment repaired to the rear to replenish it. This being done, it returned to the line near the right of General Robert Ransom's Division, to which it was then temporarily attached, and occupied the right of the brigade in a charge upon the works when a battery of artillery was captured, the enemy driven across the turnpike and a position in rear of the Union forces secured. The position of the regiment was now near the turnpike, which constituted the dividing line of the divisions of Ransom and Hoke during most of the engagement. Hoke, being appointed Major-General after the battle of Plymouth, was assigned to the command of another division after his arrival at Drewry's Bluff. About this time a council of war was held on the turnpike, which was participated in by a distinguished group, consisting of President Davis, Generals Beauregard, Ransom and Hoke, with their respective staff officers. Very soon after this incident, the enemy having given way at all points of the line, were driven into Bermuda Hundreds, the angle between the James and Appomattox rivers, under cover of their gunboats, this regiment taking part in the pursuit.

After remaining in line of battle in front of General Butler's troops for about two days, orders were issued for the regiment to rejoin its old brigade in the Army of Northern Virginia. In obedience thereto it marched to Drewry's Bluff and was transported by boat to Richmond, thence by rail to Milford Station on the Richmond and Fredericksburg Railroad, reaching there about noon on 21 May, 1864.

The march was at once resumed, and the regiment bivouacked that night near Spottsylvania Court House. The army having been withdrawn from its position in front on the night of the 21st to meet a movement of the enemy, who had retired towards the North Anna, the regiment was ordered to follow on the morning of the 22d. Late in the afternoon, information was received from General Ewell that the regiment was then in the rear and in danger of being captured. To avoid this risk an all-night march was made, the old brigade joined and the enemy again confronted near Hanover Junction on the morning of the 23d. It was then commanded by General Bryan Grimes, Daniel having been killed at Spottsylvania on 12 May, and General Lewis remained in charge of Hoke's old Brigade. In this march more than 60 miles were traversed, and the troops were hungry and nearly exhausted. But not long after arriving upon the ground a line of battle was formed northwest of the Junction and earthworks thrown up. After dark this line was abandoned and the regiment withdrawn about a mile to the rear, and occupied the bank of a railroad cut, leaving the brigade sharpshooters in possession of the first line. Next day (24 May), about noon, the enemy in force attacked the sharpshooters and drove them from their position. Companies A and F, numbering about seventy men, under command of Lieutenants Bostic, Farrior and Morris, were detailed and sent to the front with instructions to retake the works. On reaching the works they found that both sides of them were occupied by a regiment of Union troops, supported by a brigade at a short distance to the rear. On the sudden appearance of this small force from the thick woods which covered their approach, they were ordered by the enemy to surrender. To this they responded with a quick and destructive fire at close range, and, after a hand-to-hand fight of several minutes, forced them to the opposite side of the breastworks, and the assault was fiercely continued about two hours. Encouraged by the forward movement of the brigade and the firing of a field battery constituting their support, the Union forces attempted several times to retake the position, but were as often repulsed. A heavy rain having set in, the firing ceased and the enemy

withdrew under cover of the rain and approaching darkness. After the rain ceased a survey of the field was made, showing a larger number of dead and wounded of the enemy than the aggregate number of the two companies engaged in the fight. On receiving a detailed report of the affair and its results, General Grimes was heard to express himself to the effect that all things considered, he believed this to be one of the great fights of the war. These two companies rejoined the regiment after dark, and in a few hours the entire army retired towards Richmond to confront the Union army, then moving in the same direction.

Nothing of special note occurred, except frequent skirmishing, till the battle of Bethesda Church, which was fought on the afternoon of 30 May. Further skirmishing took place on 31 May and 1 June, and the battle of Gaines' Mill was fought 2 June, and Cold Harbor 3 June, in all of which this regiment bore its part.

After the battle of Cold Harbor, the Second Corps, then commanded by General Early, was ordered into camp near Gaines' Mill and held in reserve till 13 June. The sharpshooters of Rodes' Division had been previously organized into a separate corps under command of Captain W E. Stitt (Company B), and numbered about one thousand men, made up of details from the different regiments, the Forty-third contributing about thirty-five from the right wing under command of Lieutenant Perkins (Company F), and thirty-five from the left wing under command of Sergeant-Major Kenan, who had been appointed by the brigade commander, 10 June, a Junior-Second Lieutenant. On 13 June the Second Corps was ordered to Lynchburg, Va., arriving there on the 18th, and in the afternoon the sharpshooters engaged those of the Union forces. The withdrawal of the enemy during the night was promptly discovered, and the sharpshooters marching at the head of the division in pursuit overtook their rear guard at Liberty, when another skirmish ensued, and again at Buford's Gap on the afternoon of the 20th. The pursuit was continued on the 21st through Salem, Va., where another skirmish took place. On the 22d the troops rested at Salem, and resumed the march on the 23d in

the direction of the Potomac river, reaching Staunton early on the morning of the 27th; remained there till the next morning, and then marched to Harper's Ferry, which was reached on the morning of 4 July. Here the Corps of Division sharpshooters captured Bolivar Heights about 10 a. m., and about 8 p. m. drove the enemy from Harper's Ferry across the river to Maryland Heights. On the 5th the Forty-third occupied Harper's Ferry, relieving the sharpshooters. Skirmishing continued most of the day. On the 6th the corps crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown and engaged the enemy in the rear of Maryland Heights, the battle continuing nearly all day. On the 7th they moved through Crampton's Gap towards Frederick, and after frequent skirmishing reached Frederick on the morning of the 9th, where General Lew Wallace's Division of Union troops was strongly posted on the eastern bank of the Monocacy river. After a stubborn fight they were driven from the field, with the loss of a large number of killed, wounded and prisoners. On the 10th the Confederates moved in the direction of Washington City, and, after a hard march in extremely hot weather and over a dusty road, arrived in front of Fort Stevens about noon of the 11th, within sight of the dome of the Federal Capitol. The sharpshooters advanced within 200 yards of the fort, but retired to a position about 300 yards to the rear, where they halted and dug rifle-pits. In the afternoon the enemy threw forward a heavy line of skirmishers, who attacked vigorously, but were repulsed with some loss. Here, our sharpshooters remained, subjected to a severe shelling from the forts till the afternoon of the 12th, when the enemy, reinforced by two corps from the Army of the Potomac, advanced and drove them from their improvised works. Rodes' Division then moved forward and retook the lost ground. The casualties on both sides were considerable. On account of the arrival of the above-mentioned reinforcements, a further advance of Early's troops was not made, and they were withdrawn on the night of the 12th, and recrossed the Potomac on the 14th near Leesburg, Va. The movement into Maryland was probably made to create a diversion in favor of operations around Richmond.

Thus, within thirty days the army of which the Forty-third composed a part had marched about five hundred miles and taken part in not less than twelve battles and skirmishes, in most of which the enemy were deafeated with severe losses.

The troops then moved towards the Valley of Virginia, and crossed the Blue Ridge at Snicker's Gap on 17 July, the Union troops slowly following and an additional force threatening the flank of the Confederate right. On the afternoon of that day Rodes' Division attacked the enemy at Snicker's Ford, driving them into the Shenandoah river, where the loss in killed and drowned was heavy. On the 19th the division moved towards Strasburg, and on the afternoon of the 20th went to the support of General Ramseur, who was resisting an attack near Winchester. But the engagement having ceased before the arrival of the division, it retired to Fisher's Hill and there remained till the morning of the 24th, when an attack was made upon the enemy at Kernstown and they were driven across the Potomac and followed into Maryland. And then Rodes' Division, sometimes in detachments and at others in a body, marched and countermarched between the Potomac river and Fisher's Hill until September 22d. During this time the Forty-third Regiment was engaged in almost daily skirmishing, and took part in the battles of Winchester, 17 August; Charlestown, 21 August; Smithfield, 29 August; Bunker's Hill, 3 September; Winchester (No. 2), 19 September, and Fisher's Hill, 22 September.

Having been defeated in the last engagement at Fisher's Hill, the Confederates retreated up the valley, followed by the enemy to Waynesboro, where reinforcements were received, and then, on 1 October, returned down the valley, reaching Fisher's Hill on 13 October. The Forty-third composed part of the body of troops which marched around the left and rear of the enemy's camp at Cedar Creek on the night of 18 October, preparatory to the general attack made on the morning of the 19th, resulting in their defeat in the early part of the day. Reinforcements having been received by the enemy in the afternoon, the tide of battle was turned and the Confederates were driven up the valley to New Mar-

ket, where they remained in camp without further incident till about 22 November, when a considerable body of Union cavalry under the command of General Sheridan was attacked and routed by Rodes' Division between New Market and Mount Jackson. This ended the noted Valley campaign of 1864.

About a week before Christmas, the Forty-third, with the other troops composing the old Second Corps of the Army of Northern Virginia, returned to Petersburg and went into winter quarters on Swift creek, three miles north of the city. The next movement was to Southerland's Depot, on the right wing of the army, south of Petersburg, on 15 February, 1865. Here the regiment remained with the other troops of the division till about the middle of March, when they were ordered into the trenches in front of Petersburg to relieve General Bushrod Johnson's Division, which was to occupy another position.

The increasing disproportion in the numbers of the opposing armies made it necessary for Rodes' Division, now composed of only about 2,200 men, to cover a distance of about three and a half miles in the trenches, and to do this it required one-third of the men on picket duty in front of the trenches and one-third on duty in the trenches, where the mud was frequently more than shoe-deep and sometimes knee-deep, while the remaining third caught a broken rest on their arms. No general engagement took place till 25 March, but at night there was almost constant firing between the pickets. At most points the main lines of the two armies were within easy rifle-range, and at some points less than one hundred yards apart. The monotony of the constant cracking of small arms was frequently relieved by the firing of mortars and the dropping of shells in the trenches, calling for constant watchfulness on the part of those who were in the trenches, and disturbing the broken rest of the small remnant who were off duty. On the night of 24 March, General Gordon's Corps was massed opposite Hare's Hill with a view to making an attack at that point, where the lines were within one hundred yards of each other. Entrance into the enemy's works was effected just before daylight on the morning of the

25th by the Division Corps of sharpshooters, who, with unloaded muskets, surprised and captured the enemy's pickets and entered their main lines. The Forty-third Regiment, with the other troops of the division immediately following, occupied the enemy's works for some distance on either side of Hare's Hill, and stubbornly held them, against great odds, for about five hours. During most of this time the enemy poured a deadly fire into the Confederates from several batteries on elevated positions, and, having massed large bodies of infantry at this point, forced the withdrawal of the Confederates with considerable loss in killed, wounded and prisoners. After this fruitless effort to dislodge the enemy the Forty-third resumed its position in the trenches and remained until Saturday, 1 April. About 11 o'clock on the night of this date the enemy opened a furious cannonading all along the line. Under cover of this firing they attacked the Confederates in heavy force at several points, effecting an entrance beyond the limits of the division on the right. At daylight on Sunday morning, the 2d, they made a breach in the line held by a brigade to the left center of the division, and occupied the Confederate works for some distance on either side of Fort Mahone, which stood on an elevation about fifty yards in front of the main line. The division, massing in this direction, attacked the enemy at close quarters, driving them from traverse to traverse, sometimes in a hand-to-hand fight, till the lost works were retaken up to a point opposite Fort Mahone, which was still occupied by the enemy. Its commanding position making its recapture of importance in the further movements of the Confederates, two details of about twelve men each, in charge of a Sergeant—one from the Forty-third (now commanded by Captain Cobb, Captain Whitaker having been mortally wounded just previously), and the other from the Forty-fifth Regiment of the brigade—were ordered, about noon, to enter the fort by the covered way (a large ditch) leading from the main line into the fort. This was promptly done, and the enemy occupying the fort—more than one hundred in number—perhaps in ignorance of the small force of Confederates, and surprised at the boldness of the movement, surrendered

and were sent to the rear as prisoners. From this position the little squad of about twenty-five men poured a deadly fire into the left flank and rear of the enemy occupying the Confederate line beyond Fort Mahone, while the main body of the division pressed them in front till they were dislodged and retreated to their own lines, thus giving up the entire works taken from the division early in the morning. In this affair Sergeant B. F Hall commanded the squad from the Forty-third. A brigade of Zouaves, however, promptly moved forward, meeting the retreating force, and recaptured both the Confederate line and Fort Mahone, leaving Rodes' Division still in possession of that portion of the line retaken from the enemy in the early part of the day, and which was held until after dark, when the lines in front of Richmond and Petersburg were abandoned. The army then commenced its retreat. Marching day and night, with only short intervals of rest, Amelia Court House was reached about 4 April, where the well-nigh exhausted troops were permitted to rest several hours. The march was resumed that night, and, being closely pursued by the enemy, General Grimes (then Major-General commanding the division to which the Forty-third belonged) was assigned to the position of rear guard, Colonel D. G. Cowand, of the Thirty-second, being in command of Daniel's Brigade. The enemy's cavalry, emboldened by success, frequently rode recklessly into the Confederate lines, making it necessary to deploy alternately as a line of battle across the road one brigade after another, while the others continued the march. This running fight culminated in a general engagement on the afternoon of the 6th at Sailor's creek, near Farmville, Va., where the Confederates, overwhelmed by superior numbers, retreated beyond the long bridge at Farmville.

On the morning of the 7th, beyond Farmville, the division charged the enemy and recaptured a battery of artillery which had previously fallen into their hands. Continuing the march from this point, there was no further fighting on this or the following day, the Union army having taken par-

allel roads for the purpose of intercepting the Confederates in their march towards Lynchburg.

The vicinity of Appomattox Court House was reached on the evening of Saturday, the 8th, and the exhausted troops bivouacked until midnight, when the division was ordered from the position of rear guard to the front, with a view of opening the road towards Lynchburg, now occupied by Union troops in large force. About sunrise on Sunday morning, the 9th of April, 1865, the division engaged a large body of the enemy's cavalry, supported by infantry, and drove them more than a mile, capturing a battery of artillery and several prisoners. While engaged in this pursuit they were ordered back to a valley in which the larger part of the Confederates was now massed, and on arriving there received the sad intelligence that the Army of Northern Virginia had surrendered.

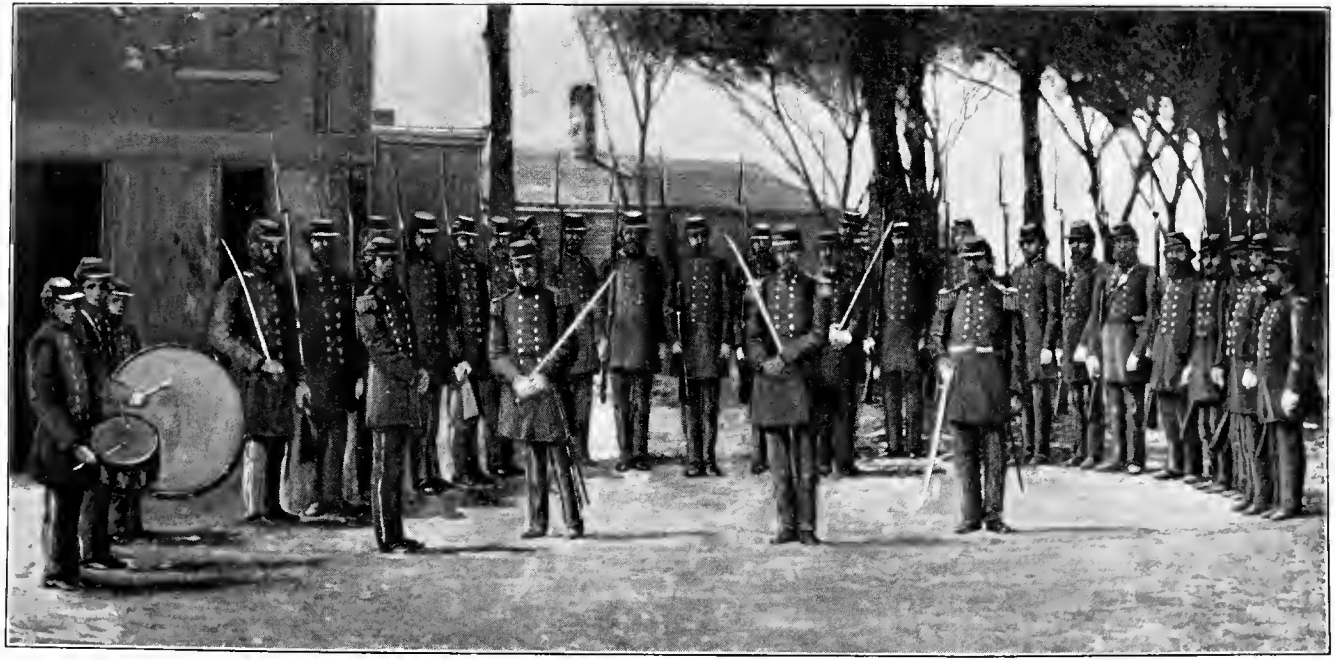
Manifesting under defeat the same spirit of fidelity and endurance which had characterized them in success, the remnant of about 120 men and officers composing this regiment accepted the fate of war and awaited the final arrangements for capitulation; and on the morning of 12 April, after laying down their arms, dispersed on foot, many in tattered garments and without shoes, and thus made their way to their distant and, in many instances, desolated homes.

And "the picture of the private soldier as he stood in the iron hail, loading and firing his rifle, the bright eye glistening with excitement, and with powder-stained face, rent jacket, torn slouch hat and trousers, blanket in shreds, and the prints of his shoeless feet in the dust of the battle, should be framed in the hearts of all who love true courage wherever found."

The preparation of this sketch, giving the organization and outlining the movements of the Forty-third Regiment, is largely due to the assistance rendered to me by W G. Lewis, B. F Hall, W R. Kenan, John B. Powell, W E. Stitt, W R. Burwell, Thomas P Devereux, John J Dabbs and S. H. Threadgill, members of the regiment, and participants in its movements. The material employed was gathered from memoranda and such official documents as were accessible.

THOS. S. KENAN.

RALEIGH, N. C.,
9 April, 1895.



DUPLIN RIFLES.

Organized in Kenansville, N. C., 1859.

ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY THIRD REGIMENT

COMPANY A.

By COLONEL THOMAS S. KENAN.

The "Duplin Rifles" (organized at Kenansville in 1859) entered the army in April, 1861, as volunteers, under Thomas S. Kenan, Captain; Thomas S. Watson, First Lieutenant; William A. Allen and John W Hinson, Second Lieutenants; and was immediately ordered into the Camp of Instruction at Raleigh. It was mustered in for six months with the First Regiment of Volunteers, and assigned to it under Colonel D. H. Hill, but as this regiment had more companies than the number allowed by army regulations, the "Duplin Rifles" and "Lumberton Guards" were taken out, and with eight other companies, formed the Second Volunteers and elected Sol. Williams, Colonel; Edward Cantwell, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Augustus W Burton, Major; the "Duplin Rifles" being Company C

The regiment was ordered to Virginia in May, 1861, (a few days after the First Regiment) and served in and around Norfolk, without special incident, except at Sewell's Point, where a detachment consisting of this and three other companies was subjected to repeated shellings from the long-range guns of the Union troops stationed at the "Rip-Raps." At the expiration of the term of service of the "Duplin Rifles" and "Lumberton Guards" they were mustered out, and the regiment supplied with other companies in their stead, and numbered the Twelfth Regiment of State Troops, after the re-organization.

Upon the return of the company to Duplin county, it was reorganized under a notice dated 23 December, 1861, for the war, by electing Thomas S. Kenan, Captain; James G. Kenan, First Lieutenant; Robert B. Carr and John W Hinson, Second Lieutenants; ordered to Raleigh in March, 1862,

and assigned to the Forty-third Regiment as Company A. It therefore belonged to three different regiments.

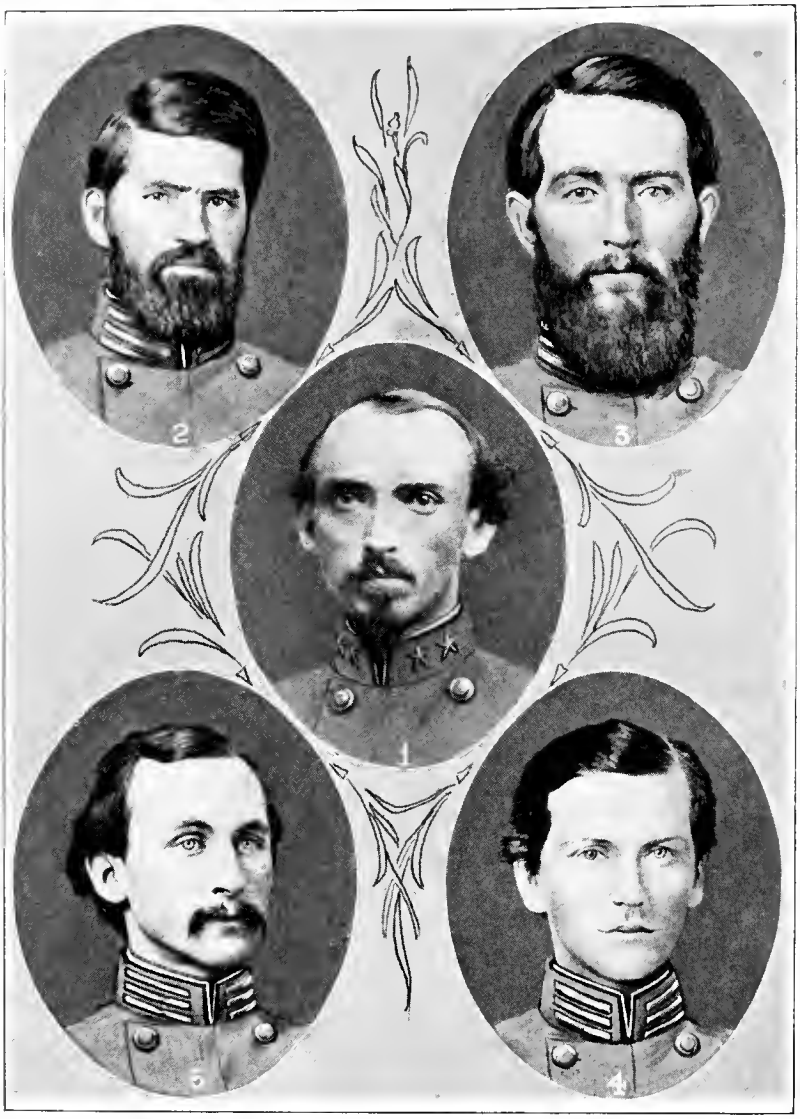
Some of the officers and men of the company, "C," organized other companies in Duplin county and likewise enlisted for the war.

From a roster kept by Sergeant B. F Hall, it appears that there were fifty-six on the roll at the close of the war, thirty-five of whom were either in prison, on parole or detail, and no deserter from the company during the entire war. Twenty-one surrendered with the Army of Northern Virginia at Appomattox on 9 April, 1865, to-wit: Thomas J. Bostic, William R. Kenan, Benjamin F Hall, William B. Blalock, William N. Brinson, James D. Brown, LaFayette W Brown, Alex. Chambers, Thomas E. Davis, Lewis J. Grady, R. M. S. Grady, Alex. Guy, James G. Halso, Jesse Horne, Hargett Kornegay, Jere J Pearsall, Lewis J. Rich, Calvin I. Rogers, John E. Smith, Jere Strickland, Frank A. Simmons.

The roster also shows that the number killed was 25, died of disease, 22; disabled by wounds, 10; discharged for disability, 12; transferred to other regiments, or companies, 5.

THOS. S. KENAN.

RALEIGH, N. C.,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

1. Taz well F. Hargrove, Lieut.-Colonel.
2. Elkanah E. Lyon, Captain, Co. A.
3. R. C. Brown, Captain, Co. B.
4. Robert Bingham, Captain, Co. G.
5. Thos. Hill Norwood, Captain, Co. H.

FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

By MAJOR CHARLES M. STEDMAN.

This brief record of the organization, movements and achievements of the Forty-fourth Regiment, North Carolina Troops, could not have been written except for the assistance of Captains W P Oldham, Robert Bingham, Abram Cox, and Lieutenants Thomas B. Long and Richard G. Sneed, officers of the regiment, who participated in its career, and especially am I under obligations to Captain John H. Robinson, of the Fifty-second North Carolina Regiment, who was detailed during the latter part of the campaign of 1864, at the request of General William MacRae, to serve on his staff as A. A. G., in place of Captain Louis G. Young, who had been severely wounded. The facts stated in a memorial address delivered by the writer in Wilmington, N. C., on 10 May, 1890, on the life and character of General William MacRae, in so far as they are connected with the operations of the regiment, and its participation in the various engagements described have been used without reserve, as they are known to be correct, nor has there been any hesitancy in quoting from the language of that address, when appropriate to a description of events constituting alike a part of the history of the regiment, as well as of the brigade.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, N C., on 28 March, 1862, with George B. Singletary as its Colonel, Richard C. Cotten, Captain Company E, its Lieutenant-Colonel, and Elisha Cromwell, Captain Company B, as its Major. Colonel Singletary was killed in a skirmish with Federal troops at Tranter's Creek, in Eastern North Carolina, on 5 June, 1862. He was an officer of extraordinary merit, and would have unquestionably attained high distinction but for his premature death. On 28 June, 1862, Thomas C. Singletary, his brother, was elected Colonel

in his stead. Lieutenant-Colonel Cotten resigned, on account of advanced age, on 10 June, 1862, and Major Elisha Cromwell was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel to fill the vacancy caused by his resignation. The vacancy caused by the promotion of Major Elisha Cromwell was filled by the election of Tazewell L. Hargrove, Captain of Company A, on 10 June, 1862. On 24 July, 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel Cromwell resigned and Major Tazewell L. Hargrove was elected in his place, and on 28 July, 1862, Charles M. Stedman, Captain Company E, was promoted and elected Major. The Staff and Company officers are named as they appear in the following list, and in the order of their promotion:

ADJUTANTS, Stark Armistead Sutton, John A. Jackson, R. W Dupree.

ENSIGN, W S. Long.

SERGEANT-MAJORS, John H. Johnston, Alexander S. Webb, E. D. Covington.

QUARTERMASTER SERGEANT, Isham G. Cheatham.

ORDNANCE SERGEANT, Robert J Powell.

COMMISSARY SERGEANT, D. F. Whitehead.

CHAPLAINS, John H. Tillinghast, Richard G. Webb.

SURGEONS, William T. Sutton, J. A. Bynum.

ASSISTANT SURGEONS, J. A. Bynum, William J. Green.

QUARTERMASTERS, William R. Beasley, William L. Cherry.

COMMISSARY, Abram Cox.

COMPANY A—Captains, Tazewell L. Hargrove, Elkanah E. Lyon, Robert L. Rice; First Lieutenants, Elkanah E. Lyon, Robert L. Rice, Richard G. Sneed, A. J Ellis; Second Lieutenants, Robert L. Rice, William R. Beasley, John B. Tucker, Richard G. Sneed, Robert Winship Stedman. Enlisted men, 148.

COMPANY B—Captains, Elisha Cromwell, Baker W Mabry, Robert C Brown; First Lieutenants, Baker W Mabry, Robert C. Brown, Thomas M. Carter; Second Lieutenants, Thomas M. Carter, Robert C Brown, Charles D. Mabry, Elisha C Knight. Enlisted men, 135.

COMPANY C—Captains, William L. Cherry, Macon G. Cherry; First Lieutenants, Abram Cox, Andrew M. Thigpen, Samuel V Williams; Second Lieutenants, Andrew M. Thigpen, Macon G. Cherry, Samuel V Williams, Reuben E. Mayo, Samuel Tapping. Enlisted men, 131.

COMPANY D—Captain, L. R. Anderson; First Lieutenants, Cornelius Stevens, John S. Easton; Second Lieutenants, John S. Easton, James M. Perkins, George W Parker, Thomas King. Enlisted men, 116.

COMPANY E—Captains, R. C. Cotten, Charles M. Stedman, James T. Phillips, John J. Crump; First Lieutenants, Charles M. Stedman, James T. Phillips, John J. Crump, N. B. Hilliard; Second Lieutenants, R. C Cotten, Jr., James T. Phillips, John J Crump, Thomas B. Long, N. B. Hilliard, C. C. Goldston, S. J Tally Enlisted men, 183.

By reason of his health, Lieutenant Thomas B. Long resigned in July 1862. He was a most accomplished officer; brave, competent and true—he was respected by all.

COMPANY F—Captains, David D. DeBerry, John C. Gaines; First Lieutenants, John C. Gaines, John C. Montgomery; Second Lieutenants, John C. Montgomery, Alexander M. Russell, George W Montgomery. Enlisted men, 127.

COMPANY G—Captain, Robert Bingham; First Lieutenant, S. H. Workman; Second Lieutenants, George S. Cobb, James W Compton, Fred. N. Dick, Thomas H. Norwood. Enlisted men, 129.

COMPANY H—Captains, William D. Moffitt, James T. Townsend, R. W Singletary; First Lieutenants, James T. Townsend, William H. Carter, Thomas H. Norwood; Second Lieutenants, Daniel L. McMillan, R. W Singletary, Moses Haywood, E. A. Moffitt, R. W Dupree. Enlisted men, 141.

COMPANY I—Captains, Downing H. Smith, John R. Roach; First Lieutenants, J. J Bland, John R. Roach; Second Lieutenants, John R. Roach, John A. Jackson, J. M. Lancaster. Enlisted men, 120.

COMPANY K—Captains, Rhet. R. L. Lawrence, W P Oldham; First Lieutenants, Joseph W Howard, W P Oldham; Second Lieutenants, David Yarborough, Bedford

Brown, J. H. Johnson, A. S. Webb, Joseph J Leonard, Rufus Starke. Enlisted men, 144.

On 19 May, 1862, the regiment was ordered to Tarboro, N C., thence it proceeded to Greenville, N. C., and for a few weeks was engaged in outpost and picket duty in that section of the State during which time it participated in no affair of consequence, save the skirmish at Tranter's Creek which, though otherwise unimportant, was to the regiment most unfortunate in that its accomplished commander lost his life.

From Eastern North Carolina the regiment was ordered to Virginia and there assigned to the Brigade of General J. Johnston Pettigrew, one of the very ablest commanders of the Army of Northern Virginia. Not only the Forty-fourth Regiment, but the entire Brigade, which consisted of five regiments—the Eleventh North Carolina, the Twenty-sixth North Carolina, the Forty-fourth North Carolina, the Forty-seventh North Carolina, and the Fifty-second North Carolina, felt the impress of his soldierly qualities. It was ever a matter of regret to the officers and men of the regiment that no opportunity was offered them of manifesting their appreciation of his great qualities by their conduct on the battlefield under his immediate command. The other regiments of his brigade were with him at Gettysburg and contributed to his imperishable renown by their steadfast valor, but the Forty-fourth North Carolina, whilst *en route*, was halted at Hanover Junction, Va., to guard the railroad connections there centering, and thus protect General Lee's communications with Richmond. Colonel T. C. Singletary with two companies, remained at the junction. Major Charles M. Stedman, with four companies, commanded north of the junction and the bridges of the Fredericksburg and of the Central (now the C & O.) Railroad across the South Anna and the Little Rivers, four in number, were entrusted to Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove, who posted one company at each bridge, remaining personally with Company A at Central's bridge across the South Anna, the post of greatest danger. On the morning of 26 June, 1865, the Federal troops, consisting of the Eleventh Pennsylvania Cavalry, two compa-

nies of a California cavalry regiment, and two pieces of artillery, about fifteen hundred, all included, commanded by Colonel, afterwards General Spear, appeared before Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove, and his small force of forty men, stationed in a breastwork on the south side of the river, built to be manned by not less than four hundred men. Before Colonel Spear made his first attack, Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove abandoning the breastwork as being entirely untenable by so small a force, fell back to the north side of the river, posted his men under cover along the river bank and for two hours successfully resisted repeated efforts to capture the bridge by direct assault, although assailed by a force outnumbering his own at least thirty-five to one. Failing in a direct attack, Colonel Spear sent four hundred men across the river by an old ford under cover of a violent assault in front from the south and was about to assail Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove in his rear, which was entirely unprotected, when Company G, consisting of 40 men, having been ordered from Central's bridge, over the river at Taylorsville, more than three miles distant, arrived and occupied the breastwork north of the river at its intersection with the railroad, and about two hundred yards from the bridge, thus protecting the rear of Company A. Company G had scarcely got into position when the charge of four hundred cavalry, intended for the unprotected rear of Company A, was delivered against Company G, protected by the breastwork, and was repulsed, as were two other charges made at intervals of about fifteen minutes, while attacks were made simultaneously on Company A from across the river with like results. During a lull in the fighting the Federal force on the north side was reinforced by four hundred men, and an assault on both Companies A and G was (at the same time) ordered. Colonel Spear crossed the river and ordered the attack made up the river bank against Company G's unprotected right, and Company A's unprotected left flank at the abutment of the bridge. The enormous odds prevailed, but only after a most desperate and hand-to-hand conflict with pistol, sabre and bayonet, in which Confederates and Federals were commingled. In the final assault Company A lost half of its men. The loss of

Company G was not heavy The Federal loss exceeded the entire number of Confederate troops engaged. Colonel Spear retreated after burning one bridge instead of four. He stated in the presence of his own command and that of Colonel Hargrove that: "The resistance made by the Confederates was the most stubborn he had known during the war; that he supposed that he was fighting four hundred infantry instead of eighty, and that his expedition had entirely failed of its object, which was to cut General Lee's communications with Richmond." No more gallant fight was made during the entire Civil War, than by Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove's command. He won the admiration of both friend and foe by his personal gallantry, and only surrendered when overpowered and taken by sheer physical force.

General Pettigrew having been mortally wounded on the retreat from Gettysburg, Colonel William Kirkland, of the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, was promoted to Brigadier-General and assigned to the command of Pettigrew's Brigade about 10 August, 1863.

ON THE MARCH.

The brigade left camp at Rapidan Station, where it had been in cantonment, on 8 October, 1863, and marched rapidly with a view of engaging General Meade at Culpepper Court House. General Meade fell back and avoided a conflict at Culpepper Court House, but was overtaken at Bristoe Station. Here on 14 October, 1863, a bloody and disastrous engagement was precipitated between Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades, and the bulk of Warren's Corps, supported by a powerful artillery with a railroad embankment as a fortification. In this fight, so inopportune and ill-advised and not at all in accordance with the views of General Lee, the Forty-fourth Regiment greatly distinguished itself. Advancing through an open field directly upon the line of fire of the Federal artillery, it sustained a heavy loss without flinching. Three different couriers rode up to the regiment and delivered a message to fall back. The order was disregarded and the regiment moved steadily on under heavy fire of both artillery and infantry, and when close upon the works, with the

shout of victory in the air, only retreated under peremptory orders from Lieutenant-General A. P Hill. The loss of the regiment in this engagement in killed and wounded was large. This was the first time the conduct of the regiment fell under the observation of Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, and afterwards its brigade commander. He was struck with admiration at the splendid conduct of the men, and often afterwards referred to their steady valor upon that field. It endeared the regiment to him, for he loved brave men, and it became his habit to frequently place himself with the colors of the regiment for, said he: "If I am with the Forty-fourth Regiment and am lost, I shall always be found to the fore-front of the fighting."

WILDERNESS.

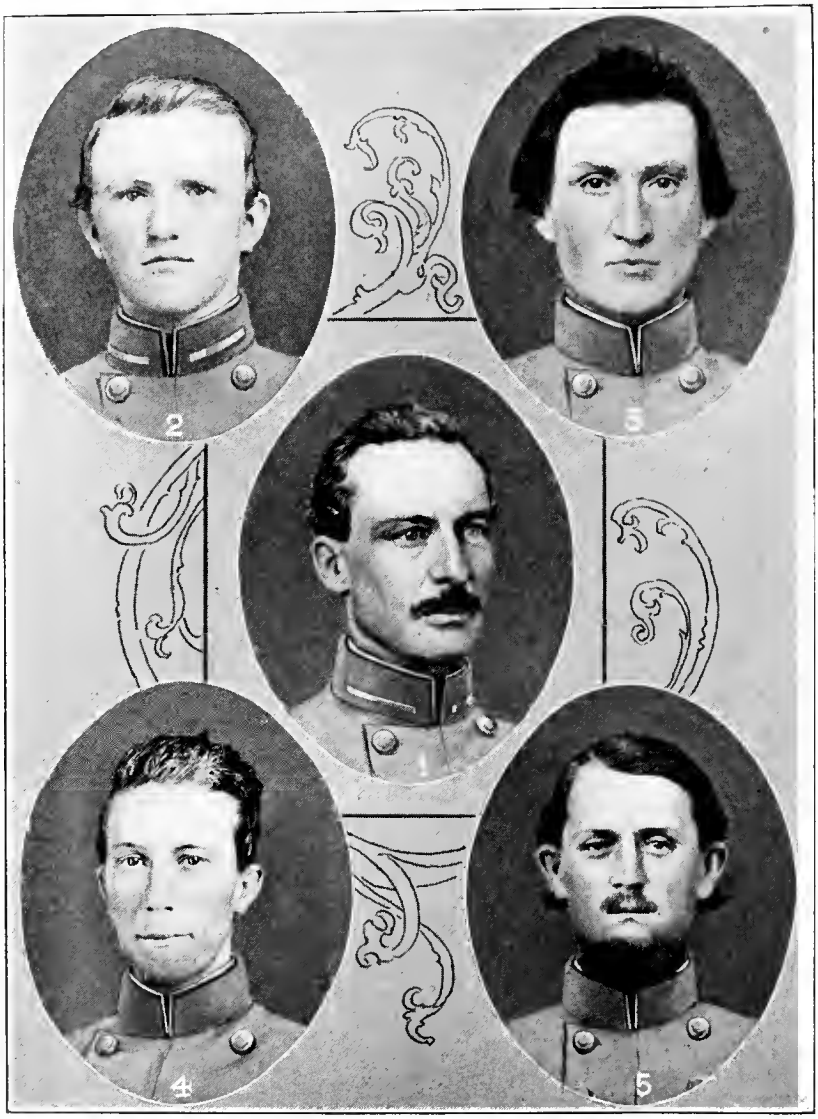
General Lee having received information that General Grant had commenced the passage of the Rapidan on the night of 3 May, 1864, broke up his cantonments on the 4th and prepared to meet him. The Forty-fourth North Carolina, with Kirkland's Brigade, left camp near Orange Court House on the 4th and bivouacked the same night at Verdiersville, about nine miles from the battlefield of the "Wilderness." Two roads led in parallel lines through the dense thickets which gave its name to the territory upon which the battle was fought. One was known as the Orange Plank Road, and the other as the Turnpike. The Forty-fourth marched by way of the Plank Road and became heavily engaged about 2 o'clock of the afternoon of the 5th. The right rested immediately upon the Plank Road, and next in line to it, with its left on the road, was the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment. This immediate locality was the storm-center of the fight, and it is doubtful if any more violent and sanguinary contest occurred during the entire Civil War than just here. The road was swept by an incessant hurricane of fire, and to attempt to cross it meant almost certain death. At this point of the line three pieces of Confederate artillery were seriously menaced with capture, the horses belonging to the guns having all been

killed or disabled, whilst the gunners were subjected to an incessant and murderous fire. At this juncture Lieutenant R. W Stedman, of Company A, volunteered to drag the guns down the road out of danger if a detail of forty men was furnished. Forty men immediately stepped to his side and said they would follow him, although they all knew the effort was full of peril. The work was done successfully, but only three of the volunteers escaped unhurt. Lieutenant Stedman was severely wounded by a grape shot. For his personal gallantry in this action he was honorably mentioned in high terms of praise, in an official order from division headquarters. The loss of the regiment in the engagements of the 5th and 6th was exceedingly heavy; a large proportion of its officers were killed and wounded; amongst the latter the Major of the regiment. Both officers and men won the special commendation of brigade and division commanders. On the 8th the regiment moved with the brigade towards Spottsylvania Court House. On the 10th Heth's and Anderson's Divisions, commanded by Early, had a serious conflict with a portion of General Grant's army, which was attempting to flank General Lee by what was called the Po River Road. In this engagement the Forty-fourth suffered severely, and fought with its accustomed valor.

Captain J. J Crump, of Company E, elicited by his conduct, warm commendation from the general commanding.

SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE.

On the 12th the regiment was assigned its position directly in front of Spottsylvania Court House, and was in support of a strong force of Confederate artillery. Repeatedly during the day it was charged by the Federal columns, their advance always being heralded and covered by a heavy artillery fire. Every assault was repulsed with great loss to the assailants, whose advance was greeted by loud cheers from the Forty-fourth Regiment, many of the men leaping on the earthworks and fighting without cover The loss during this engagement was comparatively slight. The Major commanding the regiment was again wounded and sent to a hos-



FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

1. R. W. Stedman, 2d Lieut., Co. A., Famous Scout.
2. E. A. Moffitt, 2d Lieut., Co. H.
3. John Ruffin Buchanan, Sergeant, Co. A.
4. Joseph M. Satterwhite, Private, Co. A.
5. James Andrew Wilson, Private, Co. A.

pital in Richmond, and was not able to rejoin his regiment until a few days before the battle at Reams Station.

The regiment participated in all the engagements in which its brigade took part from Spottsylvania Court House to Petersburg, constantly skirmishing and fighting as Grant continued his march on Lee's flank. On 3 June, 1864, it was heavily engaged with the enemy near Gaines' Mill. In this fight General W W Kirkland, commanding the brigade, was wounded. Pursuing its march, and almost daily skirmishing, the regiment reached Petersburg on 24 June, 1864, and commenced the desultory and dreary work of duty in the trenches. During the latter part of July, 1864, the regiment left Petersburg for Stoney Creek, and whilst on the march Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, joined the brigade and assumed command under orders. This gallant officer was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General in November, 1864, and from that time never left the brigade, of which the Forty-fourth was a part, until the last day at Appomattox. From Stoney Creek the regiment returned to Petersburg.

REAMS STATION.

The regiment bore its part with conspicuous good conduct in the brilliant engagement at Reams Station on 25 August, 1864.

Upon the investment of Petersburg the possession of the Weldon road became of manifest importance, as it was Lee's main line of communication with the South, whence he drew his men and supplies. On 18 August, 1864, General G. K. Warren, with the Fifth Corps of Grant's army, and Kautz's Division of cavalry, occupied the line of the Weldon road at a point six miles from Petersburg. An attempt was made to dislodge them from this position on the 21st, but the effort failed. Emboldened by Warren's success, Hancock was ordered from Deep Bottom to Reams Station, ten miles from Petersburg. He arrived there on the 22d and promptly commenced the destruction of the railroad track. His infantry force consisted of Gibbons' and Miles' Divisions, and in the afternoon of the 25th, he was reinforced by the divis-

ion of Orlando B. Wilcox, which, however, arrived too late to be of any substantial service to him. Gregg's division of cavalry, with an additional brigade commanded by Spear, was with him. He had abundant artillery, consisting in part of the Tenth Massachusetts battery, Battery B First Rhode Island, McKnight's Twelfth New York Battery, and Woerner's Third New Jersey Battery. On the 22d Gregg was assailed by Wade Hampton with one of his cavalry divisions, and a sharp contest ensued. General Hampton, from the battlefield of the 22d, sent a note to General R. E. Lee, suggesting an immediate attack with infantry. That great commander, realizing that a favorable opportunity was offered to strike Hancock a heavy blow, directed Lieutenant-General A. P Hill to advance against him as promptly as possible. General Hill left his camp near Petersburg on the night of the 24th, and marching south, halted near Armstrong's Mill, about eight miles from Petersburg. On the morning of the 25th he advanced to Monk's Neck Bridge, three miles from Reams Station, and awaited advices from Hampton. The Confederate force actually present at Reams Station, consisted of Cooke's and MacRae's Brigades of Heth's Division, Lane's, Scales' and McGowan's Brigades of Wilcox's Division, Anderson's brigade of Longstreet's Corps, two brigades of Mahone's Division, Butler's and W H. F. Lee's Divisions of cavalry, and a portion of Pegram's Battalion of artillery

Being the central regiment of the brigade, MacRae's line of battle was formed on it as was customary. Just previous to the assault upon General Hancock's command, the regiment was posted in the edge of a pine thicket, about three hundred yards from the breastworks held by the Federal troops. When the order was given to advance, the men threw themselves forward at a double-quick in a line as straight and unbroken as they presented when on parade, and without firing a gun, mounted the entrenchments and precipitated themselves amongst the Federal infantry on the other side, who seemed to be dazed by the vehemence of the attack, and made a very feeble resistance after their ranks were reached.

A battery of artillery, captured by the regiment, was

turned upon the retreating columns of the enemy. It was manned by sharpshooters of the Forty-fourth, who had been trained in artillery practice. Captain Oldham, of Company K, sighted one of the guns repeatedly, and when he saw the effect of his accurate aim upon the disarmed masses in front, was so jubilant that General MacRae with his usual quiet humor remarked: "Oldham thinks he is at a ball in Petersburg."

The Federal loss in this battle was between six and seven hundred killed and wounded, and 2,150 prisoners, 3,100 stand of small arms, twelve stand of colors, nine guns and caissons. The Confederate loss was small, and fell principally upon Lane's Brigade; it did not exceed five hundred in killed and wounded. The casualties in the Forty-fourth Regiment were trifling, as well as in other regiments of the brigade, for Hancock's men in our front fired wildly and above the mark, being badly demoralized by the fire of the Confederate artillery, under cover of which MacRae's men advanced to the assault.

James Forrest, who carried the colors of the regiment, became famous for his chivalrous devotion to the flag, and his gallantry on every field.

On the night of 25 August, 1864, the regiment returned with MacRae's Brigade to its position on the line of entrenchments at Petersburg, held by General Lee's right, and continued to perform the routine of duties incident to such a life until 27 October, 1864.

BURGESS' MILL.

The enemy having forced back our cavalry, and penetrated to a point on our right known as Burgess' Mill, on 27 October, 1864, General MacRae was ordered to attack with the understanding that he should be promptly reinforced by one or more brigades. Reconnoitering the enemy's position, he pointed out at once the weak part of their line to several officers who were with him, and ordered his brigade to the assault. It bore down everything in its front, capturing a battery of artillery, and dividing the corps which it had assailed. The Federal commander, seeing that MacRae was

not supported, closed in upon his flanks and attacked with great vigor. Undismayed by the large force which surrounded him, and unwilling to surrender the prize of victory already within his grasp, MacRae formed a portion of his command obliquely to his main line of battle, driving back the foe at every point, whilst the deafening shouts and obstinate fighting of his brigade showed their entire confidence in their commander, although every man of them knew their situation to be critical, and their loss had already been great. Awaiting reinforcements, which long since ought to have been with him, he held his vantage ground at all hazards, and against enormous odds. No help came whilst his men toiled, bled and died. Approaching night told him that the safety of his brigade demanded that he return to his original position. Facing his men about, they cut their way through a new line of battle which had partially formed in their rear. In this encounter the Forty-fourth North Carolina bore a brilliant part; it drove the Federal line, everywhere in its front, steadily to the rear. Lieutenant R. W Stedman, of Company A, with less than fifty men, charged and captured a battery of artillery which was supported by a considerable force of infantry. This battery was disabled and left, as it was impossible to bring it off the field when the regiment was ordered to return to the position it occupied at the commencement of the fight. The affair at Burgess' Mill was marred by the misunderstanding of his orders by an officer of high rank, by which he failed to reinforce General MacRae, as instructed, causing a heavy loss to his brigade.

From Burgess' Mill the regiment again returned to its old position in the entrenchments at Petersburg. On 2 April, 1865, the Confederate lines having been pierced and broken through, the regiment, under orders, commenced its retreat towards Amelia Court House, which place it reached on 4 April. Its line of march was marked by constant and bloody engagements with the Federal troops, who followed in close pursuit, but who were entirely unable to produce the slightest demoralization or panic. At Southerland's Station the fight was severe. On the night of the 5th it left Amelia Court House and reached Appomattox on the morning of the

9th, where, together with the bleeding remnants of the army of Northern Virginia, it stacked its arms and its career was ended.

The *esprit de corps* of the regiment was of the very highest order. Neither disease, famine, nor scenes of horror well calculated to freeze the hearts of the bravest, ever conquered its iron spirit. The small remnant who survived the trials of the retreat from Petersburg, and who left a trail of blood along their weary march from its abandoned trenches to Appomattox Court House, were as eager and ready for the fray on that last memorable day, as when, with full ranks and abundant support, they drove the Federal troops before them in headlong flight on other fields. This spirit especially manifested itself in the love of the regiment for its flag, which was guarded by all its members with chivalrous devotion, and which was never lost or captured on any field. The first flag was carried from the commencement of its campaign until about 1 January, 1865, when a new one was presented in its stead, for the reason that so much of the old flag had been shot away that it could not be distinctly seen by other regiments during brigade drills, and as the Forty-fourth was always made the central regiment, upon which the others of the brigade dressed in line of battle, as well as on parade, a new flag had become a necessity.

The new battle flag was carried by Color-Sergeant George Barbee, of Company G, until the night of 1 April, 1865, when crossing the Appomattox, he wrapped a stone in it and dropped it in the river, saying to his comrades about him: "No enemy can ever have a flag of the Forty-fourth North Carolina Regiment." The wonderful power which the high order of *esprit de corps* exerted for good amongst the officers and men, is illustrated by an incident which is worthy to be recorded amidst the feats of heroes.

A private by the name of Tilman, in the regiment, had on several occasions attracted General MacRae's favorable attention and, at his request, was attached to the color-guard. Tilman's name was also honorably mentioned in the orders of the day from brigade headquarters.

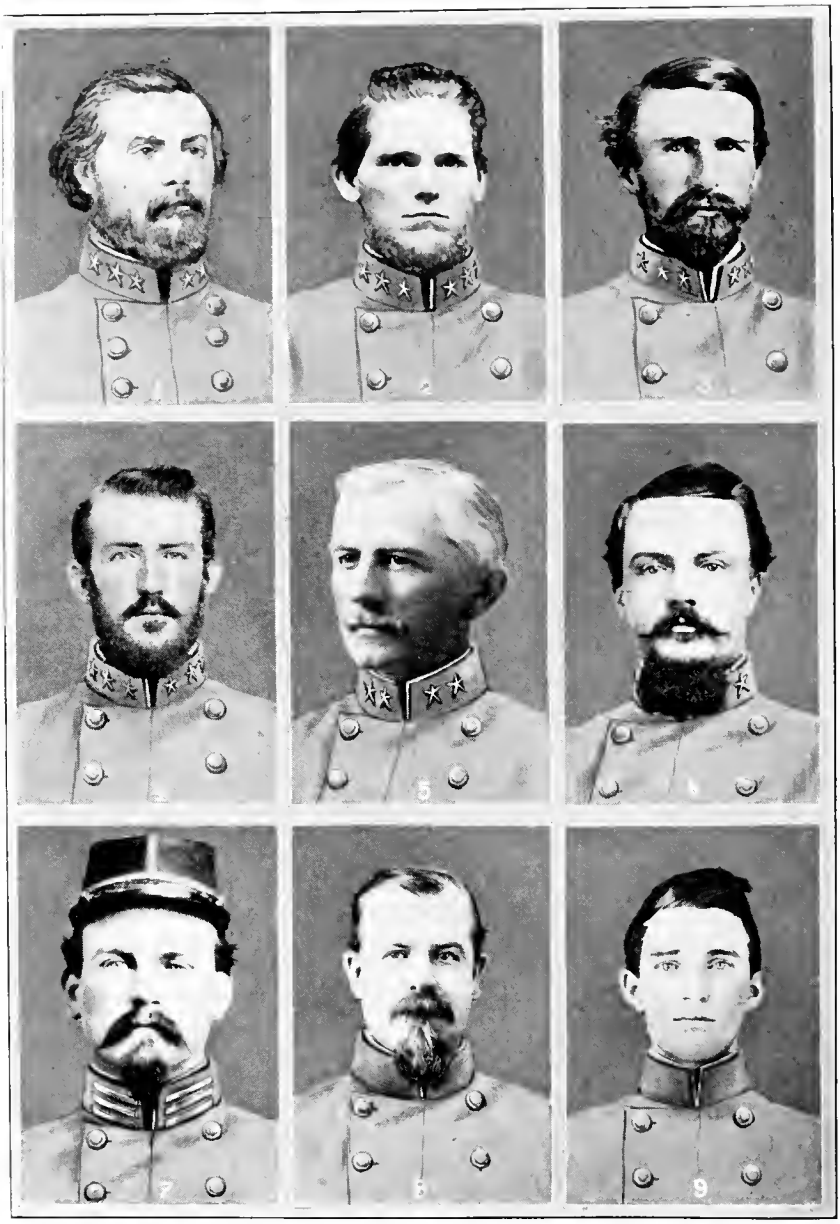
Soon thereafter, in front of Petersburg, the regiment became severely engaged with the enemy and suffered heavy loss. The flag several times fell, as its bearers were shot down in quick succession. Tilman seized it and again carried it to the front. It was but an instant and he, too, fell. As one of his comrades stooped to raise the flag again, the dying soldier touched him, and in tones made weak by the approach of death, said: "Tell the General I died with the flag." The tender memories and happy associations connected with his boyhood's home faded from his vision as he rejoiced in the consciousness that he had proved himself worthy of the trust which had been confided to him.

The old battle flag of the regiment tattered and torn by ball and shell, its staff riddled, and its folds in shreds, was presented to Mrs. Della Worth Bingham, wife of Captain Robert Bingham, Company G, by the Major commanding, as a mark of respect and esteem in behalf of officers and men to a woman who had won their affectionate regard, and whose husband had ever followed it with fidelity and fortitude upon every field where it waved. Captain Bingham, whose home is in Asheville, N C., still has it in his possession.

Its folds shall become mouldy with the lapse of years. The time will come when the Civil War shall only be remembered as a shadow of days long passed, but the memories of the great deeds of the sons of Carolina who followed that flag, and who sleep in unknown graves upon the fields of Northern Virginia, shall survive unshaken amidst the ruins of time.

CHAS. M. STEDMAN.

GREENSBORO, N. C.,
APRIL 9, 1901.



FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

1. Junius Daniel, Colonel.
2. John R. Winston, Colonel.
3. J. Henry Morehead, Colonel.
4. Samuel Hill Boyd, Colonel.
5. Andrew J. Boyd, Lieut.-Colonel.
6. Thomas M. Smith, Major.
7. Samuel C. Rankin, Captain, Co. B.
8. J. A. Roach, Sergeant, Co. E.
9. C. B. Watson, Sergeant, Co. K.

FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

By CYRUS B. WATSON, Second Sergeant, Company K.

ITS ORGANIZATION.

The Forty-fifth Regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, Raleigh, N. C., in the early spring of 1862, with:

Junius Daniel, Colonel, of Halifax County.

Jno. Henry Morehead, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Greensboro, N. C.

Andrew J Boyd, Major, of Rockingham.
W M. Hammond, Adjutant, of Anson.
Pryor Reynolds, A. Q. M., Rockingham.
Dr. Wm. J Courts, Surgeon, of Rockingham.
Jno. R. Raine, Assistant Surgeon, of Rockingham.
Rev. E. H. Harding, Chaplain, of Caswell County.

The regiment contained ten companies, six of which were organized in Rockingham County, one in Caswell, two in Guilford and one in Forsyth. These companies were enlisted and organized for three years' service. At the time of their organization, the war was on in dead earnest. The first battle of Manassas had been fought and won; the battles of Forts Henry and Donelson had been fought and lost, and the capital of one of the States of the Confederacy was in the hands of the enemy. The State of North Carolina had been invaded; Fort Macon had been captured, and the city of New Bern was occupied by the Federal forces. The authorities at Washington were putting forth tremendous energies in organizing and equipping great armies for the subjugation of the seceding States. The Confederate Government at Richmond, to meet these mighty preparations, had called upon the States of the South for more troops.

These ten companies were raised and commanded by such

men as Dr. Jno. W May, of Rockingham County, then nearly 50 years of age, Captain of Company A.

Chas. E. Shober, of Greensboro, Captain of Company B, himself fit to command a regiment.

Jas. T. Morehead, Jr., of Greensboro, Captain of Company C, afterwards the splendid commander of the Fifty-third Regiment.

Jno. L. Scales, of Rockingham, Captain of Company D, a man of sterling worth and splendid ability.

Samuel H. Boyd, of Rockingham, Captain of Company E, afterwards Colonel of the regiment and a most gallant man.

Jno. R. Winston, of Rockingham, Captain of Company F, a man who afterwards won great distinction as commander of the regiment.

Jno. H. Dillard, of Rockingham, Captain of Company G, who afterwards filled with distinction a position upon the Supreme Court bench of the State, and whose qualities of head and heart fitted him for any position he might be called upon to fill.

Dr. Wm. J. Courts, of Rockingham, Captain of Company H., afterwards Surgeon of the Regiment.

Thomas McGehee Smith, of Caswell, Captain of Company I, a most lovable man, afterwards promoted to Major and killed while commanding the regiment.

Dr. J. M. Hines, of Forsyth, Captain of Company K, whose manly qualities and uniform kindness to the boy soldier, the writer of this sketch, who served under him, will always be held in the fondest remembrance.

Junius Daniel, the first Colonel of the Regiment, was an officer in the old army and a graduate of West Point. He was transferred from the command of the Fourteenth Regiment to the Forty-fifth Regiment, of which he was elected Colonel upon its organization. He was promoted to Brigadier-General in September, 1862, and commanded Daniel's Brigade with conspicuous ability from its organization in the spring of 1862, until killed at Spottsylvania Court House on 12 May, 1864. On his promotion, Lieutenant-Colonel J. Henry Morehead, of Greensboro, was made Colonel of the regiment. He was a fine disciplinarian and did much before

his untimely death in 1863 in qualifying the regiment for the ordeals through which it had to pass along its subsequent march to imperishable renown. After the death of Colonel Morehead, Samuel H. Boyd became Colonel of the regiment. He was wounded at Gettysburg and left on the field a prisoner, and remained a prisoner of war until exchanged in May, 1864. He then returned to the army and took command of the regiment on 17 May, at Spottsylvania; was killed two days thereafter while gallantly leading his regiment in a charge upon the enemy's line. A few moments before the charge, in which he lost his life, he received a gunshot wound in the arm. He had his arm bandaged with his handkerchief to stop the flow of blood, refused to leave the field, and was killed as above stated.

He wore a bright, new uniform in this battle, was about six feet four inches tall, which made him a shining mark for the enemy's riflemen. After his death John R. Winston became Colonel of the regiment. Nature had fashioned him for a soldier. He was a man of deep piety, of stern integrity and the coolest courage in battle. He was often wounded, but rarely left the field because of wounds. Was wounded and captured at Gettysburg in July, 1863, carried to Johnson's Island as a prisoner of war, escaped from the island on a cold night in January, 1864, walked across the lake on the ice to the Canadian shore, went from Canada to Nassau, from there he reached a Confederate port by running the blockade, and returned to the regiment in time for the campaign of 1864. He led the regiment through all the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania and Cold Harbor; was then transferred to General Early's command in the Valley, advanced with that command upon Washington, carried his regiment in sight of the Capitol, fought his regiment at the battle of Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek, and in the last two engagements, held the regiment in line until most of Early's command had left the field. After the Valley campaign was over, he joined the army of General Lee at Petersburg, where he remained during the winter of 1864 and 1865, marched and fought to Appomattox Court House where he surrendered with the army of his great Chieftain.

Thomas McGehee Smith, Major of the regiment, was a splendid officer, beloved by the men of the regiment, and was killed in one of the battles near Richmond which followed the Spottsylvania campaign of 1864.

I have given this sketch of the field officers of the regiment who served for any length of time with the regiment. Major Andrew J. Boyd, a brother of Colonel Samuel H. Boyd, was promoted from Captain of Company L, of the Twenty-first Regiment, but did not long remain with the regiment. Chas. E. Shober was promoted from Captain of Company B, but remained Major of the regiment only a short time until he became Lieutenant-Colonel of the Second North Carolina Battalion.

In approaching the difficult task assigned me of writing a true historical sketch of the Forty-fifth Regiment in this, the year 1900, thirty-five years after the regiment laid down its arms at Appomattox Court House, I find myself involved in great difficulties. Very few of the officers of the regiment are living. In looking over the Roster of the non-commissioned officers of the various companies, I find that they, too, have nearly all passed away. Among the surviving private soldiers of the various companies, there are very few, whose whereabouts I can ascertain. I have little left but personal recollection.

It will be seen that the men who composed this regiment were drawn from four contiguous counties, Forsyth, Guilford, Rockingham and Caswell. The officers who organized, disciplined and prepared them for war were such as would have made a good regiment out of almost any material. But the men themselves, in the main, would have made good soldiers under almost any circumstances. The rank and file of the regiment was composed of men from the farm, from the shop, from the school room, from the office, from mercantile pursuits, in fact from all the walks of life. Many of them were without property, some of them the sons of the wealthy, but most of them from the middle classes. I knew one young private who was the owner of many slaves in his own right.

From the organization of the regiment in the early spring of 1862 until the beginning of the seven days' fight below

Richmond, the men were drilled almost incessantly. They were upon the drill ground upon an average from six to eight hours each day. When the first battle opened at Mechanicsville, Daniel's Brigade was in camp near Petersburg. We immediately struck tents and started for the field; crossed the James on a pontoon bridge above Drewry's Bluff, and became a part of the division of General Holmes. The brigade did not encounter the enemy until late in the evening of 30 June. We marched down the river in almost blinding dust until we reached a point between McClellan's army, then engaged in the battle of Frazier's Farm, and the river.

The brigade was halted and the command was given for the first time to load with cartridges. A few stray balls of the enemy were falling around the regiment. While the regiment was loading its guns, a field battery opened fire directly enfilading the line. At the same time a squadron of Confederate cavalry stampeded up the road, threatening to trample us under the feet of their horses. Just at this moment, two gunboats, the Galena and another on the river directly behind the line, opened fire with 160 pounders. This was, what has always seemed to me, a poor way to break in a raw regiment. The regiment thought so, and eight companies immediately broke to the woods and "Stood not upon the order of their going." Two companies, commanded by Captain May and Captain Jno. H. Dillard, rapidly disappeared up the lane. Just as these eight companies climbed out of the road, which was lower than the land on the sides, Private Harrison Green, of Company K, was killed by a shell from one of the gunboats and fell by the writer's side. Private Jesse Sapp, of Company K, was run over and permanently disabled by the horse of a frightened cavalryman. The eight companies did not go far until they recovered from their fright, formed on the flag and quietly marched back to a position near the point where they had left the road, each man with his mouth full of excuses for having lost his head. Just at this time the two companies, commanded by Captains May and Dillard, came marching down the lane with their two captains in front and marched up to Colonel Daniel. Captain May saluted the Colonel and said that Companies A and G had

misunderstood the order and had marched up the lane. Colonel Daniel replied, with a smile on his face: "Yes, Captain, I saw the companies march up the lane at a very rapid gait, and, if I am not mistaken, their two Captains were making good time, and in front," which created a laugh all through the regiment, the two Captains joining in the fun. By a mistake of some one, our division that evening was not permitted to engage in the battle of Frazier's Farm, although it reached a point immediately upon the enemy's flank in time to have done effective service. The next day the sanguinary conflict of Malvern Hill raged until after dark, with our division again on the enemy's flank and under the enemy's fire without taking any active part in that engagement, except to endure the shelling from the enemy's guns. It was not the fault of "the men behind the guns." Daniel's Brigade, after the battle of Malvern Hill, returned to its camp near Petersburg. It remained near Petersburg until the army started on its march to Maryland. We were ordered to Richmond and remained in the city one day, awaiting transportation to Culpepper. The enemy made a demonstration on Drewry's Bluff and we were hurried back to that point. We went into camp immediately in the rear of Fort Darling, where we remained until ordered to North Carolina in the late fall of 1862. The brigade went to Kinston; was engaged through the spring of 1862 in marching and countermarching in the country between Kinston and New Bern and around Washington on the Tar river, under General D. H. Hill; some little fighting, but none worth describing here. We returned to Kinston in time to have reached Fredericksburg before the battle of Chancellorsville, but were delayed for want of transportation facilities, and arrived at Fredericksburg just after the battle had closed and were immediately attached to General Rodes' Division of Ewell's Corps.

Early in June the army broke up camp and started on the memorable Gettysburg campaign. The first excitement occurred over the great cavalry battle of Brandy Station. The brigade double-quicked from Culpepper Court House most of the way to Brandy Station one hot evening, going to the relief of General Stuart, but arrived on the field only

in time to receive a few parting shots from the retreating enemy. The next morning found us on our way across the mountains marching rapidly toward Winchester. Rodes' Division was sent to Berryville, where it had a slight engagement, and cut off the retreat of Milroy, whose entire command fell into the hands of General Ewell as prisoners of war at Winchester. Ewell's Corps immediately took up its line of march into Pennsylvania, and Rodes' Division went as far North as Carlisle, Pa. From this point the Brigade turned back in the direction of Gettysburg and arrived on that field in the afternoon of 1 July.

BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

I was not present with my regiment at the battle of Gettysburg. I was left at Front Royal, on the march to Gettysburg, with a severe attack of acute pneumonia, contracted from lying on the damp ground at Brandy Station, after the rapid march from Culpepper, before alluded to. I met the regiment on its return between Hagerstown, Md., and Gettysburg, in command of a Captain. This much I know, when I met the regiment it was but a mere skeleton of what it was when it left me at Front Royal.

My own company lost seven men dead on the field, and lost between twenty-five and thirty wounded, including all of its officers save one. The Gettysburg Federal Memorial Association in 1897 published "A History of the Gettysburg Memorial Association with an Account of the Battle," from which I quote as follows:

"Another of Rodes' Brigades, Daniel's North Carolina, moved past the front of Robinson's Division, and while the Fifty-third Regiment of the brigade, with the Third Alabama of O'Neal's, which had been detached from its brigade, and the Twelfth North Carolina, of Iverson's, attacked the Seventy-sixth New York, Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania and One Hundred and Forty-seventh New York, of Cutler's Brigade, on left of Robinson, Daniel's other regiment—the Thirty-second, Forty-fifth, Second Battalion and the Forty-third—moved further to the right around to the railroad cut, and attacked the One Hundred and Forty-third and One Hun-

dred and Forty-ninth Pennsylvania, of Stone's Brigade, which regiments had been withdrawn from their first position and placed along the Chambersburg Pike to meet this attack. These regiments were from the lumber region of Pennsylvania and were expert riflemen, and the vollies with which they greeted Daniel's men were said by the Confederate officers to have been the most destructive they ever witnessed."

The same account of the battle, in giving a table of losses, shows that these two Pennsylvania Regiments lost 589 men out of a total of 915. While the Forty-fifth Regiment and the Second North Carolina Battalion (six companies), lost that day nearly 400 men. After recrossing the Potomac, I remember that General Daniel inspected the regiment, passing down the line inquiring after the condition of cartridges, we having waded the Potomac the night before. I remember hearing him ask Captain Hopkins, who commanded the regiment, "How many Rockingham companies are there in the regiment?" He answered, "Six." The General replied, "Rockingham county has reason to be proud of the record made by the regiment at Gettysburg."

After the Gettysburg campaign, we returned to the south side of the Rapidan, after many days of hot and toilsome marching, and went into camp near Orange Court House, and finally moved down the river to Morton's Ford. In the fall we left camp, marched to Madison Court House, turned the flank of General Meade, and started on, what appeared to be, a foot race after Meade's army retreating toward Washington. We overtook Meade at Bristoe Station just at sunset, after having been engaged in a running fight which lasted all day. The battle of Bristoe Station ended disastriously to us but Gen. Meade continued his retreat toward Washington. After a day or two's rest, we slowly returned to the south bank of the Rappahannock river and went into camp, as we thought, for the winter. Shortly afterwards, after some sharp skirmishing with the enemy, we retired across the Rapidan and again took up our old quarters near Morton's Ford. Winter being now upon us, we thought all fighting was over for the year 1863, but shortly afterwards, General Meade, not satisfied with the result of the recent campaign,

threw his army across the Rapidan. We hastened down to confront him, and for several days skirmished and fought by day and built breastworks by night in severe winter, until the enemy, finding that it was impossible to fight us to advantage, fell back across the river, and both armies returned to their quarters to remain during the winter. Each commander immediately engaged in filling up the ranks of the depleted regiments, preparing for the dreadful conflict that was to open up in the spring of 1864.

THE WILDERNESS AND SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE.

In the afternoon of 4 May, the regiment abandoned its winter quarters and started on the march to meet General Grant, the new commander of the Army of the Potomac. At nightfall we went into camp in "The Wilderness." On the morning of the 5th, after a hurried breakfast, we took up the line of march, and within a very short time, were halted and drawn up in line of battle. It was a beautiful May morning. We began to advance in line, having been informed that we had some of our troops in front of us. We could hear the scattering picket fire to the left and right. Suddenly we heard, what appeared to be a heavy volley of musketry a few hundred yards in front of us. Soon the woods were filled with demoralized men and we ascertained that the lines of Jones' Brigade had been broken, and that the regiments composing the brigade were quitting the field in the utmost confusion. We halted and let the men pass through our ranks. We were presently informed by the Colonel of one of the regiments that the brigade had broken at the first fire of the enemy, and that its commander, the brave General Jones, had refused to retreat with the men and had remained on the line until shot down. As soon as the way in front had been cleared, we heard the voice of our brigade commander, General Junius Daniel, give the command, "Attention, Battalions! Battalions forward, the center the battalion of direction, march!" The brigade moved forward at a quick step through the underbrush, just budding into spring life. We had not advanced far until, without notice, a white volume of smoke burst through the thick bushes, rendered

thicker by the interlacing bamboo briers that had grown up in a little depression of the earth, parallel with our line, followed with an almost deafening crash of musketry. We had not, up to this moment, seen an enemy. The aim was too high and hardly a man in the regiment was touched. Without waiting for a command, every gun was leveled, and into the line of smoke we poured a terrible volley, and, with a shout, went at them. On reaching a little narrow thicket, which, with clubbed muskets, was instantly leveled, we discovered a thin line of the enemy in full retreat, with the dead and wounded lying before our eyes, indicating that something like half of the line of battle had fallen at our first fire. On went the brigade in a full run. Presently we approached a small opening containing only a few acres of cleared land.

In this was placed a battery of guns which opened upon us as soon as the fleeing enemy had passed beyond. They had time to fire but once. Down the little slope the brigade rushed past the guns. At this point we received, at short range, the fire of a new line of the enemy, concealed in the pines beyond. The brigade halted, the men dropped on their knees and engaged in a conflict, the length of which I have no means of knowing. This fight continued until both lines had suffered severely, and, as if by common consent, our line withdrew to the edge of the woods from which it had emerged, while the enemy went in the opposite direction. Shortly afterwards the position we held was given to another brigade and our brigade was permitted to retire a few hundred yards and rest. We had lost heavily. The battle was then raging all along the line of Ewell's Corps and continued until after nightfall. In the darkness we arranged our lines and worked most of the night throwing up earth works. Early the next morning the firing between the picket lines began. From time to time during the day we sent forward men to strengthen the picket line. This picket fire continued all day with a light fire of artillery at intervals. During this day the 6th of May, the dreadful fight was raging on our right between the Corps of Hill and Longstreet and the greater part of Grant's army. We remained in our position

during the night of the 6th and all day of the 7th with continued heavy picket and artillery firing. Early in the night of the 7th we moved out by the right flank, having been cautioned to make as little noise as possible, and commenced what turned out to be, a hurried flank movement to Spottsylvania Court House. We marched all night, and the whole of the next day, and in the afternoon heard heavy firing in the direction of Spottsylvania Court House. We hurried on. Now and then we passed through sections where the woods were on fire and would become enveloped in choking smoke, but nothing delayed us. Late in the afternoon, as we were approaching the field where Longstreet's Corps, now commanded by General Anderson, was engaged in an unequal fight with the assaulting columns of the enemy, the march became more hurried, frequently breaking into a double-quick. The afternoon was hot. The men, worn out by the long march and from loss of sleep, were dropping exhausted along the way. A little before sunset, and as we reached a point almost in range of the enemy's rifles, but in the rear of Longstreet's right, we were halted, the regiment closed up and ordered to a front. General Daniel dashed along on horseback in front of the brigade, halting in the center of each regiment, and announced that Longstreet's Corps had for hours been successfully resisting the repeated attacks of the enemy that had been thrown against him in almost overwhelming numbers; that we were now in half mile of his extreme right; that the enemy would, within a few minutes, turn his flank and get possession of a most favorable position unless we arrived in time to prevent it; that the only question was whether we should arrive in time to save the position or retake it after it had been secured by the enemy. This only occupied a few minutes, but it gave the tired men these few minutes to recover breath.

The announcement of General Daniel was greeted by each regiment with a shout. The brigade was ordered into column, and, in a rapid run, we passed the last regiment on Longstreet's right and discovered that the splendid brigade of General Ramseur, the front brigade in our corps, had passed Longstreet's last regiment, had turned by the left flank, and

was moving forward in a beautiful line to meet the enemy that had just arrived and was advancing to turn Longstreet's right. Our brigade pressed on until its last regiment had passed General Ramseur's right, when it, in turn, halted and closed up its ranks, fronted, and under the immediate eye of General Rodes, our commander, who had by this time arrived on the spot, raised a yell and dashed at the enemy. In rapid succession the brigades of Generals Doles and Battle passed in our rear, and with a similar movement turned the enemy's flank, whose whole advancing line was driven back. The fight continued in the woods until after nightfall, the two respective lines firing at the flash of the adversary's guns. Slowly the firing ceased, the litter-bearers came in along the line and bore away the wounded. The dead, for the time, and in many instances perhaps for all time, were left undisturbed where they fell.

THE HORSE SHOE.

Soon after the firing ceased, our lines were drawn back for a short distance and preparations for the next day's fight were begun. A sergeant from each regiment of our brigade was called for and assembled at brigade headquarters. I was detailed as one. We were placed in charge of Captain W L. London, now of Pittsboro, N. C., (and I could write many pages about the courage and faithfulness of this staff officer). Captain London carried us forward in the dark, and selected, what appeared to be, the highest point of a low ridge between the lines. He posted us, one at a place, along the crest of this low ridge, until he had posted each guide about the length of a regiment apart, giving each instructions to remain in the pine thicket where we were placed, "until we heard the signal come down the line from our right," and then to take it up and repeat it as often as it came, until the regiment formed upon us. In leaving the place where I stood, Captain London cautioned me not to sit down, for fear I might go to sleep, but to stand and rest upon my gun. I must have stood there for more than an hour listening to the strange cries of the wounded, doubtless of both armies, some begging for water, and one poor fellow, as I remember, who

had perhaps been wounded in the head, was delirious, and now and then would change his cries and groans into a sound like the bark of a dog. After what seemed to me a long time, I heard away on my right coming down the line, a low "Halloo." This passed down the line and continued until we heard the tramp of the regiments as they came up and formed upon us. This was doubtless done all along most of the lines of Ewell's Corps, and done in many places in the darkness of a pine thicket. I have never been able to account for the forming of this salient, which was soon to become what is known as the historic "Bloody Angle," except in this way; we threw up breastworks all night, and, when daylight came, we found that a part of our division, and perhaps all of Johnson's Division and a part of Hill's men, were occupying breastworks formed in the shape of a horse shoe, with the toe upon elevated ground and the sides running back to the caulks, which were not, as I now see the ground, more than 500 yards apart.

All day of the 9th we encountered a deadly fire from the sharpshooters and a heavy fire of artillery from the enemy, to which we replied in kind. This died away after nightfall and was renewed in more aggravated form on the morning of the 10th, and continued until late in the afternoon. Suddenly, at about an hour by sun, the enemy broke from cover to our right, and poured in overwhelming numbers upon the line occupied by General Doles' Georgians. These gallant men were overpowered by sheer force of numbers and driven from the works. The enemy poured through the breach, captured quite a number of men on the extreme right of our brigade; forced the brigade to retire to avoid the enfilading fire, and caused us the temporary loss of sixteen pieces of artillery. Our brigade slowly fell back firing as it retreated, the enemy advancing and taking possession of our abandoned guns. In a short time we were in line at right angles to the works: the enemy massing in great numbers in our front. It seemed even to the eye of a private soldier that a dangerous crisis was upon us. Suddenly a single horseman came dashing up to the rear of our regiment. He was instantly recognized by the men who saw him, as General Ewell, our corps

commander. He had outstripped his staff officers who were following him, but not then in sight. He halted in the rear of the Forty-fifth Regiment, and called out, "Don't run boys; I will have enough men here in five minutes to eat up every d—d one of them." His eyes were almost green. The line steadied and poured volley after volley into the enemy. Presently we heard a yell up the line in our rear as we stood, and Battle's Brigade of Alabamians were seen coming to our support. They ran down the line by us. We raised a yell and dashed forward. Now, what became of Battle's men, whether they passed around us forming a line parallel with the works and then charged with us, I cannot tell. I did not then know. I only know that we went forward in a full run; found the enemy standing where we had left our batteries; the guns all withdrawn from their embrasures, turned upon us, but not firing, while the infantry fired into our faces. They stood their ground until there were but a few paces between the lines. A fine-looking Federal officer stood in the front of their line with drawn saber, encouraging his men. He fell dead, within a few paces of the writer, shot through the neck. I ascertained the next morning that his name was Colonel Huling, of the Sixth or Seventh Maine Regiment, temporarily commanding the front brigade in this assault. He was a brave fellow and deserved a better fate. When he fell, his men breaking in confusion leaped over the breastworks, and we went in near the same place we had left them. My recollection is that these lines were restored by our brigade, Battle's Alabama Brigade, one or two regiments from Ramseur's Brigade and a part of the brigade of General R. D. Johnston. But I remember well that a few days thereafter, we had in the company a Richmond paper, giving an account of the battle as communicated by an army correspondent, as having been won and the lost line recovered by certain Virginia brigades; this, indeed, was quite a common thing with the Richmond papers. As we recaptured the line the brave artillerymen, one company of which was the Richmond Howitzers, as fine a body of men as ever wore a uniform, rushed up with rammers in hand; wheeled the guns to their places and commenced pouring canister into the ranks of the re-

treating foe. We then saw why it was that we had not been fired upon by our own guns. The artillerymen had carried away the rammers. Thus ended the bloody engagement of 10 May The ground was covered with the dead and wounded from both armies. The gallant Colonel Brabble, of the Thirty-second North Carolina, of our brigade, was among the former.

If space permitted, I would be glad here to give instances of individual acts of heroism witnessed by me in this and subsequent engagements in this bloody angle. The morning after this fight, I was asked by a wounded Sergeant belonging to the Sixth Maine Regiment, to help him down under the hill where he would not be exposed to the artillery fire from his own batteries. I did so, and made him as comfortable as I could. I filled his canteen with water, and learned from him the name and rank of the officer killed the evening before. I observed among the enemy's dead inside our lines, what I thought was an unusual proportion of non-commissioned officers. I asked this Sergeant how this happened. He answered that the evening before, just before his brigade led the assaulting column upon our works, that this same Colonel Huling addressed the regiments of the brigade; reminded them that during the preceding battles many company officers had been killed or permanently disabled, and that he expected to keep an eye on the non-commissioned officers of the brigade and see to it that commissions should be given the deserving ones. He said: "We came in front looking for promotion, and you see the result." He himself had a badly shattered leg below the knee. The 11th of May passed with nothing more than heavy skirmishing and severe artillery firing at intervals. Early in the morning of the 11th, General Rodes placed our brigade at the right of the division and in the space previously occupied by General Doles. The brigade took this as a compliment, and General Daniel, soon after the brigade was so placed, passed down the line behind the men and said to us: "I want you boys to remember that if the enemy come over these breastworks today, you are to receive them on your bayonets."

The night of the 11th was dark and drizzly. We sat with guns in hand the entire night, with a man to each company whose business it was to see that the men kept awake. We were so near the enemy's lines that I heard them knocking open cracker boxes and heard them call to the men to come and get their rations (giving "a" the long sound). We could hear, during the night, the sound of axes. They were evidently engaged in clearing away the pine bushes near the toe of the horse shoe to unmask their batteries. Just as the light was beginning to show on the morning of the 12th, we heard a sharp rattle of musketry away to the right, and suddenly the enemy came rushing over the line of works occupied by Edward Johnson's Division. They did not come in front of our brigade. The Forty-fifth Regiment occupied the position at the extreme right of the brigade next to Johnson's Division. It seemed to me then, as I remember now, that they captured almost the entire division down to the extreme left, and up to our right. I saw very few men go to the rear. We instantly sprang to our guns at the first firing. Our brave brigade commander came running up the line from near the center of the brigade to our regiment and observed that the enemy on our immediate right was confused in gathering up prisoners. He called the regiment to attention; gave the command, "About face," and, as I remember, moved the regiment at a right wheel, thus turning the regiment upon a pivot on the left company, and in this movement threw our backs to the enemy. While we were executing this movement, we were ordered to fire to the rear, which we did as rapidly as we could. When we had reached a point at almost right angles with the works, we were halted, ordered to about face, where we stood for a minute or two firing into the enemy's lines enfilading them. We were shortly commanded to right face and double-quick, the brigade following us. This threw us partly across the lines between the two caulks of the horse shoe, perhaps half the brigade occupying that position. In the meantime the battalion of artillery, down the line to our left, drew their guns from the breastworks and threw them into line about fifty yards to our rear, in a position several feet higher than the position we

occupied. We dropped upon our knees and opened fire upon the enemy, every man loading and firing as rapidly as possible. Immediately the artillery in our rear opened fire over our heads. For a little while the rush of canister and shrapnel above us seemed dangerous, but the conflict was on and in a short time we became accustomed to it. By the time the prisoners of Johnson's Division had been disposed of, the enemy in unbroken lines reaching back as far as we could see, came sweeping on in our front, but this combined fire of infantry and artillery was more than human flesh could stand and it was impossible for them to reach our line. The first men that came to our assistance was that brigade of North Carolinians commanded by the peerless Ramseur. This brigade always seemed to be in the right place at the right time. It came up and formed on our right, as I remember, in an open field, lay down for a moment, but soon, at the command of its leader, sprang up and dashed forward into the horse shoe. For a moment it seemed to me our brigade ceased firing and held its breath as these men went forward, apparently into the very jaws of death. They were soon enveloped in smoke, which the heavy atmosphere of a misty morning caused to linger over the field. Now, from this time until dark I know nothing of what took place, except that which occurred in my immediate neighborhood. Without moving at times for hours, we fired into the advancing columns of the enemy who were trying to carry our position, while Ramseur's Brigade, and doubtless many other brigades, were fighting on our right. We made during the day during the little intervals between the enemy's assaults, a little temporary protection composed of fence rails, poles and earth, behind which we sat on our knees and fired. We went in with sixty rounds of cartridges each. This supply of ammunition was replenished from time to time during the day. How many rounds were fired no man knew.

The pine saplings standing at intervals in the field in front of us and along on the sides of the old breastworks of Johnson's Division, were torn and shattered by minie balls. The enemy would take shelter sometimes behind the captured works, which formed an acute angle with the line we occupied

and several times during the day I saw pine saplings perhaps six or eight inches in diameter, finally bend, break and fall, from the fire of musketry aimed at the top of the breastworks. From some point along this line, the stump of a white oak, perhaps ten inches or more in diameter, that was cut down in this way, during the day, was taken up by the Federal forces after the battle and carried to Washington, and is there now preserved to show the effect of the musketry fire. There was not a moment, as I now remember, from daylight in the morning until long after dark that the battle did not rage in this horse shoe. The fire of the enemy's artillery from the higher ground near the toe of the horse shoe, and also from the right where Hill's men fought, was terrific the entire day. Just after a severe cannonading, I heard General Daniel, who was sitting at the root of a little tree in the rear of my company with watch in hand, say to Captain London: "London, how does this artillery fire compare with the second day at Gettysburg." I do not remember Captain London's reply, but General Daniel continuing, said: "I have been holding my watch and counting the shells as they came into these lines, and part of the time they have averaged more than one hundred to the minute." I do not think I am mistaken in my figures. When night came on, the tired regiments fell asleep upon the wet ground. The men were in no condition to sit up and discuss the losses. We knew that General Daniel had been borne from the field mortally wounded. We knew that two senior Colonels succeeding him in command of the brigade during the day had also fallen, and that when night came on the brigade was in command of Lieutenant-Colonel Jas. T. Morehead, of the Fifty-third Regiment. After the night's sleep, the soldiers looked about them and found that our losses had been terrific.

The next morning we occupied a new intrenched line that had been fortified during the night, by whom I know not, and we were again ready for the enemy. There was little fighting of any consequence along our part of the line until the morning, as I remember, of the 16th, when the enemy advanced just at daylight in heavy forces, but were easily

driven back without much loss on our side. On the 17th or 18th and after the enemy had drawn back their line into the woods, giving up the entire field where the conflict raged on the 12th, I asked permission of Lieutenant Frank Erwin, commanding my company, to pass the picket line and go over into this angle to make observations. It was a bright May day There was no fighting on any part of the line, and by his permission I went. The pickets permitted me to pass, and I went over the breastworks to that portion of the field which had been occupied by our brigade, and then to the right, to the position which had been occupied by Ramseur's Brigade. On my arrival in this angle, I could well see why the enemy had withdrawn their lines. The stench was almost unbearable. There were dead artillery horses in considerable numbers that had been killed on the 10th and in the early morning of the 12th. Along these lines of breastworks where the earth had been excavated to the depth of one or two feet and thrown over, making the breastworks, I found these trenches filled with water (for there had been much rain) and in this water lay the dead bodies of friend and foe commingled, in many instances one lying across the other, and in one or more instances I saw as many as three lying across one another. All over the field lay the dead of both armies by hundreds, many of them torn and mangled by shells. Many of the bodies swollen out of all proportion, some with their guns yet grasped in their hands. Now and then one could be seen covered with a blanket, which had been placed over him by a comrade after he had fallen.

These bodies were decaying. The water was red, almost black with blood. Offensive flies were everywhere. The trees, saplings and shrubs were torn and shattered beyond description; guns, some of them broken, bayonets, canteens and cartridge boxes were scattered about, and the whole scene was such that no pen can, or ever will describe it. I have seen many fields after severe conflicts, but no where have I seen anything half so ghastly. I returned to my company and said to old man Thomas Carroll, a private in the company, who was frying meat at the fire, "You would have saved rations by going with me, for I will have no more appe-

tite for a week." On the 19th our corps marched in the afternoon around the enemy's right, crossed one of the prongs of the Mattapony River, and attacked the enemy on his right flank and rear. We carried no artillery, and, as it happened, that which we had hoped would be a successful surprise to the enemy turned out to be a desperate and unsuccessful battle.

We found a large body of fresh troops coming up as reinforcements from Fredericksburg. We attacked them. The engagement began perhaps two hours by sun and lasted until in the night, and under cover of darkness our corps returned to its former position. In this engagement our regiment suffered severely. The Colonel of our regiment, the brave Samuel H. Boyd, was killed while leading a charge. My own company came out of the fight with not an officer nor non-commissioned officer left. In this last charge the writer received a severe wound from which he has never entirely recovered. The next day the armies commenced a movement toward Richmond, confronting each other and fighting almost daily, which finally culminated in the great battle of Cold Harbor, 3 June, in which battle the enemy received awful punishment, and our regiment again suffered severely. While this battle was raging, I was lying helpless in the Winder Hospital in Richmond, listening to the roar of the guns. After nightfall the wounded began to arrive from the field. I remember how the wounded in my ward lay upon their beds and inquired, as the wounded were brought in from their companies and regiments, as to the result of the battle and as to friends engaged. There I first learned of the death of Major Smith. The ward masters and nurses were principally composed of disabled men, assigned to light duty. I remember that about 10 o'clock that night, a man was brought in from an ambulance upon a stretcher, and when brought to the light, was found to be the only brother of our ward master, and mortally wounded. The next morning I learned of the death of a dear friend and school mate, a member of Manly's Battery, M. F. Cummins. He was shot through the head while mounted on the breastworks, cap in hand, watching the effect of a shell fired from his gun; a brave, gallant fellow. Soon after this battle, the regiment was sent

to join General Early, and with his command marched down the Valley, crossing the Potomac about 5 or 6 July, and had a severe engagement with the enemy's forces, commanded by General Lew Wallace, near Monocacy Junction. The regiment marched from there to the suburbs of Washington and lay there for a day or two drinking water from the spring of Hon. Montgomery Blair, and, as the boys afterwards told me, they *interfered* with the milk and butter in his spring house, but this is hearsay and therefore not evidence. On 14 July the command recrossed the Potomac with quite a number of prisoners and camped about Martinsburg and Winchester for some time, occasionally skirmishing with the enemy until 19 September, when Sheridan advanced with an overwhelming force and attacked Early's Corps, driving it from the field. In this battle our division lost its commander, General R. E. Rodes. He was a superb officer and beloved by every man in his division. The army retreated to Fisher's Hill, where it was again attacked on 22 September, both of its flanks turned, resulting in a disastrous rout. On this occasion, as I was afterwards informed by the men of my regiment, the regiment held a position across the turnpike, which it maintained after the troops both on the right and left had fallen back, and retired in good order but not till it became apparent that to remain longer would result in its capture. The courage and fortitude of the regiment on this disastrous day served the purpose of holding back the enemy and covering the retreat of the army. It was on this occasion that Colonel John R. Winston, coming up the pike with his regiment in the rear of the retreating army, was accosted by one of his soldiers, who was lying on the roadside disabled by a wound, and who pleaded with his Colonel not to leave him to fall into the hands of the enemy. He rode to where he was lying, reached down and took him by the hand, pulled him to his feet, removed his own foot from the stirrup of his saddle, assisted the soldier in placing his foot in the empty stirrup, lifted him into his lap and brought him off the field.

The army fell back to Cedar Creek, where it remained until 19 October. On the night of the 18th the regiment participated in the flank movement which resulted in the

rout of Sheridan's army in the early morning of the 19th, which splendid victory in the early morning was turned into a disgraceful defeat later in the day, through the inexcusable blunder of some one. This ended Early's campaign in the Valley. Later in the fall the brigade returned to Lee's army and took a position in the line engaged in the defense of Petersburg. Here it remained through the winter of 1864 and 1865 in the trenches, almost continually under fire. The regiment had suffered severely during the Valley campaign and by the spring of 1865 had become a mere skeleton.

During the month of March, the regiment occupied a position a little to the right of Petersburg and just to the left of Fort Mahone and near the Crater. Just in front of the left of the regiment stood Fort Steadman which the boys called Fort "Hell," a powerful earthwork of the enemy.

On the night of 25 March, the regiment participated in an assault upon Fort Steadman directed by General Gordon, and again suffered severely. Hence Proctor, a private in my company, was one of the skirmishers who first entered the fort about daybreak. Inside of the fort bomb proofs were occupied by officers and men. Hence was a fine soldier, full of fight and fun. He poked his head into one of these bomb proofs, and called out with ugly words, to give emphasis to his command, "Come out of there. I know you are in there." He wore long hair. An officer, startled by this unexpected command, sprang out of his berth in his night clothes, snatched his saber from its scabbard, seized Hence by the foretop and commenced to slash him about the head with his saber. Hence backed out of the bomb proof, the officer continuing his hold, coming out with him. On getting outside in the open, the fight became an unequal one. Hence's fixed bayonet on the end of his gun while thus held by the hair, was no match for the saber in the hands of his adversary, and but for timely aid from one of his comrades, he would have been quickly overcome. As it was, he came out of the fight with many gashes on his head and face. The assault upon the fort was unsuccessful.

Along the line of works we occupied we had but one man to five or six feet, an ordinary skirmish line. On the morn-

ing of 2 April, just before daylight, the enemy advanced upon our works in massed columns; brushed aside the *chevaux de frise*, cutting the chains that linked the parts together with axes, and poured over the line occupied by a part of Battle's and a part of our brigade. Then commenced a struggle which, to my mind, was the most desperate of all the war, and which lasted until into the night. Our main line of works stood about four feet high, and was very strong. In the rear of, and at right angles with the line, had been built traverses, made by building log pens about five feet high and filling them with earth. They extended back perhaps forty or fifty feet. The purpose of these traverses was to protect the men, standing in line, from the enfilading artillery fire from Fort Steadman away to our left. There was just room enough between the end of these traverses and the main line for a man to pass. When the enemy broke over the line they filled the spaces between these traverses, the traverses being about 200 feet apart. About 200 yards in the rear of this line had been placed batteries of heavy howitzers, which, up to this time, had been masked to conceal them from the enemy. As these traverses filled, with the Federal troops, these batteries in the rear opened upon them with grape and canister. Major-General Bryan Grimes commanded our division, and I need not say that at this perilous moment he was with the men at the point of greatest danger, for he was always at such places. All day long the men of this division fought between these traverses, slowly yielding one after another when compelled to do so by overwhelming forces. The fire from the enemy's artillery up and down the line was concentrated on our struggling troops.

Huge mortar shells, 12 inches in diameter, came plunging down, sometimes exploding between these traverses and sometimes burying themselves in the earth and harmlessly bursting six feet under ground. Long before noon all of our batteries had been silenced, and the conflict on our side was maintained by infantry alone. I saw the men of my regiment load their guns behind the traverses, climb to the top, fire down into the ranks of the enemy, roll off and reload and repeat the same throughout the day. While in the midst of

this din of battle, time after time they would send up the old time defiant rebel yell. Late in the evening, I asked Matt. Secrest, of my company, whose cheeks from the corner of his mouth to his ears were almost black as lampblack from the frequent tearing of cartridges, how many rounds he thought he had fired. His answer was: "I know from the number of times I have replenished my supply of cartridges that I have fired more than 200 rounds."

It was a matter of surprise to us during the day that we did not receive reinforcements. We did not know that our lines were broken throughout their length and that every soldier in the army of General Lee was doing five men's work, but it was a fact. In the afternoon, the Petersburg battalion of Junior Reserves, composed of boys without beard, were sent to our assistance and fought like veterans. At last, night came, and under cover of darkness the army that had been so long engaged in defending the gallant little city, retired from its lines crossed the Appomattox and started on the long retreat which ended at Appomattox Court House. If General Grant had succeeded in successfully breaking through our lines at Fort Mahone, he would have cut the army in two, and the war would have ended at Petersburg instead of Appomattox Court House. I have recently been along the lines at Petersburg, and it now seems to me a mystery how those lines were maintained so long with so few defenders.

The rest of my story is short. We fell back to Amelia Court House on the old Richmond & Danville road, where we expected to draw rations. It is hard to imagine our disappointment when we ascertained at this point that by some cruel mistake, the train loaded with provisions for our sustenance had gone through to Richmond and was in the hands of the enemy.

On 6 April, we started toward Lynchburg. Shortly after sunrise we were attacked by Sheridan on our left flank, and all day long we retreated and fought and fought and retreated, arriving at Farmville after night, leaving thousands of prisoners in the hands of the enemy. We continued our retreat on the 7th and 8th with little fighting. On the night of the 8th we camped in the woods near the village of Appomattox, and

before day the next morning again started on the march toward Lynchburg. Our division, commanded by General Grimes, marched up the red road through the little village, passed the Court House and halted and formed a line of battle just behind the crest of a ridge that lay at right angles with the road. As soon as the line was established, the division was ordered forward in line of battle, no enemy in sight. As we reached the top of the hill, we were greeted with a fire of artillery and infantry. We did just what we had always done before; raised a shout and made a dash at Sheridan's line. The line was broken, of course, and his troops driven from the field. The division was halted and the men lay down to rest awaiting further orders. It was a supreme moment, and the fate of that division rested with General Lee, the man, who was almost worshipped by his soldiers. It was for him to say whether the conflict should there end or whether the remnant of his army should close the last scene of the mighty drama, by submitting to annihilation. In the kindness of his great heart, he determined that his soldiers had done enough, and he yielded to "overwhelming numbers and resources." During the seven days' retreat many of the regiments of that army had not eaten what was sufficient for one full day's rations. The ceremonies and capitulation having ended, the men returned to their homes. The course pursued by these scarred veterans during years following that surrender, in helping to build up waste places and establish stable government, in the Southern States, is a part of the country's history, and is as glorious as were their actions on the field. I venture to say that the conduct of the Confederate soldiers since the war, in submitting to its results, in bearing the burdens of taxation to raise enormous sums of money, with which to pay pensions to their old enemies, and all without scarcely a murmur, finds no parallel in the history of the human race.

The foregoing sketch has been written from time to time, between pressing professional engagements. I greatly regret that it had not been written years ago, while facts might have been furnished by the actors, most of whom are now dead.

I trust I may be permitted to say that my name does not appear, as Second Sergeant of Company K, in the Roster, published some years since, while the name of C. B. Mabson, Second Sergeant, does.

Some people do not believe in bad luck. I do.

CYRUS B. WATSON.

WINSTON, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.

NOTE.

On 19 May, 1901, I attended the unveiling of a monument by the survivors of the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, on the battle field of 19 May, 1864, the thirty-seventh anniversary of the battle. I here met about sixty-five of the said survivors, some of them attended by wives and daughters. I spent a day or two with them and at their request took part in the ceremonies and delivered a short address. This regiment fought immediately in front of the Forth-fifth North Carolina, and the conflict was bloody. The monument bears the following inscription:

"IN COMMEMORATION OF THE DEEDS OF THE FIRST REGIMENT
HEAVY ARTILLERY,
MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEERS.

Three hundred and ninety-eight of whose members fell within an hour around this spot during an action, May 19th, 1864, between a division of the Union Army commanded by General Tyler, and a corps of the Confederate forces under General Ewell.

Erected by the survivors of the Regiment.

1901."

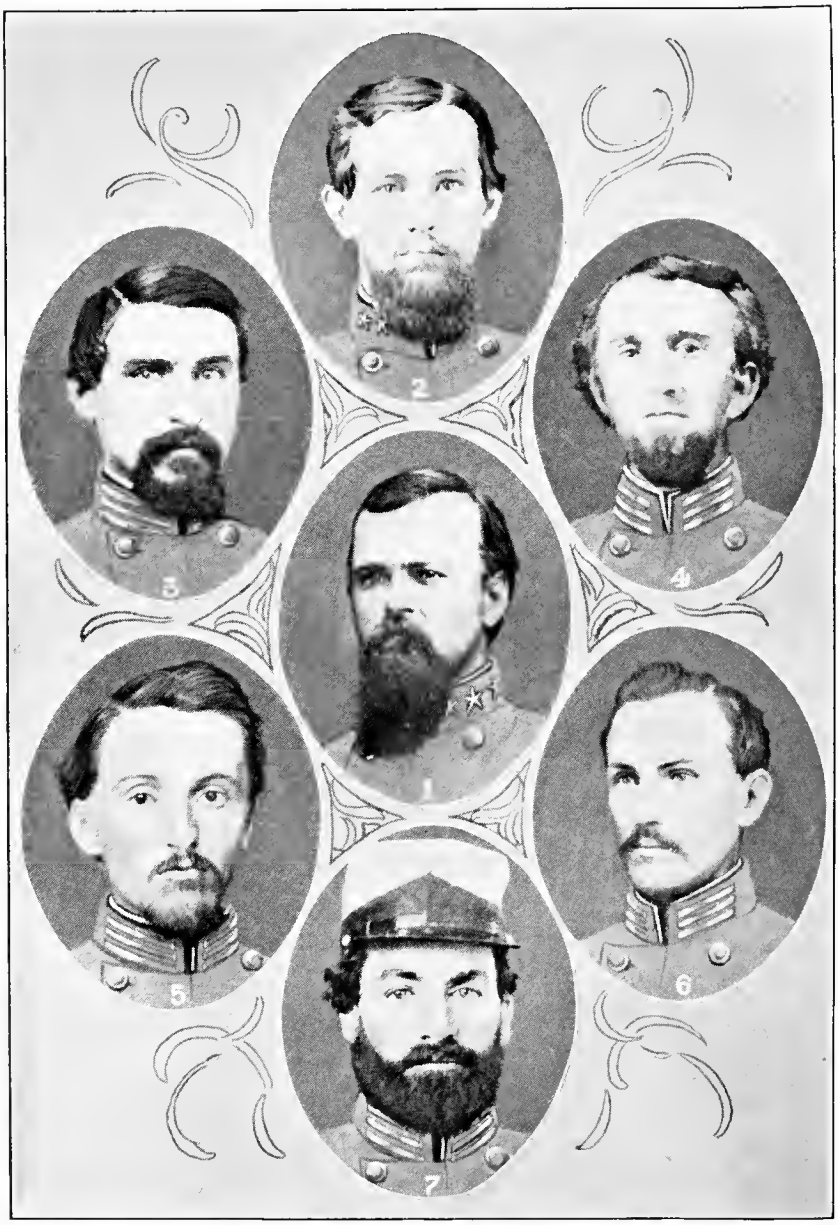
Together with these gallant men of New England I went over every part of the field and was surprised to find how familiar the fields, woods and houses appeared.

I also went into the Bloody Angle about a mile distant, and had no difficulty in finding the places where the regiment fought for days and nights. The fortifications are preserved without change all round the horse shoe. The old

McCool house is just as it was thirty-seven years ago, the weatherboards perforated with bullets; the Harrison house almost ready to fall down from neglect; the trees that suffered during the battles are mostly down or dead, yet quite a number living, with marks of bullets and shells healed over, but plainly visible. There is considerable growth of younger pine trees. I brought away three blocks from a dead pine, with bullets embedded in two and a grape shot in another, which lies almost at the spot where the brave General Daniel fell. Another section from the preserved heart of the dead pine, too large for me to bring away, had nine bullets in it, partly concealed by the wood that had grown around them in the effort of the tree to outlive its injuries; many of the wounded trees seem to have recently died. It seems that after the armies left this dreadful angle, the dead of both armies were buried in shallow graves, or rather covered with earth, and the ground in the pine woods along these trenches plainly shows where the remains had since been removed. The survivors of Daniel's brigade should erect a monument on the spot where he fell.

C. B. WATSON.

3 June, 1901.



FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. W. L. Saunders, Colonel.
2. A. C. McAllister, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. R. A. Bost, Captain, Co. K.
4. Robt. Preston Troy, Captain, Co. G.
5. J. R. Heflin, Captain, Co E.
6. O. W. Carr, Captain, Co. G.
7. Adolphus Theodorus Bost, Captain, Co. K.

FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

By J. M. WADDILL, Second Lieutenant, Company B.

Well may North Carolina be proud of the part taken by her sons in the war between the States—proud of the large number of full regiments furnished, and of the promptness and willingness with which they were kept full, as shot, shell and saber thinned their ranks; proud of their gallantry on the battle field, of their patient endurance in camp and on the march; of their steadiness and reliability under all circumstances. Truly she has good cause to be proud of her sons. But of the long list of gallant regiments which marched away from her soil, none shed greater luster on the mother State than the Forty-sixth (Infantry) the subject of this sketch.

Others may have been as brave, others as patient and true, but few, if any, united all these virtues, which, combined with the perfect harmony prevailing among its officers and men all through those bloody years, entitle it to a topmost place in the record of the many faithful ones.

The writer (a boy in the early 60's) has little more than memory to rely on in outlining the experiences of his regiment. A third of a century casts a mist of uncertainty about even these historic events of the long ago, which is his apology for any errors as to dates, or other inaccuracies which may appear.

Promoted to the line from the Quartermaster's Department after much of the history of the Forty-sixth was made, he gives, prior to that event, the story as heard from participants, not having been an eye-witness of some of the facts narrated.

The many acts of individual gallantry, then so brilliant and conspicuous, have in large measure, faded from his memory, leaving but a shadowy recollection of a group of heroes,

bound together as a band of brothers, vieing with eath other on the battlefield, affectionately helping each other on the march and in camp, or tenderly caring for each other in the hospital.

The memory, indistinct though it be, of the daily, hourly sacrifices of these gallant ones brings even now the tears to his eyes as he recalls how, on the weary march, the last crust or the blood warm contents of the canteen were divided with those less fortunate—how, in the winter, on the bleak hill-sides of Virginia, those begrimed, unkempt knights sat in the blinding smoke about the camp fires, all through the long nights, lest if they lay on the threadbare blankets they should be frozen at reveille—and above all, how those thin, grey lines marched gallantly to their death in unbroken, unwavering ranks, closing up the gaps made by shot and shell, as they rushed onward to their graves.

Grand and glorious record is that of the hosts of the South which emblazons the page of history with a brilliancy surpassed only by that bloodless, but no less heroic battle of life, when returned to their blasted homes, they began the struggle for bread and raiment for loved ones, absolutely empty handed.

What success has crowned their efforts is best illustrated in the well-filled barns, the numberless tall factory chimneys, and the busy marts of numerous populous cities all over the once Southern Confederacy.

ORGANIZATION OF THE REGIMENT.

The Forty-sixth North Carolina Infantry had its birth in March, 1862, at Camp Mangum, a camp of rendezvous and instruction four miles from Raleigh, and was composed of ten companies, as follows:

COMPANY A—*From Robeson County*—Captain, R. M. Norment.

COMPANY B—*From Rowan and Burke*—Captain, W L. Saunders.

COMPANY C—*From Warren*—Captain W A. Jenkins.

COMPANY D—*From Richmond*—Captain, Calvin Stewart.

COMPANY E—*From Granville*—Captain, R. J Mitchell.

COMPANY F—*From Randolph*—Captain, A. C. McAlister.
COMPANY G—*From Randolph*—Captain, R. P Troy.
COMPANY H—*From Moore*—Captain, N. McK. McNeill.
COMPANY I—*From Sampson*—Captain, Owen Holmes.
COMPANY K—*From Catawba*—Captain, A. T. Bost.

The organization of the field and staff was as follows:

E. D. HALL, Colonel, Wilmington.
W A. JENKINS, Lieutenant-Colonel, Warrenton.
R. J. MITCHELL, Major, Oxford.
S. T. GREEN, Surgeon, Warren county
V O. THOMPSON, Assistant Surgeon, Warren county.
J A. MARSH, Quartermaster, Randolph county.
G. HOLMES, Commissary, Sampson county.
RICHARD MALLETT, Adjutant, Cumberland county.
T. S. TROY, Sergeant-Major, Randolph county.
J M. WADDILL, Quartermaster Sergeant, Warrenton.
O. P SHELL, Commissary Sergeant, Warrenton.
T. C HUSSEY, Hospital Steward, Missouri.

The changes occurring in the composition of the field and staff from the organization until the final end at Appomattox were as follows:

RESIGNATIONS—Colonel E. D. Hall, November, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel W A. Jenkins, August, 1863; Major R. J Mitchell, June, 1862; S. T. Green, Surgeon, ———; J. A. Marsh, Quartermaster, March, 1864; Major R. M. Norment, 11 September, 1862.

DEATHS—Lieutenant Richard Mallett, killed August, 1863.

PROMOTIONS—Captain W L. Saunders, Company B, to be Major, 1 October, 1862; to be Lieutenant-Colonel, 1 January, 1863; to be Colonel, 1 January, 1864; Captain R. M. Norment, Company A, to be Major, 4 August, 1862; Captain A. C. McAlister, Company F, to be Major, 1 January, 1864; to be Lieutenant-Colonel about June, 1863; Captain N McK. McNeill, Company H, to be Major, 18 March, 1864; Surgeon Jenkins, of Charleston, S. C. appointed surgeon upon the resignation of Surgeon S. T. Green; Sergeant-

Major T. S. Troy, to be Second Lieutenant of Company F., succeeded by T. W Wright, of Wilmington; Quartermaster-Sergeant, J. M. Waddill, to be Second Lieutenant Company B. September, 1864.

For a few weeks after its organization the regiment remained at Camp Mangum, receiving instruction in the art of war at the hands of sundry drill masters, removing thence to Goldsboro, N C., when after a stay of a few weeks it was hurried to Richmond, Va., arriving there on the day of the battle of Seven Pines.

Near Richmond the Forty-sixth was brigaded with the following commands, under Brigadier-General J. G. Walker, as follows: Twenty-seventh North Carolina Regiment, Forty-eighth North Carolina Regiment, Third Arkansas Regiment, Thirtieth Virginia Regiment, Second Georgia Battalion, Cooper's Battery of Artillery.

Previous to the Seven Days battles the regiment was stationed at Drewry's Bluff in support of the batteries at that place, when it was recalled to Richmond and sent to strengthen the army already engaged in the struggle with McClellan, which resulted in that officer's now historic "Change of Base."

During these trying days the regiment was but little under fire, being usually in reserve, though it sustained a few casualties at Malvern Hill from the shells of the gunboats in the river.

Pending the removal of the Federal army to its new field of operations in Maryland, the Forty-sixth occupied various positions around Richmond, mainly at Hanover Junction.

The larger portion of the Confederate army had proceeded northward before marching orders were received to follow, and thus was lost the opportunity of a participation in the brilliant victory at Second Manassas.

Following the main body, the regiment marched toward Rapidan Station, where it bivouacked for some days—thence on toward Culpepper, encamping on the battlefield of Cedar Run; thence on to Warrenton, passing over the field of Second Manassas, over which lay scattered hundreds of dead bodies, rotting in the sun—thence to Leesburg and beyond,

crossing the Potomac at "The Upper Ford" to the music of "My Maryland" from hundreds of soldiers' throats.

At Buckeyetown, Md., a halt was made, at which place the tired and footsore men rested for three days, moving thence to Frederick City, Md. Thence the regiment moved at night, in a southeasterly direction, for the destruction of something in the nature of an acqueduct or canal lock (the Monocacy Bridge), but exactly what it was, few in the regiment knew, as the night was pitch dark and the country totally unknown.

Nothing was accomplished, however, and at dawn a hurried movement southward, was begun, continuing all day and far into the succeeding night, when the Potomac was again crossed at a ford near Point-of-Rocks just before daylight. This ford will ever be remembered as one of the many impossibilities (?) triumphed over by Lee's foot cavalry.

The chill of the water, the multitude of boulders which literally covered the bottom of the river, coupled with the depth of the stream (which came to the shoulders of the shorter men) all served to impress this bit of experience indelibly upon the memories of those who took that early morning dip.

Here, in the early gray of the dawn, by some mistake, the Forty-sixth received a volley from one of General Ransom's regiments, resulting in a few minor casualties.

Having rested for a day on the Virginia shore, line of march was taken up for Harper's Ferry, where the regiment took part in the operations, resulting in the surrender of that stronghold with 11,000 prisoners, with slight loss to the Confederates.

From Harper's Ferry the command moved to Shepherdstown, Va., arriving on 16 September, crossed immediately over into Maryland and was once more united with the Army of Northern Virginia.

In the great battle of the 17th, near Sharpsburg, Md., the Forty-sixth bore a conspicuous part, calling forth from the division commander especial mention of its gallant colonel and staff for distinguished bravery and coolness under fire, as well as for the line, which received the shock of battle like veterans of an hundred fields.

It was said by an eye-witness of one of the charges of the Forty-sixth, in which a force of the enemy was driven from its position and his guns captured, that "he hoped for their own sakes that the Forty-sixth North Carolina would soon learn the difference between the deliberation of a dress parade and a charge over an open field in the face of largely superior numbers." During the day the regiment occupied several different positions of importance and great danger, in which on every occasion it exhibited that steadiness and coolness which was to characterize its record all through the eventful years to follow. Space allotted to this sketch forbids details of this or other engagements in which the regiment participated. The losses for the day aggregated about eighty, being fully one-fourth of the number in line. It is proper to explain, in view of the small number of men in line at Sharpsburg, that this was the first forced march undertaken by the regiment, and in the mad rush from Harper's Ferry to Sharpsburg, many of the men were physically unequal to the task and fell by the wayside from exhaustion, rejoining the regiment, some during the engagement, others coming up during the next two or three days.

The Potomac was again crossed on the night of 18 September with the army in perfect order, and position taken up near Martinsburg, where for several days the men were engaged in destroying railway tracks and bridges in that vicinity.

The next stop of importance was at Winchester, where a stay of two or three weeks was made. Here, in this then land of plenty, the men revelled in the best of fresh beef, vegetables, fruits, not forgetting the honey, needing nothing for the stomach's sake, save "salt," which commanded a price near its weight in gold.

A short time after Sharpsburg General J. G. Walker, who had commanded the brigade, was promoted to a division in the West, and Brigadier-General John R. Cooke was assigned to the command and held this position to the close of the war.

The men of the Forty-sixth parted with General Walker with unusual regret, having learned, in the brief period in which he commanded the brigade, to regard him with the

highest esteem, for his care of the force under his command, as well as for his courage and coolness under the most trying conditions.

General Cooke assumed command of the brigade almost a stranger to the men of the Forty-sixth, and many a doubt was expressed as to the ability of "that kid" (as he was at first called) to handle the brigade, being almost boyish in his appearance.

A year or less thereafter all doubts had vanished, for "that kid" had proven his ability on many occasions. It is doubtful if any general officer in the army, with the exception of Lee and Jackson, was more beloved by the men of his command than was John R. Cooke. Young, brave, generous and kindly in his dealings with officers and men, there ever existed the strongest ties between commander and men, which lasted to the end. No braver cavalier ever rode to death than General Cooke.

From Winchester the next move was down the valley and through Ashby's Gap, encamping for several days at Upperville, on the top of the Blue Ridge.

From Upperville, on 31 October, the command moved in the direction of Culpepper Court House, stopping for a brief rest at Orleans.

Marching by easy stages, pausing here and there for a day or two, the regiment made its way to Fredericksburg, arriving in front of that place 22 November. The last five days was a forced march in a continuous downpour of rain.

The experiences of the men on this march across Virginia were very severe—poorly clad, many barefooted—little or no camp equipage and with an almost unprecedented spell of bad weather, all conspired to the utterance of some bad language, which history does not require should be reproduced literally.

From 22 March to 11 December the regiment remained in camp two or three miles from Fredericksburg, when it took position at the foot of the heights fronting the little city, and immediately behind the stone wall on Marye's Heights.

Here it awaited the attack of Burnside, and bore a full share in that historic slaughter. In comparative security,

protected by the wall about breast high, all day long it shot down the brave men who charged again and again across the level plain in front, vainly yet most gallantly striving to accomplish an impossibility. The loss in the regiment in killed and wounded during the day was seventy-one. Among the wounded was Colonel W L. Saunders, shot by a minie ball through the mouth. It was related by those near the Colonel, that during a lull in the firing, he was enjoying a hearty laugh at some remark when the minie entered the wide open mouth, making its exit through the cheek. It was said to have been the most abruptly ended laugh heard during the war.

Among the lamented dead in this engagement was Lieutenant Samuel P Weir, a young officer of great promise—a gentleman and a Christian.

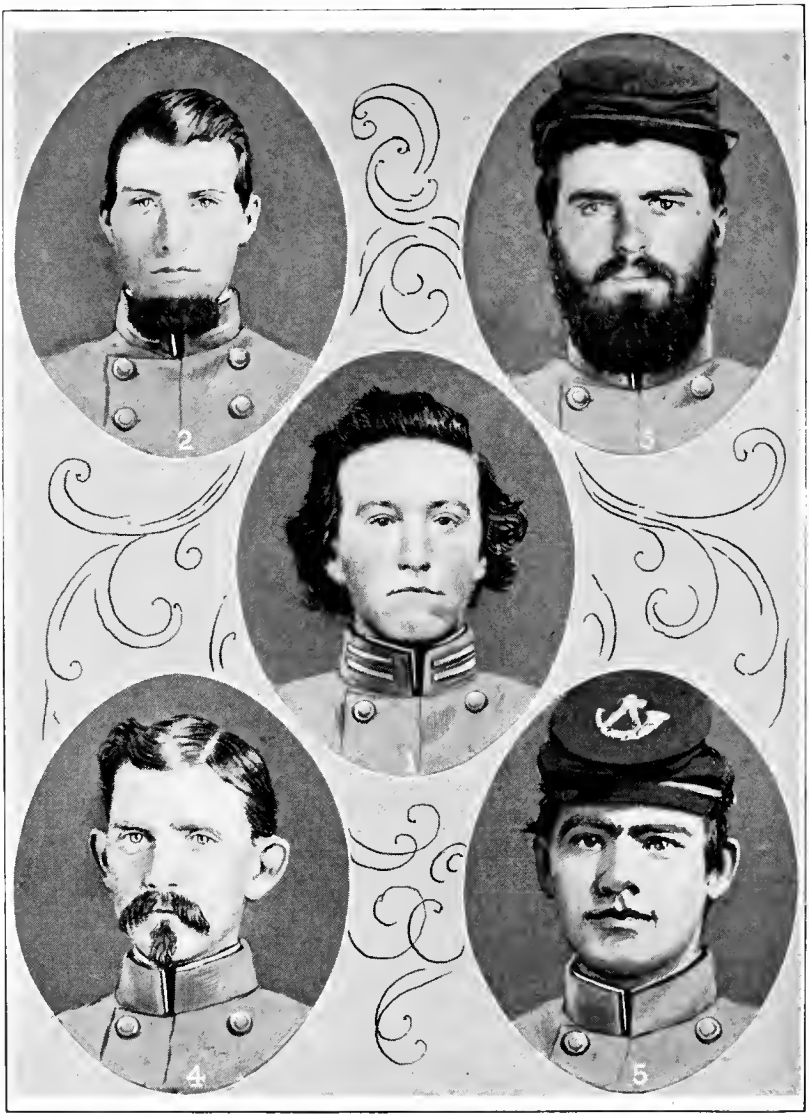
The command remained in front of Fredericksburg until 3 January, 1863, when orders were received to move to a new camp ground, a mile away, which had been carefully prepared the day before.

Accordingly, the men moved the next morning loaded down with rude benches, tables, tubs, etc.—such accumulation of conveniencies as come, no one knows how, in a camp of some days. Instead of moving a mile, as was expected, the next stop with any semblance of permanency was at Holly Shelter near Wilmington, N. C., which found the men in much lighter marching order, having laid aside their burdens of benches, buckets, tables, etc. Holly Shelter proved a haven of repose after the Virginia campaign. Some weeks were spent in this vicinity, the time being divided between Holly Shelter, Burgaw and Wilmington.

From this agreeable stay the regiment was called to Charleston, S. C., on 8 April, where a stay of a few days was made at the "Four Mile House," whence the command moved to Pocataligo, S. C., a camp dubbed by the regimental wit as "The Devil's Misery Hole."

Insects in millions invaded the camp by day and night, developing a biting and stinging power hitherto unknown to the up-country men composing the regiment.

Rations were scarce and Commissary Sergeant Shell made



FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. Thomas Troy, Lieutenant, Co. G.
2. Henry C. Latta, 2d Lieut., Co. E. (Killed at Petersburg, Nov. 12, 1864.)
3. W. C. Bain, Sergeant, Co. G.
4. James A. Crews, Sergeant, Co. E.
5. C. R. Thomasson, Private, Co. E.

affidavit before Sergeant-Major Troy that "thirteen typical South Carolina cattle yielded only eleven hundred pounds of blue beef."

With shouts of joy, the regiment bade adieu to Pocataligo about 20 April, proceeding to Topsail Sound, near Wilmington, where the usual army ration was totally disregarded for the luscious oyster, to be had in the sound for the getting.

8 May camp was broken and the regiment moved to Goldsboro, from whence it took a bloodless part in the Kinston campaign.

6 June the command left North Carolina for Virginia, where it was stationed near Hanover Junction.

Various camps were occupied near Richmond, the brigade being stationed here for the protection of the city, while the main army marched to Gettysburg.

Nothing of interest occurred here except a most brilliant engagement at South Anna bridge, between Company B, of the Forty-sixth, supporting a battery, and a force of Union cavalry, about 6 July, in which that company covered itself with glory. Thirty-three fresh graves were counted on the Federal position of the engagement. Loss in Company B, four killed and ten wounded.

Late in July, 1863, found the regiment near Fredericksburg, where it remained until 30 August. During this time the death of Adjutant Mallett, at the hands of deserters from another regiment, whom he was endeavoring to arrest, cast a gloom over the entire regiment.

This gallant young officer had endeared himself to every member of the regiment by his excellent bearing in the field, as well as the genial good nature manifested in his daily duties in camp. A detail under Lieutenant Mallett had been sent in pursuit of the party of deserters. By some means he became separated from most of his small force and coming up with the refugees he, with his usual fearlessness, rode up to them, demanding their surrender, when one of the party shot the noble fellow dead.

1 September, 1863, the regiment bade a final adieu to Fredericksburg, proceeding by the way of Guinea's Station to Taylorsville, where it remained some days, when on 25 Sep-

tember orders were received to repair to Gordonsville, where a quiet sojourn was had until 9 October, removing on that day to Madison Court House, this being the first day's march in the fatal flank movement to Bristoe. On this date Cooke's brigade (now composed of North Carolina regiments, as follows, Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth, Forty-eighth and Fifty-fifth) was attached to General Harry Heth's Division, and was thus attached until the close. The Division was composed of following brigades: Cooke's North Carolina, Kirkland's North Carolina, Davis' Mississippi, Archer's Tennessee, Walker's Virginia. Heth's Division formed a part of A. P Hill's Corps, composed of the divisions of Heth, Wilcox and Anderson.

From 9 to 14 October the command made a series of most difficult marches over the ridges and across the rapid running streams which characterize the foothills of the Blue Ridge—in the effort to reach Manassas ahead of Meade, who was being pressed toward that point by General Lee.

Much of the distance was covered at night, over such roads as language fails to describe.

On the morning of 14 October, Cooke's Brigade took the advance and in the afternoon struck the Union forces in a strong position behind the railway embankment at Bristoe Station, with a number of field guns on the eminence in the rear. Before any support came up General Cooke, under orders, immediately attacked with great gallantry. In the charge made by this devoted brigade, the gallant Cooke fell, shot in the forehead, when the command devolved on Colonel E. D. Hall, of the Forty-sixth.

The unequal struggle was waged, with no result, save the loss of valuable lives; indeed a disaster was only averted by a rapid change of front by the Forty-sixth under Colonel Hall's immediate lead by which the enemy's left flank movement was checked. This movement, made under a heavy fire from both infantry and artillery, elicited great praise, and added new laurels to the record of the Forty-sixth for steadiness and deliberation. The effort to dislodge the enemy from his position proving futile, the command was withdrawn in good or-

der, out of rifle shot, which position it held until the next morning, by which time the enemy had disappeared.

It was said that General Lee most severely criticised General A. P Hill for this blunder—that of sending a force of only two small brigades (Cooke's and Kirkland's) against overwhelming odds strongly intrenched, with ten or twelve regiments in reserve, who never fired a gun. Such a course was then, and is yet unaccountable, on the part of a commanding officer of undeniable ability.

In this unfortunate affair the Forty-sixth had about sixty casualties—the configuration of the ground over which it fought only saving it from a much severer loss.

On 18 October the command crossed the Rappahannock on pontoons, which were necessary, the river being much swollen, and went into what was at the time supposed to be winter quarters.

About this time the Forty-sixth lost its brilliant Colonel, E. D. Hall, who resigned to accept a civil office in North Carolina. Col. Hall had brought the regiment up to a high standard in every respect—a brave man, a good disciplinarian, the service lost, in his resignation, a most valuable and efficient officer—and it was with much regret that his regiment bade him farewell. On the hillside, near the Rapidan, huts were built and the men proceeded to make themselves comfortable, but the hope of a winter's rest was rudely dissipated by being suddenly ordered, on 8 November, to a position two miles from Culpepper Court House to oppose Meade's threatened advance, who had already captured a large portion of Hoke's and Hayes' Brigades. Expectations of a general engagement were not realized, and 12 November found the Forty-sixth in camp near Rapidan Station, on the south bank of the river, from which on 27 of November it again moved to confront Meade at Mine Run. Here the army entrenched and awaited the attack, which never came. The artillery was at times engaged, and there were a few casualties in the brigade, but no loss in the Forty-sixth.

From this date until 8 February, 1864, the regiment occupied its winter quarters near Rapidan, the monotony varied

by one or two bloodless and brief expeditions to the left wing of the army, caused by Federal cavalry demonstrations.

On 8 February, new quarters near Orange Court House having been constructed, the command again moved. This camp was the best yet occupied, in a well-wooded and watered section, and the severe winter of 1863-'64—what remained of it—was spent here in comparative comfort.

The monotony here was unbroken by any event worth recording save possibly the great battle of "The Snow," which took place on 23 March, the snow being about fifteen inches deep and is thus chronicled. On the morning of this eventful day, the Twenty-seventh North Carolina challenged to mortal combat the Forty-sixth North Carolina. As the two regiments were getting into position, a long line of gray skirmishers from the direction of Kirkland's camp announced the fact that Cooke's command was to defend itself from the onslaught of that gallant brigade. Hastily sending word to the other Cooke regiments to come to the support, the Twenty-seventh and Forty-sixth rushed upon Kirkland.

For an hour the fight raged furiously, ending in the utter rout of the brave Kirklandites who were driven pell mell out of their quarters, the victors appropriating to their own use and behoof all the cooking utensils to be found therein. That evening orders were issued to company commanders to see that all such utensils were promptly returned.

Diligent search was made, but as every man found in possession of a cooking vessel vowed that "he had owned it for many months," it is doubtful if a single article was ever returned.

The Kirkland men being dissatisfied, sent a formal challenge to Cooke, for a "settlement" the next day, which was had in a ceremonious way in presence of an immense crowd of onlookers, including a number of general officers with their staffs from other commands.

The result was disastrous in the extreme, to Cooke's command, which was utterly routed, losing nearly one-half its officers and men as prisoners of war, who were confined and informed that they would be detained until the "skillets" were produced, but the approach of night and the increasing cold frustrated this purpose and all hands returned to their

huts, good friends. A number of minor casualties resulted from this wholesale fun, but only one of a serious nature.

On 30 March, Governor Z. B. Vance addressed the brigade, closing with a series of anecdotes, which sent the men to their quarters in excellent good humor. It was observed that the Governor did not once allude to Holden and his adherents, these being the then absorbing topics in North Carolina.

The months of March and April witnessed a series of revivals of religion throughout the army. It was hoped that the Forty-sixth derived great and lasting good from these meetings, more to be prized than any earthly blessing.

1 May found the regiment with comparatively full ranks, and by the restored health of the sick and wounded, numbering over 500 strong. The efficient Colonel, W L. Saunders, who had succeeded Colonel Hall, having lent his best energies during the winter to bring it up to a high state of discipline, it marched away from its comfortable quarters on 4 May, 1864, in better condition than ever to meet the trials and struggles of its last and most terrible campaign.

On 5 May, in the dense undergrowth of the "Wilderness," the Union army was encountered—the Forty-sixth being in line immediately on the plank road, Company B being in the road. The record of that day of butchery has often been written. A butchery pure and simple it was, unrelieved by any of the arts of war in which the exercise of military skill and tact robs the hour of some of its horrors. It was a mere slugging match in a dense thicket of small growth, where men but a few yards apart fired through the brushwood for hours, ceasing only when exhaustion and night commanded a rest.

The fight in General Cooke's front was opened by the gallant Wishart with his skirmishers, who in the dense brush, ran right into the enemy before he knew their whereabouts, receiving a volley at but a few paces distance, which laid low more than half our number, including their fearless commander severely wounded.

All during that terrible afternoon, the Forty-sixth held its own, now gaining, now losing—resting at night on the ground over which it had fought, surrounded by the dead and wound-

ed of both sides. Early on the morning of the 6th, the battle was renewed with increased vigor by the enemy who had received reinforcements during the night, and it was not long before the heavier weight of the Union attack began to slowly press back the decimated Confederate line. Matters were assuming a serious aspect when Longstreet's Corps, fresh from the west, with Lee at its head, trotted through the weakened line and forming under fire, soon had the enemy checked, driving him back to his original position. The writer had the pleasure of witnessing this glorious scene—the most soul-inspiring sight the imagination can conceive, and one never to be forgotten.

The night of the 6th the list of casualties was hastily made up—possibly not accurate—as follows: Forty-sixth North Carolina, killed 39, wounded 251, total 290, out of an effective strength of 540 men. The following were instantly killed: Captain N. N Fleming, of Company B; Lieutenant George Horah, of Company B; Lieutenant J. A. B. Blue, of Company H; Lieutenant T. S. Troy, of Company G. Wounded: Colonel W L. Saunders, Captain A. T. Bost, of Company K; Lieutenant F M. Wishart, of Company A; Lieutenant T. G. Jenkins, of Company C.

After the 6th, Grant's famous left flank movement began; the Forty-sixth on the front line almost daily until Appomattox.

On 10 May, the regiment was again engaged at Spottsylvania Court House, where Cooke's Brigade made a most brilliant and successful charge on the enemy's batteries—loss not heavy, except in Company C, (Captain S. W Jones) who lost three killed and eight wounded. Officers wounded: Captain S. W Jones, of Company C; Lieutenant Routh, of Company K, mortally

Again on 12 May was the Forty-sixth engaged—suffering slightly From the 12th to 19th, the Forty-sixth was continuously in line, confronting the enemy—with small loss.

The continual lateral movement of both armies brought them near Mechanicsville, on 28 May, being a series of skirmishings to this date.

On 2 and 3 June the entire brigade did some handsome

work near Mechanicsville, receiving the highest encomiums from the Richmond *Examiner* which was said to have praise only for Virginians.

From 3 to 12 June, the Forty-sixth well entrenched, confronted the enemy at very close quarters—so close that conversation could be carried on between the opposing forces.

12 June, the sidelong movement was resumed. 15 June the regiment was engaged in White Oak Swamp for some hours—losing about twenty-five men. Here it was that Lieutenant Robert A. Small, of Company G, met his death. Few nobler spirits "passed over the river" during those terrible years than that of Lieutenant Small—a Christian and one of nature's noblemen.

18 June the command crossed the James river, above Drewry's Bluff, and occupied a position near Petersburg, in the entrenchments.

The line of march of the regiment, from the beginning of the campaign, was as follows: Along the Fredericksburg turnpike to "The Wilderness"—thence to Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction via Brooke turnpike to new Mechanicsville—thence via "Nine Mile Road," Williamsburg road, Charles City road, Darbytown road, River road, across Drewry's Bluff pontoon bridge to the Richmond and Petersburg turnpike, thence to Petersburg—a path marked at almost every step with blood.

From 19 June to 22 August, the regiment occupied various positions on the front lines near Petersburg, being moved hither and thither as emergency required.

22 August the Forty-sixth took part in a brilliant affair, on the extreme right of the lines, on the Weldon Railway, driving from their works two lines of the enemy, but was checked in its mad rush at the third line by a withering fire of grape and canister—under which a number of gallant spirits sank to rise no more, among others Captain L. Branson, Company F, shot through the body by a grape shot.

25 August, one of the most desperate actions of the year was fought at Reams Station, mainly by Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades. The enemy was strongly fortified with a quantity of artillery. Two brigades of Wilcox's Division had

failed to drive them, when Cooke's and Kirkland's were sent forward, and in a most terrific storm of thunder and lightning, steadily advanced over the field, facing a deadly fire, and with a yell carried everything before them, capturing seven stands of colors, nine guns, 2,100 prisoners and a large quatity of camp equipage.

The bayonet was freely used in this affair, and Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister distinguished himself by his daring in leading the regiment to the muzzles of the cannon.

Loss in the Forty-sixth, seventy-three killed and wounded. Among the wounded were Captain H. R. KcKinney, of Company A; Captain A. T. Bost, of Company K; Captain Troy, of Company G; Lieutenant T. R. Price, of Company C; Lieutenant M. N. Smyer (both eyes shot out); Lieutenant J. W Brock, of Company G.

After Reams Station the regiment returned to the lines around Petersburg, occupying different positions until December, when winter quarters were built on Hatcher's Run, near Burgess' mill, about ten miles from Petersburg and immediately in front of the enemy.

About 7 December took place the famous Bellfield expedition, noted for the suffering endured by the men from cold and exposure, which continued for five days.

From 7 December to 4 February the Forty-sixth remained in winter quarters, with little to vary the monotony.

5 February, 1865, took place the affair at Hatcher's Run, in which the regiment was engaged, with some loss, among the killed being Lieutenant J. W Brock, of Company G, by a shell.

27 February Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister was detached from the regiment and with the writer as Adjutant, assumed command of a force of about six hundred men and was assigned to duty in the counties of Randolph, Chatham, Montgomery and Moore, North Carolina. This force was composed of the Seventh North Carolina, Major James G. Harris commanding, and two companies each from the Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth, Forty-eighth and Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiments, designed for the protection of that section from raiding parties of the enemy, as also to

preserve order in enforcing the Conscript Act. This force was actively employed until General Johnson's army arrived near Greensboro, when it was attached to General D. H. Hill's Division until paroled by General Sherman.

An episode of this bit of service was a lively engagement in the streets of Greensboro with a portion of Wheeler's disorganized cavalry, which undertook to capture the Government stores in the warehouses, and incidentally the town generally The cavalry was driven out, but not without a number of casualties to both sides.

By reason of the above mentioned detail service, the writer can give no particulars of the regiment's experience from Petersburg to Appomattox from personal knowledge. Those whose duties kept them at the front near Petersburg state that the morning when Lee's lines near Hatcher's Run were broken, the Forty-sixth, with the balance of Cooke's Brigade, retired in its usual good order.

On the retreat to Appomattox its experiences were those of the army generally, continued fighting and starvation. Ever ready to do its duty, no apparent disaster, however great it seemed, shook its steady column, and up to the supreme moment at Appomattox its unity was preserved, its men, those whom the bullet and disease had spared, answering promptly "here," when the final roll call was had.

At Appomattox the remnant of this band of heroes laid down their arms to take them up no more forever, and the Forty-sixth North Carolina passed into history with not one member who but feels a just pride in its record, upon which rests no blemish. At the surrender the regiment was commanded by Colonel W L. Saunders. Its strength is not recorded, but the whole Cooke's Brigade numbered 70 officers and 490 men. *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* Vol. 95, p. 1278.

Its torn and tattered battle flag which waved in triumph over many a bloody scene, was never lowered until by order of the immortal Lee it was laid down forever, but not in disgrace or shame, for about its folds shone the glories of Malvern Hill, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Bristoe, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Mechanicsville, Cold Har-

bor, White Oak Swamp, Petersburg, Reams Station, Davis' Farm and Hatcher's Run.

Not many remain to tell the story of its bivouacs, marches and battles, its patience and endurance, its hardships and sufferings for three years of hard service Soon none will remain, but its glory is as fadeless as is that of "Lee's Army," whose fortunes and misfortunes it shared to the end.

OFFICERS OF THE FORTY-SIXTH.

(Compiled mainly from memory,)

COMPANY A—R. M. Norment, Captain, promoted, succeeded by Lieutenant H. R. McKinney, a New Yorker by birth, but a staunch believer in States Rights, who served faithfully to the end, wounded several times. The regiment had no more capable or efficient officer. First Lieutenant Frank M. Wishart, for many months, was commander of the regimental skirmish line. (The writer, during the latter months of the war, was intimately associated with Lieutenant Wishart, then Captain of Company B, and testifies to his absolute indifference to danger and his total ignorance of fear, laughing and joking under fire as in camp, always wanting to "get at 'em.") He survived the war only to be treacherously murdered by Henry Berry Lowry. Upon the promotion of Lieut. Wishart to Captaincy of Company B, his brother, Wellington Wishart, became First Lieutenant. He is remembered as the most silent man in the regiment, and as brave as he was silent. Sergeant J. H. Freeman was promoted to be Second Lieutenant and John Hammond from Ensign.

COMPANY B—Captain W L. Saunders having been advanced to a Majority, Lieutenant N. N. Fleming became Captain and served as such until his death on the field at the Wilderness, when Lieutenant Frank M. Wishart, of Company A, was elected Captain, serving in that capacity until the close. Second Lieutenant George Horah, having been advanced to First Lieutenancy, was instantly killed at the Wilderness. Sergeant W B. Lowrance was promoted to Second Lieutenant and was transferred to another regiment. James T. Pearson and John J. Stewart were also promoted to Lieutenant. Quartermaster-Sergeant J M. Waddill was

promoted to be Second Lieutenant, serving as such until sent on detached service under Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister.

COMPANY C—Upon the promotion of Captain W A. Jenkins, Lieutenant Stephen W Jones became Captain, serving gallantly in that capacity until the close. Lieutenants, W A. J Nicholson, Samuel M. Southerland, Leon S. Mabry, Thomas R. Price and Thomas G. Jenkins. The latter two were several times wounded in discharge of duty.

COMPANY D—Captain Colin Stewart was with his company in the one capacity from the organization to the final ending, and (I think) never received a wound. Daniel Stewart and S. M. Thomas were successively First Lieutenant, and Hugh Middleton, Malloy Patterson, John A. McPhail and John W Roper were Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY E—Captain R. J. Mitchell having been promoted to Major, Lieutenant R. L. Heflin became Captain, and later resigned, being succeeded by Lieutenant Jesse F Heflin, who served as Captain until the close—a steady, brave, capable officer, ever at his post, in camp or field. James Meadows, First Lieutenant, resigned and was succeeded by Second Lieutenant J J Walker. James Wheeler, John C. Russell and Henry C Latta became Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY F—Captain A. C. McAlister, promoted to Major, Lieutenant Thomas A. Branson was advanced to Captaincy, losing his life on the field at Davis' Farm, near Petersburg, 1864, when Sergeant M. M. Teague, a gallant young fellow, was promoted Captain. His Lieutenants were J A. Spencer and R. D. McCotter. James A. Marsh, originally First Lieutenant, was made A. Q. M. 17 April, 1862. Samuel P Weir, killed at Fredericksburg, was Second Lieutenant in this company.

COMPANY G—Upon the resignation of Captain R. P Troy, Lieutenant O. W Carr was advanced to Captain, and remained in command until the close—always at the post of duty, alike in the service of his country or his God. Ransom H. Steen, First Lieutenant, was succeeded by R. S. Small, and T. S. Troy, who fell at the Wilderness and was succeeded as Second Lieutenant by J. W Brock, killed at Hatch-

er's Run 5 February, 1865, and Robert W Stinson also killed at Petersburg.

COMPANY H—The promotion of Captain N. McK. McNeill to Major, led to the advance of Lieutenant George Wilcox to a Captaincy, serving until the close. Charles C. Goldston, First Lieutenant, having resigned, J. A. Blue succeeded him and fell at the Wilderness, being succeeded by Lieutenant N A. McNeill, who also shared the fortunes of the company to the end. John N McNeill became Second Lieutenant 3 September, 1863.

COMPANY I—Captain Owen Holmes commanded the company from beginning to the end—was in nearly every engagement, with never a wound, if memory is not at fault. First Lieutenant O. P White has (I think) the same unusual record. John C Wright, Second Lieutenant, was succeeded by Thomas Owens. John D. Herring, Minson McLamb and Isaiah Herring were also Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY K—Captain A. T. Bost (if memory be not at fault) fell at Reams Station, and was succeeded by his brother, R. A. Bost, who, as Captain, receiving a severe face wound, was disabled thereby. No steadier men ever faced a firing line than these two. First Lieutenant A. Routh was mortally wounded while charging a battery at Spottsylvania 10 May, 1864. Second Lieutenant M. N Smyer was mortally wounded at Reams Station 25 August, 1864. Lieutenants J M. Hoover and Sidney Shuford were then in command until the close.

In commenting on certain names here mentioned, it will be borne in mind that by reason of longer acquaintance or closer intimacy, the writer knew more of certain ones than of others. Some company officers were appointed but a short time before the writer was called away from the regiment, and whom he knew only by name.

No invidious discrimination is intended, for it is distinctly remembered that no officer of the Forty-sixth was ever charged with doing less than his full duty.

J M. WADDILL.

GREENVILLE, S C.,
9 April, 1901.

FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

1. Sion H. Rogers, Colonel.
2. W. C. Lankford, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. Campbell T. Iredell, Captain, Co. C.
4. J. J. Thomas, Captain and A. Q. M.
5. John H. Thorp, Captain, Co. A.
6. Geo. W. Westray, 1st Lieut., Co. A.

FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT

By JOHN H. THORP, Captain Company A.

In March, 1862, amid the rush to arms of North Carolina volunteers, the 1,200 men who made the aggregate of its ten companies, organized the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment.

As the companies were coming together, New Bern was taken by the Federal General, Burnside, and those that had arrived at Raleigh were sent, without guns, below Kinston under Major Sion H. Rogers, to assist in staying the Federal advance. These remained there a week or two, when they returned to Raleigh, and with the other companies, now arrived, completed their organization with Sion H. Rogers, Colonel; George H. Faribault, Lieutenant-Colonel, and John A. Graves, Major.

On 5 January, 1863, Rogers resigned to become Attorney-General of the State, when Faribault became Colonel, Graves Lieutenant-Colonel, and Archibald D. Crudup, Captain of Company B, became Major. Graves was wounded and captured at Gettysburg 3 July, 1863, from which he died; Crudup became Lieutenant-Colonel March, 1864, and William C. Lankford, Captain of Company F, Major at the same time. Faribault and Crudup were wounded and the first resigned January, 1865, and the latter in August, 1864, whereupon Lankford became Lieutenant-Colonel and continued the only field officer. Hence, mainly by casualties in battle, the regiment was scant of field officers during very much of its severest trials, and frequently was without one. On such occasions it was led through hard-fought battles by a Captain, and some times by a Lieutenant. W S. Lacy was Chaplain; R. A. Patterson, first, and after him Franklin J. White, were Surgeons; J. B. Winstead and Josiah C. Fowler, Assistant Surgeons, of the regiment. Thomas C. Powell was Adjutant.

COMPANY A—*Nash County*—It was first commanded by Captain John W Bryan, who died in June, 1862, when Lieutenant John H. Thorp became Captain and commanded to the end of the war. The Lieutenants of Company A were: George W Westray, who was killed at Cold Harbor; Wilson Baily, who died; Sidney H. Bridgers, killed at Bristoe Station; B. H. Bunn (since member of United States Congress) and Thomas Westray.

COMPANY B—*Franklin County*—After Crudup, its first Captain, was promoted, Joseph J Harris was made Captain; was wounded, captured and remained a prisoner. Its Lieutenants were Harvey D. Griffin, who died; Sherrod J Evans, Hugh H. Perry and William B. Chamblee.

COMPANY C—*Wake County*—The first Captain of Company C was Edward Hall, who died 1 September, 1862, when Cameron T. Iredell became Captain, was killed 3 July, 1863, and George M. Whiting became Captain, taken prisoner at Gettysburg and died after the war of disease contracted in prison. The Lieutenants of this company were Nathaniel L. Brown, David M. Whitaker, Marmaduke W Norfleet and A. H. Harris.

COMPANY D—*Nash County*—John A. Harrison was first Captain of Company D, resigned in November, 1862, and Lieutenant Geo. N. Lewis became Captain, was elected to the State Legislature in August, 1864, when Richard F. Drake became Captain. Its Lieutenants were Benjamin F. Drake, resigned; William H. Blount and John Q. Winborne.

COMPANY E—*Wake County*—John H. Norwood was the first and only Captain of Company E. Its Lieutenants were Erastus H. Ray, Benj. W Justice, promoted A. C. S. of the regiment; Leonidas W Robertson and William A. Dunn.

COMPANY F—*Franklin County*—W C. Lankford was the first Captain of this company, and when he was promoted, Julius S. Joyner became Captain. Its Lieutenants were J J Thomas, promoted A. Q. M. of the regiment; Sylvanus P Gill, W D. Harris (resigned) and H. R. Crichton.

COMPANY G—*Franklin and Granville Counties*—Joseph J. Davis was the first Captain of Company G, and was wounded, captured and a prisoner 3 July, 1863, and remain-

ing a prisoner, no other could succeed to the Captaincy. Its Lieutenants were P P Peace, Richard F. Yarborough, promoted to Colonelcy of another regiment; W H. Pleasants, George D. Tunstall and George Williamson. Captain Davis was afterwards member of United States Congress and Justice of our Supreme Court.

COMPANY H—*Wake County*—Charles T. Haughton, first Captain of Company H, died in June, 1863, when Lieutenant Sydney W Mitchell became Captain and was, to the close of the war. Its Lieutenants were T. L. Lassiter, Sydney A. Hinton, J. D. Newsom and John T. Womble.

COMPANY I—*Wake County*—I. W Brown was the first Captain of Company I, and killed at Reams Station. Its Lieutenants were Charles C. Lovejoy, transferred to another regiment; William Henry Harrison, J. Wiley Jones and J. Rowan Rogers, a brother of the first Colonel of the regiment.

COMPANY K—*Alamance County*—Robert H. Faucette was the first and only Captain of Company K, and as Senior Captain commanding the regiment, signed the paroles of the commanders of companies on 9 April, 1865. Its Lieutenants were James H. Watson, Thomas Taylor, Jacob Boon and Felix L. Poteat.

After a short stay at Camp Mangum, in Raleigh, during which time it was drilled incessantly, the regiment was camped between New Bern and Kinston, where several weeks were spent in guarding our outposts, marching to near-by points where attacks were threatened, but never escaping to be drilled daily, and taught the duties of a soldier by the never-tiring General, J G. Martin. It was here the men went through the sick period consequent upon the change from civil to military life; through measles and mumps and malarial fevers, from which quite a number died. Very few escaped sickness in passing through to the toughened condition.

At this time the predominant desire was to go to the scenes being enacted around Richmond, where General Lee and his illustrious co-generals were entering on that career which as

leaders of the Army of Northern Virginia, made them so famous. But the boon is not yet granted us. In July we go to Drewry's Bluff, at this time a position that must be held, and General Martin goes with us, and carrying us into a hot field, in view of delightful shade, continues his incessant drilling from morning till night. After a stay of three weeks the regiment is appropriately made provost guard of Petersburg. So thoroughly trained itself, it efficiently executed the delicate duties of guard in this important city, then a military center. During its stay the strongest of friendship was formed between civilian and soldier. Not a single unpleasant incident is recalled.

Early in November, to meet a threatened attack, we were taken to Weldon, where we took our first snow storm in camp without covering except such as the men hastily made with bark and boughs and dirt.

The regiment had returned to Petersburg when, on 14 December, it was rushed by rail to Kinston to resist the Federal General Foster in his attack on that town. We arrived late in the evening just as the Confederate General, Evans', Brigade was retreating across the bridge over the Neuse. In a jiffy we were unloaded from the cars, which were run off immediately, ordered to pile our knapsacks, overcoats and blankets, which we never heard of afterwards, and double-quicked to the rescue. As Colonel Rogers formed us in line of battle, General Evans learning of our arrival, ordered us to the north of the town to cover the retreat of his brigade which had been overpowered, and showing our full regimental front received General Foster's messenger, who bore his demand to surrender, and replied: "Tell General Foster I will fight him here."

Foster did not come, but night soon did, and we had again escaped a battle. At nightfall General Evans collected his scattered brigade and retreated to Falling Creek. The next day Company A, of the Forty-seventh, reconnoitered two miles toward Kinston without finding the enemy, and after night A and K went to Kinston to learn that Foster had advanced up the south bank of the Neuse. He attempted to cross at White Hall, but was driven back and continued his

march toward Goldsboro, to which the Forty-seventh was marched on the following day. On our arrival at Goldsboro we were marched across the county bridge and formed line of battle, in which we remained all this cold December night, to find at light that Foster had retreated and was now far away.

A few days afterwards the regiment is on Blackwater under General Roger A. Prior, protecting Eastern Virginia. Now for rigid marching. Every day marching thirty miles. All foot logs and small bridges are cut away ahead of us that the men may lose no time in breaking from column of four, and we must take the mud and water in the roads through this boggy section. And so, as we had been perfected in the drill and tactics by Martin, we were now Romanised by Prior. Frequently during this time a battle was immonent, but one did not occur. It was skirmishing, retreating, advancing on another distant point, over a large extent of territory to keep the enemy pushed within his limited lines.

ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

Thus inured to the vicissitudes of war, except actual battle, the Forty-seventh was, early in 1863, brigaded with the Eleventh, Twenty-sixth, Forty-fourth and Fifty-second, under that splendid General, J Johnston Pettigrew, and returned to Eastern North Carolina. The points of Rocky Mount, Magnolia and Goldsboro, as they were threatened, were quickly covered, and thence we were marched in D. H. Hill's army to the vicinity of New Bern, which town Hill threatened. Here about the middle of March, 1863, after a forced march of several days in bleak winter, Pettigrew, in the early dawn, drove in the enemy's pickets and passed one of his block houses, which protected New Bern, but by failure of other troops to co-operate time was lost and the enemy got one of his gunboats in action, with which our brigade was terribly shelled. Pettigrew being unable to reply with cannon, or to cross the water with his infantry, withdrew his brigade in regiments by echelon in such masterly manner, the men exhibiting the utmost coolness, that not a man was lost,

though the retreat was a long way over an open, level field. Soon after this we went to Greenville and thence to Washington, crossing the Tar in canoes in high water, when the regiment threatened the town and waked up the enemy's gunboats again; we lost one man killed and several wounded.

But the main object, on the part of the Confederate authorities, of these operations in Eastern North Carolina, to-wit: to gather in the supplies of this rich section, having been accomplished and General Lee making preparations for his second invasion, Pettigrew's Brigade, early in May, 1863, became a part of Heth's Division in A. P Hill's Corps.

Thus after more than a year, perhaps well occupied, both in doing arduous, but less conspicuous service as in becoming thoroughly efficient for the sterner activities of actual battle, the Forty-seventh Regiment is at length, and henceforth to the end, will be with the Army of Northern Virginia. It was well it had a thorough training, for soon it was to go through fiery trials, its ranks to be torn by shot and shell, to be depleted of its officers, leaving it to be led in great emergencies by a Captain, and the companies some times by a private. Whenever and wherever tried it was equal to the emergency It responded with promptness to the command "Charge!" to the very end.

It was early in May, 1863, when we arrived at Hanover Junction, thence we marched to Fredericksburg, thence to Culpepper Court House, across the Blue Ridge mountains, through Winchester, and crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown. On the north bank of the Potomac the disciplinarian, Pettigrew, delivered his strict commands against interfering with private rights and property, and right well were these commands obeyed. As we passed through Hagerstown, the eyes of our men were dazed by the fullness of an opulent city, but no one dared to loot it. On 29 June we camped near Cashtown, and on the 30th were marching rapidly into Gettysburg with the avowed object of shoeing our barefooted men. Already the non-combatants had gotten (as they always do when danger is far off) to the front, and we were almost at our destination when a person in citizen's dress, on a farm horse, rode leisurely from the adjacent woods up

to the fence, on the other side of which we were moving, inquired for our commander, and paced up to the head of our column. On his arrival there the command "Halt!" rang down our line. Was this a spy? "About face—quick time, march!" and back we went; but not without several shots at long range being fired at us from both sides of the road. So we escaped the ambuscade that had been set for us.

GETTYSBURG.

Early on 1 July the Forty-seventh was in the line which opened the battle of Gettysburg. It is remembered that Company A had eighty-two trigger pullers, each with forty rounds of ammunition, and the other companies were perhaps as large. The morale of the men was splendid, and when it advanced to its first grand charge it was with the feelings of conquerors. We were met by a furious storm of shells and canister and further on by the more destructive rifles of the two army corps confronting us. One shell struck the right company, killing three men, and exploding in the line of file closers, by the concussion, felled to the earth every one of them. The other companies were faring no better. Still our line, without a murmur, advanced, delivering its steady fire amid the rebel yells, and closed with the first line of the enemy. After a desperate struggle this yielded and the second line was met and quickly broken to pieces. The day was a hot one, and the men had difficulty in ramming down their cartridges, so slick was the iron ram-rod in hands thoroughly wet with perspiration. All expedients were resorted to, but mainly jabbing the ram-rods against the ground and rocks. This, with the usual causes, undressed our advancing line; still all were yelling and pressing forward through the growing wheat breast high, toward a body of the enemy in sight, but beyond the range of our guns, when suddenly a third line of the enemy arose forty yards in front, as if by magic, and leveled their shining line of gun-barrels on the wheat heads. Though taken by surprise the roar of our guns sounded along our whole line. We had caught the drop on them. Redoubled our yells and a rush, and the work is done. The earth just seemed to open

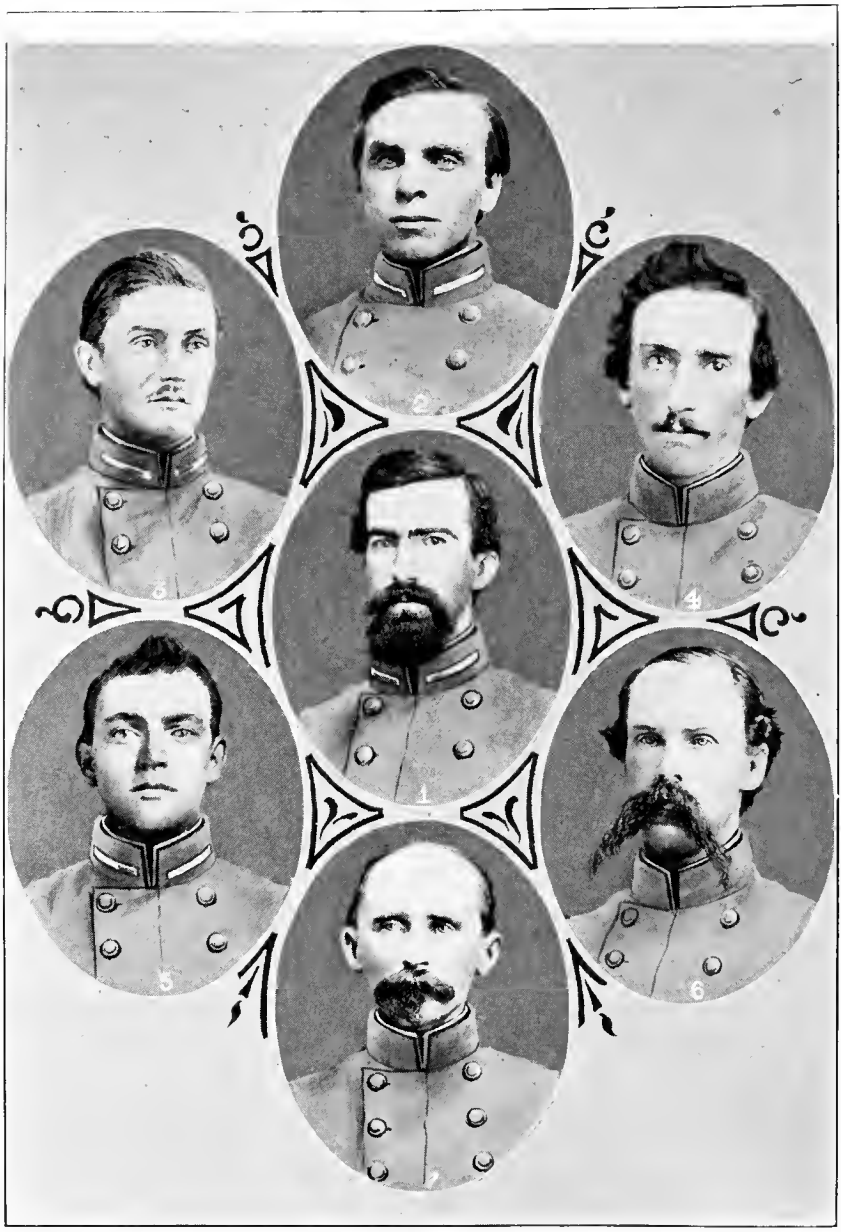
and take in that line which five minutes ago was so perfect.

Just then a Federal officer came in view and rode rapidly forward bearing a large Federal flag. The scattered Federals swarmed around him as bees cover their queen. In the midst of a heterogeneous mass of men, acres big, he approached our left, when all guns in front and from right and left turned on the mass and seemingly shot the whole to pieces. This hero was a Colonel Biddle, who (if he were otherwise competent) deserved to command a corps. It was with genuine and openly expressed pleasure our men heard he was not killed. The day is not ended, but the fighting in our front is over, and the Forty-seventh dressed its line and what remained of it marching to the place whence it started on the charge, bivouacked for the night, intoxicated with victory. Many were the incidents narrated on that beautiful, moonlight night.

On the 2d we were not engaged save in witnessing the marshaling of hosts, with much fighting during the day, and at night a grand pyrotechnic display, this being the struggle on the slope of Little Round Top for the possession of the hill.

On 3 July the Forty-seventh was put in the front line preparing to make that celebrated, but imprudent charge, familiarly called Pickett's charge, though just why called Pickett's instead of Pettigrew's charge, is not warranted by the facts. And why it has been said that Pettigrew supported Pickett instead of Pickett supported Pettigrew, is also incomprehensible. It is certain that the two divisions (Pettigrew led Heth's Division to-day) started at the same time, in the same line. Pickett's distance to traverse was shorter than that of Pettigrew. Both went to and over the enemy's breastworks, but were too weak from loss of numbers to hold them. Pickett's Division was perfectly fresh. Pettigrew's had just passed through 1 July in which even its commander (Heth) had been knocked out.

If further witness be sought, the respective numbers of dead men in the correctly recorded spots where they fell, supply it. But let it be distinctly understood Pettigrew's men appreciate that it was not the brave Pickett and his men, who claimed for themselves pre-eminence in this bloody affair.



FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

1. J. D. Newsom, 2d Lieut., Co. I.
2. J. Wilie Jones, 2d Lieut., Co. I.
3. J. Rowan Rogers, 2d Lieut., Co. I.
4. Thomas Westray, 2d Lieut., Co A.
5. B. H. Bunn, 2d Lieut., Co. A.
6. George B. Moore, Sergeant, Co. C.
7. Luke E. Estes, Private, Co E.
8. John Wesley Bradford, Private, Co, G. (Picture in Supplementary Group, 4th volume.)

They remember, vividly remember, how Pickett chafed while waiting to make his spring, like an untamed lion for his prey. Perhaps the assault was a Confederate mistake. So good an authority as General Lee is quoted as saying this much, but that the stakes for which he was playing was so great (it being Harrisburg, Baltimore and Washington) he just could not help it. Later a similar excuse was plead by General Grant for the slaughter at Second Cold Harbor. The late Captain Davis, "Honest Joe," who led Company B in this charge, and who charged over the enemy's breastworks and became a prioner, said the enemy was literally torn to pieces. But, then our "hind sights are better than our fore-sights." And may be, after all the best conclusion is that a kind Providence had heard the prayers for the Union that has ascended from both sides, though uttered not so loud from the South, and in answer, just wrote down in the book of Fate: "Gettysburg, 3 July, 1863, the beginning of the end." The writer, who was in the line of sharpshooters which preceded the main line of battle, witnessed an incident which (although not belonging to the Forty-seventh Regiment) ought to be recorded. He saw Brigadier-General Jas. H. Lane, on horseback, quite near the stone wall, riding just behind and up to his men, in the attitude of urging them forward with his hand; a moment later a large spurt of blood leaped from the horse as he rode up, and rider and horse went down in the smoke and uproar. This was about the time of the climax of the battle when darkness and chaos obscured what followed.

Surely the rank and file of the army of Northern Virginia did not realize the bigness of the event that had just happened; nor can we believe the Army of the Potomac did, inasmuch as it behaved so nicely while we spent several days in the same neighborhood.

The Forty-seventh now had had its ups and its downs. On the 1st as it double-quicked on Reynold, it had an equal chance with the enemy and had hurled 30,000 bullets in their faces. On the 3d they had attempted to march 1,000 yards in quick time through a raking fire of cannon and minies, with virtually no chance to use their minies—a soldier's

main weapon. The skeleton of its former self it returned to the place whence it began its charge and began business without a field officer, and during the balance of the day and the succeeding night welcomed the return of several of our members who, unscathed or wounded in various degrees, crawled from the field of carnage, for the space between the armies continued neutral ground, being covered by the wounded of both. On the 4th General Pettigrew told us that had we succeeded the evening before, no doubt our army would have been on the road to Washington and perhaps negotiations for peace would then be on foot. Surely the *esprit de corps* of our regiment was undaunted.

On the night of the 4th we moved off leisurely toward Funktown, where we stood up on the 11th to meet a threatened attack which did not materialize, and on the 14th were in the rear guard of the army at Falling Waters to cover the crossing of the Potomac. Here a drunken squad of Federal cavalry rashly rode on us while resting. Of course they were dispatched at once, but in the melee General Pettigrew received a pistol ball in the stomach from which he died in a day or two. Major John T. Jones, of the Twenty-sixth, was now the only field officer left to the brigade, and as we began to retire to cross the river the enemy furiously charged up and took quite a number of prisoners mainly by cutting our men off from the pontoon bridge.

BRISTOE STATION.

A few days rest was taken at Bunker Hill, thence we marched to Orange Court House, where we recuperated rapidly by the return of those who had been wounded and a goodly number of recruits from home. So that on 14 October the Forty-seventh carried quite a strong force into the battle of Bristoe Station. In this battle Kirkland's and Cooke's Brigades, being in the van of Lee's army, overtook Warren's Corps of Meade's retreating army and without awating reinforcements made a furious attack against it thoroughly entrenched. This was a gross blunder on the part of our corps' general (A. P Hill) who sent us in. Let it be

recalled that the ground over which we charged sloped down to the railroad embankment behind which were the enemy's infantry, and sloped up from their infantry to their artillery. Under these circumstances their artillery would have driven back any infantry in indefinite numbers. Of course we were repulsed with heavy loss. An incident in this fight was that the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh, forty strong, in going in this charge, saw a space of the enemy's front, not reached by the left of our advancing line, passed the front of the Eleventh or left regiment, and filled the space. The ground was more favorable for us on this end of the line, and the Eleventh and the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh captured the breastworks with the enemy behind them. The Confederates here were herding the enemy in squads to send them to the rear as prisoners, when the rest of the line being repulsed, these too, were compelled to retire. Our loss was heavy, including General Kirkland among the wounded. As on 3 July, at Gettysburg, we fell back to the point from which we started the charge, and for the same reason as on that day could not bring off our wounded who lay on the field of battle all night. The next morning, General Meade having made good his retirement on the fortifications at Manassas, we returned to the Rapidan. Here and at Orange Court House we wintered without military incident, save in frequent manœuvering; Meade and Lee, like two big bulls, each trying to put his head into the other's flank, and once at Vidiersville an imminent battle was avoided by the two generals doing like the king of France who, "with 40,000 men, marched up the hill and then marched down again." The Forty-seventh lost a man or two at Vidiersville by the enemy's artillery.

The health of the men of the Forty-seventh is excellent, perhaps in part, because of short rations, and by the spring the regiment is pretty full again by returning convalescents and recruits from home.

General Grant is now in command of the Army of the Potomac, and by his hammering process proposes "to fight it out on that line if it takes all summer," which summer ran sharply into the following spring. General Kirkland has

returned to the command of the brigade, and Colonel Faribault to the command of the Forty-seventh.

THE WILDERNESS.

On 5 May, 1864, Grant moved out on Mine Run and the Forty-seventh Regiment deployed as skirmishers in the van of Lee's army opens the battle, beginning with that of the Wilderness and continuing (with little intermission in the winter) till 9 April, 1865.

We first struck the enemy s cavalry, dismounted, and gradually pushed them back over five miles, during which we now and then lost a man, till the middle of the evening, when we came up to Cooke's Brigade just engaging the enemy's infantry in the tangled brush, the battle of the Wilderness. The Forty-seventh went in and mingled with Cooke's men in the fight, and so severe was the rifle fire and the opposing armies so near each other that neither advanced on the other. The night was spent in this position, and lines were not put in order; our men having been ordered to rest, as Longstreet's Corps was to relieve Hill's during the night. Longstreet did not arrive, and at dawn the enemy having ascertained our disordered condition, promptly advanced. Our men began to retreat sullenly, and fighting back at first, but as the day grew on our confusion increased until about 10 o'clock, when we met the welcome Longstreet. This splendid Corps came into line of battle by the order of "By the right of companies into line," and without any halt continued their advance in the face of the, 'till now, victorious Federals. It was a terrific battle in which the Confederates pushed the Federals over the same ground they had taken in the morning, mingling vast numbers of dead Federals among the Confederates slain a few hours before. The Forty-seventh lost no prisoners in this battle, but heavily in killed and wounded.

On the 10th the Forty-seventh was prominent in the battle of Wait's Shop, when General Early pressed Hancock back across the river after an engagement of several hours, wherein the Confederates advanced steadily, the Federals retreating without much resistance. This was a battle in which the powder used far exceeded a commensurate loss of men on

either side. The loss of the Forty-seventh was, perhaps, twenty. But the object of the Confederates was effected. Hancock left the important place at which he tried to break through our lines.

On the 12th at Spottsylvania the Forty-seventh was but slightly engaged. It supported our artillery which did great havoc near the bloody angle.

The succeeding fifteen days the regiment was more or less engaged, some of it at least being under daily fire, under which we seemed to grow stronger.

BETHESDA CHURCH.

On 1 June Kirkland's and Cooke's Brigades were desperately charged behind breastworks. The Forty-seventh was in splendid fighting trim on this occasion, and as the enemy started across an open field the order was given us not to fire until a certain cannon fired, and company commanders were to order the fire by file. The Federal officers threw themselves in front of their men and most gallantly led them, but when the cannon sounded the signal, our deadly fire opened on them within fifty yards and it was so steady and accurate, for our men were perfectly cool, that before the companies had fired a round, the enemy was completely broken and routed, a large number of them killed and wounded. Our loss was almost nothing as the enemy, depending on giving us the bayonet, withheld their fire, until they were repulsed. The sharpshooters of the two brigades, having previously been ordered, rushed after and harrassed their rear for two miles. This was the battle of Bethesda Church, and amid the tremendous events occurring, was the occasion of a dispatch from General Lee to the Secretary of War complimenting the two brigades.

While the sharpshooters were pursuing, the main body of the two brigades was ordered off towards Cold Harbor and participated in another battle at that place the same evening. In this last fight in which the Confederates charged the enemy out of their good breastworks, General Kirkland was again wounded and did not return to this command. General William MacRae succeeded to the command of our

brigade about this time, and through every vicissitude proved the equal of any brigadier in the army. Quite a number of the men of the Forty-seventh were killed and wounded in the engagement.

General Heth, with his division, remained on the ground taken that night, fortified and awaited to-morrow. Early on to-morrow the enemy massed a host in our front and attempted to break through us all day. They were in the woods, we on the edge of it with a small field behind us. This enabled them to get very near us, perhaps forty to sixty yards, and we learned by sound rather than by sight, when they arose to charge, and kept them in check by shooting in the direction of their noise, as they would attempt to encourage their men. It was literally an all-day affair. Among our other embarrassments we were nearly surrounded, and once when the enemy's cannon sent a shell from our rear and our men had craned their necks, General Heth coolly commanded an aid "to go stop that battery—tell them they are firing into my men." Fortune was propitious, and they did stop, doubtless, because they could suppose their own men to be fired into by their shelling, so close were we together. Our loss was considerable during the day, but at length night came. At dark a detail collected every canteen and bayonet and took them out, and as soon as it was dark good, we silently stole away by the only outlet left us.

From Cold Harbor we went to Gaines' Mill, just after Hoke had repulsed the enemy at that place, inflicting heavy loss. From Gaines' Mill we crossed the Chickahominy Thence about the middle of June we crossed the James and a few days after the Appomattox rivers, and our division took position on the extreme right of General Lee's long line of defense extending from the Chickahominy to Hatcher's Run, a distance of about thirty-five miles.

Hatcher's Run and its vicinity are henceforth to be the scene of our operations, and it was around this flank and in this vicinity that General Grant did most of his hammering, and near here he finally broke through Lee's lines to begin the Appomattox campaign.

Once, in July, our division recrossed the Appomattox to

meet Grant's feigned attack on the north of the river, when the episode of the crater, on 30 July, took place.

On 21 August our division was a part of the attacking column to dislodge Warren's Fifth Corps from the Weldon Railroad. For about two days before and two after this date, the Forty-seventh was under almost daily fire, in which series of fights it lost several killed and wounded.

REAMS STATION.

On 25 August MacRae's, with Lane's and Cooke's Brigades distinguished themselves in the battle of Reams Station. Hancock had fortified this place and other Southern troops had failed to dislodge him, when these North Carolinians were assigned the honor of doing so. MacRae pointed out to his men how they could approach under the protection of an old field of pines, and we imagine the heretofore triumphant Federals must have smiled as they beheld the small force advancing against them, and intended to withhold their fire until we should reach a point from which we might be unable to escape. Suddenly MacRae ordered: "Don't fire a gun, but dash for the enemy" The dash was made, and behold the assault is successful. The result is several flags and cannon, a large number killed and wounded, and 2,100 prisoners. A Federal officer, as he sat, a surprised prisoner, remarked to one of our officers: "Lieutenant, your men fight well; that was a magnificent charge." The loss in the Forty-seventh was heavy, and it included an over-proportion of our very best men. This was notably so in Company A. Men who seemed to have possessed charmed lives; who struck so quick, and were so cool and daring to pass the danger line, were struck down almost in a body. Many of them returned after recovery, but the regiment was notably weakened after this.

On 30 September General Heth attacked two corps of Federals trying to extend to our right, near the Pegram house, and captured quite a number of prisoners. On 1 and 2 October the effort to extend continued and we continued to resist it; but after several days doggedly fighting and putting in fresh troops, they succeeded and fortified themselves. It

was Grant's way a continual extending his left with fresh troops and making his line impregnable with the spade and cannon.

BURGESS' MILL.

On the 27th the enemy again felt for our right flank, and at Burgess' Mill General MacRae's Brigade assaulted them, repulsing the full length of his line of battle, taking a battery of artillery and passing far to the front, discovered that the enemy were closing from both his flanks the gap he had just made. MacRae was on foot leading his command, and pointing to the perilous situation, asked them to follow him out, which they gallantly did by cutting their way out. Our loss here was very heavy in killed and wounded, but none were taken prisoners. Hill's Corps took a great number of prisoners. MacRae complained bitterly about his superiors in command allowing him to be cut to pieces when it could have been prevented.

Winter had now set in, and the men settled down with some degree of comfort in their rudely constructed quarters. Some attended religious worship by our Chaplain. The regiment in early 1864 had a good Young Men's Christian Association, but no sign of it was visible at the close of the campaign—the members of it having been knocked out. Some who could raise a Confederate dollar went to the theatre; yes, we had a theatre in Davis' Brigade, built of logs with a dirt floor and log seats, and such capers the soldier comedians and tragedians cut by torch light, and music by banjo and the fiddle! It was said the theatrical company made money. Camp life, however, in the winter of 1864-'65 was a hard one, and upon the whole a very sad one. These old soldiers of many battle fields, though they murmured not, knew a great deal, and a few who supposed they could bear no more deserted to the enemy, who stood with outstretched arms to welcome them. The Forty-seventh furnished very few of this class.

As General Grant received a steady flow of reinforcements he invariably sent them to extend his left and in the severest

weather the Forty-seventh was several times called out to resist the extension.

One of these was on 5 February, 1865. It was sleeting and very cold when a large force of Federals again moved around our right to sever our communications. The Forty-seventh formed a part of the attacking force which was successful in driving them back. The regiment's loss was a due proportion of our total loss, which was perhaps 1,000, while that of the enemy was double that number.

Toward the end of March Grant had collected an irresistible force on his left, which was daily feeling for our right, and on 2 April broke through our attenuated line nearer to Petersburg and moved in our rear. At this time the Forty-seventh, lately reinforced by the last recruits from home, were further to the right to try to stem the torrent that appeared in that quarter. Lieutenant Westray, of Company A, with thirty men, were engaged on our old picket line and they held their position so well that even the enemy passed on both sides of them and left them in their rear, from which situation this little body made their way out, and the next day turned up for duty across the Appomattox.

The skirmishers of the Forty-seventh had done picket duty on the extreme of our right the night of the 1st and were returning on the morning of the 2d along the breastworks held by some Floridians. These were dividing out their day's rations, and if they had pickets out, they would evidently have been quietly captured. The head of a Federal cavalry column was approaching the breastworks and was within seventy-five yards, when our skirmishers halted, had a parley with the Federals and ascertaining they were enemies, poured a volley into them, which drove them off, and we moved off again, without having halted five minutes and without exchanging a word with our friends. Thus we saved them from a complete surprise.

Things everywhere on our side were now getting in a desperate fix, the battle raging, seemingly, everywhere. Our skirmishers, about 100 in number, of whom thirty were from the Forty-seventh, got up with our brigade near Southerland's Station, where McRae was so pressed 2 April that he must

need turn and fight. Two charges of the enemy were repulsed and the third was being made when a column of the enemy arrived on our left and rear. A fierce struggle ensued in which we were totally defeated, slain, wounded, captured, or scattered. Only a few came out, the river being in front, the victorious enemy in rear. By order all means of crossing the river had been removed. But the next morning when Lee passed up the northern bank toward Amelia Court House, MacRae at the head of our organized brigade, that is a few from each of his regiments, was in the retreating column as chipper as ever. Even the corps of such of his sharpshooters as had escaped retained their organization.

Passing through Farmville on the 7th our men snatched some rations from a government commissary store which they were in sore need of, as none had been issued, except on one occasion two ears of corn to a man. On the evening of the 7th we arrived on the field by a run, when Fitz Lee and Gregg's Cavalry Brigades charged each other, in which Gregg was defeated and himself captured.

On Sunday morning, 9 April, the Forty-seventh arrived at Appomattox, the last ditch, and was surrendered with the Army of Northern Virginia. When it was filed to the right of the road the men supposed they were going in line of battle to charge the enemy who were visible in front, but when MacRae commanded "Halt," and without any further order as to rest, etc., so contrary to his rule as a disciplinarian, all stared and wondered what it could mean. He dismounted and lay down, and we, too, began to lay down. The sad news was quickly learned, and then followed that mighty expression of blasted hope, which a witness will never forget. The Forty-seventh Regiment had no field officer. There were two Captains of companies, Faucette, of Company K, who was in command, and Thorp, of Company A. Company A had, in addition, Lieutenant Westray and twelve men; Company D had three men. The number of men of the other companies not remembered, but were about seventy-five.

The United States troops (now seemingly no longer enemies) flocked among us by the hundreds and showed their highest respect for their late antagonists. To see General

Lee was the burden on every tongue. There was no exultation; on the contrary they showed marked consideration for our feelings. If the whole country could have witnessed this sympathetic scene between the old Greys and the old Blues, seas of bitter tears and mountains of hate would have been spared.

A herd of fat, young steers, and many wagon loads of crackers were brought to us, with which we appeased our hunger. Through Monday and Tuesday we received our guests. On Wednesday we were paroled, and late in the evening we formed in our organizations for the last time, marched between the open ranks of the Federals and stacked guns. No Federal officer of rank was in sight. There was no music. 'Twas silent—very sad. We broke ranks for home.

And now old comrades (who may read it) this skeleton of a sketch is an attempt to write only the truth, though a very small part of it, of the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment. Praise, criticism or even mention of the heroes who composed it are purposely omitted. The merits alone of these would fill a large volume, and partial mention would be actual wrong. Is it not, therefore, better that whatever of merit, of honor, and of fame the dear old regiment attained we shall share in common?

JOHN H. THORP.

ROCKY MOUNT, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.

ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT

By J. ROWAN ROGERS, Second Lieutenant Company I.

GETTYSBURG.

I have accepted the task of writing this additional sketch of the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment with alacrity, because I love so well its memory, and its many heroes of whom so many have passed over the river, though a few yet linger on this side.

At Gettysburg the Forty-seventh Regiment had the honor of being in the advance of all the troops and nearest to Gettysburg on 30 June, 1863. We had our pickets out on that night and next morning when the line of march was taken, Pettigrew's Brigade, composed of the Forty-seventh, Fifty-second, Twenty-sixth and Eleventh, was in front (Forty-fourth Regiment was on detached duty near Richmond). The Forty-seventh Regiment was in front of the brigade. After marching some distance from our camp on the morning of 1 July, the Forty-seventh Regiment was fired into from both sides of the road and a halt was immediately called, when the enemy was discovered to be advancing from both our right and left flank (being dismounted cavalry), from a body of woods which was away from the road on each side about 500 yards. Notwithstanding this was a great surprise to all of our regiment, you could plainly see pleasure depicted upon the face of every officer and man in the regiment, for we all were anxious for the fray. Every one waited anxiously for orders, which were given by our Colonel, G. H. Faribault, who ordered Captain Cameron Iredell, of Company C, to take five men from each company, making fifty, and charge the enemy on our right and ordered Lieutenant Westray, of Company A, to take five from each company and charge them on our left. All this was done quicker than I can write it. Colonel

Faribault then gave the order for our regiment to march in column to the right by fours, thus heading our column directly towards the attacking party, who were on the right of the road. Colonel Marshall, who was just in rear of the Forty-seventh Regiment with the Fifty-second, made the same movement with his gallant regiment, to the left of the road, thus the brigade faced three ways. The main line composed of the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second, faced in the direction of Gettysburg, while the two skirmish lines faced the enemy on our right and left respectively. As soon as the rear and left of the Forty-seventh reached the cleared ground on the right of the road and the rear and right of the Fifty-second had reached the cleared ground on the left, both regiments were ordered to halt. The Forty-seventh was ordered to face about and march on its side of the road, and passedthe Fifty-second some distance. Then it was halted and the Fifty-second faced about and marched the same distance beyond the Forty-seventh, thus constantly keeping one regiment facing the enemy who was in our front trying to advance from that direction, while the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh were hotly engaged with them on the right and left of the road, respectively. This movement and fight was kept up then until the Forty-seventh was enabled to strike the enemy's line on the right of the road and the Fifty-second to strike the enemy's line, which was on the left of the road. This being done, a forward movement by the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second was again ordered, one on the right and one on the left, which was gallantly done without any loss except four or five slightly wounded. The enemy broke and fled towards Gettysburg at the second volley from the two regiments. The Eleventh and Twenty-sixth were not engaged in this skirmish. Marching in the rear, they did not have room to form in line in time, for the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second had about 1,300 men in line in both regiments. After repulsing the attack at this point we again marched back to the road, called in our skirmishers and took up our march, which was continued about one mile, when we were subjected to a severe cannonading from batteries in our front and here

we commenced to get into position and form line of battle for the great struggle which was about to take place on 1 July 1863. Then the Fifty-second North Carolina, under Colonel Marshall, formed on the right of the Forty-seventh, being thus on the right of Pettigrew's Brigade, the Forty-seventh next, it being on the right center, the Eleventh and Twenty-sixth were on the left centre and extreme left, but I have never known which one of these regiments was next to the Forty-seventh. The line being thus formed, was advanced for a short distance to the front, where it was again halted with its line stretching far to the right and left, for whatever history may say, General Pettigrew had in line of battle that morning nearer 3,000 soldiers than he had 2,500, and they were all good and gallant men. Before night the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh North Carolina had lost two-thirds of their numbers, for when the word of command was given they rushed forward against a largely superior force which was stationed in the skirt of woods just in their front. The Forty-seventh suffered less severely on that day than those two regiments because of their disadvantages. The Forty-seventh was the next in loss, the Fifty-second being on the right of the line, suffered less than any other of the brigade on that day. But to go back, after our line was formed we were ordered to halt, and as the enemy was keeping up a rather hot fire upon our main line, skirmishers from our regiment were ordered to advance and drive them back out of reach of our line, which was done, but not until several of our regiment were wounded and our gallant Lieutenant-Colonel, John A. Graves, was slightly wounded on the leg, the ball first having hit the iron scabbard of his sword, which was hanging by his side. But see on our left our boys have charged the Yankees who are stationed upon a hill, and we drive them down the hill on the other side, pell mell. But now our gallant boys are met half way down the hill by a fresh line of the enemy and a severe contest ensues; our lines are thinned and the Yankees are continually bringing up fresh troops, but our boys stand it manfully.

A part of Anderson's Division was on the immediate left of Pettigrew's Brigade at the first stage of heavy fighting on

the morning of 1 July. Now when the rattling of musketry is growing to a perfect line of fire, the Forty-seventh is ordered forward. It is a grand spectacle. In the line of the Forty-seventh there are over 650 muskets, the men marching steadily to meet the foe, who are on their own soil and strongly posted, with a heavy infantry force and with artillery which at every step rakes through our lines, cutting great gaps, which are quickly filled up by our boys closing into the places of those who have just fallen. We cross a stream and then up a hill through a wheat field, and then in our front, not over seventy-five yards off, we see the heavy lines of Yankee soldiers with their guns shining and flags waving; the struggle grows hotter and hotter, men are falling in every direction, but the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second are pushing the enemy steadily back, and are going forward; the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh are contending with heavy odds both as to numbers and position. While the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second have the foe in an open field, the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh have nothing to shelter themselves any more than we have, and thus it is that the Fifty-second and Forty-seventh, having driven back the enemy in their immediate front, their lines swing around to the left. In this position they are charged by Yankee cavalry in our rear and on our right. Colonel Marshall was equal to this emergency, for he faced three of his companies about and met this charge, quickly driving the cavalry off with heavy loss to them. While this was going on the infantry in our front tried hard to rally their somewhat broken lines and regain the ground they had lost. This was a hot time for the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh. Men had fallen wounded and killed like hail from a heavy hail storm. The attention of the Forty-seventh was diverted from the enemy in our immediate front and almost before we knew it the enemy had rallied and was attempting to charge our lines. Besides, they had a number of pieces of artillery helping them, wherever the opposing lines were far enough apart for them to use artillery without striking their own men. At this critical moment Captain Cam. Iredell, who commanded Company C, which was the color company of the Forty-seventh, seeing one of his men

fall mortally wounded, rushes to his side and says, "My dear boy, I will try to avenge your hurt." He took his musket and continued to use it until he was struck by a shot from the enemy which caused his death, not, however, until he had seen the enemy again turn and flee. The Forty-seventh lost heavily in this fight of 1 July.

On 2 July we rested, cleaned our guns and attended to the wounded. Early on 3 July the Forty-seventh with the balance of Pettigrew's Brigade, was ordered considerably to the right of where it had fought on 1 July. It reached its position about 9 o'clock 3 July and remained quietly in line just in the rear of a Confederate battery until about 1 o'clock p. m., when a very heavy cannonading commenced between the opposing batteries, which continued until about 3 p. m., at which time the grand advance upon Meade's lines was made. On that part of the line where the Forty-seventh advanced, it was about three-fourths of a mile or perhaps a mile from our batteries to the enemy's lines. Our battery was situated about twenty-five yards in front of where the Forty-seventh had taken up our line. About 3 o'clock a slight cessation in the firing of artillery occurred and then the voice of our Colonel, George H. Faribault, was heard loud and clear, "Attention, Battalion," and this was repeated by the brave and beloved Lieutenant-Colonel, John A. Graves. Every man sprung into line and was ready to go forward, the men knew not where, for the ridge just in front of the Forty-seventh Regiment obstructed the view of the Regiment beyond twenty-five yards. The order was soon given to move forward, which was done in good order and without any confusion. Passing our batteries the field was before us, it was entirely open except here and there an old homestead, and one or two roads with a number of strong rail and post fences, some of them high and difficult to pass over. No one hesitated, no one faltered, but a good, steady quick-step was kept up. After leaving our batteries about fifty or one hundred yards the enemy commenced a terrific cannonade and kept it up until we were so close that they could not use their cannon. As our regiment advanced great gaps would be knocked in our lines by the Yankee artillerymen,

at almost every five or ten steps, but they were immediatly filled in by our brave boys closing in and filling up the gaps. This continued until our line of battle came to where our skirmishers were situated, when we received a few shots from the enemy's skirmishers in addition to the cannon shot and shell which continued to pour in on us from the time we started until we were so close under their guns that they could not use them upon us without shooting their own men. As our regiment advanced its ranks were thinned at every step by shot and shell from the hands of the enemy. Many a brave man from our regiment fell dead upon the field and many more were slightly and others badly wounded. Here it was that Captain J. W Brown, of Company I, was shocked by the bursting of a shell and carried back to the rear and almost immediately after this Lieutenant J Wiley Jones was shot through the thigh leaving Lieutenant J Rowan Rogers as the only officer with Company I. As Lieutenant Jones was wounded and fell he raised his sword and cheered his men on. J. D. Newsom, Lieutenant of Company H, was slightly wounded in the shoulder almost at the first shot from the musketry, which was fired after the charge was started and he rushed to his Captain (Mitchell) and says to him, "Captain, they have wounded me, but I want to lead Company H," and gallantly did he lead it. He fell terribly wounded with his foot upon one rail of the fence that ran along the road, next to the rock fence behind which the Yankee line was posted. Our color-bearer, a member of Company K, Faucett's Company from Alamance county, succeeded in passing over this fence, but fell mortally wounded. He died that night with his face to the enemy Our colors fell with our brave color-bearer not ten steps from the rock wall. About 150 yards from the rock wall, while crossing one of the many fences, which ran across the ground we were charging over, I was shot in my left leg and thrown from the fence. When I arose the remnant of our once fine regiment was reduced to a mere handful of brave men, still going forward from thirty to as close up as ten steps to the rock wall. Seeing this and having recovered from my fall and my leg not seeming to be badly hurt, I made

a rush to join the set of brave men nearest the enemy, when I was startled to hear the command given the Yankee skirmishers "To the front," and immediately I heard our brave Lieutenant-Colonel Graves give the order for the handful of brave men to lie down, hoping thus to hold his position until reinforcements should come; but none came. The Forty-seventh acted bravely, coolly and none faltered.

The largest number of those who got out of that charge were those who had been slightly wounded before they got too close to the breastworks to fall back, and those who were wounded early enough in the charge to be carried back by our own men. Among those who were so close to the enemy's works that they could not retreat were Lieutenant-Colonel Graves, Captain Jos. J. Davis, afterwards member of Congress and Justice of our Supreme Court; Lieutenant Watson, of Company K, and a number of others I cannot recall, in all a mere handful, for they had all been shot down or exhausted and overcome by heat. I have seen somewhere that the Forty-seventh Regiment lost, wounded and killed and missing, 351. This is certainly a mistake. The proportion was larger than that in my company (I). We lost 57 and we had officers who were present and could report correctly the number of the killed and wounded. I think three companies lost all their officers and no correct report was given from those. They reported the smallest number of men killed, wounded and missing. As I have stated above, there was no faltering on the part of the Forty-seventh on 3 July, 1863. All did their duty and acted the part of brave soldiers.

FALLING WATERS.

After General Lee left Gettysburg our first halt for more than one night was at Hagerstown, Maryland. Here the Forty-seventh was engaged in skirmishing with the enemy's outpost and did some picket duty on or near a stream called Antietam. We then moved in line of battle and built breastworks not far from Hagerstown, towards Falling Waters. When General Lee recrossed the Potomac, Pettigrew's Brigade was again given the post of honor which was to bring up the rear of our retreating army. At Falling Waters, or

about one and a half miles from there, while our regiment was halted to give our wagon train and the troops who were to cross at Falling Waters protection while passing the river, we were surprised and charged by a squadron of cavalry. Our beloved General J. Johnston Pettigrew was on the extreme right of our line and was shot while drawing his pistol. It happened thus: General Pettigrew with a number of his staff (Captain Young, of Charleston, being one of them, who I understand is still living) were resting near their horses, when the word passed up the line, "The Yankees are charging us." The general ordered his horse, but about the time he took hold of his horse to mount, a Yankee officer riding on the left of their line and a little in front, ordered him to surrender. General Pettigrew did not notice the Yankee farther than to mount his horse and commence drawing his pistol, his horse, however, reared and plunged and the Yankee seeing that Pettigrew did not intend to surrender, fired and hit him. General Pettigrew fell from his horse and the fight was hot around and about him for fifteen or twenty minutes. We succeeded in killing all the Yankees except eight. The men in the charge were evidently all drunk. A heavier force coming up, we fell back to the river disputing every step with the enemy, so as to give our men as much time to cross as possible. When a few days thereafter we camped at Bunker Hill, our regiment numbered 98 men for duty. My company (I) lost at Falling Waters eight men killed, wounded and captured. I remember the loss particularly, because I was acting adjutant of the regiment, our gallant Adjutant Thomas Powell having been captured at Gettysburg.

WILDERNESS.

At the Wilderness, the Forty-seventh Regiment had the honor of bringing on the fight. We were in front of our lines and struck the Yankee pickets about 9 o'clock, driving them with our skirmish line back until their numbers increased so that Company I was first ordered to reinforce the skirmish line, then another company, then another, until the entire regiment was engaged and then, I think the Forty-

fourth regiment was the first regiment after the Forty-seventh to become engaged. When the enemy was driven back upon their main line and the fight of the first day became general, the Forty-seventh was ordered at first to take position on the left of the road, but was soon moved over to the right of the road, where we held our position for three hours, the enemy charging us almost continuously. During this time the heaviest fighting took place which, with our regiment, was about 2 o'clock p. m. The black-jack saplings were skinned by the bullets like a young apple tree is in the spring of the year by the rabbits.

Without giving more of the particulars of this battle, here it was that the best friend of my boyhood fell mortally wounded through the neck, William H. Haywood, son of the late United States Senator W H. Haywood and brother of Duncan Haywood, who fell at Seven Pines. I would like if I could, to tell about the fights in which the Forty-seventh was engaged at Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction, Second Cold Harbor and the battle of Turkey Ridge on 2 and 3 June, 1864, where I was wounded and so kindly treated by my Brigadier General (Kirkland) who was wounded in the same battle.

I had just arrived at the field hospital. When he heard me speak he knew my voice and called me to his tent, had my wound dressed and carried me to Ward B, Jackson Hospital, Richmond, Va., early next morning. Had it not been for his kindness I doubt much if I should now be living, for I was out of my head for several days after I was wounded. On account of this wounding I missed the battles which took place from then until the day after the Reams Station fight (25 August, 1864), where the Forty-seventh covered itself with glory as did all the troops engaged, all being North Carolinians, viz: Cooke's, Lane's and MacRae's Brigades, the last being the one to which the Forty-seventh then belonged. I was thenceforward with the regiment until 2 April, 1865.

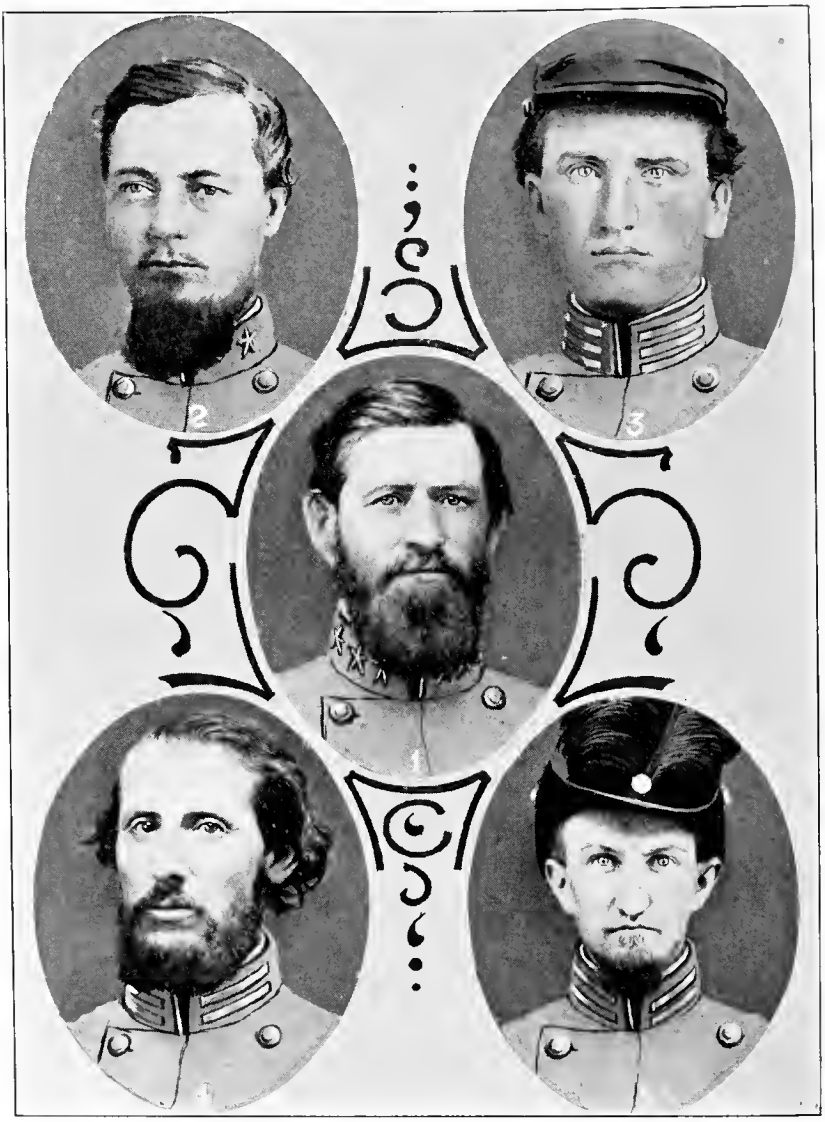
2 APRIL, 1865.

On that day I was captured on the Cox road about five

miles west of Petersburg, while with the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh Regiment holding the enemy back till the handful of Lee's army crossed to the north side of the Appomattox river, thus placing a barrier between them and the great host of Grant's army, which was then pressing him. After the Reams Station fight the Forty-seventh, like almost all the Southern troops which were on the south side of Petersburg, was engaged in a daily battle, and often nightly ones, until the close of the war; some of these was larger and heavier than others, and their names are recorded in history, for instance "Davis' Farm," "Jones' Farm," "Burgess' Mill," "Battery 45," southwest of Petersburg, and a number of other battles where many a brave man fell. I wish it was so that I could meet some of those of the Forty-seventh who were at the final scene when General Lee surrendered, but I have met only two, Lieutenant J Willie Jones, of Company I, and Corporal Rufus Sanders of Company C who are now living in Wake county After 2 April the Forty-seventh had very few men but its organization was kept up till General Lee surrendered. On the 2d the Forty-seventh was bringing up the rear of General Lee's shattered heroes and here it was that with the larger portion of the remaining members of the Forty-seventh I was captured. I had orders when placed in charge of the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh Regiment on that day to hold our position at all hazards. The enemy was never able to break through my skirmish line, but it was completely surrounded and we were captured by the enemy coming from our rear. Gaston H. Mooneyham, a private of Company E, Forty-seventh Regiment, who is now living in Barton's Creek Township, this county, was with me when I was captured and stood manfully by me in this fight, the last fight we made for the Confederacy.

J ROWAN ROGERS.

RALEIGH, N. C.,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

1. Samuel H. Walkup, Colonel.
2. William Hogan Jones, Major.
3. W. H. H. Lawhon, Captain, Co. D.
4. John R. Winchester, Adjutant and 1st Lieut.
5. John A. Thompson, 1st Lieut., Co. G.

FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT

By W H. H. LAWHON, Captain Company D.

The great civil war began in 1861. Several companies made up in the summer of 1861, composed of volunteers for twelve months, in the Spring of 1862 reorganized for three years or the war. The battles of Big Bethel, First Manassas and others had been fought; the result of which had given the Southern troops courage, and some men in North Carolina, who had been opposed to secession, were now changing their minds, so that in the Winter of 1861 and 1862 preparations were being made on both sides for the next summer's campaign. The Federal army was recruiting so rapidly that the authorities of the Confederacy saw that they would have to meet a heavy force in the field the next summer, so a draft was ordered in North Carolina 25 February, 1862.

At this time volunteer companies were being raised in all parts of the State. Many of the patriotic sons of North Carolina volunteered, most of the men who were drafted joined some company then being raised. A few hired substitutes who joined and thus the companies were rapidly filled up and hurried off to the camp of instruction, near Raleigh, and as they arrived they were formed into regiments. The Forty-eighth was composed of the following companies:

Company A—*Union County*—Francis L. Wiatt, Captain.
Company B—*Davidson County*—Albert A. Hill, Captain.
Company C—*Iredell County*—Arthur M. Walker, Captain.
Company D—*Moore County*—Benjamin R. Huske, Captain.
Company E—*Union County*—John W Walden, Captain.
Company F—*Union County*—Samuel H. Walkup, Captain.

COMPANY G—*Chatham County*—William H. Jones, Captain.

COMPANY H—*Davidson County*—John Michael, Captain.

COMPANY I—*Union County*—Elias C. Alexander, Captain.

COMPANY K—*Forsyth County*—Jesse W Atwood, Captain.

It was organized on 11 April, 1862, choosing:

ROBERT C. HILL, Colonel, of Iredell County.

SAMUEL H. WALKUP, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Union County.

BENJAMIN R. HUSKE, Major, of Cumberland County.

As many drafted men had furnished substitutes, some being old men and some mere boys, the Forty-eighth Regiment was made up of men of all sizes, and the reader, if acquainted with military tactics, will at once see the difficulty in drilling such troops uniformly. In marching the old men would step too long and slow, the boys too short and fast. But Colonel Hill, who was a military man, lost no time in drilling and disciplining his regiment. We were at Camp Mangum, but in a short while we moved to Goldsboro, where we were in camp until about the second week in June, when we went to Petersburg, Va., and camped on Dunn's Hill. Here we were attached to General Robert Ransom's Brigade.

Under his orders we marched one evening to City Point, arriving about dark; threw out a strong skirmish line, and a detail was made to load some wagons with ice from an ice house, which was near the bank of the James river. The Yankees were near by in gunboats. (The ice was to be carried to Petersburg.) The next morning General Ransom opened fire with two or three small pieces on the gunboats, which were down the river, a mile or more. The Yankees returned the fire very promptly and threw out among us what the men called "churns," cutting off tree tops, and digging holes in the ground. They fired the woods, and it looked like they would clear, burn and plow the ground all at the same time. Only a few rounds were fired. We fell back in order and disorder, but mostly in disorder. A horse was cut

on the leg with a piece of shell. This was all the blood lost on our side, and I do not suppose there was much lost on the other side. One of our men claimed to be hit on his shoulder with a piece of shell, but it is more likely he tore his coat running through the brush; we went back to our camp having, as we thought, tasted a little of war and seen a little of its danger. And we all knew we had smelt gunpowder. Not a few of the men told of narrow escapes. Some of them were certain they felt the wind of the shells, while others felt the heat of them as they passed by, and still others were jarred by the explosions.

On 24 June, we marched to Richmond and camped that night in the capitol square. Next morning we marched to the front line and about 4 p. m., had our first battle, at French's Farm. General Robert Ransom ordered Colonel Hill to advance through an open field on a brigade of Yankees, who were behind a fence on the edge of the wood, and ordered a Virginia regiment to support us on the right, but from some cause the Virginia regiment never came up, and the Forty-eighth fought a brigade of Federals for some time. They were in woods behind a fence and we in an open field. However, a Georgia battalion flanked the enemy on our left, and thus we were enabled to hold the ground. We lost Major Huske, Captain Clegg, Company D, and Captain Atwood, Company K, killed; and Captain Michael, Company H; Captain Walker, Company C; Lieutenant Anderson, Company D; and Lieutenant Stilts, Company A, were wounded. We lost non-commissioned officers and men: Killed 21, wounded 46; and of the 46 wounded, 19 died, according to the North Carolina Roster.

Some unpleasantness occurred between General Ransom and Colonel Hill, which resulted in the Forty-eighth Regiment being detached from Ransom's Brigade and on the next day, the 26th, we marched to Gaines' Mill, on the extreme left of our lines, where Stonewall Jackson had been fighting, and when we arrived Jackson had driven the enemy some two miles. So we camped on that battlefield that night and the next morning recrossed the Chickahominy river and went from place to place, until we joined General Walker at White

Oak Swamp, on 1 July. We were a little too late to take part in the Malvern Hill battle, but were under a severe shelling from gunboats, which were then on the James river at or near Harrison's Landing. This was the end of the seven days' battles around Richmond.

We then went back to Petersburg, where we were in camp until August. Some time in August while at this camp our regiment was recruited by conscripts and before we had time to drill them we were ordered to march and were now on the memorable Maryland campaign. We took part in the capture of Harper's Ferry 15 September, 1862. General J G. Walker with his own and Ransom's Brigade occupied the Loudon Heights between the Shenandoah and Potomac, and we were in full view of the town when it was surrendered. We then marched to Maryland, crossing the Potomac at Shepherdstown, and on the night of the 16th were placed to guard a ford on the Antietam river, about two miles south of Sharpsburg. The battle on the left opened very early on the morning of the 17th, and about 9 o'clock a. m. Walker's Division, (Ransom's and Walker's Brigades), were ordered to the left to support Stonewall Jackson. We arrived at the Dunkard Church, one and a half miles north of Sharpsburg, at about 11 o'clock. Jackson's line had been broken at that point. Kershaw's and Hood's Brigades had been driven out of a piece of woods west of the church and the enemy was coming into the gap. Walker's Division drove them back and held the field. If we had been a few minutes later the Confederate army might have been destroyed. The Forty-eighth Regiment occupied that part of the line at the church. The church was about the center of the regiment. We drove the enemy out of the woods, and charged their line east of the church, but were cut all to pieces. We lost about one-half of our men, killed and wounded. So closely were we pressed in this battle that brigades were divided. The Twenty-seventh North Carolina Regiment and Third Arkansas Regiment, a part of Walker's Brigade, were sent to the right, and the Forty-eighth North Carolina and Thirtieth Virginia Regiments to the left, leaving a gap between us that would have required several men to have filled, but fortunately for us,

the enemy did not see it. Then, about 4 o'clock p. m., Colonel Hill was ordered with his regiment, the Forty-eighth, to the extreme left of the line, where there was some hard fighting. We marched in quick time a little over a mile, but when we arrived, Jackson's men had driven the enemy back some distance. We then marched back, and arrived at the Dunkard Church about dark, where we remained until the night of the 18th, when we recrossed the Potomac.

After the Army of Northern Virginia had returned south of the Potomac, the army was more thoroughly organized into brigades, divisions and corps. Before, it seems, we had some regiments not permanently attached to any brigade. The Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth and Forty-eighth Regiments formed General John R. Cooke's Brigade, belonging to General H. Heth's Division and A. P Hill's Corps.

The next battle we were in was at Fredericksburg, Va., 13 December, 1862. Here the Forty-eighth suffered another heavy loss, being in the hottest of the battle. Major. A. A. Hill was wounded; Captain J C. Stafford, Company K; Lieutenant Peter W Plyler, Company E; Lieutenant M. S. Brem, Company C, and Lieutenant H. C. Banner, Company K, were killed. Captain J D. Dowd, Company D; Captain John Moore, Company I; Captain J F Heitman, company H; Lieutenant J K. Potts, Company C; Lieutenant H. A. Gray, Company F, and Lieutenant Edwin Tyson, Company G, were wounded. The loss of non-commissioned officers and men was very heavy.

From Fredericksburg Cooke's Brigade was sent, in January, 1863, to Pocataligo, S. C., where we remained until April, and were then ordered back to Eastern North Carolina until July. While here we did a good deal of marching, were in a little skirmish at Gum Swamp, and drove the Yankees as far as Red Banks, eight miles from New Bern. Then we went from place to place. We were at Little Washington, Tarboro, Weldon and other places until about 1 July, when we went to Richmond, and were around Richmond several days guarding the city. In August we went back to Fredericksburg, were there about a month; then to Gordonsville, where we joined the regular army and marched to Bristoe

Station on 14 October, 1863. We had missed all the hard marching on the campaign to Pennsylvania and the great battle of Gettysburg, but at Bristoe we suffered the heaviest loss of any battle we had yet been in, charging a heavy body of the enemy entrenched behind a railroad. From here we fell back to Orange Court House, where we went into winter quarters.

The next battle was at the Wilderness, 4 May, 1864. Heth's Division fought a heavy force of the enemy for two hours before we were relieved. At no time during the war did his division do better fighting. The writer heard General Lee tell General Cooke that night that he (Gen. Cooke), and Kirkland, with their brigades, had held 25,000 Yankees in check for more than two hours. Our loss was not heavy, but the enemy's was very great. There seemed to be as many dead men in our front as we had men engaged. The ground on which we fought was a dense thicket of small growth, which was cut down by minie balls before we were relieved, so that we could see the enemy's lines as they would come up to relieve one line after another, which they did about every fifteen or twenty minutes. And to show that the undergrowth was cut down principally by our balls, the tree tops in the rear of us were cut all to pieces, while but few balls struck trees near the ground, showing that the enemy shot over us. We were relieved a little before sunset by Wilcox's Division, and after dark were marched out and formed in line in an old straw field, where we lay until morning. At daylight the skirmish firing began. At sunrise the enemy advanced in several lines. In the meanwhile a battery of small guns was brought in and opened on the advancing lines of Federals which were between us and the rising sun. This was all the cannon used in the battle. The smoke from the cannon was so dense the Captain could not see what he was doing. The writer was ordered by General Cooke to go in front to see where the shells were falling. I soon saw that they were going over their lines and doing no execution at all. I informed the commander of the distance of the enemy. The next fire he began to cut lanes through the advancing lines, but the artillery had time only for a few

rounds, when General Longstreet's Corps advanced and drove them back into and out of their breastworks and took possession of the same. This was a most gallant act. Longstreet with one line drove several lines of Federals back, leaving the ground strewn with Federal dead. That night when we were in the captured breastworks and all was perfectly still, Gen. Lee rode across the line on the extreme right. Some one cried out "Three cheers for General Lee," which was taken up on the right and went the rounds to the extreme left—the grandest rebel yell of the war. The rear guard of the retreating Federals fired and ran. Some of them, captured a few days afterward, reported that several corps were ordered back as they thought we were advancing.

The regiment had a heavy skirmish on Po river and was severely shelled. The Federals, in falling back at this place, fired the woods on us, but the fire, like their shells, did not stop us in our advance. This all amounted to but little.

At Spottsylvania Court House we were engaged on 12 May, but the loss of the Forty-eighth was not so great as that of some other regiments, as we were not in the hottest of the battle. However, we did some hard marching through the brush and some fighting.

From here we were on the memorable march to Richmond, and exposed to an awful heavy shelling on 25 May, near Hanover. The solid shot were falling and bouncing thick on the ground. The only casualties I remember were Sergeant C. Lawhon and Corporal M. C. Yon, Company D, Forty-eighth North Carolina, both killed with the same shot. Our next engagement was at a place called Turkey Bend, or Turkey Hill. Wilcox's Division was fighting in front of us, and a heavy body of Federals were moving on his left flank. We were preparing to meet them, throwing up some temporary breastworks under a sharp skirmish fire. Lieutenant W C. Howard, of Company F, Forty-eighth, was killed. Some four or five men wounded, were, I think, all of those lost by the Forty-eighth in this engagement. The enemy was moving in line of battle to our right. We were ordered to move in quick time and make no noise. While on this rapid march an amusing incident occurred, which I will relate: We were

passing through a ravine where some Yankee prisoners were under guard. A very large, gruff looking Yankee was standing up slurring the rebels. He asked: "Why do you rebels wear such dirty, ragged clothes?" An Irishman by the name of Forrest, belonging to Company D, Forty-eighth Regiment, and as good a soldier as was in the regiment, answered: "Faith and be jabbers, we Southerners always put on our sorriest clothes when we kill hogs, and it is hog killing day with us now," pointing to a dead Yankee near by. This wit of the Irishman caused a laugh, and forgetting the order to be quiet, some two or three men raised a yell, which was taken up along the line—a regular rebel yell. The enemy's lines halted, broke and fell back, so we did not get into any further engagement. Whether it was this yell that caused them to fall back, I cannot say, but I don't suppose they knew we were near them until the yell betrayed our whereabouts.

Our next engagement was at Cold Harbor, on 3 June, 1864. Cooke's Brigade was on the extreme left of the Confederate lines, only some cavalry being on our left. This was, with us, probably the very hardest-fought battle of the war. Just as we got in position on an old road—and it was about sun up—the Federals, in heavy force, made a charge which we met and after a hard struggle, which lasted some time, repulsed. They soon made another charge. We were assisted in repulsing this one by a battery of artillery, which had just come up. The enemy would reinforce and come again, but we repulsed every charge and during the day, working between attacks, built a very good breastwork. The last of the several charges was made about 6 o'clock p. m. Several lines came forward.

One line would fire and fall down, another step over, fire and fall down, each line getting nearer us, until they got within sixty or seventy-five yards of some portions of our line, but finding themselves cut to pieces so badly, they fell back in a little disorder. Our men seemed to rise all at once, with a rebel yell, and poured lead into them, cutting down numbers of them. The old field in front of us was almost covered with their dead. At no time during the war did the Forty-eighth and Twenty-seventh do better fighting.

Our position was a good one, and an important one to be held. We lost several good men in this battle. Lieutenant M. D. Clegg, of Company D, was wounded.

At 9 o'clock that night we took up the line of march, went from place to place for several days, spending about one week at Deep Bottom. At this place we had no battle, except with flies. I never saw so many flies in all my life. Then we went to the right of Petersburg. We were on the line about one half mile to the right of the "Blow-up," as it was called. The day before the springing of that mine we were ordered to the left of Petersburg and had crossed the Appomattox, and were marching toward Richmond, when we heard the explosion. We returned and on the next day took up our quarters in the trenches. The Forty-eighth occupied that position which had been blown up. Here we remained for several weeks, when we were moved to the extreme right and built our winter quarters on Hatcher's Run. General Heth was ordered to attack the enemy whenever he attempted to extend his lines. So we had several engagements, one at the Yellow House. This was in August, 1864, and on the 25th of the same month we were in the battle of Reams Station, where we charged a heavy force of Federals behind a breastwork, broke their line and captured several hundred prisoners and several pieces of artillery. This was a brave assault. Two attacks had been made by other troops (I forget which) that had failed to dislodge them. This had given the enemy courage, and was rather discouraging to us, who had to make the third attack. The timber for fifty or seventy-five yards in front of their works had been cut down, the limbs sharpened, making it very difficult to reach the works. The position of the Forty-eighth was near the centre of the line, the timber in our front being thinner than in other portions. We succeeded in gaining the works sooner than those on the right or left, who had more brush to go through. The first part of the line broken was on the left wing of the Forty-eighth, but the whole line was surrendered in a very few minutes. We lost several in this charge. Lieutenant M. D. Clegg, of Company D, was killed on the works about the time the line

was broken. Lieutenant C W Shaw, of Company D, was wounded before he reached the works.

The next day we marched back to Petersburg to our position on the right of the lines. The next march we took, and I think it was in December, was to Bellfield, where we had a skirmish with Yankee cavalry. Sergeant H. B. Cox, of Company D, lost his foot by a shell. This was all the loss I remember. We remained on Hatcher's Run until the Confederate lines were broken, 2 April, 1865. We had several skirmishes while here. On 25 March the troops on our left had made a charge on the enemy's lines at Hare's Hill and had carried their front works near the Appomattox river, but had to abandon them the same day. We were ordered around there in the morning and returned in the evening to our quarters to find the Yankees in possession of our picket post. They had captured all of our pickets and could have been in possession of our breastworks and winter quarters if they had known it, as we had left only a few men in camp, who were unfit for duty. Captain Henry R. McKinney, of the Forty-sixth Regiment, who was commander of the brigade sharpshooters, formed his line on the right, near the creek, and made a very brave and successful charge, recapturing our picket post in this charge. Lieutenant Austin, of the Forty-eighth Regiment, a very brave and good officer, was killed, and I do not remember that any other was killed or wounded. I believe that Lieutenant Austin was the last man killed in the Forty-eighth as I do not remember any other being killed afterwards.

We only held our picket post about two days, as our pickets were captured on 28 or 29 March, and on 2 April, the lines to our left were broken. We took up the line of march to the right, and crossing the creek, moved to Jarrett's Station, where in the evening we had a skirmish, but were about to be surrounded and made haste to get away and were on the memorable retreat to Appomattox Court House, losing more or less of our men every day.

The last skirmish we were in was on Thursday evening before the surrender on Sunday, 9 April, 1865. The Twenty-seventh and Forty-eighth Regiments were ordered out to

the right to protect the wagon trains, but before we arrived the enemy had set fire to a part of the wagons, and a heavy force of infantry was marching up the road the wagons were on. Here we had a narrow escape. A squadron of cavalry got in our rear, cut us off and we were scattered on both sides of the road. Several of our men were captured. Every man was left to take care of himself. Company D, which had only thirty-seven men at Petersburg 2 April, had been reduced to eleven and in this affair lost ten, leaving only one man and the Captain to witness the surrender. On Sunday morning, and in the race through the woods on Thursday evening, the Captain lost his hat, running from a Yankee horseman, and would have been captured had it not been for a deep gully near by into which he went and got out of the horse's way.

At the surrender the Forty-eighth Regiment had been reduced in number until we did not have men enough to make more than one full company.

Now a few words in regard to the officers of the regiment, and I close.

Colonel R. C. Hill was a very fine military man, very strict and much beloved by his men, but being in bad health he was often absent. He only commanded the regiment in the campaign of 1862 and 1863. He died in December, 1863.

Lieutenant-Colonel S. H. Walkup was made Colonel. He was one of the bravest officers in the Army of Northern Virginia. He was often laughed at on dress parade and brigade drill for his awkwardness, but when in battle all that knew him were satisfied that Walkup was there and that his regiment would do its duty.

Lieutenant-Colonel A. A. Hill was a good and kind officer. All his men liked him. He made a very fine appearance and was always with his men. I think he was one of the two or three officers of the regiment who missed no part of the march or duty imposed on the regiment during the memorable campaign of 1864.

Major B. R. Huske was a very mild, gentle and kind-hearted man, a well posted and good officer. The whole regiment was grieved at his death, which occurred on 15 July,

1862, from wounds received in the battle of French's Farm, 25 June.

Captain F L. Wiatt, of Company A, was promoted to Major at the death of Huske. He was an old man, and won the respect of the whole regiment; was wounded at Harper's Ferry, 15 September, 1862, and resigned in October of the same year and was with us only a short while.

Captain W H. Jones, of Company G, was made Major on the death of Colonel Hill, 4 December, 1863, but owing to bad health was not with us much. He was a very good man and kind hearted. He loved his men and was loved in return.

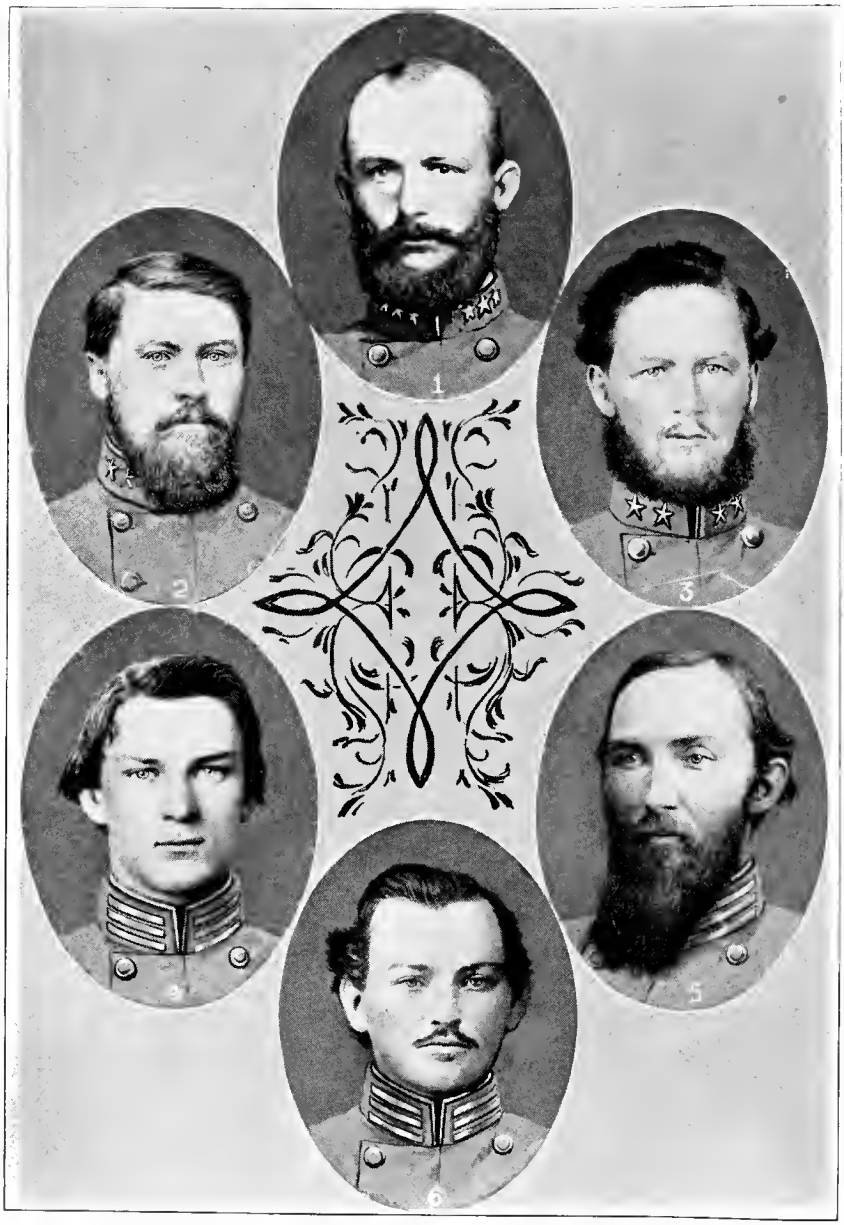
H. A. Gunter, of Wake, was our first Adjutant. From some cause he was not with us in the battle of French's Farm. Lieutenant J H. Anderson, of Company D, was acting Adjutant and was wounded in that battle. Adjutant Gunter was wounded in the battle of Sharpsburg, and died soon after from wounds.

Lieutenant John R. Winchester, of Company A, then became Adjutant and was with us all the while. He was a very good officer and soldier. He was a cheerful and lively man and was generally ready for any fun with officers or men. The men all liked Winchester.

Several of the company officers are worthy of special reference in this history, and the writer would be glad to give it, but failing to get any answer to his letters of inquiry and having to depend solely on his memory, can not recall the names and company to which they belonged. Each company had its brave men. Many of these are entitled to mention in this sketch, but for the reason stated above the writer will have to leave them out, but feels assured that he can say that the Forty-eighth Regiment did as much hard marching and fighting as any regiment from North Carolina. From first to last, it had about 1,300 men, many of them as brave and as obedient as any soldiers in the Confederate army.

W H. H. LAWHON.

MOORE CO., N. C.,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

1. S. D. Ramseur, Colonel.
2. James T. Davis, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. John A. Flemming, Lieut.-Colonel. (Killed at Petersburg.)
4. Cicero Durham, Captain and A. Q. M.
5. Henry A. Chambers, Captain, Co. C.
6. Edwin V. Harris, Captain, Co. E.

FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT

By THOMAS R. ROULHAC, First Lieutenant Company D.

The Forty-ninth Regiment of North Carolina State Troops was composed of ten companies of infantry, raised in the counties of McDowell, 1; Cleveland, 2; Iredell, 2; Moore, 1; Mecklenburg, 1; Gaston, 1; Catawba, 1; and Lincoln, 1, which assembled at Garysburg, in the month of March, 1862. It was constituted, at its formation, wholly of volunteers, many of whom had sought service in the earlier periods of the war, and all of whom had responded to the call for soldiers, as soon as it was practicable to furnish them with arms and equipments. In the latter part of March, or early in April, 1862, organization of the regiment was effected, by the election of:

Stephen D. Ramseur, Colonel.
William A. Eliason, Lieutenant-Colonel.
Lee M. McAfee, Major.
Lieutenant Richmond, Adjutant.
George L. Phifer, Sergeant-Major.
Captain E. P George, Commissary.
Captain J. W Wilson, Quartermaster.
Dr. John K. Ruffin, Surgeon.
Reginald H. Goode, Assistant Surgeon.
Peter Nicholson, Chaplain.

The non-commission staff was completed with James Holland, Quartermaster-Sergeant; Harrison Hall, Hospital Steward, and James H. Geiger, Ordnance Sergeant.

The history of Ramseur is known to all the people of North Carolina. No one of her sons ever contributed, by his devotion to her service, skill and heroic bravery on the field of battle, and fearless exposure and ultimate sacrifice of his life, more to the historic lustre of the name and honor of this, one

of the greatest of the American States. He gave untiring energy and masterly judgment to the rapid organization, drill, discipline and preparation for active service in the field of his regiment. A graduate of the Military Academy at West Point, and for a few years an officer in the regular army, endowed with a mind of great strength and quickness, constant in purpose, daring and brilliant in execution, prepared for the science of war and revelling in its dangers and fierce encounters, and with a spirit fired with a determination to excel in the profession of arms; it is not to be wondered at, that, under his capable authority and the influence of his stirring example, the regiment rapidly took form and shape as a strong, disciplined and efficient body of men; nor that the impress of his spirit and the effect of his training should, as its subsequent career demonstrated, be retained, not alone to characterize the natural development of veterans, but, likewise, as a part of its heritage of honor, so long as the flag under which he arrayed them claimed an existence amid the heraldry of nations. Short as was the length of his authority over them, the force of his activity, zeal and fearlessness was felt and recognized by the Forty-ninth (Ramseur's) Regiment through all its struggles and hardships, in the camp, on the march, in making or meeting assaults, advancing or retreating, in sunshine and storm, through the long and wearing siege of Petersburg, where it rushed alone into the cavalier line after Grant's mine was sprung, and at skirmish distance in the works held the Federal advance at bay for three hours—the slender link by which the two halves of General Lee's army were united, until reinforcements could be brought seven miles to retake the crater; both when disaster fell fast and fierce on the cause for which they fought, as well as when before their steady charge the foe gave way, and victory perched on their well-worn battle flag; when death had thinned its ranks and suffering made gaunt the survivors, until at last its lines were crushed—its shout and shot the last to be heard—on the field of Five Forks. North Carolina, whose soil has been made sacred by the ashes of so many great and strong men, her jurists, her statesmen, her magistrates, her teachers, her ministers and

priests, her soldiers and her patriots, holds within her bosom the dust of no nobler or more perfect man than that of Stephen Dobson Ramseur.

The regiment was officered by men of education, and, for the most part, in the full vigor of young manhood.

Its rank and file were taken from the Piedmont region of the State, which then contained, as extended observation enables the writer to say, a population second to none for self-reliance, integrity, just respect for authority and modest worth and courage. Many of them were descendants of the people who made the Hornets' Nest of North Carolina a fortress of independence and a terror to their country's invaders.

Soon after its organization Lieutenant-Colonel Eliason resigned, Major McAfee succeeding him, and Captain John A. Fleming, of Company A, was promoted to Major.

MALVERN HILL.

When the operations of McClellan's army around Richmon, culminating in the seven days' battles, began, the regiment was assigned to General Robert Ransom's Brigade and participated in several of those engagements. At Malvern Hill it bore a conspicuous part, leaving its dead and wounded on the field next in proximity to the enemy's works to those of the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, then commanded by Colonel Zebulon B. Vance.

In this ill-advised assault the command suffered heavily in killed and wounded, Colonel Ramseur among the latter. His handling of the regiment and its conduct during those conflicts led to his prompt promotion to Brigadier-General, and to his assignment, as soon as he recovered from his wound, to another command.

On 1 November, 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel McAfee was commissioned Colonel, Major Fleming was promoted Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Pinckney B. Chambers, of Company C, was made Major. During the summer of 1862 Adjutant Richmond fell a victim to typhoid fever, and the life of this brave and capable officer was thus destroyed—no less an offering on the altar of patriotism than if he had laid it

down on the battlefield. Cicero A. Durham, of Cleveland county, prior to the war a cadet of the Military Institute of General D. H. Hill, at Charlotte, and who afterwards became so famous throughout the army as the fighting quartermaster, was appointed adjutant. He served in this capacity with great efficiency and distinction until 2 May, 1863, when he was promoted Assistant Quartermaster to succeed Captain George, who was transferred to other duties. William H. Dinkins, who had been Sergeant-Major, was appointed Adjutant, and continued in that position during the remainder of the war, actively on duty until some time in the spring of 1864, when bad health caused his absence to the close of hostilities.

By reason of the losses in front of Richmond in this campaign, both of officers and men, changes in the roster of officers were numerous.

It has been impossible at this late day to procure anything like full or correct reports of the killed, wounded, or missing in these battles. The aggregate was considerable, and the casualties told the story of the fierce struggles in which the command was engaged, but access to the reports cannot be had.

George W Lytle succeeded to the Captaincy of Company A; Henry A. Chambers was, on 10 December, 1862, appointed to the command of Company C; Columbus H. Dixon was made Captain of Company G, on 17 November, 1862, in the place of Captain Rufus Roberts; Charles F. Connor, on 1 February, 1863, succeeded Captain W W Chenault, of Company I, and George L. Phifer became Captain of Company K, in the place of Peter Z. Baxter, on 24 July, 1863; changes occasioned by the losses of 1862. Corresponding changes ensued in the other grades of company officers.

SHARPSBURG.

From Richmond the scene of action was speedily transferred by General Lee to the Potomac and beyond; and then back to the capture of Harper's Ferry, thence to Sharpsburg, or Antietam, the command moved under the orders of that great figure in our military history. At Sharpsburg it

shared with the rest of the brigade the honor of retaking and holding the famous "West Woods." Here the gallant Lieutenant Greenlea Flemming, brother of Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, was killed and a dozen men of his company killed or wounded by a shell which fell in its ranks as the brigade was moving by the flank to change its position just before sunset. It was the rear company of the Forty-ninth and Colonel M. W Ransom and Adjutant Walter Clark, who were riding at the head of the Thirty-fifth, were close behind and barely escaped the shell which was evidently directed by the enemy's signal corps at the moving line of bayonets, glistening in the setting sunlight, for it came from a battery on the other side of the Antietam. Returning to Virginia, the regiment was in the battle of Fredericksburg, beginning 11 December, 1862, where it took position to the left of the plank road, and during the four days that the fighting there continued it was subjected to heavy cannonading and some infantry fighting, several officers and men being killed and wounded.

After this battle the Forty-ninth remained in winter quarters near Fredericksburg until 3 January, 1863, when it was marched, by the Telegraph road, to Hanover Junction, thence to Richmond, and from there to Petersburg, which it reached on the evening of the 7th, and remained until the 17th, when it left for eastern North Carolina.

From this time on until the spring of 1864, the regiment, with the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Fifty-sixth Regiment, composed Ransom's Brigade which protected the line of the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad from those two terminal points, and that of the road from Goldsboro to below Kinston; being constantly on the move, appearing one day at the other end of the line from that at which they were the day before, and vigilantly guarding the territory of Eastern North Carolina, from which such abundant supplies were contributed for the support of our armies. Strategically, it was the right wing of the Army of Virginia; and General Scott, whose plan of campaign delineated

at the beginning of hostilities, of intersecting the Confederacy, was verified by events, and the consummation of which resulted in our downfall, declared that, after the opening of the Mississippi, a heavy column pushed through the gateway of Eastern North Carolina, would cause the abandonment of Virginia, and the dissevering of the most formidable portion of the Confederacy. The closing events of the war demonstrated the accuracy of his judgment and his consummate skill as a strategist. That it was not done sooner must convince the student of history how severely taxed were the powers and resources of the Federal government to meet and hold in check the main armies of the South, and that its dismemberment was deferred so long alone by the magnificent courage and endurance of its soldiery Ransom's Brigade was the most important force in the section mentioned for many months; and, occupying in quick succession Weldon, Warsaw, Kenansville, Goldsboro, Kinston, Wilmington and Greenville, it was always on hand to confront any movement of the enemy in that region. Occasionally a sharp brush with the enemy's forces was necessary to warn him of the foe in his path. From New Bern, Plymouth and Washington, in Eastern Carolina, and from Norfolk and Suffolk, in Virginia, the Federals would send out expeditions; but, in each instance, no great distance would be traversed before they were confronted by Ransom's Brigade. Besides the protection thus afforded to the main army in Virginia, an extensive and fertile section of the country was thus kept open for supplies of corn and meat to the Confederate forces; and it was not rare for other supplies and needed articles to reach our lines through that territory. Meanwhile, the ranks of all the regiments in that brigade were recruited; drill and discipline were advanced; and equipment was perfected; so that, when in 1864 we were made a component part of General Beauregard's command between Richmond and Petersburg, on the south side of the James, it is more than probable that there was not in the Confederate service any brigade, containing a greater number of effective, well-trained, veteran soldiers.

GUM SWAMP.

On 22 May, 1863, a sharp affair occurred at Gum Swamp, in Craven or Lenoir county, in which the Fifty-sixth and Twenty-fifth Regiments, owing to the negligence of our cavalry, were surrounded by a considerable force of the enemy; and, after losing about 170 prisoners, the remainder of those two commands barely escaped capture by fighting their way through the surrounding forces. During this movement Companies C, D and H, of the Forty-ninth, were picketing at Moseley's Creek, a parallel road from New Bern. The balance of the regiment being moved from Kinston to the support of the troops at Gum Swamp, by their timely arrival stayed the retreat and checked the attack.

The invasion of Pennsylvania during the summer of this year by General Lee occupied the attention of most of the Federal troops, and movements elsewhere were generally of slight importance.

During the presence of our army across the Potomac a demonstration in considerable force, probably with the hope of recalling some of the troops from General Lee to oppose it, was made towards Richmond from the direction of the Chickahominy; and Ransom's Brigade was hurried by rail to meet the threatened raid. At Bottom's Bridge the Federal column was encountered; but after two days of brisk skirmishing its commander declined to attempt the passage of that stream. Some losses in killed and wounded were sustained by our forces, and the enemy suffered to as great an extent, with the addition of some prisoners captured by us. The return of the raiding column to York river was precipitate; and after a few days our command was back at its old duties in North Carolina. During the residue of the summer and succeeding fall and winter it was constantly on the move.

On 9 June, 1863, Thomas R. Roulhac was appointed Sergeant-Major from Manly's Battery, which was then in the army of Northern Virginia. In the latter part of October he joined the regiment at Garysburg, and served in that capacity and as Acting Adjutant, until appointed First Lieutenant of Company D, in June, 1864.

On 28 January, 1864, the command left Weldon for Kin-

ston, and there became a part of the forces under Generals Pickett and Hoke in the movement against New Bern. General Pickett proceeded down the Dover road from Kinston with Corse's Brigade of his own division, and those of Hoke and Clingman, of North Carolina, and attacked a camp of the enemy at Batchelor's Creek, capturing about four hundred prisoners, two pieces of artillery, a large number of small arms, horses and camp equipage, and drove the entire Federal force precipitately towards New Bern.

ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

Ransom's Brigade with Barton's and Kemper's Virginia Brigades, some cavalry and artillery, all under command of General Barton, crossed the Trent river, and proceeded from near Trenton down the south side of the Trent to the south of New Bern. Meanwhile General J. G. Martin had moved with his brigade of North Carolina troops from Wilmington towards Morehead City. About daylight on the morning of 1 February the picket post of the Federals was reached and surprised without the escape of a single man. Every precaution had been taken, by the detention of negroes and every other person likely to be friendly to the enemy in the section through which we had hurriedly moved, to prevent information of the movement from reaching the commander of the Federals; and it is now certain that a complete surprise to him was effected. As soon as the picket post was taken, each regiment of Ransom's Brigade was ordered to throw forward a company as skirmishers, Company C, of the Forty-ninth, being selected from that regiment. This was done largely on account of the well-earned reputation of its commander, Captain Henry A. Chambers, for prudence, vigor and courage. No officer of his rank in the Confederate service was ever more faithful, constant and zealous in the discharge of every duty on every occasion and in every position than this distinguished and conscientious commander of Company C—youthful in age, but clear-minded, steadfast and useful in all emergencies, ripe in judgment beyond his years, and as fearless as a lion. This company and the whole line of skirmishers were pushed forward rapidly under the orders

of Captain Cicero A. Durham, the fighting Quartermaster, until the enemy's fortifications were reached. It was the opinion of the officers above mentioned that, if the cavalry had been dismounted and advanced with the skirmishers, the works could have been easily taken. Instead of this being done, the artillery was moved to the front and a duel was begun between our few field pieces and the heavier guns in the redoubts, which resulted in nothing. That New Bern could have been taken in a short time and without any considerable loss, if any vigorous pressing had been undertaken by our troops on either side of the river, is now well ascertained. Indeed, General Martin captured a courier from General Palmer, the commander of the Federals at New Bern, bearing a dispatch to the officer in command at Morehead City, stating that, unless reinforcements were quickly sent him, he must surrender.

It was during this expedition to New Bern that Commander Wood, of the Confederate Navy, made his daring attack upon the gunboat, "Underwriter," and from under the very guns of their fortifications, captured and cut it out, and finding it disabled by the shells of the Federal batteries, destroyed it. Beyond these small results, however, nothing was accomplished; unless the whole movement was intended as a demonstration, merely.

During the entire day of 2 February, Company D, under Lieutenant Barrett, and Company E, under Captain E. V Harris, occupied the skirmish line, the enemy keeping close within their works, and not venturing any movement or scarcely firing a shot from small arms or artillery.

On the night of the 2d the column retraced its steps through the deep, muddy swamp roads, illuminated by the blazing pine trees, whose turpentine boxes had caught from the camp fires on the way down.

CAPTURE OF SUFFOLK.

The next expedition, after returning to our winter quarters, was from Weldon, *via* Franklin and South Mills, in the direction of Norfolk. The enemy was met along the Dismal Swamp canal, driven in after the capture of a num-

ber of prisoners by Colonel Dearing, in command of the cavalry, and the capture of Norfolk threatened. This march was made in very severe weather in the early part of March, 1864. It was immediately succeeded by the attack on and capture of Suffolk, on 9 March, 1864. This was a most exciting little affair, in which our troops met negro soldiers for the first time. Quick work was made of their line of battle, and their retreat was soon converted into a runaway. Their camps were hastily abandoned, arms thrown away, and, discarding everything which could impede flight, they made their way to the swamps. One piece of artillery and a large number of horses captured, and a loss in killed and wounded of several score of the enemy were the results. It was here that our Quartermaster, Captain Durham, placing himself at the head of a squad of cavalry, charged into and put to flight a regiment of the enemy's horse. A number of them took refuge in a house in the suburbs of Suffolk, and began a brisk and hurtful fire upon Durham's men. He charged the house and succeeded, after a surrender had been refused, in setting fire to it. They continued the fight, until the flames enveloped the building, and all of its occupants were destroyed. The firing of our artillery was excellent, every shot taking effect among the fleeing ebony horsemen. At a swift run, by sections, Branch's Battery kept shot and shell in their midst as long as the fleeing cavalry could be reached.

The brigade held Suffolk all that day and the next. A heavy column was moved from Norfolk and Fortress Monroe to meet us; but, though we offered battle, no attack was made, and when we advanced, with Companies D and K, of the Forty-ninth, in the brigade front as skirmishers, the enemy fell back to the swamp. On the evening of the 10th we returned *via* South Quay and Murfree's Station, to Weldon.

On 30 March we began our march from Weldon, by way of Murfreesboro and Winton, the latter place having been totally destroyed by the Federals in one of their raids, to Harrellsville, in Bertie county.

At this place and Coleraine and on the Chowan and beautiful Albemarle Sound the month of April, 1864, was spent in the fullest enjoyment of all the delights of springtime, beau-

tiful scenery on sound and river, and in the opening life of woods and flowers. The fish and other delicacies of this favored region touched a tender spot in the make-up of veterans, and cause us much congratulation that we had been chosen to cover this flank of the attack upon and capture of Plymouth; and the period spent here marked a green spot in the memories of officers and men as the last space of repose and comfort, which fell to our lot during the struggle.

On the 30th we marched through Windsor and the lovely Indian Woods to Taylor's Ferry, on the Roanoke, which we crossed at this point; thence through Hamilton to Greenville, where it was reported that on the fall of Plymouth Little Washington had been evacuated by the Federals, after burning a considerable portion of the town. Pushing on from Greenville, we crossed Contentnea creek, the Neuse and Trent rivers to Trenton, thence to Kinston, and back to Weldon. Immediately on our arrival there, we were sent to Jarratt's Station, on the Petersburg Railroad, to drive back the raid, and open up the road from there to Stony Creek. A raiding column of Federal cavalry had the day before succeeded in cutting the road and tearing up the track after a hard fight with the small force defending it. On 10 May we reached Petersburg, and were at once hurried to Swift Creek, on the Richmond pike, where fighting had been going on for some time. We were now a part of Beauregard's army, and while he remained in Virginia continued under his command.

DREWRY'S BLUFF.

At the date last mentioned (May, 1864), Butler's movement on Drewry's Bluff, with Richmond as the objective point, had begun; and from this date until Five Forks every day was a day of battle for us. Butler had seized the Richmond pike, when we reached Petersburg, and had thrown a considerable force across to the railroad and Chesterfield Court House. But the advance of Hoke's Division with the brigades of Ransom and Hagood, under the command of that sterling North Carolinian, Robert F. Hoke, caused its withdrawal to the river side of the pike. At Half-Way House Hoke offered battle, but the enemy slowly retired before him,

and the way was opened to Drewry's Bluff for the reinforcements to Beauregard. As soon as we arrived there Ransom's Brigade was ordered to the right of our lines, and had barely reached there and occupied the works when the first assault of the battle of Drewry's Bluff was made upon us. While repelling this attack in front, but fortunately for the Forty-ninth Regiment, which was on the extreme right, not till the Federals in front were beginning to give way, a Federal line of battle, which had extended around our right under cover of a piece of woods, opened a galling fire in our rear, and advanced to the charge from the woods on our right. But brave Durham had his skirmishers there; and though they were few in number, he was ever a lion in the path of the foe. Foot by foot he contested the ground until the charge in our front was broken, when the Forty-ninth and Twenty-fifth Regiments leaped over the works and poured a destructive volley into the ranks of the flanking party, before which their line melted away. Poor Durham—truly a Chevalier Bayard, if ever nature placed a heart in man which was absolutely without fear and a soul without reproach or blemish—received here a wound in his arm, necessitating amputation, from which he died. Occupying a position which did not call for his presence in battle, he never missed a fight; was always in the thickest at the forefront of the tempest of death; he gloried in the fray, and earned a reputation throughout the army as the fighting Quartermaster, which added lustre to the valor of our troops, and which North Carolina and North Carolinians should not suffer to perish. He was but a boy, an humble, devout Christian, as pure and chaste as a woman, and in the intensity of his love for his State and the cause she had espoused he counted the sacrifice of death as his simplest tribute in defense of her honor.

General M. W Ransom was here wounded in the arm, and the brigade was afterwards commanded during the summer and till his return at different times, by Colonels Clarke, Rutledge, McAfee, Faison and Jones. The Fifty-sixth Regiment being hotly assailed in falling back, lost a number in killed and wounded; but repulsed every assault with telling effect. The Forty-ninth lost eleven killed and a consid-

erable number of wounded in this engagement of the evening of 13 May Brave Captain J. P Ardrey, of Company F, was wounded, and left in the enemy's hands, and died before he could be removed. Lieutenant S. H. Elliott, of the same company, was wounded, and Lieutenant Linebarger, of Company H, was mortally wounded. Dr. Goode, Assistant Surgeon, and three litter-bearers were captured, in attending upon the wounded. The 14th and 15th of May were passed in repelling repeated charges of the enemy upon our lines and efforts to advance his own from our outer line of fortifications, which had been abandoned to him on the evening of the 13th. Severe loss was inflicted upon them in each attempt.

16 MAY, 1864.

The morning of 16 May was obscured by a dense fog. Preparations began at 3 o'clock on the Confederate side for an attack, and by daylight Beauregard moved his entire army forward for an attack, *en echelon* by brigades, left in front, the left wing being under the immediate command of General Robert Ransom. Ransom struck the enemy on their extreme right, carried their works, and turned their flank, each brigade in turn assisting to open the way to the next attacking one.

Blow after blow fell thick and fast on Butler's army. All parts of his line were heavily pressed, so that none could render assistance to the other, and before noon his army, largely exceeding in numbers the attacking force, thoroughly equipped and confident of victory, was completely routed, and Beauregard had gained one of the best fought battles of the war. In boldness of conception and execution, tactical skill, thorough grasp of all the conditions of the situation, and command of his forces, conducted by him in person on the field, it was unsurpassed by any fight on this continent; and but for Whiting's moving from his position on the turnpike in Butler's rear, thus allowing him to escape without molestation to Bermuda Hundreds, it would have resulted in the capture of his entire army. It is difficult now to understand how so many blunders could have been committed at

critical moments by Confederate generals in important commands, save that the hand of Fate had penned the decree of our defeat: but of all those, which contributed to our downfall, that of Major-General Whiting, on the afternoon of 16 May, 1864, was one of the most glaring and stupendous. Soon after the battle opened the Twenty-fourth and Forty-ninth Regiments were ordered to the right flank of Bushrod Johnson's Brigade, on the right of the turnpike facing towards Petersburg, and which was heavily engaged on the immediate right of our brigade. Moving at double-quick through thick woods we came upon the enemy's first line of works, and drove them from it with great loss. Pursuing the foe, we advanced to the attack of the second line under a very heavy fire in our front, and a severe enfilade from our right. Colonel W J Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth commanded the brigade. Under his orders, and following that regiment, we turned to the right, and drove the enemy from the position, which enabled the enfilade fire to harass us, capturing his colors, inflicting heavy loss upon him. Moving directly forward, we again attacked the second line of their works, and had nearly reached them, when we were ordered to fall back and reform our lines. This was done under shelter of a skirt of woods; and in a short time Major James T. Davis, Colonel McAfee having been wounded, and Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming having been left in command of the brigade skirmish line when we were moved to the right, gave the command to advance with Captain Chambers' company deployed as skirmishers at an oblique angle to our right. In this attack, aided by the flanking movement from our left, the works in our front were readily taken. In these two charges of this day the Forty-ninth lost heavily in officers and men. When the works had been taken the dead body of Captain Ardrey was recovered. Besides the wounding of the Colonel, Lieutenants W P Barnett, of Company F and H. C Conley, of Company A, were killed. Captain G. W Lytle, of Company A, was mortally wounded, and Lieutenants Daniel Lattimore, of Company B, and B. F. Dixon, of Company G, were severely wounded.

BERMUDA HUNDREDS.

The next day we continued the pursuit of Butler's army, and assisted in his "bottling up" at Bermuda Hundreds. Several brisk skirmishes and picket fights were had there until the lines were established, but none were of serious importance. In a picket charge on the night of 1 June, Captain George L. Phifer, of Company K, was wounded. Companies C F and K of the Forty-ninth were on the picket, and sustained a loss of three killed and seventeen wounded. In June, 1864, Dr. Ruffin resigned, and Dr. Dandridge was appointed Surgeon, in which position he continued to the close of the war.

On 4 June we crossed the James at Drewry's Bluff, and confronted the enemy on the Chickahominy, at the York River Railroad bridge, and strengthened the fortifications there. On the 10th we were relieved by Kirkland's North Carolina Brigade, and returned, by a forced march, to the south side, and thence to Petersburg, to meet Grant's advance across the James. From this time on Ransom's Brigade became a part of Bushrod Johnson's Division. After marching all night of the 15th we reached Petersburg about 8 o'clock on the morning of the 16th, and were hurried to our fortifications on Avery's farm. At a run we succeeded in getting to the works before the enemy reached them. Through a storm of shot and shell we gained them, just in time to meet their charge, and drive them back. In the afternoon we were hurried to Swift Creek, where the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, under Major John W Graham, and Gracie's Brigade, drove back the Federal cavalry which had attempted to cut our communications with Richmond, and enter Petersburg from that direction. We were then marched along the Richmond pike until about midnight, when we opened communication with the head of Longstreet's Corps. By the first light next morning we were hurried by train back to Petersburg, where early in the morning the enemy had captured a considerable part of Bushrod Johnson's old brigade and several pieces of artillery. Hastily we threw up a line of rifle pits; and now commenced Beauregard's magnificent grapple with Grant's army until Longstreet's command could

reach us. With scarcely more than 5,000 men and eighteen pieces of field artillery Beauregard kept in check Grant's army, coming up from City Point, all the day and night of 17 June, until sunrise of the 18th, when Longstreet came over the hill at Blandford cemetery on our right. When flanked on our right, we would fall back to meet the flank attack, repulse it, and then, being massed, Beauregard would hurl his shattered but compact battalions against the Federal lines, and force them back, to reform and again press upon us. Through the 17th and the succeeding night every foot of ground from Avery's farm to Blandford cemetery was fought over and over again.

Ransom's Brigade played a conspicuous part in these movements. First Lieutenant Edward Phifer, of Company K, received his death wound through the lungs in this battle. A bright, noble boy and faithful, light-hearted soldier. At times during this engagement our troops would be lying on one side of the works and those of the enemy on the other; and it is said that the flag of the Thirty-fifth Regiment was lost and regained a half dozen times, until the Michigan Regiment with which it was engaged in a hand to hand encounter, surrendered to it. It was desperate fighting, and the most prolonged struggle of the kind during the war. With anxious hearts we saw the night wear on, not knowing what fate the morning would bring us, if we survived to see it; and it was with a glad shout that, as the sun rose, and the Federals were massing on our right flank to crush us, we welcomed the head of Longstreet's column coming at a trot to our right wing. The contemplated charge upon us was not made; rifle pits were hastily dug and strengthened into formidable entrenchments on the new line; and thus began the siege of Petersburg.

From this date until 16 March, 1865, just nine months, in the lines east of Petersburg, occupying at different times positions from the Appomattox river to the Jerusalem plank road, often not a hundred yards from the works of the enemy, constantly exposed to danger and death from mortar and cannon shells and balls, grape, shrapnel and the deadlier minie balls, we engaged in daily battle. Exposed to sun and storm,

heat and cold, with scant food and insufficient supplies, the ranks thinning hourly from deaths, wounds and sickness, depressed by the gathering gloom of our falling fortunes, through the dark, bitter and foreboding winter of 1864-'65. the men of the Forty-ninth were faithful unto the end; never faltering in the performance of any duty, and never failing to meet and resist the foe.

On 8 June, 1864, Lieutenant C. C Krider, of Company C, was wounded in the right shoulder by a piece of shell. On 23 July Captain John C Grier, of Company F, was wounded in the arm and thigh by pieces of a mortal shell.

THE CRATER AT PETERSBURG.

On 30 July occurred the springing of Grant's mine under Pegram's Battery, formerly Branch's, on a hill about four hundred yards to the right of our regiment, and on the left of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade. The Twenty-fifth North Carolina was between us and the mine. The battery, most of its men and officers, and a considerable part of the Twenty-sixth South Carolina Regiment were blown up, the mine containing, it was said, thirty tons of blasting powder. A large excavation was made; and in the smoke and confusion, amid the flying debris and mangled men, the enemy charged in great force, effecting a lodgment in our lines, and a large number of the flags of Burnside's Corps floated on our works. Reinforcements poured to their support and a vigorous assault was made on our line on both sides of the crater. In the van were negro soldiers, crying, "No quarter to the rebels." Most fortunately for our army, we had completed but a day or two before a cavalier line in the rear of the salient, where the explosion occurred; the two lines, salient and cavalier, forming a diamond shaped fortification. Into this cavalier line, from the left of the salient, rushed by the right flank the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments of Ransom, and, from the other side, the remnant of the Twenty-sixth South Carolina, which had been blown up, and a part of another regiment of Elliott's Brigade. These rapidly formed for a charge to retake our works, but the enemy massed his troops so rapidly into the broken salient that it

was deemed useless to make the attempt, and best to hold on to the cavalier line. Now began some of the most desperate fighting of the war. Ransom's Brigade was that day commanded by Colonel McAfee, of the Forty-ninth.

Simultaneously with the rush into the broken salient, the enemy in three lines of battle charged our works for a half mile on each side, only to be repulsed time and again with fearful slaughter. Meanwhile, in the cavalier line, our troops were clinging to the works with the tenacity of despair, and fighting with the fury of madmen. The compact, crowded mass of Federals rendered every shot effective. Our men aimed steadily and true; and as each rifle became too hot to be used another gun was at work by one who took the place of the first, or supplied him with rifles which could be handled. From a redoubt to our left and rear Wright's Battery opened upon the crowded, panic-stricken foe, as they huddled together, an enfilading, plunging fire with five field pieces, and two mortars, every shot and shell tearing its way through living flesh. Between our men and small bodies of the enemy, who formed and tried to force their way down our works, several hand to hand conflicts, with bayonets locked and rifles clubbed, occurred, which availed nothing to the cornered enemy. When their supports on either side were driven back it was seen that those who had filled the salient were caught in a trap. When the fighting was hottest, but our supreme danger had been averted, in a large measure, by his promptness in the arrangement and disposition of his own regiment and those men of the brave South Carolinians who had formed with us (when driven from the salient), he, who had so often led us with such calm, intrepid courage, Lieutenant-Colonel John A. Flemming, was shot through the head and instantly killed. Never was a braver knight than he; our State had no more devoted son than Flemming; the South no truer soldier. Somewhat reserved in bearing, severe to those who failed in duty, and disdaining all pretense and insincerity, he did not desire nor practice the arts which seek popularity. But he was so brave, so ready, so steadfast and constant in all trying conjunctures, as in his friendships, that his officers and men loved and respected

him and followed him with implicit zeal and faith. He had said to the writer more than once that he was convinced that he would be killed, and the last time he repeated it, soon after some disaster to our arms, remarked that he would have few regrets in laying down his life, if by so doing, the freedom of the South could be secured. From early morning till nearly 3 o'clock in the afternoon of that fateful July day, the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth North Carolina and Twenty-sixth South Carolina held our line against tremendous odds, and until the force of the assault was spent and broken, when Mahone's Virginia, Wright's Georgia and Sander's Alabama Brigades charged with the Twenty-fifth North Carolina and retook the entire salient, inflicting frightful slaughter upon the enemy. Our lines were re-established, and the Federals were driven back at all points, losing, it was stated, more than 9,000 men, killed and wounded, besides 2,000 prisoners, colors and small arms captured in the undertaking. And when the victory was won, and the Forty-ninth was returning to its former position, Captain Edwin Victor Harris, of Company E, was shot through the neck, severing the main artery; and with his life-blood gushing from his wound and his mouth, realizing his mortal calamity but unable to speak, he extended his hand in farewell to Major Davis, and then to his devoted Lieutenant, John T. Crawford, and immediately the spirit of Edwin Harris, so joyous, happy and bright in this life, winged its flight to God.

Nothing occurred beyond the daily fighting, shelling and sharpshooting, on the lines occupied by our brigade, until 21 August, when we were hastily marched to our right, and under A. P. Hill attacked the enemy on the Weldon Railroad, and after carrying two of his lines of fortifications, dislodged him from his position. Our loss was severe, the Forty-ninth suffering considerably. We then returned to our old place in the trenches. On 14 December Captain C. H. Dixon, of Company G, was killed, and Major C. Q. Petty, who had been appointed Major in the place of James T. Davis, who had succeeded Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, and eight men, were wounded during a fierce mortar shelling to which we were subjected.

HARE'S HILL.

We remained in the trenches until 16 March, 1865, when we were relieved by Gordon's troops, and moved to the extreme right of our lines, occupying Mahone's old winter quarters, and there we stayed until the evening of the 25th, when we were marched to Petersburg, and back to our old position on the lines. We reached there about midnight, and soon the arrangements were made for the attack on Fort Steadman, or Hare's Hill, under General John B. Gordon. Just at daylight the next morning we advanced to the assault, Ransom's Brigade being the second one from the Appomattox, and directly in front of Hare's Hill. At the signal the sharpshooters of the Forty-ninth, under First Lieutenant Thomas R. Roulhac, following the storming party led by Lieutenant W W Flemming of the Sixth North Carolina, in advance, moved across our works, through the obstructions in our front, and the whole brigade, with a rush, climbed the *chevaux de frise* of the enemy, and clambering through and over the deep ditches in their front, went over the enemy's works and captured them before they aroused from their slumbers. The surprise was complete. Sweeping down their lines, the Forty-ninth opened the way for other troops. Ransom's Brigade captured Fort Steadman, the Forty-ninth rushing over it without a halt, and all the works in our front; but those between us and the river were not taken, although we enfiladed that part of the line, and with our fire on their flank, it could have been easily done. Their fort near the river was thus enabled to annoy us greatly. Here Colonel McAfee was again slightly wounded, and Lieutenant-Colonel James Taylor Davis was killed. He was a splendid soldier and a true, warm-hearted gentleman, of decided talents and great promise in his profession—the law. His life would have been an honorable and useful one if he had been spared. Major Petty having remained in camp sick, Captain Chambers, of Company C, was left in command. We held our position until all the troops on our right had fallen back, and most of those on our left. When the order to fall back finally reached us, the retreat was made under the most trying cir-

cumstances. We were exposed to a raking fire from three directions, many were falling at every step, but at last we returned to our lines with but a remnant of the command, having sustained the greatest loss in killed, wounded and prisoners the Forty-ninth met with during the war. Captain Torrance, of Company H, was wounded, Lieutenant Krider, of Company C, was wounded and captured, and Lieutenant Witherington, of Company I, was wounded. The brigade lost 700 men in all, of which the proportion of the Forty-ninth was the greatest.

FIVE FORKS.

After the failure of the attack on Grant's lines, evidently a forlorn hope on General Lee's part, we returned to our quarters on the right. On 30 March we participated in the battle of Burgess' Mill and drove the enemy back into his entrenchments after he had assaulted ours. On the 30th we were, with Wallace's South Carolina Brigade, attached to Pickett's Division, and the next morning were marched down the White Oak road to Five Forks, the Federal cavalry making frequent reconnoissances to ascertain our movements. From Five Forks we marched on to Dinwiddie Court House and engaged in battle that afternoon with Sheridan's cavalry, driving them back. We slept on the field. During the night the force in our front was largely reinforced, and before day on 1 April, we were aroused and slowly fell back to Five Forks. By noon we had reached that place and formed line of battle, Ransom's Brigade on the left, the Twenty-fourth holding the extreme left, next the Fifty-sixth, then Twenty-fifth, Forty-ninth and Thirty-fifth. We threw up rifle pits and after the whole regiment had been deployed as skirmishers by Captain Chambers to support the Twenty-fourth, the line was formed as above mentioned, with Wallace's Brigade on our right. The skirmishers and sharpshooters of the brigade were placed under the command of Lieutenant Roulhac and connected with our cavalry on the left. These dispositions had hardly been completed when clouds of Federal skirmishers were advanced against our skirmish line, but

these were held at bay Twice they charged with lines of battle, and were driven back by our skirmishers. Heavy columns of infantry—Warren's whole Corps—were observed massing on our left, and moving around our flank. Frequent reports were made of this by Lieutenant Roulhac, but apparently no steps were taken to oppose or prevent the movement. After several messages had been sent, Captain Sterling H. Gee, Adjutant-General on Ransom's staff, visited the line and directed Lieutenant Roulhac to turn over the skirmish line to Lieutenant Bowers, and to report in person to General Ransom, who had already communicated the reports to General Pickett. Proceeding to do this, he reached General Ransom and was ordered by him to find General Pickett and inform him of the condition of affairs. But by this time Warren's infantry had struck the left of our line, and overlapped it. Colonel Clarke quickly threw back his regiment to meet this attack, and in a short time was joined by the Twenty-fifth in a similar movement; but this small force could do nothing to check such overwhelming numbers. Doubled up and overpowered, they were nearly all shot down or captured. The remainder of our line was hotly engaged with two lines of battle in their front, which had driven in our pickets, and advanced to the attack of our main line. Running over the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth, and driving the Fifty-sixth from their flank and rear, the enemy was upon us, both flank and rear, protected by the woods on our left, where Clarke had been, while he still fought the line in our front. Colonel McAfee was again slightly wounded, and directed Lieutenant Roulhac, whom he had requested to act as Adjutant to turn over the command to Captain Chambers. As quick as he could be reached, the regiment was moved by Captain Chambers out of the works, at right angles to its former front. In this Colonel Benbow, commanding Wallace's South Carolina Brigade, lent the assistance of one regiment, all he could spare from the right of his command, our Thirty-fifth North Carolina and the remainder of his brigade remaining to hold our front line. The enemy was upon us in a few moments and were discovered in our rear, as we then faced, moving in line

of battle. We were penned in like rats in a hole, but the old regiment which Ramseur formed, and McAfee, Flemming, Davis and Chambers had led, still fought with desperation, and though its ranks were thinning fast, the survivors held their ground and did not yield. A slight attempt was now made to reinforce us by another regiment from Wallace's Brigade and one of Pickett's regiments which tried to reach us on our left and extend our new line, but the enemy was pouring down upon us, and the succor could never reach us. At this time Captain Chambers was severely wounded in the head by a minie ball, and instructing Adjutant Roulhac to hold the position, was carried from the field, barely in time to pass through the only gap which the enemy had not filled. In but a few moments more the left flank of the regiment was driven back on the right to our works, while the enemy's line in our former front came over the works, which had been stubbornly held by Captain J. C. Grier, of Company F, up to this time. We were overpowered and the few that were left were made prisoners, some being knocked down with the butts of rifles, and Captain Grier throwing away his empty pistol, as several bayonets were presented at his breast, with the demand for his surrender. And this was the end. Three times after we were surrounded the Forty-ninth advanced to the charge and drove back the constricting foe; but when we charged in one direction, those on the other side of us closed in upon us, and our efforts availed nothing. Many were killed, maimed and stricken in that last useless and criminally mismanaged encounter. The few who escaped endured the manifold sufferings and daily conflicts of the historic retreat to Appomattox, where with numbers still further reduced, the reminant of the glorious regiment was surrendered, commanded by Major C. Q. Petty.

The details and most of the data for this monograph of the old command have been obtained from Captain Henry A. Chambers, who kindly furnished me the diary he faithfully and accurately kept throughout that stormy period. Accidentally, as I find in reading it over, I have omitted the fact of the wounding of Captain James T. Adams, of Company K, in the trenches during the month of July, 1864, by which he

was deprived of his leg. Others may have escaped my recollection. I have intended them no slight. I would that I could do justice, full but simple justice, not alone to its officers, but its brave, patriotic, faithful rank and file, so many of whom gave up their lives or carried through life mutilated limbs and bodies. In the midst of exacting duties, I could not refuse to contribute the best I could to perpetuate some memorial of the Forty-ninth Regiment. In the thirty-odd years since the surrender many, perhaps most, of those who survived the casualties of war, have faced the grim Sergeant and answered the roll-call beyond. With all such, may their portion be God's blessing of everlasting peace. With those who yet remain, may He bless them with prosperity, usefulness and honorable repose when age has sapped their energies and wasting strength has unfitted them for further toil. My heart fills with sadness and distress when I think of those who poured out their blood as a sacrifice which perchance, the world will say was useless. But, nay, the lesson of courage, fidelity and heroism they left cannot be useless to mankind; the scroll of honor upon which their names are written high cannot, and shall not, be effaced or tarnished by their descendants and their kindred. And what a noble band they were—Ramseur, McAfee, Flemming, Durham, Harris, Davis, Chambers, the Phifers, Adams, Lytle, Krider, Grier, Horan, Thomas, Alex. Barrett, Summers, Crawford, Ardrey, Barnett, Dixon, B. F Dixon, Torrance, Linebarger, Rankin, Connor and Sherrill. As was said of a group of noble young Englishmen, it may be truly said of them:

"Blending their souls' sublimest needs
With tasks of every day;
They went about their greatest deeds
Like noble boys at play."

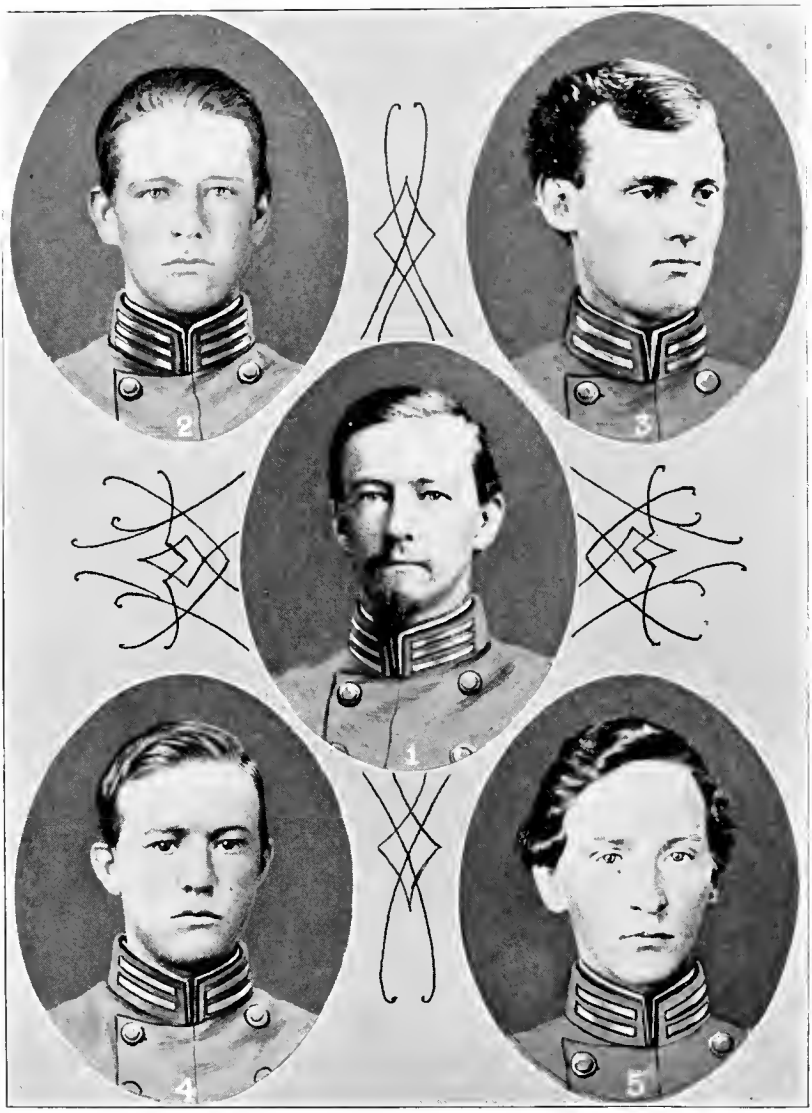
How their bright young faces come back over the vista of all these long years! How splendid and great they were in their modest, patient, earnest love of country! How strong they were in their young manhood, and pure they were in

their faith, and constant they were to their principles! How they bore suffering and hardship; and how their lives were ready at the call of duty! What magnificent courage; what unsullied patriotism! Suffering they bore, duty they performed, and death they faced and met; all this for the defense of the dear old home land; all this for the glory and honor of North Carolina. As they were faithful unto thee, guard thou their names and fame, grand old mother of us all. If thy sons in the coming time shall learn the lesson of heroism their lives inspired and their deeds declared, then not one drop of blood was shed in vain. If they emulate them, and lift yet higher the banner of the old land's honor, credit and worth, then the agony of defeat is healed to those who survive.

To the memory of those who fell, and those, who have since passed away, this imperfect tribute is offered. To the veterans of the Forty-ninth, who are still among the living, an old comrade salutes you.

THOMAS R. ROULHAC.

SHEFFIELD, ALA.,
9 April, 1901.



FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

1. George L. Phifer, Captain, Co. K.
2. B. F. Dixon, Captain, Co. G.
3. Thos. R. Roulhac, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
4. Edward Phifer, 1st Lieut., Co. K.
5. James Greenlee Flemming, 1st Lieut., Co. C.
(Killed at Sharpsburg.)

ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT

By B. F. DIXON, Captain Company G.

The Forty-ninth Regiment was made up of as brave and gallant men as ever shouldered muskets in defense of the South. They were men who did not rush into the army at the first call for volunteers, but who considered well what they were doing, and then calmly and deliberately put down their names as volunteers to defend their country. A large majority of them were heads of families that were dependent upon them for the bread necessary to sustain the lives of wife and children. Yet those men kissing their wives and babies good-bye in March 1862, with unwavering step marched to the front to expose their lives to the bullets of a foe of twice their number. Many a man volunteered in the very outbreak of the war because he had been told that the war would not last sixty days. Indeed some of those war prophets offered to drink all the blood that would be shed, so he hurried away from home for fear that he would not get even a taste of the much-coveted battle. All this had passed away when the Forty-ninth Regiment was organized, and the men knew that a desperate struggle was before them. The Northern army had been greatly strengthened by recruits and discipline, and the great Southern army had already begun to realize the fact that one of the greatest wars ever waged in any country was then raging. Knowing this these men left their homes and turned their faces toward Virginia, the great battle field of the South. The Forty-ninth Regiment was made up largely from the country, very few town men were in it, and strange as it may seem, the town and city men were able to endure loss of sleep and irregular hours better than the men from the farms. I suppose the reason for this was the fact that the countryman kept regular hours at home. He went to sleep at 8 o'clock at night, and got up before the sun. He had been accustomed all his life to three square

meals a day at regular intervals, and to depart from that custom was a hardship difficult to meet. While the townman was in the habit of keeping late hours, and eating at uncertain periods, hence the march and the general irregularity of living did not affect him as it did his country cousin. But with a few weeks of drill and discipline the splendid health and the absence of dissipation, which had marked the life of the country boy, began to assert themselves, and soon he became the tough and wiry soldier that never fell out on a march, and was in line when the command came to charge.

The regiment was composed of the following companies:

COMPANY A—*Burke and McDowell*—Captain Flemming. He afterwards became Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, and was one of the bravest men in Lee's army. He fell dead, shot through the heart at the Crater in front of Petersburg. George W. Lytle and J. M. Higgins were successively Captains.

COMPANY B—*Cleveland County*—Captain Corbett. This company was transferred to the Forty-ninth Regiment from the Fifteenth Regiment. Captain Corbett was fearfully hurt in a railroad wreck near Cherryville, N. C., while on his way home on a furlough in 1864, and after realizing the fact that he would not again be able for duty, resigned and Lieutenant Jud. Magness was promoted to the Captaincy of the company.

COMPANY C—*Rowan County*—Captain Pinkney B. Chambers. On his promotion to Major he was succeeded as Captain by Henry A. Chambers.

COMPANY D—*Moore County*—Captain William M. Black. Upon his resignation David S. Barrett became Captain.

COMPANY E—*Iredell County*—Captain Alex. D. Moore.

COMPANY F—*Mecklenburg County*—Captain Davis. Captain Davis was promoted to Major and Lieutenant James P. Ardrey was promoted to Captain. Major Davis was killed in front of Petersburg 25 March, 1865, just a few days before the surrender. He was a brave and true soldier. Captain Ardrey was killed at Drewry's Bluff. I could not keep

back the tears when they told me that he was killed. I loved him like a brother. He was succeeded as Captain by Lieutenant John C Grier.

COMPANY G—*Cleveland County*—Captain Roberts. Captain Roberts resigned on account of ill health and C. H. Dixon was made Captain. He was killed by a mortar shell in front of Petersburg and Lieutenant B. F. Dixon was promoted to the Captaincy, which he held to the close of the war.

COMPANY H—*Gaston County*—Captain Charles Q. Petty. Captain Petty was promoted to Major and Lieutenant J N. Torrence became Captain.

COMPANY I—*Catawba County*—Captain W W Chenault. Lieutenant Charles F Connor afterwards became Captain. Lieutenant Connor always made me think of a game rooster in battle. He was tall and straight and his eye was full of fire.

COMPANY K—*Lincoln County*—Captain Peter Z. Baxter. Upon his resignation Lieutenant George L. Phifer and later James T Adams became Captain.

In the organization of the regiment the following gentlemen were elected Field Officers: Stephen D. Ramseur, of Lincoln county, Colonel. He afterwards became a Major-General and was killed in battle 19 September, 1864. W A. Eliason, Lieutenant-Colonel; Lee M. McAfee, Major; Cicero Durham, Adjutant; Dr. Ruffin, Chief Surgeon. Colonel Eliason resigned and Major McAfee was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, and after the promotion of Colonel Ramseur, McAfee became Colonel of the regiment and commanded it to the close of the war.

Cicero Durham became Quartermaster of the regiment, but was in every battle in which the regiment was engaged and always at the front. He had command of the sharpshooters and was killed at Drewry's Bluff while bravely leading his men. I would be glad of the opportunity of naming many more of the Forty-ninth Regiment on account of their magnificent soldierly qualities, but as this is a sketch of the regiment and not of individuals, I must desist.

While the Forty-ninth Regiment was engaged in most of the battles in which the Army of Northern Virginia partici-

pated, and always with honor, and while I would be glad to tell the story of their devotion and fortitude and bravery on all these bloody fields, still I have not the time to go into these matters, and will confine myself to a brief synopsis of the doings of this regiment during the great siege of Petersburg. I do not believe that any soldier in any war, either civilized or savage, ever suffered more than the men who filled the ditches around Petersburg from June, 1864, until the last of March, 1865.

Half-clad and half-rationed these brave, devoted men held the lines for nine long months, including one of the most terrible winters that ever spread its white mantle over the earth. Barefooted in the snow, the men stood to their posts on picket, or at the port-holes. Lying in bomb-proofs, so-called, with mud and water to the ankles, and the constant drip, drip, of muddy water from above, clothing and blankets saturated, with a fire that only made smoke, these men passed through the winter of 1864 and 1865. The mortar shells from the enemy's guns fell in the ditches or crashed through the bomb-proofs day and night, while the sharp, shrill hiss of the minie ball, and the shriek of shell and solid shot made the hours hideous day after day, and night after night. For nine months it was certain death for a man to raise his head above the works. Yet with joke and laughter these men dodged the mortar shells and elevated their old ragged hats on ramrods to see how many holes would be shot through them in a given time. I have seen a dozen men gather in the ditch to watch for the coming of a "mortar" as they called it, and when they saw the awful thing curving towards them, they would run with shout and gibe around a traverse while it exploded in the ditch. I saw one of these mortar shells fall in the ditch and lie there frying, when a brave soldier from Lincoln county rushed out of his bomb-proof, caught it up in his hands, and tossed it over the breastworks. When asked why he had gone out of a place of safety to do such a rash act, he said: "I thought maybe the pieces might hit some of the fellers." One night there was a fearful rainfall and the next morning it was discovered that a part of the dam across a small stream had been washed away and all the water in the

pond had disappeared, leaving an opening of some fifteen feet through which the bullets from the Yankee lines could come on the least provocation. Being officer of the day, my attention was called to a crowd of soldiers gathered on either side of the chasm, and upon investigation, I discovered the amazing fact, that these men were trying to see who could run across without being killed, or wounded. There was not the slightest necessity for any of them to cross, but in a spirit of wantonness and fun, they were making the effort. A fellow would take his old hat in his hand, step back to get a good start, then with a shout, he would rush across and kick up his heels at a great rate, if he happened to get over safe. I had to place a guard there to make them stop such foolishness. I give this incident to show how, under constant danger, men became indifferent to it.

The morning sun, as he came from his chamber in the east, day by day, made plain the path for the minie ball, and the "torch" of the mortar shell lighted up the heavens by night. The morning was a call to battle and the night was hideous with bursting shell. No wonder men became inured to danger, and sought excitement in playing with death.

In all these months I do not remember a single, solitary complaint made by any of the men, because of short rations, or cold or nakedness. No intimations were made against the character of canned beef—we had none—a piece of fat bacon and a hard and mouldy cracker were luxuries. A soldier in the trenches asked me to write a letter to his wife at home. This is the letter in substance:

"DEAR WIFE:—The Captain is writing this letter for me, and I wish to say that I am well and getting on first-rate. George Gill had his brains shot out yesterday and Jack Gibbons' son and three others were torn all to pieces with a shell, but thank God they haven't hit me yet, and if I get home I will make up for all lost time in taking care of you and the children. I was sorry to hear that you didn't have enough to eat and the children were crying for bread, but you must be brave, little woman, and do the best you can. I think we will whip the Yankees in a little while longer, and then I can come home and everything will be all right. I pray for you

and the little ones every night and morning, and I know the good God will not let you suffer more than you are able to bear. Your loving husband, etc."

This man was barefooted in January, 1865, when he dictated the letter above. He had not eaten anything all day (this was in the evening), because he had nothing to eat: he was without a coat for his back, and yet the soul within him kept him fed and warm. A Confederate soldier standing barefoot, in tattered trousers, coatless and hatless, with an Enfield rifle on his shoulder, and his cartridge box full, was as brave a man as ever met an enemy on any field of battle in any country, or in any age. Nimble as a deer, long-breathed as a hound, he could run with the horsemen without weariness and fight all day without hunger. He taught the whole world how to fight, and when I meet him to-day I lift my hat and stand bareheaded till he passes by. The Forty-ninth Regiment was in General M. W Ransom's Brigade during all these weary months, together with the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Fifty-sixth North Carolina Regiments. This brigade stood between Petersburg and the enemy, and if you will ask any citizen of that city he will tell you how they loved and honored Ransom's Brigade. General Ransom was then the same courtly and kind-hearted man he is to-day. Fearless in danger, courteous and kind always, the true gentleman everywhere, he was the idol of his men.

Although we were fighting every day while the siege lasted, there were many extraordinary battles during this period. I have not time to notice but one or two, and notably among these was the battle of the Crater.

This battle occurred on 30 July, 1864. About daylight the mine, which the enemy had charged with eight thousand pounds of powder, was fired and a terrific explosion was the result. Many thought the judgment day had come. The earth, with all it contained, was thrown into the air, leaving a hole 100 feet long, 60 feet wide, and 30 feet deep. Men and cannon were thrown hundreds of feet into the air. Simultaneous with the explosion the enemy opened two hundred pieces of artillery on our lines. The Forty-ninth was to the

left of the ravine, and we were moved rapidly across the ravine and up the works to the crater. And until the enemy, which had taken possession of our lines, was beaten back, we stood in the position assigned to us and fired our guns. The enemy, white and black, came in solid phalanx shouting: "No quarter to the rebels." They held their position until about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, when Mahone's Brigade arrived and with the Twenty-fifth North Carolina Regiment of our brigade and a regiment of South Carolina troops, drove them out. I saw the Twenty-fifth Regiment as they came dashing up the hill towards the Crater. How we cheered them! They rushed up to the Crater which was full of the enemy, white and black, fired one volley and then turning the butts of their guns, they let them fall, crushing the skulls of negroes at every blow. This was more than mortal man could stand, and in a little while the lines were re-established and the dead of the enemy lay in heaps upon the ground. I mention this battle for the reason that, taken unawares as we were, with the heavens filled with dust and smoke, and the earth rocking beneath our feet, with out-speaking thunders in our ears, if that portion of Lee's army which held the lines around Petersburg had not been made up of some of the coolest and bravest men that ever fired a musket, they would have stampeded then and there and Grant would have taken the city and Lee's army could have been destroyed. This is doubtless what the enemy expected us to do, but instead of that, our brave boys never wavered for an instant, but marched to the rescue of the gallant South Carolinians, as if they were going on dress parade. General Ransom being absent, the brigade was commanded that day by Colonel McAfee, of the Forty-ninth.

Another notable battle in which the Forty-ninth was engaged was the battle of Hare's Hill, on 25 March, 1865. In this battle the Forty-ninth lost fully one-half its number in killed, wounded and missing. Somebody blundered here. On the morning of the 25th a corps of engineers and sharpshooters crossed over the space between the lines, and without the loss of a single man, captured the enemy's works, includ-

ing Fort Steadman, together with a large number of prisoners. The main body of our army followed and took possession of the works and then lay down and waited until the enemy could reinforce their lines, and still waited until they came upon us in front and by flank in numbers so great that they could not be counted, then we were ordered to fall back to our own lines, which we did through such a storm of shot and shell as I never dreamed of before. How any man escaped death I have never been able to see. I remember starting on the perilous run never expecting to reach our lines, and the terrible thought would come to me, "I am to be shot in the back." I have always been able to find some sort of excuse for failures, but in this instance I stand to-day as I did on that day, and unhesitatingly say, "Somebody blundered."

The last battle I shall mention was that of Five Forks, the loss of which caused the fall of Petersburg and practically ended the war. After the disastrous struggle on 25 March the Forty-ninth Regiment marched through Petersburg for the last time in a drenching rain, and lay at Battery No. 45 all night; then we were moved daily from place to place until the morning of the 31st we moved in the direction of Dinwiddie Court House, and after marching and counter-marching, we finally lay down on our arms near the enemy, and waited for daylight, fully expecting to be ordered into battle every minute. We were doomed to disappointment, however, for early in the morning of the first day of April we were ordered to Five Forks, with the enemy following close in our rear. Reaching Five Forks, we quietly threw up a line of breastworks, and the enemy came thundering on in front, then in the rear, the men of the Forty-ninth blazing away with the same calm deliberation that had characterized them on scores of battlefields before, but it was no use. The Yankees simply run over us and crowded us so that it became impossible to shoot. They literally swarmed on all sides of us, and by and by, as I looked toward the center of the regiment, I saw our old tattered banner slowly sinking out of sight. A few men escaped by starting early, but most of the true and tried men of this gallant old regiment were prisoners of

war and in a little while were on their way to Point Lookout, or Johnson's Island.

It is unjust to all the other regiments of the North Carolina troops to claim for any one regiment any special bravery or devotion to the Lost Cause. There was not a regiment, so far as my information goes, that did not meet all requirements of the service and fill the measure of its responsibility to the South. But while I do not claim any special honor for any one body of soldiers from North Carolina, I do claim this for my State as against other Southern States.

With a population in 1860 of 629,942, and 115,000 voters, North Carolina sent 127,000 soldiers to the Confederate armies. She furnished 51,000 stands of arms, horses for seven regiments of cavalry, artillery equipments for batteries, etc. North Carolina expended, out of her own funds, $26,663,000 and never applied for a dollar of support from the Confederate Government. She lost 37 Colonels of regiments killed in action, or died of wounds. She had six Major-Generals in service, and three of them, namely: Pender, Ramseur and Whiting, were killed in battle. There were 25 Brigadier-Generals from this State, four of whom were killed, and all the others were wounded. The first victory was won by North Carolinians at Bethel, 10 June, 1861, and they fired the last volley at Appomattox.

In the seven days' fight around Richmond in 1862, there were 92 Confederate regiments engaged, and 46 of them were from North Carolina—just one-half—and more than one-half of the killed and wounded were from this State. At Chancellorsville in May, 1863, there were forty North Carolina regiments, and of the killed and wounded over one-half were from this State.

At Gettysburg 2,592 Confederates were killed, and 12,707 wounded. Of the killed 770 were North Carolinians, 435 Georgians, 399 Virginians, 2,588 Mississippians, 217 South Carolinians, and 204 Alabamians. The Northern army lost in this great battle 3,155 killed and 14,529 wounded. North Carolina lost during the war 41,000 men who were killed in battle or died in the service, 14,000 of the above number were

killed upon the battlefield, against 9,000 as the highest number from any other Southern State.

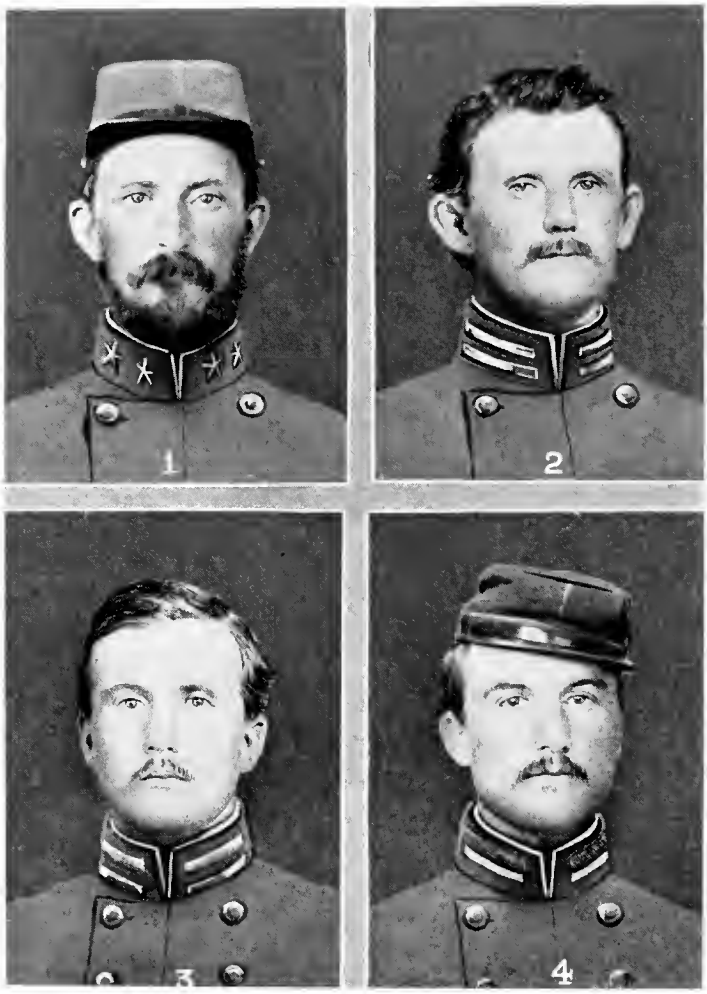
These are facts and figures which do not properly belong to a sketch of the Forty-ninth Regiment; still they are true as to the part which our good State played in that dreadful war, and I want our North Carolina boys and girls to know what sort of forefathers they had in the times which tried the souls of men.

Peace to the ashes of the brave men who gave their lives for the Lost Cause! "They sleep their last sleep, they have fought their last battle, and no sound can awake them to glory again."

May God bless the living! Some of them are watching, day by day, for the sunset's glow, or stand listening to the beat of the surf as it breaks upon the shores of eternity. May God give them victory in the last battle!

B. F. DIXON.

SHELBY, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.



FIFTIETH REGIMENT.

1. John C. Vanhook, Lieut.-Colonel.
2. Wm. A. Blalock, 1st Lieut., Co. A.
3. J. T. Ellington, 1st Lieut., Co. C.
4. J. C. Ellington, 2d Lieut., Co. C.

FIFTIETH REGIMENT

By J. C. ELLINGTON, Second Lieutenant Company C.

The Fiftieth Regiment North Carolina Troops was organized 15 April, 1862, at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, composed of the following companies:

Company A—*Person County*—Captain John C. VanHook.

Company B—*Robeson County*—Captain E. C Adkinson.

Company C—*Johnston County*—Captain R. D. Lunsford.

Company D—*Johnston County*—Captain H. J. Ryals.

Company E—*Wayne County*—Captain John Griswold.

Company F—*Moore County*—Captain James A. O. Kelly.

Company G—*Rutherford County*—Captain G. W Andrews.

Company H—*Harnett County*—Captain Joseph H. Adkinson.

Company I—*Rutherford County*—Captain John B. Eaves.

Company K—*Rutherford County*—Captain Samuel Wilkins.

Marshall D. Craton, of Wayne county, was elected Colonel; James A. Washington, of Wayne county, Lieutenant-Colonel; George Wortham, of Granville county, Major; Dr. Walter Duffy, of Rutherford county, was appointed Surgeon; E. B. Borden, of Wayne county, Quartermaster; E. S. Parker, of Wayne county, Commissary; W H. Borden, of Wayne county, Adjutant; Jesse Edmundson, of Wayne, Sergeant-Major; Dr. R. S. Moran, Chaplain.

The six weeks following the organization of the regiment were spent at Camp Mangum, and we were subjected to almost constant drilling from morning till night. There was

not, during this time, a single musket in the regiment, but as a substitute we were armed with what was then known as the "Confederate pike." This formidable implement of war consisted of a wooden handle about ten feet long, at one end of which a dirk-shaped spear was securely fastened, and attached to this spear at the shank, or socket, was another steel blade in the form of a brier hook in order, as the boys said, that they could get them "a-going and a-coming." These were not very well adapted for practice in the manual of arms, but at the end of the six weeks the regiment was remarkably well drilled, considering all the circumstances. On 31 May we were ordered to Garysburg, near Weldon, where the same routine of daily and almost hourly drill was kept up until 19 June, when we were ordered to Petersburg, Va., and went into camp at Dunn's Hill, near the city. In a short while we were moved from here to Pickett's factory, on Swift creek, where we remained until 26 June, on which date we were ordered to Drury's Bluff, on the James river, below Richmond.

We were now organized into a brigade composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth, Fiftieth and Fifty-third North Carolina Regiments, and Second North Carolina Battalion, with General Junius Daniel in command of the brigade.

IN FRONT OF RICHMOND, 1862.

On Sunday, 29 June, we were made to realize for the first time that we were actually a part of the great Confederate army, when we received orders to prepare at once for a forced march to reinforce our troops who had already been fighting for several days in succession around Richmond. Taking the Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fiftieth North Carolina Regiments and Brem's (later Graham's), Battery, General Daniel crossed the James river on a pontoon bridge, and after a hard day's march over almost impassable roads, we reached a point near the two contending armies and camp for the night. About daybreak on the morning of 30 June we resumed the march. Just at sun rise, and immediately in our front, at a short distance, a balloon sent up by the enemy for the purpose of locating our lines and discovering the

movements of our troops, made its appearance above the tree tops. Our line was immediately halted and a battery quickly gotten into position, opened fire on the balloon, which rapidly descended and passed from view. We resumed the march, but being thus timely warned, changed our course. We are soon joined by Walker's Brigade, moving on a different road, and together reached New Market at an early hour. At this place we were joined by General Wise, with the Twenty-sixth and Forty-sixth Virginia Regiments, and two light batteries, he having left Chaffin's Bluff soon after Daniel's Brigade left Drewry's Bluff, for the purpose, as he states in his official report, of supporting General Holmes at his urgent request.

The aforementioned troops, together with a squadron of cavalry under command of Major Burroughs, constituted the command of General Theo. H. Holmes, which, early on the morning of 30 June, took position near New Market on the extreme right of the Confederate line. We remained in this position for several hours, when we received orders to move down the River road to support some batteries in charge of Colonel Deshler, which had been placed in position in a thick wood near the River Road between Malvern Hill and the James river. The three regiments of General Daniel's Brigade took position in rear of Colonel Deshler's Battery with the Forty-fifth North Carolina Regiment, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Morehead, on the right; the Fiftieth, commanded by Colonel Craton, in the center; the Forty-third, commanded by Colonel Kenan, on the left. The right of the Forty-fifth rested a little beyond where the roads forked, and was partially protected by the woods; the Forty-third had the slight protection afforded by woods on both sides of the road; the Fiftieth occupied the open space made by clearings on both sides of the road at this point. About the time the formation of our lines in the road was completed, we were startled by the explosion of a single shell just over our heads, as if dropped from the skies above. We could form no idea whence it came, but were not long kept in doubt, for in a few minutes there was a perfect shower of shells of tremendous proportion and hideous sound hurled from the heavy naval guns of the Federal fleet on the James river,

just opposite and about 900 yards distant, with a perfectly open field intervening. The scene was awe-inspiring, especially to raw troops who were under fire for the first time. Such a baptism of fire for troops not actually engaged in battle has very rarely been experienced in the history of war. There was a slight depression in the road-way, and across the open space occupied by the Fiftieth Regiment was a plank fence. We were ordered to lie down behind this for such protection as it and the embankment on the road side might afford. About this time a squadron of cavalry, which was drawn up in line on the right of the road and just opposite the position occupied by the Fiftieth Regiment, was stampeded by the explosion of a shell in their ranks, and in their wild flight rushed their horses against the plank fence which, like a dead-fall, caught many of our men who were held down to be trampled by the horses, until we could throw down the rail fence on the opposite side of the road and allow them to escape, which they were not slow to do. In the confusion incident to this affair, and the effort of the men to escape injury from the wild horses, the color-bearer of the Fiftieth Regiment escaped to the open field to the right of the road and planted the colors in full view of the fleet on the river, thereby concentrating their fire on our part of the line. It was some time before he was noticed standing solitary and alone in the open field, grasping his flag staff, which was firmly planted in the ground, as if bidding defiance to the whole Union army and navy, and the rest of mankind. As soon as order had been restored, Colonel Deshler was notified that the infantry support was in position, and he was instructed to open fire on the enemy's lines, which were now occupying Malvern Hill. This served to divert a portion of the fire of the gunboats from our part of the line, but at the same time drew upon us the fire of the enemy's batteries on Malvern Hill at short range with grape and canister, together with solid shot and shell. We were now under a heavy cross fire, with no protection from the fire of these batteries. The Confederate batteries in our front under command of Colonel Deshler, were suffering terribly, and although many of the men were either killed or disabled by wounds, and most of the horses lost,

they never wavered, but stood by their guns and served them to the close of the fight. As the fire from Malvern Hill continued to increase, new batteries being constantly added, General Holmes requested General Daniel to send forward the guns of Brem's battery to reinforce Colonel Deshler. A short while after these passed to the front, General Daniel received an order from General Holmes to advance a portion of his infantry to their support. The Forty-fifth and Fiftieth Regiments promptly moved forward in column down the road, but had proceeded only a short distance when we were met by Brem's Battery in wild flight, dashing through our ranks, knocking down and running over many of our men with their horses and guns. About this time the Federals posted a battery on our right flank at short range. As it was impossible to withstand this flank fire, we were ordered to leave the road and take position under cover of the woods on the right. The writer remained in the road, but took advantage of such protection as was afforded by an oak gate post about eighteen inches square standing on the right of the road. I had been here but a short while when General Daniel came riding slowly along the line, speaking to and encouraging the men, his horse bleeding profusely from a wound just received. There was a perfect shower of shot and shell along the road all the while, but as he reached a point opposite where I was standing, a shell from the gunboats exploded just above the road, and I saw him fall from his horse. He was soon able to rise and walk to the gate post, where he remained until he recovered from the shock, after which he walked to the rear, secured another horse, and returning to where I was ordered me to go across the road, form my company, which was the color company of the regiment, march it to our former position on the road and have the regiment form on it. We were all soon back in our first position on the road, where we remained until about 10 o'clock that night, when we were marched back up the road to a piece of woods and camped for the night. On the following day, 1 July, we took position near that of the day before, and remained in line of battle during the day and all night. For six days in succession the Confederates had been

successful in battle, and the Federal army, under General McClellan, was whipped, demoralized and in full retreat, hoping almost against hope, that they might by some chance reach cover of their gunboats on the James river. The battle of Malvern Hill, the last of the seven days' battles, proved disastrous to the Confederates. There was a fearful sacrifice of life and all for naught, as on the following morning, 2 July, we stood for hours and watched the Federal column moving along the roads to their haven of safety under cover of their gunboats at Harrison's Landing, and we were powerless to interpose any obstacle.

Without presuming to criticise the conduct of this battle, or fix the responsibility for failure to capture McClellan's entire army, a result which at this time seemed almost absolutely certain, I will simply recall the fact that as early as the night of 29 June, and all day of the 30th, General Holmes was within a short distance of the naturally strong position of Malvern Hill with more than 6,000 troops, and could easily have occupied this position. During the day of 30 June, General Porter, of the Federal army, took advantage of this opportunity to occupy and fortify these heights, and thereby cover the retreat and make possible the escape of McClellan's army, while the 6,000 troops under General Holmes for two days and nights served no other purpose than to furnish targets for the Federal gunboats and batteries.

On 2 July we commenced the march back to our former camp at Drewry's Bluff, reaching there about 8 o'clock the next morning.

On 6 July we were ordered to Petersburg, where for several weeks we were employed in constructing breastworks around the city and doing picket duty along the river.

HARRISON'S LANDING.

On 31 July, just one month after the battle of Malvern Hill, the infantry brigades of Generals Manning and Daniel, and the artillery brought over by General Pendleton, consisting of forty-three pieces, together with the light batteries belonging to General D. H. Hill's command, making seventy pieces in all, left Petersburg on a secret mission. In order

to conceal the real design, the report had been freely circulated that it was a demonstration against Suffolk. We left Petersburg at 7 o'clock a. m., marched seven miles and were halted at Perkinson's Mill, where rations were issued to the men. Late in the afternoon we resumed the march, having received orders that all canteens or anything that was calculated to make unnecessary noise, should be discarded, and that no one should speak above a whisper under penalty of death. The night was intensely dark, as a heavy thunder storm prevailed. This caused much trouble and consequent delay on the part of the artillery, which was following in our rear. About midnight General Hill, with the infantry brigades of Manning and Daniel, reached Merchant's Hope Church. In a short while General Pendleton arrived and reported to General Hill that it would be impossible to get his guns in position in time to make the attack that night, as had been contemplated and planned. General Hill expressed great disappointment and fear that the expedition would prove a failure, as our troops would undoubtedly be discovered the next day He turned over the command to General S. G. French and returned to Petersburg that night. The infantry moved back from the road in a thick wood just opposite the church, where they remained concealed the balance of the night, all of the next day and until midnight of 1 August. About the time we reached our position on the night of 31 July, the rain, which had been threatening during the fore part of the night, broke loose in a perfect torrent, thoroughly flooding the flat, swampy ground upon which we were compelled to lie until midnight of 1 August.

This day, 1 August, was the date set apart by the State authorities of North Carolina for the casting of the soldier vote in the State election, which was then held on the first Thursday in August. We, therefore, had the novel experience of conducting an important and exciting election while lying flat on the ground in mud and water, and "no one allowed to move or speak under penalty of death." It is needless to state that Colonel Z. B. Vance, who was recognized as the soldiers' candidate for Governor, received an overwhelming majority of the vote cast. The writer, who was then eighteen

years of age, had the pleasure of casting his first political vote for this favorite son of the Old North State. For fear that some member of Congress, over zealous for the maintenance of "the purity of the ballot," may introduce a "joint resolution" to inquire into the legality of this election, I will state that in the army "age" was not one of the qualifications inquired into, but the carrying of a musket or sword was considered all-sufficient.

After it had been decided that it was impracticable to make the attack on the night of 31 July, General Pendleton gave orders to his subordinate officers to take such steps as would effectually conceal their guns and horses from the observation of the enemy when they sent up their balloon next morning, which was their custom each morning as soon as it was light enough to see distinctly. They had barely completed this task when the balloon was seen slowly ascending, but fortunately they were not discovered. Each commander of a battery had certain specific work assigned him by General Pendleton, and they spent the entire day in selecting locations and routes by which they could reach the same the following night. They also took advantage of the day time, when everything was in full view, to range stakes by which to direct their fire at night. The long range guns were directed on McClellan's camp across the river, and the short range on the shipping on the river. The plan was to make the attack precisely at midnight, but it was 12:30 before everything was in readiness. Forty-three of the seventy guns had been placed in position on the bank of the river, some of them at the very water's edge. The other guns were not considered of sufficient range, and were, therefore, not brought into action. By 12 o'clock the infantry had been quietly formed, moved across the road, and drawn up in line between the church and the river, in rear of our guns. We were held in suspense for half an hour when the expected "signal" gun was fired. Immediately and simultaneously the forty-three guns were discharged. Each of the guns had been supplied with from twenty to thirty rounds, with instructions to fire these as rapidly as possible, hitch up and retire. The noise and the flashes of light produced by the rapid and continuous fire of

these guns in the dead of a dark, still night, immediately on the water front of the river, was awe-inspiring in the extreme, and the consternation produced among the shipping on the river and in the camp beyond was indescribable. In less than ten minutes many of the vessels were sinking and many others were seriously damaged. In a few minutes after we opened fire several gunboats, which were up the river on the lookout for the Confederate "Merrimac" No. 2, which they were momentarily expecting to come down the river, and which were constantly kept under a full head of steam and prepared for instant action, steamed past our position at a rapid rate of speed, raking the banks of the river with their fire, but not halting to engage our batteries in fair action. Our only casualties were one man killed and two wounded by the explosion of a shell at one of the batteries served by Captain Dabney. The damage inflicted on the enemy will perhaps never be known. General McClellan, in his first report to Washington next morning, states his only damage to be one man slightly wounded in the leg, but in a later report the same day, admits the loss of ten men killed and twelve wounded, and a number of horses killed; but he strangely omits any reference to the damage inflicted on the shipping on the river where most of the guns were directed, and at much shorter range than his camp, where, as stated in his report, "For about half an hour the fire was very hot, the shells falling everywhere from these headquarters to Westover." As evidence that the damage to the shipping must have been serious, on the following morning as the tide came in the whole face of the river was covered with floating wreckage. Thus ended one of the most interesting, as it was one of the most mysterious affairs of the war.

After the affair just related, we returned to Petersburg and thence to our former camp at Drewry's Bluff, when we were again employed in constructing fortifications and doing such picket duty as was required.

On 14 August General McClellan commenced very suddenly and hurriedly to abandon his camp at Harrison's Landing, and a few days thereafter the writer rode down the river and went through and took a general survey of the camp. I

have never witnessed so great destruction of property as I saw then. Articles of clothing and blankets (all new) by the thousands, were piled in great heaps and apparently saturated with oil and fired. Great heaps of corn and oats in sacks were similarly treated and guns by the hundreds and various other articles of value were scattered over the camp, indicating that they must have left in a very great haste.

In the early part of the war it was persistently charged and as persistently denied, that the Federal troops used "steel breast-plates" for protection. I can not certify as to the truth of the charge, but will state that I saw a number of their breast-plates which were left in McClellan's camp.

We remained at and around Drewry's Bluff the balance of the year. In December we constructed comfortable log cabins in which to spend the winter. We completed them in time to move in just a few days before Christmas. We enjoyed a jolly Christmas and congratulated ourselves on being comfortably housed for the winter, but on the last day of December the brigade received "marching orders," and on 1 January, 1863, we started for North Carolina and reached Goldsboro on 3 January. We remained here until 3 February, when we started on the march to Kinston in a very heavy snow storm. We reached Kinston on 7 February, and went into camp.

ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

A plan for a general and concerted movement along the coast region between Norfolk and Wilmington had been arranged for the early spring. A part of the plan was to make a simultaneous and combined attack on New Bern from three points. General Pettigrew was to open the attack from the north side of the Neuse river and General Daniel with his brigade was to follow on the south side, while General Robert Ransom moved down the Trent river, these last two commands to attack from the land side and the rear of the city. The Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fiftieth Regiments of Daniel's Brigade left the camp near Kinston on the morning of 12 March, moving down on the south side of Neuse river, accompanied by General D. H. Hill in person. Late in the after-

noon of 13 March, we encountered the enemy in considerable force of infantry, cavalry and artillery, and strongly fortified at "Deep Gully," a small stream a few miles west of New Bern.

General Daniel led the attack in person, and after a lively skirmish the enemy retired hastily and in much confusion. After thoroughly shelling the woods in front, we occupied their abandoned works for the night. During the night the enemy was reinforced by three regiments of Massachusetts infantry, together with cavalry and artillery. At daybreak on the following morning we moved to the east side of the stream and took position in the following order: Forty-fifth Regiment in the centre, Forty-third to the right, and Fiftieth to the left of the road. A strong skirmish line was immediately thrown forward by the Fiftieth Regiment to feel for the enemy in the thick wood in our front. When they had advanced only a few paces in front of the main line they received a volley from the enemy, to which they promtly replied, and then followed a lively skirmish, our line slowly, but steadily, advancing all the while. The enemy resisted stubbornly, but were forced back on their main line. This our men were instructed to do, and then to slowly fall back in the hope that the enemy would follow and be drawn on our main line and thus bring on a regular engagement, but they remained behind their fortifications. While the Fiftieth Regiment was thus engaged, Colonel Kenan, with his Forty-third Regiment, gallantly drove the enemy from his front on the right of the road. We were in suspense in the meantime, waiting for the sound of Pettigrew's guns on the north side of the river, which, by arrangement, was to be the signal for our advance to the attack of the city from the rear. Owing to the soft, miry character of the soil on the flat lands on the north side of the river, he found it impossible to move his guns near enough to be brought into action, and without these nothing could be accomplished, and he concluded to withdraw his line and this forced us to retire from our position, which we did the following day and returned to Kinston.

WASHINGTON, N. C.

On 25 March, 1863, the Fiftieth Regiment left Kinston for Greenville, and on the 29th, crossed the Tar river, and joining Garnett's Brigade moved on Washington, which we invested for sixteen days. The regiment first took position with Garnett's Brigade on the east side, and near the town, but was afterwards ordered to meet a strong force of the enemy, which were reported to be advancing from Plymouth. They afterwards recrossed the Tar river and rejoined their old brigade (General Daniel's), which had been recalled from Virginia, at the Cross Roads near Washington, on the south side of the river. On 9 April the Fiftieth Regiment was sent by General Daniel, at the request of General Pettigrew to aid him in the affair at Blount's Mill. After this we returned to our brigade at the Cross Roads, and on the night of the 14th the Fiftieth Regiment moved down the 'Grimes Road" and took position in a small clearing to the right of the woods a few hundred yards from the bridge at the town. We were exposed to heavy fire from the Federal guns, which had perfect range of the road for more than a mile. We were located by the small clearing which we occupied and were subjected to heavy fire from the combined batteries throughout the night, but having the protection of the timber in the intervening swamp, suffered very little. On the 15th the entire brigade took position near the river between the town and Rodman's Point. The Fiftieth Regiment was sent across the low land and took position immediately on the bank of the river. In a short while our batteries at Hill's and Rodman's points opened a heavy fire, which lasted only for a short while. We supposed that the enemy's boats, which were constantly attempting to "run the blockade," had been driven back, as usual, but in a few minutes were taken completely by surprise when a small gunboat made its appearance in front of us and discovering our line drawn up on the bank of the river, greeted us with a succession of broad sides with grape and canister, until we "doublequicked" across the open ground and found cover behind a swamp. The garrison now being relieved by an ample sup-

ply of rations and ammunition, as well as reinforcement of fresh troops, the siege of Washington, which had lasted for sixteen days, was raised, and on the 16th our troops retired to Greenville.

The Federal commander, General Foster, in his official report, states that the "Escort," which succeeded in running the gauntlet of our batteries, was struck forty times by the guns at Hill's and Rodman's points, and that the pilot was killed by a rifle shot.

On 1 May the brigade was ordered to Kinston, and on the 7th moved down near Core creek, on the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad, and tore up several miles of the railroad track. Together with Colonel Nethercutt's Battalion, we made repeated incursions into the enemy's territory around New Bern, capturing a number of their pickets and scouts.

On 17 June the brigade was again ordered to Virginia, and we reached the depot about midnight; but before we were all aboard our train an order was received for the Fiftieth to return to their camp, and thus for the second time we were separated from our brigade, which we never rejoined.

On 21 June we were ordered to Greenville and attached to Martin's Brigade. We were engaged in constructing fortifications around the town and occasionally raiding the enemy's territory around Washington until 3 July, when we returned to Kinston.

POTTER'S RAID.

On 19 July, 1863, we received orders to intercept General Potter, who was raiding the eastern counties from New Bern to Rocky Mount. This expedition, composed chiefly of the Third New York Cavalry and "North Carolina Union Troops," mostly negroes, left New Bern on 18 July and reached Street's Ferry on their return 22 July. They burned the bridges at Greenville, Tarboro, Rocky Mount; also the railroad bridge and trestle at this place, the Battle cotton factory, machine shops, engines and cars, store-houses, flour mills, a Confederate iron-clad gunboat, with two other steamboats, all provisions they could find, and eight hundred bales of cotton. Some of the above might be excused as being

legitimate in time of war, but the conduct generally through the country traversed was wholly inexcusable, cowardly, and infamous in the extreme. Where they visited plantations they ordered the negroes to take the horses, wagons, buggies and carriages and plunder their owner's houses, taking whatever they wished and join the procession. General Potter, in his official report, states that some three hundred of these negroes reached New Bern with him. This is a very small proportion of the number we intercepted and captured at the "Burney Place," where Potter succeeded in flanking us and making his escape. Our object was to get between Potter and New Bern, cut off his retreat if possible, or at least harass and delay his return until reinforcements might reach us by way of Kinston and effect his capture. Unfortunately we had no cavalry except a small detachment of Colonel Kennedy's men. Colonel Faison, with the Fifty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, had been left to guard and hold Coward's bridge. This left only the Fiftieth Regiment and a portion of Colonel Whitford's Battalion to operate. The difficulty of contending with the movements of cavalry in an open country can be fully appreciated, especially as they kept constantly on the move all night. By destroying all the bridges and by rapid movement, without rest, sleep or anything to eat, we held them on the upper side of the creek for two days and nights. After maneuvering all night of the 21st, crossing plantations and traveling unused country paths, they succeeded in escaping with the head of their column about daybreak on the morning of the 22d. We succeeded, however, in reaching the point in time to intercept the rear of the column consisting mostly of negroes, traveling in every conceivable style. General Potter, in his haste to escape, with his troops, abandoned his "contrabands," as he calls them, to their fate.

On reaching the "Burney Place" we opened fire on the column with a small brass cannon mounted on a saddle strapped to the back of a mule. This utterly demoralized the "contrabands" who, in their mad rush to keep pace with their erstwhile deliverers, but who were now fleeing for their lives, failed to discover us. The shock was so sudden and unex-

pected that the effect was indescribable. The great cavalcade, composed of men, women and children, perched on wagons, carts, buggies, carriages, and mounted on horses and mules, whipping, slashing and yelling like wild Indians, was suddenly halted by our fire upon the bridge. This fire was upon some negro troops who were in the rear of Potter's column. One negro Captain, who was driving a pair of spirited iron-gray horses, attempted to rush past three of our men who were lying in the yard and was shot dead as he stood up in the buggy firing at them as he drove past. Many others were either killed or wounded in attempting to escape through the woods near by. In the excitement and confusion which ensued many of the vehicles were upset in attempting to turn around in the road and many others wrecked by the frightened horses dashing through the woods. We scoured the woods and gathered up several hundred negroes among the number several infants and a number of small children who had been abandoned to their fate. About 8 o'clock we started in pursuit of Potter. For miles the road and woods on either side were strewn with all kinds of wearing apparel, table ware, such as fine china and silver ware, blankets, fine bed quilts and all sorts of ladies' wearing apparel which had been taken from the helpless, unprotected women at the plantations visited by the negroes, under General Potter's orders. The reason these things were strewn indiscriminately along the road was that the few men of Colonel Kennedy's Cavalry and such as we were able to mount from time to time with the abandoned horses, kept up a running fight with the rear of the retreating column from the "Burney Place" to Street's Ferry, causing many of the spirited carriage horses to become unmanageable and take to the woods, wrecking the vehicles and scattering their contents. I saw a number of instances where the carriages had been upset and the throats of the horses cut to prevent their falling into our hands. The Fiftieth Regiment, with the exception of the few who had been mounted, performed the extraordinary feat of marching forty-eight miles on this, 22 day of July, 1863, reaching Street's Ferry about two hours in the night, and this after having been in line or on the march continuously for two days

and nights without rest, sleep or rations. When we reached the ferry that night there was perhaps not more than one-fourth of our men in line. The writer had charge of the remnants of four companies, but after a rest of about two hours nearly every man and officer was in his place. About midnight some citizens of that section came into our camp and reported that General Potter had communicated with New Bern and that a number of transports had reached the Ferry with heavy reinforcements, and that we were in very great danger of being captured. Acting upon the supposition that this report was true, we left our campfires brightly burning, and retiring in midnight darkness, marched the balance of the night, in the direction of Kinston, thus adding this to our previous record of forty-eight miles, all within twenty-four hours. We afterward learned that we had been deceived by "Buffaloes," and that the transports from New Bern did not reach Street's Ferry until late in the afternoon of the next day. Thus ended the "Potter Raid," one of the most infamous affairs that stain the record of our Civil War, and one which, I believe, has made every true soldier, who was forced to take part in it, blush with shame.

On 9 August the regiment was ordered to Wilmington, and first went into camp at Virginia Creek and afterward at various places along the sound from there to Fort Fisher. On reaching camp on Topsail Sound, commissary supplies were brought down from Wilmington late at night, and rations were issued to the entire regiment early the next morning. All cooked and ate breakfast about the same time, and the entire regiment, men and officers, were poisoned by eating flour which had been poisoned and sent through the blockade. No deaths resulted directly, but the serious effects were felt for a long time and much sickness resulted. This was the second occurrence of the kind at Wilmington. We remained in and around Wilmington until the spring of 1864, engaged in constructing fortifications, doing picket duty along the coast, and provost duty in the city. Nothing except an occasional shelling from some of the enemy's guns and watching our steamers successfully, and with a regularity almost equal to

an up-to-date railroad schedule, run the so-called blockades, served to break the monotony of our every-day life.

On 28 April, 1864, we received orders to proceed to Tarboro. On 30 April, started on the march to Plymouth. The town had, after two days of desperate fighting by the Confederate infantry, led by the gallant Hoke, assisted by Captain Cooke, with the iron-clad boat "Albemarle," surrendered to the commander of the Confederate forces on 20 April.

A part of the Fiftieth Regiment was stationed at Plymouth as a garrison for that place and the other part was sent to the town of Washington in charge of Lieutenant-Colonel Van Hook for similar duty. The chief occupation of the regiment from this time to the latter part of October following, was raiding the eastern counties lying along the coast from New Bern to the Virginia line for the purpose of collecting and bringing out provisions from these productive counties for the use of our army in Virginia. This work was done by small detachments usually in charge of a Captain or a Lieutenant, but in many instances in charge only of a non-commissioned officer. The enemy being constantly on the lookout for these raiding parties, frequent encounters resulted. Recounting the many thrilling adventures covering this period, a whole volume might be written as a well-earned tribute to the private soldier, as many of the daring deeds were accomplished by them without the aid or direction of an officer. Many prisoners and much valuable property were brought in by these small detachments, and a remarkable fact is that they rarely ever lost a man. On one occasion a small party were scouting in the vicinity of Coinjock, where there was a "lock" on the Albemarle and Chesapeake Canal, and noticing the manner of passing boats through this "lock," concluded that it afforded a splendid opportunity to capture one. On returning to camp they reported to their officers the result of their observations and conclusions, and asked permission to make the attempt to carry them into effect. The officers seeming unwilling to assume the responsibility, they then asked for the assurance that they did not object to their assuming all the responsibility and undertaking the job.

Having received this, they at once commenced to make the necessary preparation. Being their week "off duty" they at once proceeded to the place, and having detailed their plans to the "lock-keeper" and secured his co-operation, they concealed themselves near by and awaited the arrival of the Government mail boat, plying between Norfolk and New Bern. The machinery for operating the "lock" very opportunely refused to work and the boat was unable to move in either direction, being fast upon the bottom. The squad made a sudden dash, and after firing a few shots the Captain surrendered his boat. They secured the United States mail pouches and such other valuables as they could carry, and then released the boat with all on board except General Wessells, who had shortly before surrendered Plymouth to General Hoke, and who had been paroled and was on his way to be exchanged. He protested against his arrest and detention, but without avail, as the boys marched him back to Plymouth, the scene of his recent misfortune and humiliation. On another occasion a small party secured a boat, and crossing the sound, reached Roanoke Island at night and proceeded to the light house, and after destroying the light, took the keeper and his wife prisoners. Hundreds of such deeds of daring and adventure might be recorded, but this sketch must necessarily be brief.

23 October the regiment was relieved and ordered to Tarboro, and on the night of 27 October Lieutenant Cushing, of the United States Navy, made his way up the river in a small steam launch, passed the pickets stationed on the wreck of the "Southfield," which was sunk by the Albemarle in the engagement of 19 and 20 April, and making a sudden dash at the Albemarle, exploded a torpedo under her bottom, which caused her to sink at once, thus making it possible for the enemy to recapture Plymouth, which they did on 31 October. This feat of Lieutenant Cushing was one of the most daring and desperate on record, but one which might easily have been prevented if our pickets had been as watchful as they should have been. Several attempts had been made by this same officer to pass our pickets on the river while the Fiftieth Regiment was in charge, but always failed, and several

of his men were killed and captured in these attempts. The Fiftieth Regiment would have remained at Plymouth but for the urgent appeal made by General Lee to Governor Vance and General Holmes to garrison Plymouth and Washington with North Carolina Reserves, and send the Fiftieth back to Virginia. But for this change it is almost certain that Plymouth would not have fallen into the hands of the enemy at the time and under the circumstances it did, thus cutting off the chief source of supplies for our army in Virginia. After the baggage had been loaded, and just as the regiment was ready to go in the cars, the news of the fall of Plymouth was received, order countermanded, and the regiment was, for the third time, prevented from returning to Virginia. We remained at Tarboro and Williamston for one month.

24 November the Regiment was ordered to Augusta, Ga., reaching that place on the 27th, and on the 29th was ordered to Savannah. On reaching Charleston the next day a special train was in waiting, General Hardee having telegraphed General Beauregard from Savannah to rush the regiment with all possible haste to Grahamville to meet General Foster, who was moving on the Charleston & Savannah Railroad near that point for the purpose of destroying the long trestle and thus cut off all communication with Savannah.

On the night of 29 November, General G. W Smith reached Savannah with a brigade of less than one thousand Georgia militia. At this time there were no other troops in Savannah. General Hardee had received information that General Foster was moving in force on the Charleston & Savannah Railroad for the purpose of destroying the long trestle near Grahamville and thus cut off the only means of transporting troops and supplies to Savannah. General Smith's militia were the only troops that could possibly reach the scene in time to check this advance and save the road, and he had received positive instructions from the Governor of Georgia not to carry the militia beyond the State line. He and General Hardee hurriedly discussed the situation in all its bearings, and the conclusion was reached that the condidition and circumstances justified disobeying the orders of

the Governor, and the train which contained the troops was shifted to the Charleston & Savannah road, reaching Hardeeville at daybreak 30 November. They at once proceeded to Honey Hill, and passing a short distance beyond, discovered that the enemy in force had already reached and occupied the position which had been chosen by the Confederate commander prior to the arrival of the troops. This forced General Smith to fall back and occupy a less desirable position. About 8:30 a. m. the enemy commenced his advance on this position and was greeted by a single shot from the only gun in position. Thus opened one of the most remarkable battles, in many respects, that was fought during the Civil War. The fighting was fierce and furious throughout the entire day, and ended only when the darkness of night made it possible for the enemy to retreat unobserved. Charge after charge during the first part of the day was repelled by this small band of Georgia militia, supported only by a South Carolina battery of five light field pieces. During the morning the Forty-seventh Georgia Regiment arrived, but was held in reserve until ordered into action to check a flank movement of the enemy. The Thirty-second Georgia and Fiftieth North Carolina, sent from Charleston, reached the field too late to participate. The Confederate forces present and engaged consisted of the Georgia Militia (Senior and Junior Reserves), 1,000 strong, the Forty-seventh Georgia Regiment, and the South Carolina Battery, commanded by Colonel Gonzales, making a total of 1,400 in all.

The Federal forces engaged consisted of the Fifty-sixth, One Hundred and Twenty-seventh, One Hundred and Forty-fourth, One Hundred and Fifty-seventh New York Regiments; Forty-fourth Massachusetts (colored), and Fifty-fifth Massachusetts; Twenty-fifth Ohio; Twenty-sixth, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, One Hundred and Second United States Colored Regiments; a brigade of Marines, a number of field batteries and several naval guns brought up from the gunboats in the river near by.

The losses, as taken from the official reports, are as follows:

Confederate: Killed, 8; wounded, 42; total, 50.

Federals: Killed, 88; wounded, 623; missing, 43; total, 754.

The Fifty-fifth Massachusetts reports the loss of its Colonel and 100 men in five minutes, and the Fifty-fourth Massachusetts (colored), reports carrying 150 wounded from the field.

Considering all the circumstances, the character of the troops engaged, disparity in numbers, this fight perhaps has no parallel in history.

SAVANNAH.

On 2 December the regiment reached Savannah, and on the 3d was ordered to the Forty-five Mile Station on the Georgia Central Railroad. The other troops were ordered back to the entrenchment at Savannah, leaving the Fiftieth Regiment and a small squadron of Wheeler's Cavalry alone to meet and contend with Sherman's column which was moving down the Georgia Central Railroad. The instructions were to harrass and delay the column so as to gain time to strengthen our fortifications around the city as much as possible. On the 7th we commenced to skirmish with the vanguard, and on the 9th, having fallen back some distance to a strong position, the skirmishing became general and very heavy The main body of the regiment had fortified a naturally strong position on the right of the road, and Lieut. Jesse T. Ellington, of Company C, was sent with a strong skirmish line to an open savanna on the left to protect that flank. The advance of the enemy was checked and the firing soon became extremely heavy at the point occupied by the regiment, but they stubbornly resisted the repeated attacks and held their position. After awhile there was a sudden lull in the firing on that side of the road which attracted Lieutenant Ellington's attention, and seeking a point where he could get a view of the breastworks discovered that they were occupied by the enemy in force. They had succeeded in flanking the position on the right, and thus forcing the regiment to hastily retire across a bridge which was held by some of Wheeler's men for this purpose. Lieutenant Ellington had been instructed to hold his position until he received orders to withdraw, and now found himself entirely cut off, the enemy considerably to

the rear of his position and a strong skirmish line deployed immediately in rear of his own line. He quietly faced his men about and commenced to move forward in regular order, and passing along the line whispered instructions to each man. Noticing a dense swamp some distance in front and to the right of the line of march, he had instructed the men to watch him and as they neared the swamp, at a given signal from him, to stoop as low as possible and run for the swamp. They had been moving all the while between the skirmish lines, the original one which was now in their rear and the new one which was thrown out after capturing our works, which was now in front. When they reached what seemed the most favorable position, the signal was given and promptly obeyed by every man. As they made the break it was discovered for the first time that they were Confederates, and fired upon. Three of his men were shot dead, but all of the others, though fired at repeatedly, succeeded in reaching the swamp, which was quickly surrounded, but not a single one was captured. During the night they quietly left the swamp and attempted to make their way through the lines. As the night was dark they were guided in their course by the guns at Fort McAllister, but after swimming the Ogeechee river and proceeding for some distance, the firing at the fort ceased and about the same time a battery of heavy guns opened in an entirely different direction, causing them to lose their course. This brought them again to the Ogeechee river, which they recrossed and after travelling all night, found themselves at daybreak next morning on the same ground they had left the evening before, and again in the rear of the enemy. They could make but little headway during the day but, the following night brought them near the lines of the two contending armies, which were now facing each other around and near the city. It was now daylight and the fighting was in progress all along the lines which, at this point, were only a short distance apart. Discovering a short and unoccupied space in the Federal line, they made a sudden dash, at the same time signaling to our troops not to fire. They were discovered and drew the combined fire from the right and left of the enemy's line, but reached our line safely.

On 10 December, Sherman commenced the investment of the city of Savannah, and on the 13th the small garrison at Fort McAllister were forced to surrender. The enemy now controlled the river above and below, and the last means of escape for Hardee's army had been cut off. General Sherman sent in a flag of truce and demanded an unconditional surrender of the city. The reply of General Hardee, characteristic of the man and soldier, was: "I have plenty of guns, and men enough to man them, and if you ever take Savannah you will take it at the point of the bayonet." This was "bluff" in all of its perfection, as we then had not exceeding 5,000 regular troops all told, and were trying to gain time, hoping almost against hope, that some means of escape might be provided. The fighting continued day and night all along our lines, but no general assault was ever made. The fall of Fort McAllister enabled the Federal fleet to enter the river and thus establish Sherman's communication with the outside world. While Sherman was hesitating and wasting time over at Hilton Head arranging with General Foster for reinforcements of men and heavy guns with which to contend with our little army of about 5,000, while he already had more than ten to one, we were keeping up the fight all along the line and at the same time kept a detail working night and day constructing a pontoon bridge across the river. This was accomplished by collecting such small flat boats as could be found along the river and arranging them in line, using car wheels as anchors. The heavy timbers about the wharf were utilized as stringers from one boat to another, and then using planks from buildings, which were torn down for the purpose, as a flooring, by laying them across these.

The boats, being of various sizes and shapes and of unequal supporting power, made a very uneven surface, and the flooring being of a variety of lengths and thickness, still further increased a tendency to slide to the low places and otherwise get out of place, especially as it was entirely unsecured. In addition to the pontoon bridge, it was necessary to construct a long stretch of roadway across an impassable swamp and bog between the river and roads traversing the rice farms. This was done effectually by the liberal use of rice straw and

sheaf rice which was secured in abundance at a near by rice mill.

Extract from a communication of General Sherman to Geneneral Grant 16 December:

"I think Hardee, in Savannah, has good artillerists, some 5,000 or 6,000 infantry, and it may be a mongrel mass of 8,000 to 10,000 militia and fragments."

Extract from General Hardee's reply to General Sherman's demand for the "unconditional surrender of the city" on 17 December:

"Your demand for the surrender of Savannah and its dependent forts is refused. With respect to the threats conveyed in the closing paragraph of your letter, of what may be expected in case your demand is not complied with, I have to say that I have hitherto conducted the military operation intrusted to my direction in strict accordance with the rules of civilized warfare, and I should deeply regret the adoption of any course by you that may force me to deviate from them in future."

Extract from communication of General Sherman to General Grant 18 December:

"I wrote you at length by Colonel Babcock on the 16th instant. As I therein explained my purpose, yesterday I made demand on General Hardee for the surrender of the city of Savannah, and to-day received his answer refusing. * * * I should like very much indeed to take Savannah before coming to you; but, as I wrote you before, I will do nothing rash or hasty, and will embark for the James river as soon as General Easton, who has gone to Port Royal for that purpose, reports to me that he has an appropriate number of vessels for the transportation of the contemplated force. * * * I do sincerely believe that the whole United States, North and South, would rejoice to have this army turned loose on South Carolina to devastate that State, in the manner we have done Georgia."

On 19 December, General McLaws, in whose division the

Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment belonged, received the following communication from General Hardee:

"GENERAL:—Lieutenant-General Hardee directs me to say that the pontoon is completed, and he desires that you will see that your wagons containing cooking utensils and baggage are sent over and on to Hardeeville at daylight in the morning. Respectfully, General,

"Your obedient servant,

"D. H. POOL,

"Assistant Adjutant General."

About 10 o'clock on the night of 19 December, the writer received instruction to report at once to General McLaws at his headquarters at the Telfair House. On reaching there I was informed that all arrangements had been made for the withdrawal of our troops from the lines during the night, and received instructions to report promptly at 12 o'clock to take charge of the wagon train of our command, proceed at once to the city, break open the cars in which our baggage was stored and secure all important papers, etc., but not attempt to carry out any private baggage. Shortly after day of the 20th, this work had been accomplished and we commenced to cross the bridge. As we were the first to cross we succeeded without accident or the loss of a single team, but the other commands did not fare so well. The loose planks forming the floor were constantly slipping down to the low places, causing great gaps in the floor, at which the mules would take fright and shying to either side, would get on to the projecting planks and topple over into the river. Several teams were lost in this way. After we crossed the swamp and struck the road across the rice field we were in full view of the enemy, who had occupied the South Carolina side of the river for the purpose of cutting off our only line of retreat. General Wheeler had been instructed by General Hardee to keep this line open at any cost, and on the day before had been reinforced with troops and artillery for this purpose. A fierce fight was raging at the time between the two contending forces, each bent on the possession of the road, which was of vital importance to us. We had a splendid

view of the fight as we were passing over the long stretch of level and perfectly open rice field.

We reached Hardeeville safely that evening, but spent a restless and anxious night. Orders had been issued and arrangements made for the army to cross the pontoon bridge early on the morning of the 20th, but in fact it did not cross until twenty-four hours later. After the wagon trains had crossed over and the troops were ready to commence crossing, the bridge broke loose and swung down the river, necessitating a delay of a day and night before it could be replaced. The army crossed over safely on the morning of 21 December, and reached Hardeeville that day, where we had been for twenty-four hours without hearing a word in explanation of the cause of the delay.

The official reports of 20 December showed "the effective strength of Sherman's army" to be 60,598, not including the strong forces of General Foster at Port Royal, Hilton Head, and Coosawhatchie and a large fleet co-operating. And yet General Hardee, with his "8,000 or 10,000 militia and fragments," as General Sherman puts it, held this large and splendidly equipped army and fleet at bay for nearly two weeks and withdrew unmolested and was well into South Carolina before it was even discovered that he had abandoned his line several miles beyond Savannah. General Sherman, who was still at Port Royal arranging with General Foster for more troops and guns, did not reach the city until the 22d, more than twenty-four hours after General Hardee had safely withdrawn his entire forces.

On 26 December, McLaws' Division left Hardeeville for Pocataligo, and on the march was compelled to diverge from the main road in order to avoid the fire from the batteries and gunboats near Coosawhatchie, as they had complete range of the road at this point. On reaching Pocataligo the Fiftieth Regiment occupied the extreme advance position at a small stream beyond "Old Pocataligo." General L. S. Baker, who up to this time had commanded our brigade, was relieved from active duty on account of intense suffering caused by his wounded arm. He had the confidence, love, and esteem of every officer and man in the brigade, as did

also the young men of his staff. The leave-taking was sad and affecting as they bid a final adieu to officers and privates alike. From this time the brigade was commanded by Colonel Washington M. Hardy.

On the second day after reaching Pocataligo the writer, who was on duty on the advanced picket line, received a request from Colonel Hardy to report at once to his headquarters. On arrival he was informed that General McLaws had requested that he select and send to him for instructions, an officer who would undertake to enter General Foster's lines that night for the purpose of ascertaining the exact location and approximate strength of his forces. After explaining his purposes and indicating just what information he desired, his final instructions were: "Go and never return until you can make this report."

I selected ten men from my own company, and by night had completed all necessary arrangements. An old negro, who had spent his past life on the island below and was thoroughly acquainted with the country, and who had "run away from the Yankees," and was now living near our camp, gave me a full description of the country and cheerfully consented to pilot me by a private foot path leading through a swamp to the peninsula formed by Tullifuiny creek and Coosawhatchie river upon which Gen. Foster's main forces were camped. The main road was strongly picketed right up to our lines, but by taking this by-way through the swamps when we reached the open country we were well to the rear of the pickets. The old negro now pleaded piteously to be allowed to return to his home and his wife. He gave me an honest and truthful description of all the surroundings, after which I sent a man back with him to pass him through our line. The streams were full of gunboats and transports. In making a circuit of the camps we kept close to the water so as to avoid the pickets. We spent the entire night in making the circuit, counting camp fires, locating the troops and vessels, and returned safely, reaching our lines at daybreak next morning. I made a full report to the commanding officer, for which I and the men with me received his thanks.

On 14 January, 1865, a sudden and undiscovered move-

ment of the enemy from the island below, around our left flank, came very near cutting off the only line of retreat of the Fiftieth Regiment and Tenth Battalion at "Old Pocataligo." There was considerable confusion and excitement for some time, as the enemy seemed to confront us in whatever direction we turned. We finally succeeded in finding a way out and by keeping up a running fight safely crossed the Salkehatchie river at River's Bridge. During the next few days the enemy concentrated a heavy force along the opposite side of the river between River's and Buford's bridges, and made repeated attempts to throw their pontoon bridge across the river and break through McLaws' line. The heavy rains had caused the river to overflow and the low-lands were flooded for miles in some places. This made it very difficult to reach a point from which the movements of the enemy on the opposite side could be observed. Between the 16th and 20th we had been forced to move back three times to escape the flood.

SALKEHATCHIE.

On 20 January, 1865, Company I, of the Fiftieth Regiment, commanded by Captain John B. Eaves, was ordered to move down to a high point of the river bank, which was ascertained to be not under water, for the purpose of watching and reporting movements of the enemy. Captain Eaves received his orders from Colonel Hardy, commanding the North Carolina Brigade, and at the same time General McLaws had ordered Colonel Ficer, with his Georgia Brigade, to another point on the river for a like purpose. The river flats were heavily timbered and all under water, at the same time a dense fog prevailed. As a consequence of these conditions the troops lost their bearings and the two commands met while wading in water waist deep, and each supposing the other to be the enemy who had succeeded in crossing the river, opened fire. The fight was kept up for about two hours. Captain Eaves reported to Colonel Hardy, asking for reinforcements and a fresh supply of ammunition, as his was nearly exhausted. Colonel Ficer was reporting to General McLaws and asking for help; each side was being rein-

forced as rapidly as possible. Captain Eaves had lost several of his men, and Lieut. W M. Corbitt had taken one of their guns and was leading the men forward, firing from behind trees as they advanced. With his gun raised in the act of shooting he was himself shot dead by one of Wheeler's men who happened to be with Colonel Ficer at the time. About this time K. J. Carpenter and Gaither Trout, of Captain Eaves' company, had approached near enough to discover that Colonel Ficer's men were Confederates, and before the reinforcements called for had reached either side, this sad and distressing affair had ended. The loss in Colonel Ficer's command was considerable. When our dead and wounded were brought in and we learned the facts about this terrible mistake, there was sadness and weeping. The gallant young Corbitt was a general favorite in the regiment, the men always delighting to serve under him. While he was quiet, kind and tender as a woman, he did not know the meaning of the word fear when duty called him. He was brave, perhaps, it may be too brave. His remains were sent to his heart-broken, widowed mother in Rutherford county.

On 30 January there was a general movement up the river, and on the night of 1 February, after marching until midnight, and just after halting and building campfires, the Fiftieth Regiment was ordered to resume the march and proceed twelve miles further up the river to Buford's Bridge. We reached the point at daybreak of the 2d and proceeded at once to make all necessary preparation for the rapid burning of the bridge upon the first approach of the enemy, having been instructed to guard and keep it open as long as possible for the benefit of refugees from the opposite side of the river. Early on the morning of the 3d heavy firing was heard from down the river, lasting for about two hours, when it suddenly and entirely ceased. We concluded that the enemy, in attempting to effect the crossing on their pontoons, had been driven back and that they would now attempt to cross at Buford's Bridge. We advanced our picket lines beyond the river and anxiously awaited the approach of the enemy, as well as news from our troops below. The entire day passed and we neither saw nor heard from either. Between sunset and dark a

young lad came riding into our camp with the news that General McLaws' lines had been broken and our entire forces driven back that morning. He stated that General McLaws started a courier with the information that we were entirely cut off from the command and to take care of ourselves the best we could, but that he was captured. This boy made his way through the lines and found us at this late hour. He was not a moment too soon, for as we hurriedly marched out on one side of the little village, the enemy's cavalry was entering the other side. We were favored by the dark night and a succession of impassable swamps through which the single road had been constructed which made it possible, with a small force to guard the passes against cavalry. A Lieutenant and about ten men belonging to General Wheeler's command were with us doing courier and picket duty. When we commenced the retreat this officer told us to keep moving and he would guarantee to hold them in check and allow us to escape during the night. He was able to do this by taking advantage of the narrow ridges between the succession of swamps. On reaching one of these he would dismount his men, and when the head of the column approached in the road, open fire. This would check their movement, as the character of the country was such that they could not leave the road. After remaining as long as he deemed it safe and expedient, he would mount his men and select another stand. The gallant young Tennesseean faithfully carried out his pledge to us, but at the cost of his own life, for at a late hour during the night, he was shot dead in the saddle and his horse overtook us on the road with rider lying upon his neck dead. He was taken off and buried beside the road some distance from where he received the fatal shot. After marching all night and the next day, we struck the railroad at Bamburg. We found the station deserted, but the telegraph office was open and the instruments in place. We tried the wires to Charleston and found that the line had not yet been cut. General Hardee informed us that the last train was expected over the road that night with the remnant of Hood's army, and if it succeeded in reaching our station, to take possession of the train and run through to Charleston if possible. We had only a short while

to wait, but instead of going through to Charleston, on reaching Branchville, we found our command, McLaws' division, camped beside the railroad, and we dismounted and were once more at home, much to their surprise, as we had been reported and given up as lost.

We now made a stand and fortified our position on the Edisto river, but as usual the enemy, with his overwhelming force of both infantry and cavalry, flanked our position, forcing us to retire. We moved by way of Ridgeville, and on the 25th the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion, under Colonel Hardy, occupied Florence, where all the rolling stock of the railroad south had been collected, and also a large quantity of cotton stored. The other portion of Hardee's army was now concentrated at Cheraw. Our brigade reached this place on 3 March as it was being evacuated by General Hardee, and just in time to cross the river. General Sherman writing to General Gilmore in reference to the destruction of the vast amount of rolling stock between Sumterville and Florence, uses the following language: "I don't feel disposed to be over-generous. and should not hesitate to burn Charleston, Savannah and Wilmington, or either of them, if the garrison were needed. Those cars and locomotives should be destroyed, if to do it costs you 500 men."

This language, coupled with that used in his letter to General Grant, written from Savannah 28 December, 1864, in which he expresses the desire "to have this army turned loose on the State of South Carolina to devastate that State as it has the State of Georgia," reveals the character of the man, and sufficiently accounts for the wanton destruction of property, devastation and ruin which followed in the wake of his army.

The history of this campaign, which ought to go down in history as a disgrace to the civilization of the American Nation, can be written in few words. The record of each day from first to last was but the repetition of the day before, when we could look back and see the homes of helpless women and children ascending in smoke, while they were turned out in the cold of mid-winter to starve and freeze. Since time

has removed much of the bitterness which then existed between the two sections, General Sherman's friends have endeavored to defend his conduct and refute the charges made at the time, but the fact that the "record" is against him still remains.

On the part of the troops of General Hardee's little army, the campaign through Georgia and South Carolina, embracing the entire winter of 1864-'65 was a severe and trying one, but there was no complaint or murmuring, and all seemed in the best of spirits. We were poorly clothed, and lightly fed, as we were compelled to subsist on the country through which we passed, and this was poorly supplied except with rice, until we reached the high-lands. Here the people were disposed to share the last mite with our soldiers. Whenever they were advised of our coming in time, the good women would have food in abundance prepared, and they would bring out large trays as we were passing, speaking words of comfort and cheer to us at the same time. Many of the men were entirely without shoes during January and February. This was owing to the fact that we were compelled to leave our baggage and supplies at Savannah for the lack of transportation, and we had been so situated since that none could reach us.

On 3 March, 1865, we crossed the State line at Cheraw and were once more on the soil of our native State. We looked back in sadness at the desolation wrought in our sister State, and our hearts were overflowing with sympathy for the thousands of now homeless ones who had been so kind and generous to us. Now we must look forward to a like condition which was in store for our own people.

General Joseph E. Johnston, on 6 March, assumed command of all the forces in North Carolina. It was thought that General Sherman was heading for Charlotte, N. C., and General Hardee had instructions to watch his movements and keep in his front, while Wheeler, Hampton and Butler with the cavalry, harrassed his flanks and rear to prevent "burning" and to be in position to promptly report any change of movement. While General Hardee was on the march from Cheraw to Rockingham, N. C., General Sherman suddenly

changed his course in the direction of Fayetteville, N.C. General Johnston promptly informed General Hardee, but the courier failed to deliver the message and in consequence we continued the march for a whole day in the opposite direction, reaching Rockingham, where we camped for the night. At this point the second dispatch was received from General Johnston and we immediately turned in the direction of Fayetteville and attempted, by forced march by day and by night, to regain the time lost. We reached Fayetteville and crossed the river before making a stand. The enemy occupied the town on 11 March and destroyed the old United States arsenal and burned the business portion of the town.

AVERASBORO.

On 15 March we occupied a position on the Averasboro road, leading from Fayetteville to Smithfield and Raleigh, near Averasboro. As the enemy had retired from our front the day before, we were ordered to make ourselves comfortable and enjoy a day of rest. During the day we learned that the enemy were advancing in large force and driving our cavalry before them. A hurried disposition of the troops was made. Colonel Rhett with his South Carolina Brigade, occupied the advance position where the Smith's Ferry road intersects the Averasboro road near Smith's house. Elliott's Brigade occupied a fortified position behind a swamp 200 yards to the rear and General McLaws' the main line of defence about 600 yards to the rear of the first line. As soon as proper disposition of the troops was completed, Colonel Rhett was directed by General Hardee in person to advance his skirmishers. They were soon heavily engaged by the enemy, and Colonel Rhett venturing too far to the front, and mistaking a small party of the enemy for his own men, was taken prisoner. The command of this brigade now devolved upon Colonel Butler, of the First South Carolina Infantry. Nothing more than a lively and prolonged skirmish developed during the 15th. At 7 o'clock on the morning of the 16th the enemy made a vigorous attack on our position with infantry and artillery. Their infantry made repeated attempts to carry our position, but were always repulsed with heavy

loss. After about four hours' fighting, at 11 o'clock, they made a vigorous attack upon the left of the line, at the same time massing on and overlapping the right, forcing retirement on the second line occupied by Colonel Elliott. Repeated attacks were made on this line, but in each case they were gallantly repulsed.

About 1 o'clock they moved a heavy force in the direction of the Black river, completely flanking and exposing to a severe cross-fire the left wing. This necessitated retirement on the main line held by General McLaws. General Taliaferro, with his force, which had been engaged up to this time, occupied position on both sides of the main road, General McLaws the left, and General Wheeler with his dismounted cavalry, the right of the main line. Rhett's Brigade, which had suffered so severely, was sent to the rear and held in reserve. Every attempt to carry this line was a complete failure and after night the enemy withdrew and commenced to fortify his position. We left our lines in possession of a picket of Wheeler's men and moved in direction of Smithfield. The Federal loss, as officially reported in this fight, was 682. The Confederate loss is not stated, but it was very heavy in Rhett's Brigade.

It was now learned that Sherman's army was crossing the Black river at several points. His persistent attempt to open the Averasboro road seemed to indicate that his objective point was Raleigh, but this movement across the Black river made it uncertain as to whether he would move on Raleigh or Goldsboro, and General Hardee, in order to be in position to turn in either direction, moved to the intersection of the roads near Elevation Church, in Johnston county, reaching that point on the night of the 17th. At 12 o'clock on the night of the 17th General Hampton, who was at the front near Bentonville, received a request from General Johnston, who was then at Smithfield, about sixteen miles away, for full information as to the location of the various commands of Sherman's army, and his views as to the advisability of attacking the enemy. General Hampton reported at once that the Fourteenth Corps was in his immediate front; the Twentieth Corps was on the same road, five or

six miles in the rear; while the two other Corps, Logan's and Blair's, were on a parallel road some miles to the south, and at the place where he was camped was an admirable one for the contemplated attack. He also reported that he would delay the enemy as much as possible to gain time for the concentration of his forces at this point. In a few hours he received a reply from General Johnston stating that he would move at once, and directing him to hold the position if possible. Early on the morning of the 18th General Hampton moved his cavalry forward until he met the enemy, and kept up a lively skirmish, slowly falling back, until in the afternoon he had reached the position previously selected for the battle. As it was of vital importance that this position should be held until the infantry could reach them, he dismounted his men and took the risk of sending his batteries to a commanding position far to the right of his line, and entirely unsupported, and made a bold and successful stand.

BENTONVILLE.

After personally superintending the placing of the guns and as he was mounting his horse to ride back to his line on the road, he overheard the following remark from one of the men at the guns, as he laughingly addressed his companions: "Old Hampton is playing a game of bluff, and if he don't mind Sherman will call him." General Johnston reached Bentonville during the night of the 18th with a portion of the troops from Smithfield. General Hardee, who had been informed of the plan of attack, left the camp at Elevation early in the morning of the 18th, but after a hard day's march we camped that night at Snead's house, five miles from Bentonville, and about eight miles from the extreme part of the line of battle. We made an early start on the morning of the 19th, but had not reached the position assigned us before the enemy had made a bold assault on General Hoke's position on the road. After a desperate struggle they were repulsed and driven from the field in confusion. At this critical moment a mistake occurred which perhaps entirely changed the results of the battle. General Hampton refers to it in his report of the battle, and General Johnston confirms his statements of

facts and conclusion. I quote from "Johnston's narrative": "The enemy attacked Hoke's Division vigorously, especially it's left, so vigorously that General Bragg apprehended that Hoke, although slightly entrenched, would be driven from his position. He therefore applied urgently for strong reinforcements. General Hardee, the head of whose column was then near, was directed, most injudiciously, to send his leading division, McLaws', to the assistance of the troops assailed."

General Hampton in his account of the battle, says: "Hoke repulsed the attack made on him fully and handsomely. Had Hardee been in the position originally assigned him at the time Hoke struck the enemy, and could his command and Stuart's have been thrown on the flanks of the Federal forces, I think that the Fourteenth Corps would have been driven back in disorder on the Twentieth, which was moving up to it's support." General Hampton, in his account of the part taken by General Hardee's command, quotes from General Johnston as follows:

"The Confederates passed over the hundred yards of space between the two lines in quick time and in excellent order, and the remaining distance in double-quick, without pausing to fire until their near approach had driven the enemy from the shelter of their entrenchments, in full retreat, to their second line. After firing a few rounds the Confederates again pressed forward, and when they were near the second intrenchment, now manned by both lines of Federal troops, Lieutenant-General Hardee, after commanding the double-quick, led the charge, and with knightly gallantry, dashed over the enemy's breastworks on horseback in front of his men. Some distance in the rear there was a very thick wood of young pines, into which the Federal troops were pursued, and in which they rallied and renewed the fight. But the Confederates continued to advance, driving the enemy back slowly. Night coming on prevented the further advance of the Confederates who, elated with victory, were now anxious to continue the pursuit of the fleeing enemy."

The close of the first day of this hotly contested battle found the Confederates victorious at every point, not only

holding their own lines, but at many points they rested for the night in full possession of the fortified position of the enemy. About midday of the 20th the other two corps of the enemy which had been moving on the Fayetteville and Goldsboro road, crossed to the Averasboro road and appeared in full force on our left, which was entirely unprotected from Hoke's position on the road to Mill creek below. This necessitated changing Hoke's front to left and parallel to the road. McLaws' Division was now shifted to Hoke's left, with the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion forming the extreme left of our line. This left considerable space between our left and Mill creek, thus exposing the left wing, which was overlapped. This was occupied only by a very thin skirmish line of our cavalry. These newly arrived forces assaulted our line from Hoke's right to McLaws' left repeatedly during the afternoon of the 20th, but were handsomely repulsed in every instance. On the morning of the 21st the fighting was resumed along Hoke's and McLaws' front. As there was no demonstration on our right, General Taliaferro threw forward a skirmish line in his front and ascertained that the Federal left had been withdrawn, and the combined attacks were directed against the center occupied by Hoke and the left by McLaws and our cavalry. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon our left being hard pressed and overlapped, General Taliaferro was ordered from the extreme right to our support. About the same time it was learned that the Federal Seventeenth Corps had succeeded in breaking through the thin skirmish line on our left and was in rear of our line and near the only bridge which spanned Mill creek at Bentonville. General Hardee was moving Cumming's Georgia Brigade to the left to protect this gap at the time, and discovering the enemy, ordered Colonel Henderson, commanding the brigade, to attack the head of the column, at the same time discovering the Eighth Texas Cavalry approaching, he ordered them to charge the left flank, he leading the charge in person.

General Hampton at the same time struck the right flank with Young's Brigade, commanded by Colonel Wright, while General Wheeler attacked the rear of the Federal column

some distance away. The rout of the enemy was complete and they were soon driven back beyond our lines. As they retreated in confusion the slaughter was terrible. Our losses in the affair were insignificant as to number. A son of General Hardee, a youth of only 16 years, who had arrived only two hours before, was killed while riding in the charge of the Eighth Texas Cavalry, led by his father. The firing, which had been extremely heavy up to this time, ceased upon the return of the Seventeenth Corps to its position in line, and there was no other attempt made to carry any part of our line. General Hampton states that the Confederate forces engaged in this affair did not exceed three hundred. While General McLaws held the extreme left of our lines and the enemy were endeavoring to turn our flank the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion of Colonel Hardy's Brigade, in a single charge and in about five minutes time sustained a loss of about one-third of their number. In this case the enemy were lying in line three columns deep and reserved their fire until our troops were near them struggling through a dense swamp. At the first volley every man fell to the ground and Colonel Wortham and Lieutenant Lane, of the Fiftieth, and Lieutenant Powell, of the Tenth Battalion, crawled out of the thicket and reported to General McLaws for duty, stating that the entire brigade was killed or wounded. Colonel Hardy, by his boldness and daring, saved the command from utter destruction. Dressed in a suit of sky blue broadcloth and broad-brimmed slouch hat, he might easily be taken for a Federal officer. He was in front of his men leading the charge, and at the first volley he rushed forward with his hat in one hand and his sword in the other, and pacing up and down in front of and within a few feet of the Federal lines, ordered them to cease firing, as they were firing on their own men. He continued this for some time, although their own officers were ordering them to fire. They were utterly confused and before the firing was resumed all of our men who were able had crawled out of the swamp and made their escape, and Colonel Hardy deliberately walked off without a scratch.

On the night of the 21st the enemy kept up a heavy picket

fire along our front while withdrawing their troops in the direction of Goldsboro. At midnight our troops were withdrawn and crossing the creek at Bentonville, moved on the 22d toward Smithfield. In the battle four companies of the Fiftieth Regiment, C and D of Johnston, E of Wayne and H of Harnett, were near their homes and many of the men, who had not seen their homes and families for many months, marched by them and tarried for only a few minutes, went into the fight, the guns of which could be distinctly heard by their loved ones, and again without stopping, marched by these same homes with Johnston's army on its final retreat, proving their faith and loyalty to the "Lost Cause" to the last.

The Fiftieth Regiment before leaving this State for Georgia in November, 1864, was recruited from the camp of instruction at Raleigh to something over 900, and now mustered less than half that number, the others being lost from various causes during the severe and trying campaign through which they had passed.

The Confederate forces in this battle were about 17,000 infantry, the Wheeler and Hampton Cavalry and a few light field batteries, while Sherman's army, as officially reported a few days after the battle, numbered more than 81,000.

The Federal reports place their losses at 1,646 and that of the Confederates at 2,606, but General Johnston in his account of this battle, places the Federal loss at more than 4,000. Our army moved to Smithfield and thence to a point a few miles north of the present town of Selma and went into camp to await Sherman's next move, whether by way of Raleigh or the more direct route by Weldon. The men of our command were supplied with clothing, not having had a change since leaving their baggage in Savannah on 20 December, 1864, nor had they slept under shelter since leaving Tarboro in November preceding. At the reorganization of Johnston's army the Fiftieth Regiment and Tenth Battalion were assigned to Kirkland's Brigade, Hoke's Division, and what had constituted Baker's and Hardy's Brigade was disbanded.

RETREAT AND SURRENDER.

On 10 April we received information that General Sherman had commenced to move his troops from Goldsboro in the direction of Raleigh. Our army commenced to fall back and on the 11th we camped a few miles east of the city of Raleigh on the present site of the town of Garner, entering the city early on the morning of the 12th. Our rear guard left Raleigh that night and a day or two later we heard the news of General Lee's surrender. On 18 April, 1865, at the Bennett house, four miles west of Durham, a conference was held between Generals Johnston and Sherman, and terms of capitulation agreed on and signed. These terms were more favorable to us, even, than were accorded to General Lee by General Grant.

Upon reaching Washington, President Lincoln having been assassinated in the meantime, they were rejected and General Johnston being so informed, was again on the defensive. We resumed the march, passing through Chapel Hill and halting at a point near Greensboro where the final terms were agreed upon 26 April. The army was paroled 2 and 3 May

In crossing the Haw river several of our men were drowned by leaving the ford to reach some fish traps a short distance below and being caught by the swift current and swept down into the deep water below. On reaching Alamance Creek, we had a novel, and in some respects, amusing experience. On account of heavy rains the stream was much swollen and the current very strong. General Cheatham's command was moving in front of General Hoke's Division and on attempting to ford the stream several men were swept down by the current, whereupon the others absolutely refused to move. This halted the entire column, and as the enemy's cavalry was closely pressing our rear, the situation was becoming critical. General Cheatham rode to the front and learning the cause of the halt, ordered the men to go forward, but, emphasizing their determination with some pretty lively swearing, they doggedly refused to move, whereupon General Cheatham seized the nearest man and into the stream they went. After

floundering in the water awhile he came out and, after repeating the process for a few times, the men raised a shout and proceeded to cross. Three wagons, one loaded with "hardtack," one with guns, and one with bacon, capsized and were swept down the river. Some lively diving for the bacon followed, but I guess the guns are still rusting in the bottom of the creek. I am sure none of them were disturbed on that occasion. General Hoke, becoming restless and impatient at the delay, adopted a means of transportation which proved at least the resources of a fertile brain. The water was just running over the sandy banks of the stream and selecting a suitable place a short distance above the ford, he moved the head of his column to this point, directed one man to seize his horse's tail, and another to grasp this man's shoulder, and another and another until he had a long line, swam his horse across the narrow stream and discharging his cargo safely on the opposite bank, would quickly return for another. The rapidity with which the men were carried over was astonishing. I don't know what the final result might have been had we not received information that a short distance up the stream at Ruffin's Mill was a broad and shallow ford below the mill, at which we could easily and safely cross.

Following the announcement of the second "armistice" were several days of anxious waiting. There was a very large element of both officers and men who were opposed to a surrender and many were leaving in small bands with the understanding that they would afterwards meet at some rallying point to be agreed upon.

When the final announcement was made that the army was to be surrendered, the scenes were pathetic; strong, brave men were seen to weep like children. Officers everywhere were delivering farewell addresses to the brave men who had so faithfully and loyally followed their leaders and endured hardships and privations without a murmur.

If General Lee had been able to hold out until his army and General Johnston's could have been united as had been agreed upon, and both hurled against Sherman and then against Grant, the result might have been quite different. Would it have been for the best interest of our country and

our race? While no true Confederate soldier has any apology to offer for his course, there is a wide diversity of opinion as to the correct answer to the above question.

THE ROSTER.

Roster of officers of the Fiftieth Regiment North Carolina Troops given in the order of succession as shown by dates of commission:

COLONELS: M. D. Craton, J A. Washington, George Wortham.

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS: J A. Washington, George Wortham, John C. Van Hook.

MAJORS: George Wortham, John C. Van Hook, H. J. Ryals.

ADJUTANTS: W H. Borden, Jesse W Edmondson.

SURGEONS: Walter Duffy, Francis W Potter, John D. Patton.

QUARTERMASTERS: E. B. Borden, E. W Adams.

COMMISSARY: E. S. Parker.

CHAPLAINS: Dr. R. S. Moran, Thomas B. Haughton.

SERGEANT-MAJORS: Jesse W Edmondson, John H. Green.

CAPTAINS.

COMPANY A—*Person County*—John C. Van Hook, James A. Burch.

COMPANY B—*Robeson County*—E. C. Atkinson.

COMPANY C—*Johnston County*—R. D. Lunsford, Thos. R. Youngblood.

COMPANY D—*Johnston County*—H. J. Ryals, W B. Best.

COMPANY E—*Wayne County*—J. B. Griswold, P L. Burwell, W T. Gardner.

COMPANY F—*Moore County*—J A. O. Kelley.

COMPANY G—*Rutherford County*—G. W Andrews.

COMPANY H—*Harnett County*—Joseph H. Atkinson.

COMPANY I—*Rutherford County*—John B. Evans.

COMPANY K—*Rutherford County*—Samuel Wilkins, G. B. Ford.

FIRST LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A—James A. Burch, W T. Blalock.
COMPANY B—Atlas Atkinson.
COMPANY C—Thomas R. Youngblood, Jesse T. Ellington.
COMPANY D—W B. Best, J. J Penny.
COMPANY E—W T. Gardener, W H. Borden.
COMPANY F—Alexander Bolin.
COMPANY G—John A. Morrison.
COMPANY H—John P McLean.
COMPANY I—W M. Corbitt.
COMPANY K—J. B. Ford, James A. Miller.

SECOND LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A—W T. Blalock, R. D. Ramsey, Albert O'Bryant.
COMPANY B—R. P Collins, W B. Walters, W B. Jenkins.
COMPANY C—G. W Watson, William Lane, J. C. Ellington, R. H. Yelvington (Ensign).
COMPANY D—William M. Adams, Young J. Lee, J. J. Penny.
COMPANY E—W H. Borden, George Griswold, W L. Edwards, George T Jones.
COMPANY F—Malcom McWatson, James Dalrymple.
COMPANY G—R. F Logan, S. D. Hampton.
COMPANY H—John Brantly, David S. Byrd, B. F Brantly, A. L. Parker.
COMPANY I—S. E. Bostick, Jesse Hellard.
COMPANY K—P B. Ford, L. P Wilkins.

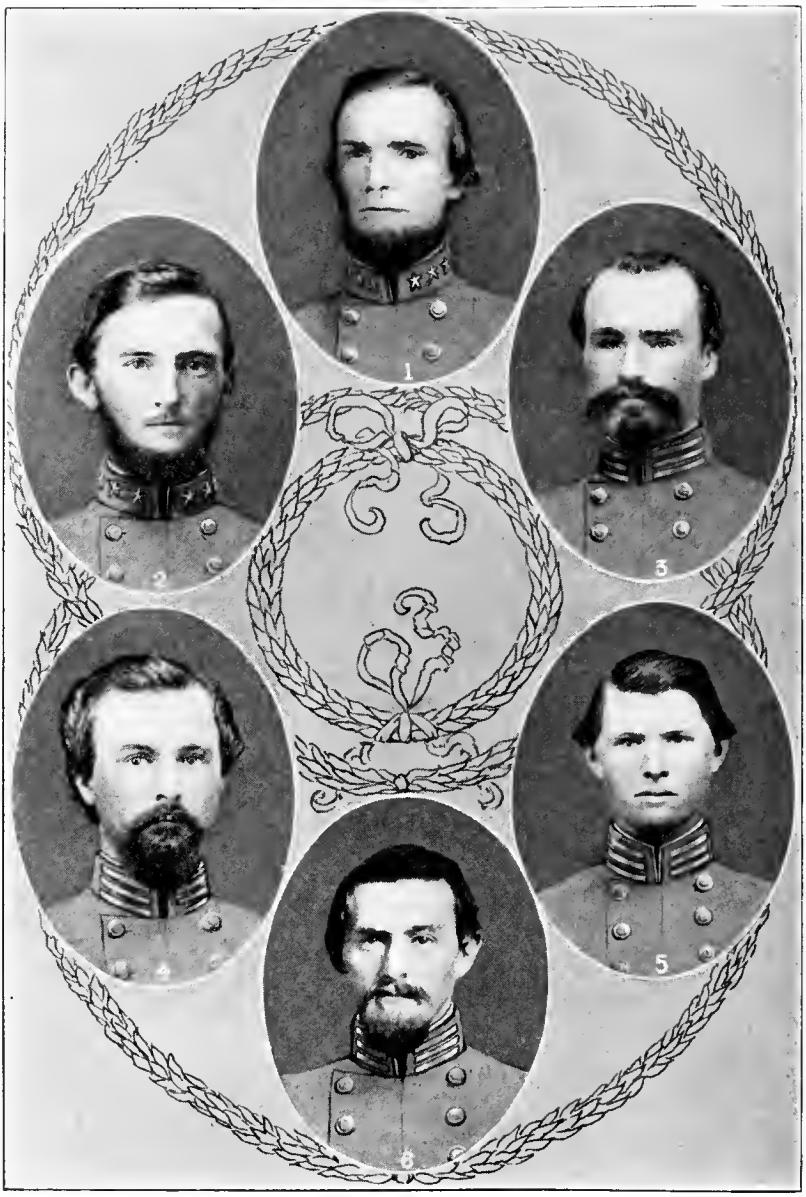
The writer acknowledges his indebtedness to Sergeant K. J. Carpenter, of Company I, for the use of a diary kept by him and still preserved. This was found to be exceedingly valuable in fixing dates not otherwise obtainable.

All "historical events" treated in the foregoing sketch

were verified by a careful search of "*The Official Records of United States and Confederate Armies*," and may be relied on as strictly authentic.

J. C. ELLINGTON.

RALEIGH, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

1. Jno. L. Cantwell, Colonel.
2. Hector McKethan, Colonel.
3. Robert J. McEachern, Captain, Co. D.
4. George Sloan, Captain, Co. I.
5. W. F. Murphy, Captain, Co. K.
6. H. C. Rockwell, Captain, A. Q. M.

FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

By A. A. McKETHAN, Second Lieutenant Company B.

The Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment could well be called a Cape Fear Regiment, as the ten companies composing the command came from the counties of Cumberland, Sampson, Duplin, Columbus, Robeson and New Hanover.

The regiment was organized at Wilmington, N. C., 13 April, 1862, with the following officers, viz.:

John L. Cantwell, Colonel.
William A. Allen, Lieutenant-Colonel.
Hector McKethan, Major.
J. R. Latta, Adjutant.
Alexander Elliott, Sergeant-Major.
H. C. Rockwell, Captain and Quartermaster.
William McKenzie, Quartermaster Sergeant.
Dr. S. B. Morrisey, Surgeon.
Dr. James McGee, Assistant Surgeon.
A. T. Robinson, Hospital Steward.
Rev. J. B. Alford, Chaplain.

The regiment went into camp near Wilmington, spending the Summer at various camps near that city and at Smithville (now Southport), excepting companies D and K, which were detached and employed in building the iron-clad fort on the river a few miles below Wilmington. From Wilmington we were ordered in August to Kinston, N. C., part of the command being employed on picket duty at Core Creek, about eighteen miles distant.

On 1 October, the Eighth, Thirty-first, Fifty-first and Sixty-first North Carolina Regiments were organized into a brigade with Thomas L. Clingman as Brigadier-General. About this time Colonel Cantwell resigned, and Lieutenant-Colonel Allen assumed command, and we were employed

doing picket duty, and on various scouting expeditions to points near New Bern.

About 1 December we returned to Wilmington, but soon afterwards were ordered to Goldsboro, and were under fire for the first time near that place (Neuse River Bridge), as we engaged the enemy on 17 December, the regiment taking an active part. Our men behaved with conspicuous gallantry and forced the enemy to retire before them. The regiment suffered a loss of about fifty in killed and wounded in this engagement, Lieutenant Solomon Boykin, of Company K, being among the killed. After this engagement we returned to Wilmington for winter quarters.

Colonel Allen resigned and the following changes were made in our officers: Hector McKethan, Colonel; Captain Caleb B. Hobson, of Company B, Lieutenant-Colonel; Captain J. R. McDonald, of Company D, Major; Chaplain, Colin Shaw, vice J. B. Alford, resigned.

About 18 February, 1863, we were ordered to Charleston, S. C., and thence to Savannah, Ga., spending only a few days at the latter point when we were again ordered to Charleston and camped on James Island. At this place we suffered greatly from sickness and scanty and unwholesome rations. On 1 May we returned to Wilmington, going into camp at Topsail Sound. A few days later Companies B, D, E and H were detached and sent to Magnolia under the command of Major McDonald.

On 1 July, a raiding party of the enemy from New Bern tapped the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad at Warsaw and this detail hurried to that point, causing a hasty retreat of the enemy in the direction of New Bern, and capturing some of their stragglers.

BATTERY WAGNER.

About this time the enemy began active operations against Charleston, S. C., and on 10 July Clingman's Brigade was ordered to that point, and on the 12th the Fifty-first Regiment was sent to Morris' Island as a garrison for Battery Wagner, where we were almost continuously exposed to the sharpshooting and cannonading of the enemy until the 18th,

suffering almost beyond endurance from heat and great scarcity of water and rations, to say nothing of the inferior quality of the same, and from the terrible shelling which was only equaled during the war at Fort Fisher, the average being twenty-eight shells per minute by actual count from sunrise to 7 p. m. Battery Wagner was a field work of sand, turf, and palmetto logs, built across Morris' Island, extending from the beach on the east to Vincent Creek on the west, about 200 yards. From north to south it varied from 20 to 75 yards. On the space to the west were built wooden quarters for officers and men, and bomb-proofs capable of holding from 800 to 1,000 men. There were also bomb-proof magazines and heavy traverses.

On 18 July, the armament consisted of one 10-inch Columbiad, one 32-pound rifle, one 42-pounder, two 32-pound Carronades, two Naval Shell guns, one 8-inch sea-coast Howitzer, four smooth-bore 32-pounders, one 10-inch sea-coast Mortar, making in all thirteen pieces. Of these only one was of much effect against the monitors, and the Federal land batteries were beyond the reach of the other guns, so that we had little to do but submit to the hail of iron sent upon us by the superior and longer range guns of the enemy from sunrise until sunset.

The garrison at this time consisted of part of the Thirty-first North Carolina, Lieutenant-Colonel Knight commanding, which had been sent over on 17 July; the Fifty-first North Carolina, Colonel Hector McKethan; a Charleston battalion, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Gaillard, with Tatum's and Adams' companies of the First South Carolina Regulars, acting as artillery; Buckner's and Dixon's companies of the Sixty-third Georgia Heavy Artillery, and DePass' Battery, in all about 1,700 men.

The Charleston Battalion and the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment were assigned to the defense of the parapets in the order named, from the right along the south front. The four companies of the Thirty-first North Carolina Regiment extended along the sea face from the Fifty-first; the balance of the Thirty-first was held in reserve at Fort Gregg. Two companies of the Charleston Battalion were outside of the

works, guarding the left gorge and sallyport. Two of Captain DePass' field pieces were also outside.

During the bombardment we had concentrated upon our little band forty-four guns and mortars from the land batteries of the enemy, distant from 1,200 to 2,000 yards, and the heavy guns from the iron-sides, five monitors and five gunboats, say about fifty guns, making a total of ninety-four guns. The sand being our only protection, fortunately one shell would fill up the hole made by the last, or we would have been annihilated. Our only guns that could reach the enemy had been dismounted by their fire, and our smaller ones we had been compelled to dismount in order to protect, so that we might use when the assault should be made. During the day the garrison was protected as much as possible by the bomb-proofs, only those necessary to guard and work the guns being required to remain exposed. This accounts for the small loss sustained during the day, but at a given signal each man was expected to report at his station in the works, the fire being so rapid and deadly that it would have been impossible to attempt anything like military formation. About dusk 18 July, 1863, the long expected signal was given and the Fifty-first North Carolina as one man, sprang to its post, encouraged and led by the officers.

The advancing column of the enemy consisted of the First Brigade, made up of six regiments and one battalion, supported by Putnam's Brigade of five regiments, with Stevenson's Brigade, of four regiments, held as a reserve.

The enemy advanced in column of regiments, led by Shaw's Fifty-fourth Massachusetts, a picked negro regiment, between sunset and dusk with empty guns and orders to use their bayonets. Time had not been given us to mount our guns, which as before stated, we had dismounted for protection, so that the assault was met solely by our infantry, not a cannon being fired; but so murderous was our fire that the advancing columns broke and rushed to the rear through the ranks of their own support, causing confusion and delay. Colonel Shaw, who was hardly more than a boy, fell dead on the top of our breastworks, in advance of his men, struck with three mortal wounds. His followers broke and fled in

wild terror. A most handsome monument has been erected in Boston to perpetuate his memory.

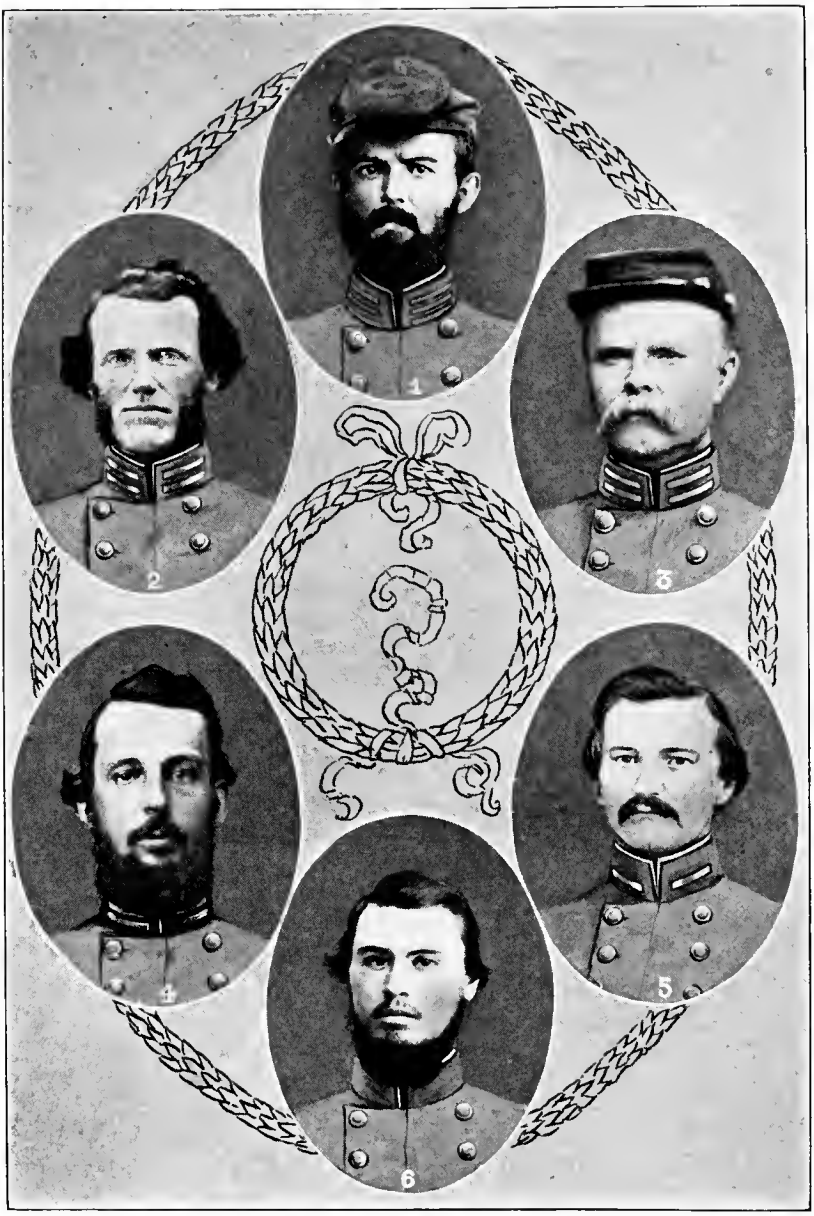
About an hour later a second assault was made. By this time we had mounted our guns which we opened on them at short range, and our infantry again poured their deadly fire into their ranks, causing a second break with even greater loss than the first. A third and final assault was made about 10 o'clock, and notwithstanding a cross-fire was concentrated upon them, a lodgment was made behind the bomb-proof and magazine manned by the four companies of the Thirty-first North Carolina, but to hold only for a short time. Their commander was killed, and the Thirty-second Georgia Regiment arriving at this time was sent along the parapet, and to the top of the magazine. In this way their rear was reached, and the assailants of a few minutes before found themselves assailed and throwing down their arms, surrendered and put an end to the day's fighting.

Brigadier-General Taliaferro was in immediate command of Morris' Island during the day. The position of the Fifty-first was such that it bore the brunt of the assault, and its members were therefore the most active participants. The Confederate loss during the day was 175, of which the Fifty-first suffered 34 killed and 40 wounded, the following officers being among the number: Lieutenant Giles W Thompson, of Company E, killed; Lieutenants Edward Southerland, W H. Littlejohn, of Company A, and Lieutenant J D. Malloy, of Company D, wounded. The enemy is said to have lost 2,000, 800 of whom were buried in front of the fort next morning. This great slaughter shows how desperately our men, maddened and infuriated at the sight of negro troops, fought. The next morning we were relieved and sent to Sullivan's Island, the officers and men being complimented by General Beauregard for the manner in which they had behaved. A writer from another State referring to this engagement, used the following language: "The Fifty-first North Carolina brilliantly sustained the honor of their State and were highly commended, especially the field officers, Col-

onel Hector McKethan, Lieutenant-Colonel C. B. Hobson, and Major J R. McDonald."

The following incident is vouched for by Lieutenant J A. McArthur, of Company I, Fifty-first North Carolina, now a resident of Cumberland county: The day of the assault Lieutenant McArthur was the officer of the day, and as such, had a guard of sixty-five men detailed from the different commands on the Island. In the third and last assault when the enemy secured a lodgment near the bomb-proof, he was ordered by General Taliaferro, in command of the post, to go with his guard to the relief of that part of the line. As Lieutenant McArthur, led by one of the men with a torch ascended the bomb-proof, the enemy began to fire upon them, and the fire was promptly returned as they advanced, but as they neared the enemy an Irishman from one of the Charleston companies in McArthur's detail, appealed to him to have the firing cease, as he had recognized the voice of his brother in the ranks of the enemy, which turned out to be true, for when they surrendered a few minutes afterwards the brother was found to be among the prisoners. Next morning the prisoners were formed to be sent to Charleston, when our Irishman appeared the second time begging that his brother should not be sent to prison, and when told that it could not be helped, as he had been captured with the others, he then proposed that his brother be permitted to enter the ranks by his side, and in this way the prisoner was transformed to a Confederate soldier.

The enemy now concluded that the only way to capture Wagner was by slow siege, we doing our share of the garrisoning while this was going on. On 24 November we returned to North Carolina, going to Tarboro by rail, and marching to Williamston, were assigned to duty at Foster's Mill, in Martin county. On 13 December we returned to Tarboro, where we remained till 5 January, 1864, going thence to Petersburg, Va., and occupied Camp Hill near that place. Later in January, 1864, we returned to North Carolina, marching on New Bern and engaging in a sharp skirmish at Bachelor's Creek, driving the enemy from their position and pushing them into New Bern. We then returned to Petersburg, Va.,



FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

1. Samuel W. Maultsby, Captain, Co. H.
2. Joseph A. McArthur, 1st Lt., Co. I.
3. Hector McEachern, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
4. E. T. McKethan, 1st Lieut., Co. K.
5. Alexander Elliott, 2d Lieut., Co. K.
6. Stephen J. Cobb, Private, Co. D.

and about 1 April were ordered to Ivor Station and marched on Suffolk, driving the enemy's pickets to a point beyond that town. About 1 May, General Butler landed a strong force at City Point, Va., and we returned to Petersburg and marched to Dunlop's Farm, about four miles distant in the direction of Richmond. Here we met and skirmished with the enemy for several days.

PETERSBURG.

On 12 May we marched to Drewry's Bluff and occupied the works previously built. Butler followed us towards Richmond, the plan being to draw him from his base and attack him from front and rear. On 16 May, having been reinforced, we were ordered by General Beauregard to mount the works and charge the enemy. This we did over ground strewn with fallen trees, the limbs of which had been sharpened as an additional protection for the works, but we pressed forward carrying line after line of the enemy until we had them in full retreat, and had the forces from Petersburg cooperated in the same manner we would have captured Butler's entire command. Our loss in this engagement was very heavy, amounting to ten officers and 150 men: Captain Willis H. Pope, of Company E, and Lieutenant J B. McCallum, of Company D, being killed; Lieutenants W J. Southerland, of Company A, Hector McEachern of Company D, Jacob A. Evans of Company C, J. A. McArthur of Company I, and Captain Samuel W Maultsby of Company H, being among the wounded; Captain W F. Murphy of Company K, Lieutenants J D. Malloy of Company D, and J. A. McArthur of Company I, were captured.

SECOND COLD HARBOR.

On the 18th and 19th we again skirmished with the enemy, sustaining considerable loss. We then marched to Cold Harbor and skirmished with the enemy on 31 May. On 1 June the battle of Cold Harbor was fought. Here we were charged by line after line of the enemy, each line coming within a few yards of us, but our fire was so murderous they could not live under it; but notwithstanding we killed thousands of

them, fresh lines were thrown at us until finally a lodgment was secured in a branch supposed to be impassable, and we were flanked and compelled to retire. Having driven the enemy from our front, the order to retire was not understood by part of our men and they were cut off, but not willing to give up, they, together with Lieut.-Col. Jno. R. Murchison and part of his, the Eighth North Carolina Regiment, continued the fight till entirely surrounded, not only with live, but also dead yankees. Our losses during the two days were 194 (11 officers and 183 men), Captain Robert J. McEachern, of Company D, and Lieutenant Alexander Elliott, of Company K, being killed; Captain George Sloan, of Company I, Lieutenant G. P Higley, of Company F, wounded; and Major J R. McDonald, together with the wounded, were captured. We remained at Cold Harbor for several days and then marched to Malvern Hill, thence to Drewry's Bluff, and then to Petersburg, reaching the latter point in time to prevent Butler from occupying the city.

17 JUNE, 1864.

On 16 and 17 June the enemy charged our line and we repulsed them, inflicting considerable loss, but on the 17th, they succeeded in breaking through the line at a point held by Wise's Virginia Brigade, and at once began to pour a deadly fire on our flank. Promptly five companies of the Fifty-first, under the command of Colonel McKethan, filed to the rear, Ransom's Brigade, under command of Colonel W J. Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth North Carolina, being hastily thrown in the same position on the right of the break, and at the signal these two commands changed front and rushed forward with fixed bayonets and soon recaptured the lost ground, but at a fearful loss, Colonel McKethan being among the seriously wounded. In this contest the bayonet and butts of guns were freely used, as there was not time to load and fire. The position was such that the five companies of the Fifty-first and the Thirty-fifth North Carolina of Ransom's Brigade occupying the centre and being the assailants, suffered the greatest losses. But for

the prompt action of these commands the enemy would certainly have marched into Petersburg on 17 June, 1864.

We remained in the works in front of Petersburg for months under fire every day, and it has been established by actual measurements since the close of the war that at times there was but sixty-three yards between our line of works and that of the enemy, while only thirty-five yards separated our pickets, which should give a pretty accurate idea of the danger and hardships under which we passed the summer of 1864. On 19 August we were called upon to meet a raiding party operating on the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad south of Petersburg. Here we met the enemy and after a running fight of many miles forced them into their lines. This was a regular woods scramble, it being impossible to preserve anything like a line of battle on account of the density of the woods; the result was that we captured a large number of prisoners, and suffered considerable loss ourselves, some of our men being captured and recaptured several times. General Clingman was wounded in this engagement, and the brigade lost the services of this gallant soldier till near the close of the war, the command of the brigade devolving on Colonel McKethan of the Fifty-first.

FORT HARRISON.

We were next taken to the north side of the James river and on 30 September assaulted Fort Harrison. This point had been taken by the enemy from our people, and being considered a point of importance, was at once strengthened and very heavily garrisoned. To have attempted its recapture under such circumstances was a mistake, and as carried out a terrible blunder on the part of some one, the assaulting parties going in, in detail and being cut down in turn by the deadly fire of the enemy. Our officers on the ground, particularly Colonel McKethan, the brigade commander, seeing the impossibility of success and the heavy loss that we must sustain, protested against making the assault, but being ordered by superior officers to go forward, nobly offered themselves and their commands as sacrifices for their country. At the command the Fifty-first rushed forward with the other

regiments of the brigade, preserving their alignment until the stockade was reached, which they found impossible to pass. To retreat was death, so the only chance was to throw down their guns and pull up these obstructions, which the men at once attempted, but a double line armed with repeating rifles posted in front of the works, and a deadly fire from the garrison in the fort, said to have been several lines deep, and the concentration of all the artillery upon them, made the position untenable and the task impossible, so that the few left were forced to seek shelter offered by two old buildings near the works. Never was an assault made more gallantly or against greater odds. The Light Brigade at Balaklava did no more. "Some one had blundered," but it was a soldier's duty to obey. Our loss was seven officers and ninety-seven men, Lieutenant-Colonel Hobson being among the killed, Lieutenant F. S. Currie, of Company D, and Lieutenant J. A. Meares, of Company H, wounded, and others, whose names cannot now be recalled. To Sergeant-Major W D. McMillan (Dr. McMillan, of Wilmington), who was seriously wounded in this assault, I am indebted for the following figures, viz.:

"The brigade went into this engagement with 857 guns, and in ten or fifteen minutes lost 587" I am unable to give the strength of the Fifty-first at this particular time, but as the brigade contained 857 and was composed of four regiments, the Fifty-first could not at this time have contained many over 200.

To give some idea how the Fifty-first suffered during the four and one-half months from 15 May to 1 October, 1864. On 15 May we had 1,100 officers and men, going into the charge of 16 May with 800 men ready for duty (a detail was made from the regiment on the 15th, and did not participate in this engagement). On 1 October we had reduced to 145 men, many of the companies being without commissioned officers, and in some cases in command of a corporal.

Our casualties aggregated over 1,000, as some were wounded several times. Companies D and I each suffered a loss of more than 100 men to the company. Clingman's Brigade, under the command of Colonel McKethan, was then placed

in the line of works protecting Richmond, our left resting on the Darbytown road, where we remained until December, doing picket duty and engaging in one or two feints against the enemy to draw their attention from Petersburg.

WILMINGTON.

On 24 December we received marching orders and proceeded to Richmond on our way to North Carolina, having been called on account of Butler's threatening Fort Fisher. On reaching Wilmington we went into camp at Camp Lamb, spending about one week, when we changed our camp to a point near Green's mill pond, where we remained until the final attack on Fort Fisher. On 12 January, 1865, our division (General Robert F Hoke's) was mustered at camp for division review for the benefit of a large number from the city, and after marching and counter marching for the greater portion of the day we returned to our quarters for rest, but were not given this, as the "long roll" called us to arms during the night and we were hurried towards Fisher. A march however, had been stolen on our people, as a heavy force had been landed by the enemy and cut us off from the fort.

Why we should have been stopped in Wilmington, thirty miles from Fort Fisher, I have never understood. Had General Hoke and his division been put in supporting distance of Fisher, the enemy could not have made their landing, and without this the capture of Fisher was, in my opinion, impossible.

After the fall of Fort Fisher we made a line across the peninsula and threw up works, our right resting on the Cape Fear river near Sugar Loaf, and our left on the ocean near what is now known as Carolina Beach. From this point we fell back to within a few miles of Wilmington, skirmishing with the enemy as they followed. We then evacuated Wilmington, crossing North East river and marching to Rockfish in Duplin county.

BATTLE OF SOUTHWEST CREEK.

From this point we were taken by rail to Kinston and engaged in three days fighting, 7, 8 and 9 March, 1865, near

that place, driving the enemy several miles, capturing and killing many with but small loss to our side. The change from Rockfish to Kinston carried us through Magnolia, where the company which I then commanded was raised, and the homes of many of the men could be seen from the cars. I was given orders for that reason to put my command in an ordinary box car, such as was used in those days for transporting soldiers, and to get on top myself with a good man and allow none of the men to get off as we passed through the section in which they lived. We had not proceeded far when the engine stopping at a tank for water, I discovered two of my best men on the ground near the car. I spoke to them and demanded an explanation of their violation of orders, when one of them, pointing to a small house a few hundred yards distant, said that the lady standing in the door was his sister; that he was going to stop and see her, but would be on next day. To permit this was a violation of orders on my part as well as that of the soldiers, but knowing that the enemy was closing in behind us and this would perhaps be their last chance to see their loved ones, and having confidence in the men, I did not have the heart to stop them, whatever the consequences to myself might be, and in this way I lost the greater part of my company before reaching Kinston, and in the first day's fight the First Sergeant and myself represented the company; but true men as they were, all reported for duty that night. This is mentioned to illustrate the true spirit and patriotism of the southern soldier; the cause was almost lost and he knew it, and immediately before him he could picture his fields laid in waste, his home plundered and his family exposed and suffering, yet even to the last roll call, he answered to his country's summons at the post of danger and duty.

BENTONVILLE.

The advance of the enemy from Wilmington and the near approach of Sherman's army from Fayetteville, caused our withdrawal from Kinston and rendering the evacuation of Goldsboro necessary we were, therefore, ordered to Bentonville, where we met and checked Sherman. The first

day we fought facing Fayetteville and with our backs on Goldsboro, but we were soon flanked and compelled to face about. Several attempts from the direction of Goldsboro were made to dislodge us, but failed; still the vast forces under Sherman finally forced us to retire to escape being surrounded and our communications cut off. This we did in good order, marching to Smithfield, where we remained several days. The enemy however, soon began to advance and on 10 April we began to retire before them towards Raleigh, through which city we marched 12 April just ahead of Sherman. From Raleigh we went to Chapel Hill, finally halting at Bush Hill, N. C., where we surrendered with Johnston's army and were paroled 2 May, 1865, to return to our homes.

Thus ends the history of the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment. The regiment was composed, rank and file, of men and officers of whom any country on earth might well be proud. Many, as was the case with our Colonel and a number of others, saw the sun of the South rise in glory at Bethel, and set in its blood-red sheen at Bentonville. In this time many a loved and chivalric comrade passed from us on his long and sad furlough. Thirty-six years have passed and Time, with his cruel scythe, has cut down most of those who were left; to the memory of those that have passed before and since, officers and men, I dedicate this feeble tribute.

In closing, I desire to say that in the preparation of this very imperfect sketch, I have been compelled to do so without data, as our official papers were lost during the latter days of the war. But by the aid of Adjutant J. R. Latta, of New Hanover; Stephen J. Cobb, of Company D (Captain Company F, Second North Carolina Volunteers, Spanish-American War); and H. L. Hall, of Company I, and others who were fortunate enough to escape the terrible struggle, I am under obligations for much information, and in particular as to the casualties. It was my wish to give a full list of the casualties of the regiment, but I found it impossible to do this even of the commissioned officers in the different engagements in which the regiment participated. I attach herewith a roster of the commissioned officers from the organiza-

tion to the surrender, and with the aid of others, I have attempted to give from memory opposite each name such information as I have been able to obtain. While this roster is not perfectly correct it is as near so as can be made thirty-six years after the close of the war.

I also insert statistics of enlistments in Companies D and I from organization, and of the casualties in each of said companies. The casualties in these two companies fairly represent the losses in the eight others, and the loss of officers as shown by the roster will convey some idea of the losses sustained by the Fifty-first from 17 December, 1862, to 21 March, 1865.

ROSTER OF THE FIFTY-FIRST NORTH CAROLINA REGIMENT.

COMPANY A—Captain J. L. Cantwell, promoted to Colonel on organization, resigned; Captain Walker. Lieutenant Edward Southerland, promoted to Captain, wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863, again wounded in 1864; Lieutenant W J Southerland severely wounded 16 May, 1864, and never returned to service; Lieutenant W H. Littlejohn wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863; Lieutenant Reuben J. T. Hawse promoted from First Sergeant, lost a leg at Fort Harrison.

COMPANY B—Captain Caleb B. Hobson, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, killed at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864. Lieutenant W R. Bell, promoted to Captain, wounded and retired; Lieutenant J. E. Swinson, resigned during fall or winter of 1862; Lieutenant Thomas J. Herring, promoted to Captain, seriously wounded; Lieutenant Jesse T. Smith, promoted from Sergeant, captured and retained in prison till close of the war; Lieutenant C L. Cowles, promoted from ranks to Sergeant-Major and Lieutenant; Lieutenant A. A. McKethan, promoted from ranks, wounded at Petersburg 17 June, 1864.

COMPANY C—Captain W A. Allen, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel on organization, resigned. Lieutenant Robert James, wounded and retired; Lieutenant S. M. Stanford, promoted to Captain, resigned in 1864; Lieutenant E. L. Watson, promoted to Captain, surrendered at Bush Hill, N.

C.; Lieutenant H. V Houston; Lieutenant J. G. Branch, resigned in 1863; Lieutenant A. M. Sullivan, promoted from Sergeant, wounded at Kinston 1865.

COMPANY D—Captain J R. McDonald, promoted to Major, captured at Cold Harbor. Lieutenant R. J. McEachern, promoted to Captain, killed at Cold Harbor; Lieutenant J. D. Malloy, promoted to Captain, wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863, captured at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant J. B. McCallum, killed at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Hector McEachern, wounded and captured at Drewry's Bluff; Lieutenant F S. Currie, wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant W R. Boone, promoted from ranks, captured August 1864.

COMPANY E—Captain W P Moore, resigned in Fall of 1862. Lieutenant Willis H. Pope, promoted to Captain, killed at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant A. J. Ashley, promoted to Captain, died of wounds; Lieutenant J. P Pitman, promoted to First Lieutenant, captured 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant F F Floyd, captured 10 June, 1864; Lieutenant W A. Bullock, captured 19 August, 1864; Lieutenant Giles W Thompson, killed at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863.

COMPANY F—Captain —. —. Walters, resigned during spring of 1863; Captain W S. Norment, transferred from the Eighteenth Regiment, severely wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864. Lieutenant A. C. Fulmore; Lieutenant G. P Higley, captured at Cold Harbor; Lieutenant J. W Hartman, wounded, don't remember place or date.

COMPANY G—Captain J W Lippitt, pulled through safe, commanded the regiment at the surrender at Bush Hill, N C. Lieutenant S. R. Chinnis, resigned during the winter of 1862 or 1863; Lieutenant Yopp; Lieutenant Jacob A. Evans, wounded 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant T. B. Lippitt, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Ben. A. Cowan, pulled through safe.

COMPANY H—Captain J R. Kelly, resigned in 1862. Lieutenant S. W Maultsby, promoted to Captain, severely wounded 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Lennon, resigned in 1862; Lieutenant Jacob Bamberger; Lieutenant J. A.

Meares, wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant A. M. Thompson, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Jordan Hughes.

COMPANY I—Captain Hector McKethan, elected Major on organization, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel and afterwards to Colonel, wounded 17 June, 1864. Lieutenant George Sloan, promoted to Captain, slightly wounded 16 May, 1864, captured 1 June, 1864; Lieutenant J A. McArthur, wounded and captured 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant C. T. Guy, promoted from Sergeant, pulled through safe; Lieutenant J H. Taylor, promoted to Adjutant last year of the war.

COMPANY K—Captain J B. Underwood, resigned in 1863. Lieutenant W F. Murphy, promoted to Captain, captured 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Solomon Boykin, killed at Neuse river bridge 17 December, 1862; Lieutenant E. T. McKethan, transferred to General Hoke's staff, and afterwards assigned to light duty on account of loss of health; Lieutenant Alexander Elliott, killed at Cold Harbor 1 June, 1864; Lieutenant J J Tew, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Eli Dudley, wounded, but time and place not remembered.

I am indebted to comrades Private Stephen J Cobb, of Company D, (Captain of Company F, Second North Carolina Volunteers Spanish-American War), and to Sergeant D. G. McLellan, of Company I, for the following statistics in their respective companies:

COMPANY D.

Total enlistments, 151. Killed: Officers 1, men 10, total 11. Died of wounds: Officers 1, men 10; total 11. Wounded: Officers 3, men 58; total 61. Captured: Officers 3, men 20; total 23. Total, officers 8, men 98; grand total, 106. Of the twenty enlisted men reported as captured, thirteen died in prison.

COMPANY I.

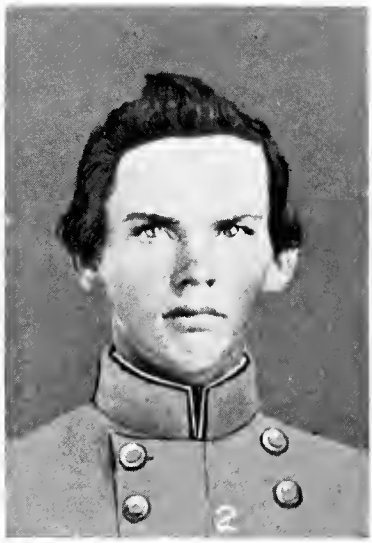
Killed: Officers 0, non-commissioned officers 2, men 43; total, 45. Wounded: Officers 2, non-commissioned officers 3, men 48; total, 53. Captured: Officers 2, non-commissioned officers 3, men 24; total, 29. Total, officers 4, non-commissioned officers 8, men 115; grand total, 127.

This company sustained a loss of twenty-nine men in the charge on 16 May, 1864, exclusive of the few captured who were not wounded.

The enemy overrun and captured our picket line just before the charge and our loss in prisoners was due to that fact. They were not lost in the assault.

A. A. McKETHAN.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT.

1. Wm. W Carmichael, 1st Lt., Co. F. 2. Leroy S. Elliott, Private, Co K.

FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT

By JOHN H. ROBINSON, ADJUTANT.

The Fifty-second Regiment of North Carolina Troops was organized at Camp Mangum (camp of instruction), near Raleigh, on 22 April, 1862, and was composed of ten companies of infantry, as follows:

COMPANY A—*From Cabarrus County*—Captain, George A. Propst; First Lieutenant, John M. Alexander; Second Lieutenant, Phillip A. Correll, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Jas. A. Black; First Sergeant, Jas. M. Cook; Second Sergeant, Joseph C. Hill; Third Sergeant, Alexander F Hurley; Fourth Sergeant, John W Felter; Fifth Sergeant, Leroy W Pope; First Corporal, George C Blume; Second Corporal, George H. Brown; Third Corporal, Richard F Cook; Fourth Corporal, George A. Misenheimer; and 100 privates.

COMPANY B—*From Randolph County*—Captain, James F. Foulkes; First Lieutenant, Jesse K. Kyle; Second Lieutenant, John H. Robinson, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, W E. Kyle. The officers of this company were all from Fayetteville. First Sergeant, Calvin J. Rush; Second Sergeant, Lindsay C. Hardister; Third Sergeant, Calvin B. Lewis; Fourth Sergeant, Alvin Bingham; Fifth Sergeant, William N. Glasgow; First Corporal, Reuben C. Fesmire; Second Corporal, Reuben Lowdermilk; Third Corporal, Alpheus Galliharn; Fourth Corporal, George W Cooper; and 123 privates.

COMPANY C—*From Gates and Chowan Counties*—Captain, Julian Gilliam; First Lieutenant, George Gilliam; Second Lieutenant, John Gatling, Junior; Second Lieutenant, J. N. Harrell; First Sergeant, Job Hofler; Second Sergeant, James J. Floyd; Third Sergeant, David W Parker; Fourth Sergeant, Caleb M. Hayes; First Corporal, Richard Arnold; Second Corporal, William O. Hofler; Third

Corporal, Peterson Hofler; Fourth Corporal, Thomas J. Monroe; and 93 privates.

COMPANY D—*From Stokes County*—Captain, Leonidas R. Gibson; First Lieutenant, Isaac Nelson; Second Lieutenant, Samuel H. Rierson; First Sergeant, A. C. Myers; Second Sergeant, John H. Nelson; Third Sergeant, D. P Tuttle; Fourth Sergeant, Phillip A. James; Fifth Sergeant, J. F. Landers; First Corporal, John M. Alle; Second Corporal, J. W Tuttle; Third Corporal, Charles M. Williams; and 80 privates.

COMPANY E—*From Richmond County*—Captain, Benjamin F. Little; First Lieutenant, Milton S. Austin; Second Lieutenant, M. B. McDonald; Junior Second Lieutenant, Thos. R. Baldwin; First Sergeant, John W Ewing; Second Sergeant, John H. Nichols; Third Sergeant, Thomas R. Capel; Fourth Sergeant, Isaac Gateley; Fifth Sergeant, R. F. Gibson; First Corporal, S. C. Crouch; Second Corporal, D. O. Gray; Third Corporal, William Kennedy; Fourth Corporal, John F Woods; and 120 privates.

COMPANY F—*From Wilkes County*—Captain, Marcus A. Parks; First Lieutenant, Nathaniel A. Foster; Second Lieutenant, William W Carmichael; Junior Second Lieutenant, J. J Parlier; First Sergeant, Joseph G. Hall; Second Sergeant E. R. Vannoy; Third Sergeant, William H. Foster, Fourth Sergeant, James P Warren; Fifth Sergeant, Charles Carlton; First Corporal, James P Gilreath; Second Corporal, Daniel Wilcox; Third Corporal, Orrin J Harris; Fourth Corporal, Zenah A. Harris; and 169 privates.

COMPANY G—*From Lincoln County*—Captain, Joseph B. Shelton; First Lieutenant, James M. Kincaid; Second Lieutenant, J. D. Wells; Junior Second Lieutenant, Daniel M. Asbury; First Sergeant, William D. Thompson; Second Sergeant, John W Lilly; Third Sergeant, Frederick Linebarger; Fourth Sergeant, Thomas B. Thompson; Fifth Sergeant, John F. Little; First Corporal, Moses H. Caldwell; Second Corporal, Albert M. Nixon; Third Corporal, W G. P Houston; Fourth Corporal, William Little; and 116 privates.

COMPANY H—*From Lincoln County*—Captain, Eric Er-

son; First Lieutenant, William A. Summerson; Second Lieutenant, Lawson A. Dellinger; Junior Second Lieutenant, William R. Arents; First Sergeant, James A. Patterson; Second Sergeant, Peter S. Beal; Third Sergeant, Ephraim Garrison; Fourth Sergeant, John C. McCall; Fifth Sergeant, Samuel H. Randleman; First Corporal, Lafayette Loftin; Second Corporal, John C Goodson; Third Corporal, John C. Dellinger; Fourth Corporal, Richard McCorkle; and 125 privates.

COMPANY I—*From Stanly County*—Captain, George C. McCain; First Lieutenant, James D. Hearne; Second Lieutenant, Samuel S. Lilly; Junior Second Lieutenant, Willis Randall; First Sergeant, B. K. Crowell; Second Sergeant, James M. McCorkle; Third Sergeant, George P Parker; Fourth Sergeant, H. Clay Turner; Fifth Sergeant, Reuben Harris; First Corporal, D. D. Rogers; Second Corporal, Benjamin P Austin; Third Corporal, William A. Smith; Fourth Corporal, Wm. D. A. Mason; and 112 privates.

COMPANY K—*From Forsyth County*—Captain, Julius C. Blackburn; First Lieutenant, Junius W Goslin; Second Lieutenant, Romulus M. Cox; Junior Second Lieutenant, Virgil H. Walker; First Sergeant, John W Beck; Second Sergeant, John M. Crews; Third Sergeant, Gideon E. Clayton; Fourth Sergeant, William P Dawson; First Corporal, James R. Ingram; Second Corporal, Lauriston F. Elliot; Third Corporal, Thomas R. Davis; Fourth Corporal, Ephraim B. Terry; and 100 privates.

These companies were organized as the Fifty-second North Carolina Regiment on 22 April, 1862, the following field officers being elected:

JAMES K. MARSHALL, Colonel.
MARCUS A. PARKS, Lieutenant-Colonel.
JOHN Q. RICHARDSON, Major.
Subsequently the following Staff was appointed:
JOHN GATLING, Adjutant.
JAMES M. MCCORKLE, Assistant Quartermaster.
GEORGE H. COKE, Assistant Commissary.
JAMES F. FOULKES, Surgeon.

WILLIAM H. LILLY, Assistant Surgeon.
H. CLAY TURNER, Sergeant Major.
WALTER R. RUSSELL, Quartermaster Sergeant.
W F BROOKSHIRE, Commissary Sergeant.
E. J DEBERRY, Hospital Steward.
J R. PEPPER, Ordnance Sergeant.
MUSICIANS, Charles DeCamp, J H. C. Pearce, R. F. Warren and W H. Shaw.

Captain Marcus A. Parks, of Company F, having been promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, all of the officers of this company were advanced one grade, and Sergeant Joseph G. Hall was promoted to the Second Lieutenancy to fill the vacancy.

Upon the completion of the organization of the regiment, it was assigned to Brigadier-General J G. Martin's Brigade. About 1 June the regiment was moved from the camp of instruction by rail to a point in Lenoir county on the railroad, near where the village of LaGrange now stands, and went into camp.

We named this encampment "Camp Black Jack," and here we remained about a week or ten days, engaged in drilling and performing other camp duties. At the expiration of that time the command was moved nearer Kinston, where we had more suitable ground, and this encampment was called "Camp Johnston," at which point the regiment remained, drilling daily, until the 16th, when it was ordered to do picket duty about five miles below Kinston. The writer and a Lieutenant being detailed to remain at camp and care for the sick (of whom there were quite a number at that time, suffering with measles and colds), and guard the camp, did not participate in this, the first duty performed by the regiment in the field. The regiment continued in the discharge of this duty until relieved by other troops on the 24th, when it returned to camp and resumed its regular routine duties, with daily drillings of the officers as well as the men.

On the afternoon of 30 June, orders were received to cook all the rations on hand and be ready to move at an hour's notice, whereupon all was bustle in the camp and the orders were promptly complied with. The regiment moved late in

the afternoon, taking the cars to Kinston, and thence marching about five miles below the town on the road leading to New Bern, to meet a column of the enemy advancing in our direction. Night coming on, the regiment bivouacked by the roadside, but the enemy, having received information of our movements, retraced his steps in the direction of New Bern, and, in consequence, General Martin sent a courier during the night to Colonel Marshall, ordering him to return to camp; accordingly the regiment began its march early next morning and reached camp in the forenoon of 1 July. Resting this day, we resumed our drillings on the 2d and continued our routine work until the afternoon of the 5th, when orders were received to cook three days' rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice. These orders having been promptly and cheerfully complied with, we were kept in suspense until Tuesday evening, the 8th, when we boarded the train for the half-way station on the Petersburg & Richmond Railroad, reaching that point about daylight Friday morning, the 11th, having been delayed *en route* by an express train derailed on the track ahead of us Tuesday night, and awaited transportation at Petersburg. We camped temporarily at that point until the 14th, on which date we marched to Drewry's Bluff, going regularly into camp at this place, and naming our encampment "Camp Campbell." Here we were engaged in work upon fortifications, drilling and the various duties of the camp.

Captain James F Foulkes, of Company B, having resigned in order to accept his commission as Surgeon of the regiment, on 2 July the officers of this company were each promoted one grade and on 21 July, Sergeant Lindsay C. Hardister was promoted to Second Lieutenant. The regiment continued at this camp until the morning of 20 August, when we broke camp at daylight and marched to Petersburg, Va., to await orders. Here we went into camp about two miles east of the city and called this encampment "Camp French."

On 22 August, Lieutenant Lindsay C. Hardister, of Company B, died in his tent at Camp Campbell, after an illness of a few days. About the 26th, the regiment was trans-

ferred to General J. Johnston Pettigrew's Brigade. On the 28th Captain Joseph B. Shelton, of Company G, resigned, and the officers of this company were each promoted one grade, and Corporal R. B. B. Houston was promoted to Second Lieutenant of this company. On 28 October, James W. Huske was transferred from Captain James McNeill's company of cavalry to Company B, and promoted to Second Lieutenant to fill a vacancy caused by the death of Lieutenant Hardister.

The regiment remained at Camp French, doing work on fortifications, drilling, etc, etc., until 2 November, when it was moved to the vicinity of Franklin, Va., on the Black Water river, reaching this point on the following evening. We were placed at Joyner's Ford on picket duty and remained there until 15 November, when we moved and went into camp at Black Creek Church, Southampton county, Va., which we reached during the afternoon of the same day. While occupying this camp we were engaged in picketing the Blackwater at several points.

On the 18th the enemy advanced with a force of cavalry and infantry and made an attempt to cross the river at Joyner's Ford, which point was held by a detail of an officer and twenty men. The attack was first made by a body of cavalry, which was driven back by our picket. They were reinforced by a body of infantry and made a second attack, in which they were successful in forcing a passage, our men retreating; not, however, until a messenger had been sent to Colonel Marshall, informing him of the attack and the necessary retreat of his men. Immediately upon the receipt of this information the Colonel moved at once with his regiment to the support of his men, marching about three miles. When in the neighborhood of the ford, he was told that a body of about 300 cavalry had crossed the river, and was occupying the camp which we had left on the 15th. The regiment was hurried forward, and on reaching a position which commanded a view of the grounds, said to be held by the enemy, was halted. No enemy was to be seen, although they could be distinctly heard giving commands. Skirmishers were thrown forward and advanced, but the enemy declined an

engagement and recrossed the river. Having re-established our picket post at Joyner's Ford and strengthened it, the regiment returned to camp.

After crossing the river the enemy's cavalry moved in the direction of Franklin; and, reaching a point from which they could shell the town, amused themselves with this cowardly occupation for an hour or more, the only result of which was the wounding of two men of the Eleventh North Carolina Regiment stationed there.

On the 26th, Captain George A. Propst, of Company A, having resigned, the officers of this company were promoted one grade each. Lieutenants P A. Correll and James A. Black having resigned, Sergeants James A. Cook and J. C. Hill were promoted to fill the vacancies.

The regiment continued to do picket duty along the Blackwater river, in the vicinity of Franklin, until 16 December. About 1 November, Captain James M. McCorkle resigned the office of Assistant Quartermaster, and Adjutant John Gatling was appointed to this office. In consequence of this appointment the office of Adjutant was vacant and Lieutenant John H. Robinson, of Company B, was promoted to this position.

On 16 December the regiment was ordered to proceed immediately to Goldsboro, N C., and in obedience to this order we took the cars at Franklin and reached Goldsboro some time after midnight, and reported to General G. W Smith, who was in command of this department. The Colonel was ordered to report with his regiment to General Thomas L. Clingman, who commanded on the south side of the Neuse river. The regiment was at once conveyed by train across the river and reported as instructed. General Clingman ordered that the men should rest where they had quit the train, at a point on the Wilmington & Weldon road, about one-half mile from the railroad bridge over the Neuse River, and at the intersection of the county road and railroad.

BATTLE OF GOLDSBORO.

About sunrise on the morning of the 17th scouts came in and reported the enemy advancing from the direction of Kin-

ston along the county road in heavy force. Our regiment was at once formed in line of battle, parallel with the railroad and across the county road. Holding this position for the space of, probably, half an hour, the enemy still advancing, Colonel Marshall was ordered to proceed to the railroad bridge and hold it all hazard. He moved his regiment rapidly along the railroad track by the left flank, and immediately upon arriving at the bridge, placed his command to the best advantage for carrying out his orders. Shortly after the regiment was in position the enemy advanced upon us in heavy force. One column approached the bridge on the east side of the railroad and up the river bank, attacking our left companies with great vigor. Another approached up the railroad track, and as it approached, threw out a force on the west side of the railroad. The regiment fought with great spirit and very gallantly, but the force was so vastly superior in number that the left of the regiment was driven back and the enemy advancing, reached the bridge and applied the torch. It being constructed of inflammable material, was soon in a light blaze and burned rapidly In the meantime the right of the regiment was hotly engaged, and no support having been sent to our relief, and the column spoken of having been thrown out on the west or upper side of the railroad having advanced so far as to greatly endanger our successful retreat, the regiment was moved rapidly up the bank of the river in the direction of the county bridge, half a mile or more above. During our retreat the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment, which now, when it was too late, had been ordered to our support, mistaking us for the enemy, poured a volley from one company into us, not doing any damage, however, as they fired across an angle formed by two fences and shot too high. At this point the regiment halted.

The enemy, apparently satisfied for the time with having accomplished the destruction of the bridge, fell back and took position on a commanding hill on the east, or lower side of the railroad, about five or six hundred yards from the site of the bridge. Hoping to dislodge the enemy, an attack was made upon his lines during the afternoon.

General Clingman formed his infantry line, composed of the Fifty-first and Fifty-second North Carolina Regiments, under the immediate command of Colonel Marshall, in a skirt of woods on the west of the railroad, and about 500 yards from it. While in this position we were subjected to a very heavy shelling from the enemy's battery of four guns. Leaving his infantry in line as stated, General Clingman moved with two guns of Starr's North Carolina Battery by the county road to attack the enemy in flank, with directions to Colonel Marshall to move at once upon the enemy's line so soon as he should open fire upon him. While the infantry line was awaiting developments by Starr's guns, General Evans, of South Carolina, rode up behind the infantry line, and, inquiring what troops they were, ordered an immediate advance. When he was informed of General Clingman's plan of attack, and suggestion was made to him that a movement before Starr had reached his position would disconcert all of General Clingman's plans and result in disaster, he replied: "I rank Clingman; move forward at once; I will support you with the Holcombe Legion." Of course, commands must be obeyed, and the infantry moved out at double-quick, under a galling fire from the battery, and reached the railroad embankment, under cover of which it halted just long enough to reform its line.

Moving again quickly over the railroad, a high rail fence was encountered which had to be climbed in the face of a heavy discharge from the battery of grape and canister. Meanwhile Starr's guns had not yet come into position, but, fortunately, he opened fire directly after the infantry had crossed the railroad, and drew the fire of a portion of the enemy's battery, the line still advancing; but in a very few moments all saw the hopelessness of the attempt to drive the enemy, and an order was issued to fall back, and for all who could to save themselves by precipitate retreat.

Under General Clingman's plan of attack there was a possibility of successfully dislodging the enemy. Under General Evans' order the attack was simply reckless disregard of the lives of his troops. The Adjutant of the Fifty-second Regiment, in his report of the fight, made on the morning of

the 18th, reported 8 killed on the field, 58 wounded and 13 missing. Of the latter, subsequent reports show some of them to have been killed. The regiment was camped in the vicinity of Goldsboro until about the 23d, when it returned to its camp on the Blackwater near Franklin, Va.

On the 25th orders were received to cook three days' rations and be prepared to move at daylight on the 26th. Accordingly rations were prepared and at dawn on the 26th we crossed the river, entering the enemy's territory on a foraging expedition. We remained for five days and procured a considerable quantity of forage, and this having been successfully accomplished, General Roger A. Pryor, in whose command we were serving temporarily, concluded to go in search of the enemy. Marching all day, we arrived at Windsor Station, on the Seaboard Railroad, about night, and finding the place occupied by two companies of the enemy's cavalry, we opened on them with artillery, when they made a hasty retreat. The command rested here for the night, and at daylight next morning we resumed our march, reaching camp at midday 1 January, 1863.

On the afternoon of the 3d we broke camp on the Blackwater and marched to Garysburg, N. C., where we took cars and reached Rocky Mount on the night of the 5th at 11:30 o'clock, and rejoined General Pettigrew, to the delight of the entire regiment. On the 26th we struck our tents and moved to Magnolia, reaching that point on the evening of the same day.

We pitched our camp near the town, where we were engaged in drilling daily, when the weather permitted, and during our sojourn here underwent a rigid inspection by the inspecting officer of the brigade.

On the morning of 13 February the regiment took up its line of march in the direction of Greenville, and on the 16th, while in bivouac ten miles from Goldsboro, orders were received to remain where we were and await further orders. On the 17th we were directed to return to Goldsboro, which place we reached the same day, and went into camp about two miles from the town. While here we were engaged in drilling every day. March 9th we broke camp and the regiment, to-

gether with other troops, started on a march for the purpose of making an attack upon the enemy at New Bern. The regiment arrived near the town at daybreak on the morning of the 13th and supported our artillery, which opened fire upon the enemy at sunrise. An artillery duel was fought nearly all day without any satisfactory result, when the troops were withdrawn, falling back to a position about three miles from the town, where we rested until 12 o'clock that night.

WASHINGTON, N. C.

About this hour we resumed our line of march and halted nine miles from the town at daylight next morning. In this position we remained until 3 o'clock in the afternoon, when the line of march was again taken up and continued day and night, with occasional short rests, until the 17th, on which date we went into camp near the town of Greenville. On the 18th we were again on the march and arrived at Tranter's Creek, about eight miles from Washington, on the 19th. Remaining here for a day or two we returned to our camp near Greenville on or about the 23d. Resting here, we received orders on the 28th to be ready to move in one hour. Marching on this day, we reached a point on the Pamlico river, seven miles below the town of Washington, on Sunday, March 29th. Here we erected a heavy earthwork on a bluff on the river bank and called it Fort Hill, in honor of General D. H. Hill, who commanded the expedition. The Federal troops occupying the town of Washington were reported to be running short of both ammunition and rations, and Fort Hill was erected for the purpose of commanding the river and preventing communication between the transports and gunboats in the river below and the garrison of the town. Our battery was composed of guns of light calibre, all field pieces and not able to cope with the gunboats in the river below, which gave the fort heavy shellings each day. They were suspicious of us, however, for occasionally two Whitworth guns would be sent down from the battery near the town, and while they were in battery, we would open on them at long range, and on several occasions inflicted considerable damage. When these guns were withdrawn, the gunboats would ap-

proach quite near and open on the fort without eliciting any reply. This puzzled them, and they were timid and would not venture the passage of the fort.

On 7 April, in obedience to orders, Colonel Marshall, with six companies of his regiment, moved at daylight to meet a force of the enemy, reported to be moving on our rear from New Bern. When about three miles from the fort the battalion was halted to await orders. Remaining until night, it was learned that the enemy had returned in the direction of New Bern and the command returned to the fort.

On the 10th the enemy advanced from New Bern in force by the Blount's Mill road, and the regiment was moved out to meet them and check the advance. Forming line of battle at Blount's Mill, we awaited their attack, and after a skirmish of about two hours duration they retired in flight, felling trees across the road to retard pursuit. About the 13th or 14th the boats in the river mustered courage to attempt the passage of the fort. Steaming boldly up, one of them made a successful passage, as we had none but the field guns in the battery, and although we fired upon her repeatedly in her passing, the damage, if any, was of a trifling nature.

The fort having failed eventually in accomplishing the object for which it had been constructed, was evacuated on the 15th and all the troops below drawn in nearer to the town.

On the 18th orders were received to move in the direction of Kinston, *via* Hookerton, which latter place we reached on the 19th, where we remained, awaiting orders until the 25th. Captain Julian Gilliam, of Company C, having resigned 1 April, 1863, First Lieutenant George Gilliam was promoted to Captain and Second Lieutenant John C. Warren to First Lieutenant. Lieutenant John Gatling had previously been promoted to Adjutant, and 1 November, 1862, to Captain and Acting Quartermaster.

On the 25th the regiment marched to Kinston and remained there until 2 May, when we took the train for Virginia, reaching Taylorsville, near Hanover Junction, on the 14th and going into camp. The regiment was divided for some time during our stay at this point; three companies were

held in camp, five were detached for duty at the railroad bridge over the South Anna river on the Central Railroad, engaged in building fortifications, and two were doing picket duty at the Richmond & Fredericksburg Railroad. When not engaged in building fortifications and doing picket duty, the regiment was drilled daily, and it was in the finest condition when we began our march to join the Army of Northern Virginia.

About 1 June Pettigrew's Brigade was assigned to duty in Major-General Harry Heth's Division of General A. P Hill's Corps. On 6 June the brigade was ordered to proceed to Hamilton's Crossing, and we marched until late on Sunday evening, the 7th, when we were directed to strike the railroad and take the cars. Obeying this order, we were conveyed by rail the remainder of the distance and reached the Crossing at 4 o'clock Monday morning, the 8th. Upon arrival, we were placed in position on the Rappahannock river, about six miles below Fredericksburg, where we remained in line of battle until 10 June, when the regiment was ordered to proceed to Hanover Junction to relieve General Corse, of Pickett's Division. Reaching the railroad depot, we awaited transportation for several hours. Fortunately, before cars could be furnished the order was countermanded and the regment directed to report to General Pettigrew, which was done on the same night, when we resumed our place in the line of battle along the river.

GETTYSBURG CAMPAIGN.

On 14 June we left the lines in front of Fredericksburg and started on the ever memorable Gettysburg campaign. By easy marches we reached Culpepper Court House on the 17th. Continuing the march on the 18th, passing through Berryville, Charlestown, and other villages, we reached Shepherdstown on the 23d, and on the 24th waded the Potomac at this point, thence proceeding leisurely towards Gettysburg, passing through the battlefield of Sharpsburg, crossing the Antietam river on the stone bridge, on through Chambersburg, Pa., and halting on the 29th at Cashtown, a village at the foot of the mountains on the Baltimore and Chambersburg pike, and

distant about six miles northwest from Gettysburg. Here we rested until the morning of 1 July On the evening of the 29th Company B, Fifty-second Regiment, under command of First Lieutenant W. E. Kyle, was detailed to picket the Emmettsburg road at a village called Millertown, about five miles to the right of our camp, and during the night had a skirmish with a picket post held by the enemy's cavalry. During the night of the 30th the company was withdrawn and reported at camp.

Early on the morning of 1 July we moved in the direction of Gettysburg. Archer's Brigade of Heth's Division, leading the advance, encountered a heavy force, commanded by General Buford, of the enemy's cavalry, on the Chambersburg road about one mile from Gettysburg, and was at once engaged; the cavalry, pressing Archer very hard, and skilfully using their artillery, checked his advance, when Pettigrew's Brigade, the Fifty-second holding the right of his line, was rapidly advanced to his support. By a vigorous attack we succeeded in forcing Buford's line back in the direction of the town, when, being reinforced by a heavy infantry column, they in turn checked Heth's advance. By this time Pettigrew's Brigade had reached Willoughby's Run, westward from the town and halted; lying here under a heavy shelling from the enemy's guns, and greatly annoyed by their sharpshooters, who occupied, at this time, the second story of a brick building immediately in front of our line, we awaited the arrival of Anderson's Division of Hill's Corps which was moving up to strengthen the lines.

About noon we advanced and Pettigrew's Brigade encountered the enemy in an open field when a most desperate fight ensued. I have already stated that Colonel Marshall's regiment held the right of Pettigrew's line, and as we advanced through the open field our right flank was menaced by a body of the enemy's cavalry, seeking an opportunity to charge our lines. While on the advance and under heavy fire Colonel Marshall formed his regiment in square to guard against attack from this body, and at the same time deployed Company B, under command of Lieutenant W E. Kyle, to protect his flank. This gallant officer succeeded in holding the cavalry

in check and finally drove them from our flank. This maneuver was executed by the regiment as promptly and accurately as if it had been upon its drill grounds. The fighting continued with unabated fury until sundown, when we had gradually, but steadily, driven the enemy's lines back upon the town, but at a tremendous cost of valuable lives. About this time—sundown or nearly so—General Pender was sent to our relief, and passing over our lines took up the fight and drove the enemy into and through the town, halting only when commanded to do so, and thus ended the first day's fight so far as the Fifty-second Regiment was concerned.

The losses in the brigade were appalling, and those of the Fifty-second Regiment very heavy Here the gallant Captain McCain, of Company I, fell dead, pierced by a minie ball, while leading his company in the thickest of the fight. About the same time the young and chivalrous Captain Blackburn, of Company K, fell dead at the head of his company while leading his men to victory. In addition to this great loss many valuable officers were wounded and the loss in the ranks was very heavy. At this time, over thirty-seven years having elapsed, and without access to records, I am unable to state the casualties with accuracy

On the second day our regiment was not engaged. A greater portion of the forenoon of the 3d was consumed in perfecting the arrangements for the assault on Cemetery Hill. General Lee was concentrating his batteries along the brow of Seminary Ridge, and by noon had massed 145 cannon to open the attack. To reply to these guns the enemy, who were able to see what was going on in our lines, had crowned Cemetery Hill, according to report, with 80 cannon. On this day Heth's Division was under command of General Pettigrew, General Heth having received a disabling wound the day before.

Pettigrew's Brigade was commanded by Colonel Marshall, and the Fifty-second Regiment was under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Parks. The column of attack was lying under the crest of the ridge in rear of our guns. Pettigrew's Brigade occupied the position in line immediately to the left of Archer, who joined the left of Kemper's Brigade of Pick-

ett's Division, which occupied the right of the column of attack. Between 1 and 2 o'clock in the afternoon our guns opened upon the enemy's batteries and elicited a prompt and spirited reply. This artillery duel was continued for the space of about two hours without intermission, and the roar of the guns and bursting of shell were frightful to hear and dreadful to contemplate. A slackening of the enemy's fire was taken advantage of to advance the column of attack. In obedience to orders the line moved gallantly and steadily forward under fire of our guns until it reached a point beyond which it was unsafe to fire over our heads. Steadily the advance was made, and as steadily and coolly met with a murderous fire from the enemy's cannon, charged with grape, shrapnel and canister. Still the line advanced, and at every step our comrades fell on every side, killed or wounded. Still we advanced under the incessant discharge of the cannon, assisted by the infantry's rifles, and had almost attained success, when by the overpowering force and almost impregnable position of the enemy, our lines were forced back, and then the slaughter was terrific. We fell back to the point from which the attack was made, rallying all whom it was possible to reach, and reforming our shattered lines.

In this fatal charge our losses were very heavy. The gallant Marshall, pierced through the body while leading his brigade to the attack, fell from his horse, dead, within a very short distance of the enemy's lines. In his death our cause sustained a very great loss. Of his rank the Confederate Army had few equals and no superiors. His regiment was greatly attached to him; his uniform courtesy, coupled with great firmness and rigid discipline in camp, as well as on the march, had won the entire confidence of his men, and all mourned him as a brother lost. Lieutenant-Colonel Parks was shot through both thighs, and fell into the hands of the enemy, and our brave and dashing Major Richardson sealed, with his life, his devotion to the cause he loved so well, and for the advancement of whose success he had striven so zealously. He was instantly killed by a rifle ball while leading the left wing of

his regiment. Of the line officers, but few escaped wounds or capture.

The regiment was commanded on the 4th by Captain Nathaniel A. Foster, of Company F, the Junior Captain engaged in the fight. The Adjutant of the regiment reported the losses in the engagements of the first and third days as 33 killed on the field, 114 wounded and 169 missing. Of this latter, nearly all of whom fell into the enemy's hands, it is fair to presume many were wounded.

We held our lines during the night of the 3d and the day of the 4th, strengthening them with temporary works, and expecting an attack by the Federal army. As no advance was made by the enemy, General Lee began to retire in the direction of the Potomac on the night of the 4th. In consequence of the death of our field officers on the 3d, Captain B. F. Little, of Company F, was commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Eric Erson, of Company H, was commissioned Major, the officers of Companies E and H were each promoted one grade, as were also the officers of Companies I and K, in consequence of the death of Captains McCain and Blackburn. On account of the bad roads and caution observed on retiring, we did not reach Hagerstown, Md., until the 10th. Finding the waters of the Potomac so much swollen from recent heavy rains as to make fording impracticable, and General Lee's pontoon bridge partially destroyed, we halted at this place. On the morning of the 11th our regiment went into line of battle about three miles from the town, expecting General Meade would attack us as soon as he had come up. We held this line until the night of the 13th, with occasional skirmishing between the picket lines. During this halt the pontoon bridge had been repaired so as to be available, and was thrown across the Potomac at Falling Waters. The rain had been falling nearly every day since we began to fall back from Gettysburg, and consequently the roads were in a horrible condition. During the 13th wagon trains were put in motion to cross the river, and at night the troops from our portion of the line were withdrawn and marched for the pontoon bridge, but the roads were so cut up by the heavy wagon

trains and the artillery as to make them almost impassable, and our march was necessarily slow

FALLING WATERS.

To Pettigrew's Brigade had been assigned the responsible duty of protecting the rear of the army while crossing the river. The march had been so retarded by the difficulty of getting the artillery and the wagon trains forward that we did not reach our position until 10 o'clock Tuesday morning, 14 July. General Pettigrew chose a hill by the roadside, and between one and two miles from the river, for his position. There he formed his line and ordered a rest, whereupon the men threw themselves upon the ground, and in a few moments many of them, responding to the call of exhausted nature, were sound asleep. We had been followed by a large body of cavalry which had not yet the temerity to attack us. While resting, as stated, awaiting the crossing of that portion of the army which had not yet succeeded in reaching the pontoon, a squad of Federal cavalry, numbering about fifty men, passing through a skirt of woods in our rear, behind which was massed a division, advanced upon us at a trot with sabres drawn and rode over us before we could check them. In explanation of this fact it should be stated that a regiment of our cavalry had passed us going to the rear a short time before for the purpose of crossing the river at Williamsport above, but we thought they were between us and the enemy.

As the cavalry body approached, the men were waked up and called to arms, but some of the superior officers, mistaking them for our own men, ordered the men not to fire, and it was not until they were upon us that the error was seen; then the bursting of caps with the occasional discharge of a rifle, was heard, and the enemy began to reap the reward of his rashness. Having ridden over our lines, they were now using their pistols with deadly effect, when our rifles began to explode and in a few moments all of the squad save five or six who made their escape, were either killed, wounded or prisoners, not however, before General Pettigrew had been mortally wounded by one of the party. The exposure to rain, to which we had been subjected for so many days, had left the

rifles of our men in such bad condition that but few would fire at first, and to this fact is attributed the losses we sustained—had the guns of our men exploded when first tried, not a man of the attacking party would have been left to tell the tale, and valuable lives would have been saved. This engagement caused a general advance on the part of the enemy, and that portion of General A. P Hill's Corps not yet over the river was hurried to the suppport of Pettigrew We formed line of battle to meet the advance, though all of our artillery having passed the river, we had none in line; but skirmishing with the enemy and fighting and falling back, we held them in check until the whole army had crossed, with all of the wagons and artillery, save two pieces, the horses drawing which had become so exhausted as to be unable to move them, and before fresh horses could be procured the rear of the army had passed them. The whole army thus crossed the river successfully in the face of a large body of the enemy. The loss in our regiment, however, was considerable, its commanding officer, Captain Nathaniel A. Foster, being among the number captured.

Upon crossing into Virginia we took up our line of march, passing through Martinsburg to Bunker Hill where we rested several days. Resuming our line of march, passing through Winchester, we crossed the Shenandoah river at Front Royal, and thence marched by way of Flint Hill to Culpepper Court House, which place we reached on the 25th, and went into camp about one mile from the town. Resting until Monday morning, 3 August, we moved towards Orange Court House, reaching the vicinity of the town on the 5th, and there went into camp. About 10 August Colonel William Kirkland, of the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, was promoted to Brigadier-General and ordered to assume command of our brigade, and henceforth it was known as Kirkland's Brigade.

BRISTOE STATION.

We remained in our camp near Orange Court House until about 20 September, doing picket duty and drilling daily. On the 20th the regiment was moved to Rapidan Station and placed in position, together with the remainder of the brigade,

to meet an expected advance of General Meade's army. On 8 October, 1863, we left our line at Rapidan Station with a view of flanking the enemy and giving him battle at Culpepper Court House, but we were not successful in bringing on this fight. The enemy, learning of General Lee's movements, began to fall back towards Centreville, we following in hot pursuit. On the 13th the Corps of A. P Hill had reached Warrenton, Va., and on the morning of the 14th we moved out from Warrenton along the turnpike road to New Baltimore, where we wheeled to the right in pursuit of General French, who was just ahead and retreating very rapidly, as was evidenced by the beaten tracks on both sides of the road over which his troops had passed. Reaching the hills to the westward and just above Bristoe Station in the afternoon, we saw the rear of his column in the valley just beyond Broad Run river. He had escaped us, but we were destined for a fight.

About the time of our reaching Bristoe Station the advance of Warren's Corps, whom General Ewell was following up the railroad, made its appearance and Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades were formed for immediate attack. The two brigades, under cover of artillery, gallantly advanced against overwhelming numbers posted behind the railroad embankment. Everything was moving smoothly until we had reached point blank range, when the infantry posted behind the railroad, opened a withering fire upon our lines which halted and were forced to fall back. The Fifty-second and Eleventh Regiments moved steadily forward and succeeded in driving the enemy immediately in their front, next to the railroad bridge, from their position. About the time we had gained the road in our front, a section of artillery passed rapidly over the river, and, crossing the railroad track, unlimbered, preparatory to giving us a raking enfilading shelling. Looking for our support on the right, we were dismayed to see the enemy to our right and rear, in possession of the field and part of our artillery The command was at once given to fall back and we retreated rapidly and successfully The Fifty-second Regiment, whose losses were comparatively few on this occasion, had three killed on the field, twenty-one

wounded and forty-two missing. General Kirkland was wounded and conveyed from the field. In view of the fact that General A. P Hill had an entire army corps within half a mile, and the remainder of Heth's with all of Wilcox's Division, were spectators, the lack of timely reinforcements was strange, to say the least of it.*

MINE RUN.

We bivouacked upon the battlefield during the night of the 14th, and the following morning fell back to Rappahannock Station, destroying the railroad as we retreated, tearing up the rails which we heated over burning piles of cross ties and twisted so as to render them useless for the time being. Upon arrival at Rappahannock Station we at once entered upon picket duty, engaged in drilling and other incidental camp duty until 7 November. About 11 o'clock Saturday night, the 7th, we received orders to cook rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice. At the time we supposed the army would make another advance, but instead we fell back to a line on the Rapidan river. During Sunday, the 8th, we were in line of battle throughout the day, expecting an attack, but were not engaged. On the 9th we were ordered on picket duty at Peyton's Ford, where we remained until the 13th, on which day we received orders to cook two days' rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice, but did not receive marching orders until the 29th. On this date we left camp at 4 o'clock in the morning, and, proceeding by the Orange Court House and Fredericksburg road to a point near Vidiersville, we came up with our cavalry engaged in a skirmish with the enemy. Our skirmishers were deployed and thrown forward, engaging the enemy until nightfall, and we held this line during the night. The remainder of the army having arrived during the night, General Lee formed his line of battle at Mine Run. On the morning of the 30th the enemy opened his artillery on portions of the Confederate line, and we confidently expected an attack. It seems, however,

* When General Lee arrived on the scene of A. P Hill's bloody blunder his pointed rebuke was "nothing remains to be done, General Hill, except to bury your unfortunate dead."—ED.

that upon an inspection of General Lee's lines General Meade recognized the position to be impregnable, and, declining battle, retired behind the Rapidan on the night of 1 December.

Our regiment remained at this point until Thursday, 3 December, when we returned to Camp Marshall, our winter quarters, near Orange Court House, where we remained employed in drilling and general camp duty until 3 February, 1864, on which day our regiment was ordered on picket duty on the Rapidan river. On the 20th General Kirkland, having recovered from his wound received at Bristoe Station, returned to camp and again took command of his brigade.

During the month of March Governor Vance paid a visit to the North Carolina troops in the Army of Northern Virginia and made addresses to the several brigades. He had an appointment to speak to Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades, jointly, on the 29th, but on account of the very bad weather our commands were deprived of the pleasure of hearing him. The regiment, having been in winter quarters since 3 February, on 27 April vacated the cabins and moved to an encampment one mile distant. As sickness prevailed to a great extent about this time, the change was made as a sanitary measure with good results.

THE WILDERNESS.

On 4 May our regiment broke camp and marched by the Orange Court House and Fredericksburg plank road, reaching Vidiersville, near which it rested for the night. On the 5th it continued to march in the direction of Fredericksburg, and early in the afternoon reached a point at which the plank road is intersected by what is known as the Brock road; and here General Hill, finding the enemy in his front, formed his line of battle extending across the Plank road. About this time the Fifty-second Regiment was ordered to retrace its steps for the purpose of protecting our wagon train, which was reported to be threatened by the enemy's cavalry. Accordingly, we proceeded to execute this command, and, having gone as far as Parker's store, about four miles to the rear, were informed that its services were not required. Immediately it faced about and returned to join its brigade. In the

meantime the battle had begun, and as we approached the lines we were met by great numbers of our men wounded and seeking the rear for shelter and relief. These men were wounded in every conceivable manner—some slightly, others severely and not a few mortally. Nothing daunted by this spectacle, the gallant old Fifty-second moved rapidly forward and took its position in the brigade, and at once became hotly engaged. The ground over which we were fighting was covered with dense undergrowth, and the enemy could scarcely be seen, in many places, one hundred yards in our front. From the time we joined the brigade, which must have been about 5 o'clock in the afternoon, until nightfall there was one continuous roll of musketry, when night coming on put a stop to the battle for this day. The regiment spent the night upon the ground on which it had ceased to fight in the evening, and the exhausted men sought what rest they could.

From the nature of the ground over which the battle had raged, our lines had become very much disarranged, and in many places there was no connection with our troops to the right or left. Longstreet, it was known, was marching to relieve Hill's Corps, and was expected to be up by 12 o'clock that night. Possibly for this reason the inexcusable blunder of not re-establishing our lines during the night of the 5th was made.

Longstreet was delayed and did not reach us at the expected time, and sunrise of the 6th found us fighting under these great disadvantages. The enemy having penetrated our lines at one of these gaps, opened fire upon the Fifty-second Regiment from the rear. Finding we were flanked we began to fall back, fighting as we retreated. By this time the whole line to the right of the plank road was being forced back and the safety of the army for a time was greatly endangered. Longstreet with his gallant men reached the field about this time; rapidly forming his line, he met the advancing lines of the enemy, checked them, and in a few moments was rapidly driving them back upon their own lines, and thus re-establishing those of General Hill.

SPOTTSYLVANIA TO PETERSBURG.

Our regiment remained in line of battle in the Wilderness until the evening of the 8th, when we were marched to Spottsylvania Court House, which place we reached on the morning of the 9th and were assigned to a position in the line to the left of the court house where we began immediately to intrench ourselves. Here we remained in line of battle, fighting at intervals and constantly exposed to heavy shelling from the enemy's battery. Our losses since the 5th had been heavy—Captain Kyle and Lieutenant Huske wounded among numbers of others, and on the 11th Captain Leonidas R. Gibson, of Company I, was killed. In consequence of his death the officers of this company were each promoted one grade.

General Grant had again taken up his movement to the left, and on the 22d we were withdrawn from our lines and moved rapidly in the direction of Hanover Junction. Crossing the North Anna river our regiment was placed in line on the south side of the river about two miles from the junction. General Warren having crossed the river at Jericho Ford on the 23d, was met by Hill's Corps near Noel's Station and after a spirited engagement was forced to halt for the day.

After this the regiment resumed its place in the line of battle, where it remained until the 31st, when it was moved in the direction of Gaines' Mill, which point it reached about noon on 1 June. Here we were placed in line, but not engaged until the 2d, when we participated in a heavy skirmish with the enemy. In this fight General Kirkland was again wounded, receiving a rifle ball through the thigh, and was taken from the field. In consequence, Colonel George H. Faribault, of the Forty-seventh Regiment, was in command of the brigade. On the afternoon of 3 June Heth's Division, occupying the left of General Early's line, (he was commanding A. P Hill's Corps at this time), was twice most vigorously attacked, but the enemy was handsomely repulsed with considerable loss. The Fifty-second Regiment sustained its part of these attacks with its accustomed coolness and spirit. On 5 June, for the first time since leaving Orange Court House, Heth's Division was resting, awaiting or-

ders. Worn down with fighting, and constant marching to meet the enemy's advance, the men greatly enjoyed this much needed repose.

PETERSBURG.

On the evening of the 9th, the regiment was ordered to proceed to Bottom's Bridge, on the Chickahominy river, for picket duty, and on the evening of the 10th was ordered to join the brigade in the line on the following morning. From here we moved to White Oak Swamp, reaching that point on the 14th, where we remained, doing picket duty until the 18th, when we marched for Petersburg, Va., reaching the neighborhood of that city on the night of the 18th, after a dusty and very fatiguing march. We were placed in line of battle on the south side of Appomattox river. About the 25th the regiment was taken from the trenches and marched about four miles north of the city and assigned the duty of guarding the bridges on the turnpike and railroad over Old Town creek. In the latter part of July, Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, was made Brigadier-General, and ordered to assume command of the brigade. Henceforward, we were known as MacRae's Brigade. We remained in the vicinity of Petersburg until Wednesday, 27 July, when we marched to Chaffin's Bluff, reaching that point Thursday morning after a very tiresome tramp.

On the afternoon of the 28th our skirmish lines were heavily engaged for an hour or two, and we expected an attack upon our lines, which did not take place. We remained here in line until the 30th, when we received orders to move at once to the south side of the James river. We marched a distance of about ten miles to Rice's Turnout on the Richmond & Petersburg Railroad, and at that point took the cars to Petersburg, and occupied our position in the intrenchments. At this point we remained until 2 August, when we were moved further to the left and placed in reserve. On the 9th we relieved General Cooke in the trenches, our line at this point not exceeding 200 yards distance from the enemy's lines, and our sharpshooters, as well as those of the en-

enny, kept up a constant firing both night and day. We held this line until the 13th, when we, in turn, were relieved, and camped temporarily in rear of our lines until the 18th, when we were moved outside the lines to a point about two and one-half miles southwest from Petersburg, and one mile east of the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad, where we had been sent to confront General Warren, who was pressing for the railroad. In the afternoon we made a sudden and vigorous attack upon Warren's left and drove him back about one mile, when our command was withdrawn. By the evening of the 20th the enemy had succeeded in gaining possession of the railroad and intrenched himself at a point about one mile south of Vaughn's house, at what we called the Yellow Tavern, located on the railroad about four miles south from Petersburg. On the night of the 20th we were withdrawn from the trenches and again moved to the south of the city to attack the enemy, who now held the railroad. Reporting to General Heth, whom we found at Vaughn's house, before day on the 21st, we were soon in line, and advanced our sharpshooters to clear the front, and after a pretty sharp skirmish they drove the enemy's picket lines in. Under Pegram's guns, we advanced to the attack; and, after having driven in two lines of the enemy who fell back under cover of their batteries, we were halted in a skirt of woods about half way between Pegram's guns in our rear and the enemy's batteries in our front, and between the two we were subjected to a furious shelling. The column sent to attack the enemy in flank failing to come up, we held our lines until night, when we were withdrawn and retired within our lines of intrenchments. On the 24th we moved out to our works and marched for Reams Station, halting at night near Armstrong's Mills, about eight miles southeast of the city. Early on the morning of the 25th we resumed the march and halted at a point about three miles from Reams Station.

REAMS STATION.

About 2 o'clock an attack had been made upon the enemy by a part of General A. P Hill's command, which was driven back with loss, after which the North Carolina

Brigades of Lane, Cooke and MacRae were ordered up, taking position in the enemy's front. Advancing steadily and rapidly under the fire of Pegram's guns, we captured the whole line, not, however, before the enemy were driven off in a hand-to-hand encounter in the works, in which in a few instances clubbed rifles were used. In this fight our losses were necessarily heavy. We captured seven stands of colors, 2,000 prisoners and nine pieces of artillery. (See General Lee's letter to the Secretary of War, 26 August, 1864.) The enemy having been driven from the railroad, fell back to their own line, and at nightfall our troops fell back to Petersburg.

On reaching the city we were placed in line, the right of our brigade resting on the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad. Here we were engaged in throwing up a new line of works in front of those at that time occupied. At this employment we continued until 16 September, when we were moved to a point about half a mile south of the Boydton plank road, and about three miles southwest of the city, where we were employed in constructing rifle-pits until the 20th. On this day we were moved about one mile further south of the Boydton road and engaged in constructing works of a more elaborate character until the 29th, when we were ordered to Petersburg to supply the places in the line of troops who had been sent north of the James. We reached the city on the same day and awaited orders. On the 30th we were ordered to counter-march and take position on the right of the line. During the time we had been withdrawn, the enemy advanced and had taken a portion of the rifle pits and a heavy earthwork (Fort MacRae) which we had constructed and held on the Squirrel Level road. Attempting to move thence in the direction of the Boydton plank road, he was met by Heth's Division, and after a sharp and spirited attack, was driven back on his lines. MacRae's Brigade now took position in the line further to the right and was engaged daily in throwing up earthworks and drilling until the morning of 27 October.

BURGESS' MILLS.

The enemy having driven in our cavalry holding the right of the line, and penetrating to the Boydton plank road at a

point known as Burgess' Mills, about six miles southwest of Petersburg, MacRae's Brigade, together with other troops, was sent to their support. Finding the enemy in heavy force on the west side of Hatcher's Run, and south of the plank road, we crossed the run some distance below, and immediately after crossing advanced our corps of sharpshooters, who at once encountered the enemy's skirmish line, which was rapidly forced back upon the Federal line of battle. In the meantime our line of battle had been formed. With a yell we charged the enemy's lines, which were broken by the impetuosity of our attack, and were driven rapidly before us. Having driven the enemy for nearly a mile, and finding no support advancing to our assistance, the enemy being in great number on both our right and left flank, General MacRae was forced to call a halt and fall back on our lines. In this engagement the loss of officers and men was heavy. Among the former was Lieutenant James W Huske, of Company B, Fifty-second Regiment, who fell, pierced through the body with a minie ball while gallantly leading the left wing of the regiment in this charge. He had on this occasion, as on all others, behaved with conspicuous gallantry. He died upon the field, and in his death the regiment lost one of its most valuable officers, and his company a kind and considerate friend. Fighting until nearly dark our lines were drawn back and reformed, where we awaited an expected attack, but apparently the enemy had been sufficiently punished, as they withdrew under cover of night, leaving their killed and wounded on the field. A Major-General said in the hearing of this writer, next morning, that he counted 286 dead and 145 so severely wounded as to be unable to help themselves.

On the 29th MacRae's Brigade returned to the lines near Hart's house, whence it had been taken, and was employed in changing our lines, building a new line of works and tearing down the old ones. At this point we erected cabins and went into winter quarters. Occupied in working on fortifications, drilling and the ordinary camp duties, we were not called upon to move until 9 December, 1864, when the brigade started upon a tramp in pursuit of a party of the en-

emy's troops engaged in an effort to destroy the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad. We did not get a fight, but were successful in driving them back within their own lines, after which we returned to our camp, reaching it on the 14th. From this date until 5 February, 1865, we remained in our winter quarters, doing picket duty, drilling and performing such other duty as is incident to camp life.

HATCHER'S RUN.

On the 5th MacRae's Brigade, accompanied by other troops, moved out to intercept a column of the enemy moving by the Vaughn road, in the direction of the South Side Railroad, which had reached a point near Armstrong's Mill, on the left bank of Hatcher's Run. Finding the enemy strongly intrenched, we made a demonstration against them which was repulsed with some loss. We were withdrawn after dark and returned to our quarters. On the 7th we were ordered under arms at daylight expecting to attack the enemy, but on account of a very heavy sleet and snowstorm, did not move. On the night of 31 March we were moved to the right and occupied a position in our lines on the right of the Boydton plank road beyond Hatcher's Run, which we held until the night of 2 April, when we began our retreat by a road leading from Five Forks to Southerland Station, closely pursued by the enemy. Reaching Southerland Station on the morning of the 3d, we were so closely pressed as to find it necessary to fight. We therefore selected a position on the brow of a slight hill in an open field and rapidly fortified our line, as well as we could, with bayonets used to break the earth, and such other means as were at command. Before we had succeeded in doing any considerable work the enemy charged our line. His advance was met with a well-delivered and telling volley from our rifles (we had no artillery) and they were driven back with heavy loss. A second attack with strengthened lines was made and again they retreated with greater loss. A third and much heavier column was hurled against our little band; and, after fighting with great desperation, being flanked on our left, we were driven from our lines and

retreated in the direction of the Appomattox river with but little, if any, organization.

Since the war a Federal General told General MacGowan, of South Carolina who, being the ranking officer present on this occasion, commanded our line, that this was the most gallantly defended line of any within his knowledge during the war; that we had killed and wounded more of their men than we numbered. Following the course of the river by the nearest accessible road, and often through the woods, crossing Namozine and Deep creeks, we joined General Lee at Goode's Bridge and proceeded thence to Amelia Court House, reaching this point on the 4th and halting for rest and rations. Here General Lee expected to ration his army, having ordered supplies to meet him at this point. In this hope, however, he was greatly disappointed. The authorities at Richmond, in the panic caused by the expected evacuation of the lines around Richmond and Petersburg, ordered the trains to proceed, without stopping, to the capital, for the purpose of moving the government's effects, which they did, carrying with them almost the last hope of the army in the shape of its subsistence, there to be destroyed, or fall into the hands of the enemy.

We rested here during the 4th and 5th sending out foraging parties for supplies, which resulted in—nothing. The troops had now been forty-eight hours without regular rations and the prospect was disheartening. On the night of the 5th we left Amelia Court House, marching westwardly by way of Deatonsville, thence towards Farmville. Approaching High Bridge over the Appomattox river, we encountered a body of cavalry disputing our passage. MacRae's Brigade charged, driving them off and capturing General Gregg, after which we continued the retreat, and crossing the river over the bridge, bivouacked for the night. On the morning of the 7th the retreat was continued. Reaching a commanding position about five miles north from Farmville, a line of battle was formed and fortifications quickly erected. Here we rested until night, when the retreat was continued in the direction of Lynchburg, and by the night of the 8th the army had reached the vicinity of Appomattox Court House.

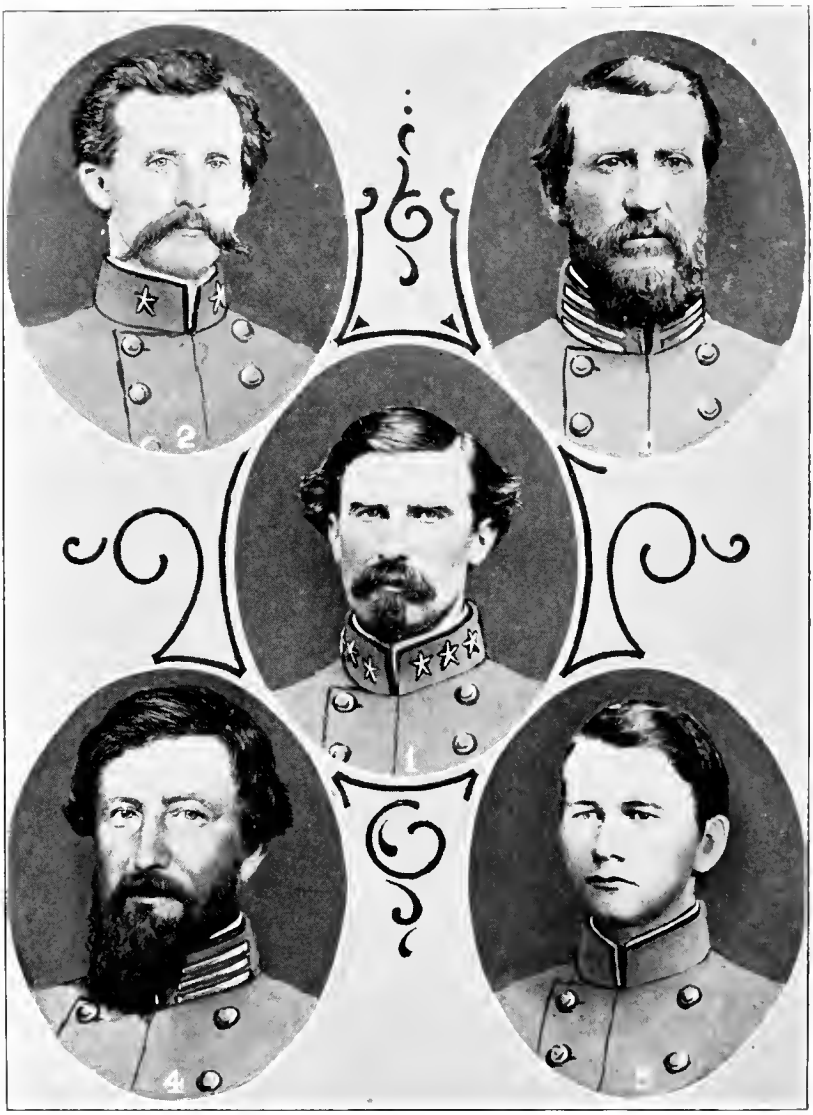
On the 9th an advance was begun but, finding the enemy in possession of our only line of retreat, the army was halted pending negotiations for the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia. On the 12th, in accordance with the terms agreed upon, the Fifty-second Regiment, together with the remainder of what had been the noble Army of Northern Virginia, marched to a point designated by the commissioners appointed for that purpose, and stacked their arms, deposited their furled banners, gave their parole and took up their line of march for those homes they had fought so bravely to defend through four long years of blood, hardships and toil.

NOTE:—After the regiment had been assigned to a brigade I have not, in many instances, been able to speak of it as a separate command, but it is to be understood that in all cases where the movements of the brigade are spoken of, the Fifty-second Regiment participated.

Having no access to records, I have not been able to note casualties with accuracy as to detail, except, in a few cases, where my information is derived from letters written to my wife at the time.

JOHN H. ROBINSON.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.



FIFTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. James T. Morehead, Colonel.
2. James J. Iredell, Major. (Killed at Spottsylvania.)
3. J. F. Eller, Captain, Co. K.
4. J. Harvey White, Captain, Co. B.
5. James Webb Burwell, Private, Co. B.

FIFTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

By COLONEL JAMES T. MOREHEAD.

The duty assigned to me to write a sketch—not a history—of the Fifty-third North Carolina Infantry, I undertook to discharge, with pleasure, but I did not realize until I began how great the difficulty would be, with no records and the conflicting recollections of surviving comrades as to events and persons. It may be and no doubt it is true, that I have not been accurate as to the personnel of the officers of the regiment, as to the dates of commissions, death and wounds, and if any injustice by omission or commission is done, I assure my living comrades and friends of such as have crossed over the river, that no one regrets more than I the lack of reliable data to rectify any mistakes.

The limited length of this sketch of course, forbids my entering into the details of casualties among over one thousand men who at different dates composed the rank and file.

The characteristics of this regiment were common to North Carolina troops. Obedience to and reverence for law and authority, for which the State has been so long known, in my opinion, constitute the basis of soldierly qualities for which her soldiers will be famous in history.

This regiment was like other North Carolina regiments; it was never known to shirk a duty; never refused to advance when ordered; never known to retire without command. In June, after its organization, it was ordered to Richmond and during the seven days contest it was on duty on the south side of the James. The greater part of its first year of service was spent in Eastern North Carolina and it received its first baptism of fire as a regiment at Washington, N. C., in Gen. D. H. Hill's winter campaign of 1862 and 1863. A few days after the battle of Chancellorsville it became a part of the Army of Northern Virginia, and as a part of Daniel's Brigade, was attached to the Second Corps, with which it

marched and fought from Fredericksburg to Appomattox, and participated in more than twenty general engagements, including Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Washington City, Kernstown, Snicker's Ford, Winchester, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek, Hare's Hill, Petersburg, and in numerous combats and smaller affairs, in some of which the conflict was more hotly contested than in the greater battles. Daniel's Brigade was composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fifty-third North Carolina Regiments, and Second North Carolina Battalion. After General Daniel's death, General Bryan Grimes became Brigadier-General. The histories of the other regiments in the brigade necessarily outline the chief incidents in the career of the Fifty-third and make it unnecessary to give its battles and marches in detail.

I select two special instances of its coolness and discipline: One was on the first day of the battle of Gettysburg. This regiment had hastened from Carlisle, Pa., its steps quickened by the report of big guns on the morning of 1 July. Immediately upon its arrival at Gettysburg it was thrown into line and advanced to the assault with the brigade. Soon it was ascertained that there was not room between the brigade on the left and the one on the right, and this regiment was dropped out of the line, which closed up in its front and for some time it had to stand under shot and shell in an open field without being able to return the fire until the brigade on the left, having given away, it moved to the left, took its place and drove the enemy into the town.

In this trying situation, and there could have been none more trying, except a retreat under fire, the regiment manoeuvered as upon parade and drill, and its behavior on this occasion was greatly commended by the brigade and division commanders.

Another instance: At the battle of Winchester, 19 September, 1864, after hours of desperate fighting, when all the troops on the right and left had abandoned the contest and retired from the field, this regiment, alone, continued to fight the foe until ordered to retreat, which it did, across an open field for several hundred yards (the enemy advancing ten to one in numbers) in perfect order, and at intervals, when or-

dered, halting, facing about and delivering its fire almost in the faces of the pursuers. Not a man broke ranks or quickened his steps. As is well known to every soldier, a retreat under fire is the severest test of discipline and courage.

At the battle of Winchester, to prevent the enemy from discovering the gap on the left, I had deployed the greater part of my regiment as skirmishers, and this thin line successfully held five times its numbers at bay, until the failure of promised support to arrive, and all of Early's army on our left had been driven from the field. It was known to every man in the regiment that the enemy was getting rapidly in our rear, and that there was imminent danger that we would be cut off and surrounded, but until ordered so to do, not a man left his position, and the regiment then retreated across the field in the manner above told.

Experience and observation have taught that one of the results of organization and discipline is, that when soldiers retire or retreat in face of the enemy by order, they will halt, but if they "break" without order, it is difficult to rally and reform them. An incident of this battle illustrates this. The temporary works of the enemy above referred to were constructed just beneath the brow of the hill or slope up which the regiment was charging at a run and was not observed until we were within a few feet of them. When the men had reached nearly the top of the slope, to their astonishment they saw behind the work a third line of the enemy and such of the other two lines as could be prevailed on to stop, outnumbering us four or five to one. Our men immediately faced about and started for the shelter of a wooded hill from and through which they had just driven the enemy. Seeing the condition and thinking of the fact above stated, I at once ordered a retreat, had the officers to repeat the order, seemingly so superfluous, and directed the regiment to halt as soon as the woods were reached. When I reached the woods, I had the satisfaction of seeing the regiment reformed and "ready for business" as if nothing had happened to dampen their ardor.

I select these out of many instances, which particularly distinguished this regiment, because of the trying situations.

After the regiment was assigned to Daniel's Brigade, it participated in the battles of Gettysburg, three days, and at Mine Run and fought more or less from 5 May, 1864, to 30 May at the Wilderness under fire every day. It was in the famous Horse Shoe at Spottsylvania Court House, during the terrible days of 9, 10, 11 and 12 May, losing its Major, James Johnston Iredell, killed, Col. Owens wounded, several of its Captains and Lieutenants and scores of its men killed and wounded. It was brought out of the Horse Shoe to straighten the lines after the assault of the 12th under command of a Captain, its only remaining field officer, its Lieutenant-Colonel being in command of the brigade, the Brigadier-General (Daniel) and every other officer in the brigade senior in commission, having been killed or wounded. On 30 May it was engaged in the battle at Bethesda church, and on the next day was withdrawn from the front preparatory to its march to the Valley of Virginia.

On 5 or 6 May, 1864, the sharpshooters of this regiment were much annoyed by one of the Federal sharpshooters who had a long range rifle and who had climbed up a tall tree from which he could pick off our men, though sheltered by stump and stones, himself out of range of our guns. Private Leon, of Company B (Mecklenburg), concluded that "this thing had to be stopped," and taking advantage of every knoll, hollow and stump, he crawled near enough for his rifle to reach, took a "pop" at this disturber of the peace and he came tumbling down. Upon running up to his victim, Leon discovered him to be a Canadian Indian, and clutching his scalp-lock, dragged him to our line of sharpshooters.

The regiment was at Lynchburg when the pursuit of Hunter began, marched with General Early to Washington, D. C., was one of the regiments left to support the picket line under the walls of Washington, while the rest of the corps made good its retreat to the valley—the Nineteenth and Sixth Corps of the Federal army having been poured into the city for its defense. While supporting the pickets, this regiment became involved in one of the hottest conflicts in its experience, but succeeded in holding its position, repulsing and driving the

enemy back to the earthworks, which defended the city. At midnight it received orders to retire in perfect silence, and to the surprise of all when we reached the position on the hills near the city, where we had left the corps, it was ascertained that the corps had left the night before, twenty-four hours—and we marched the whole night and a greater part of the next day before we caught up with the rear guards. Early's ruse, as usual, had succeeded in deceiving the enemy.

This regiment participated in all of the battles in the Valley in 1864, and in numerous combats and skirmishes. In this Valley Campaign the regiment lost its gallant Colonel Owens, who was killed at Snicker's Ford, near Snicker's Gap, in August, 1864. He had been absent since 10 May, disabled by wounds at Spottsylvania Court House; had returned just as the regiment was eating dinner, and almost while we were congratulating him on his safe return, we received notice that the enemy had crossed the river at Snicker's Ford. The order to "fall in" was given, we marched to the river, and drove the enemy across, after a short, but severe conflict. The firing had ceased, excepting now and then a dropping shot, when Colonel Owens was killed by one of these stray shots. He was a good officer, brave, humane, social, popular with both men and officers. He was succeeded by the writer as Colonel. At Winchester, on 19 September, 1864, Adjutant Osborne was killed. Two years ago Color Sergeant Taylor, of Company E, Surry county, who has resided in Utah since 1866, visited me. He received a ball in his hip from which wound he still limps and in talking about his own wound, he told me as we were charging the third Federal line at Winchester, having broken the first two, and when near the temporary breastwork of the enemy, he received the shot which disabled him for life, and that as he fell, young Osborne picked up the flag waving it, ran forward, cheering on the men and was killed within 20 feet of the Color Sergeant. He was an efficient officer and daring soldier, I suppose not older than 20 years. Lieutenant W R. Murray, of Company A, than whom there was not a better officer or braver soldier in the "Old Guard" of Napoleon, acted as Adjutant after the death of Osborne till the surrender at Appomattox.

As stated before, Major Iredell, a true gentleman and brave soldier, was killed at Spottsylvania Court House. Captain John W Rierson succeeded him. At Winchester, finding that there was a gap of two or three hundred yards between my left and the troops on the left, and that the enemy had discovered and were preparing to take advantage of it, I directed Major Rierson to find General Grimes on the right of the division, (General Rodes had been killed in the beginning of the action), and apprise him of the situation. After some time he returned, saluted and reported, the fighting being very heavy all the time, when I discovered that Major Rierson was shot through the neck, which wound was received before he found General Grimes, but he nevertheless performed the duty, returned and reported, and did not then go to the rear until I directed him to do so. This gallant officer was killed when the enemy broke over our lines at Petersburg, a few days before Appomattox. He was entitled to his commission as Lieutenant-Colonel from the date of the battle of Snicker's Ford, but I do not know that he received it.

This was a volunteer regiment, enlisted in the latter part of the winter and first part of the spring of 1862, and was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, the first week in May, 1862, and assigned to Daniel's Brigade, (Rodes' Division). William A. Owens, of Mecklenburg county, was elected Colonel; James T. Morehead, Jr., of Guilford county, Lieutenant-Colonel, and James Johnston Iredell, of Wake county, Major.

Colonel Owens had already been in the service more than one year, having served as Captain in the First (Bethel) Regiment, and at the time of his election was Lieutenant-Colonel of the Eleventh Regiment.

Lieutenant-Colonel Morehead had also been in the service the preceding year, having entered the same in April, 1861, as Lieutenant of the "Guilford Grays," (afterwards Company B, of the Twenty-seventh Regiment), and at the time of his election was a Captain in the Forty-fifth Regiment.

William B. Osborne, of Mecklenburg county, was appointed Adjutant and John M. Springs, of Mecklenburg, was appointed Captain and Assistant Quartermaster. He re-

signed in the fall of 1862 and was succeded by Captain John B. Burwell. J. F. Long was appointed Surgeon; Lauriston H. Hill, of Stokes county, Assistant Surgeon, and promoted Surgeon in 1863. William Hill, of Mecklenburg, was appointed Captain, A. C. S. In 1863 Charles Gresham, of Virginia, was assigned to duty with this regiment as Assistant Surgeon. James H. Colton, of Randolph county, was appointed Chaplain; J. H. Owens, Sergeant Major (promoted Second Lieutenant of Company I and killed); R. B. Burwell, Quartermaster Sergeant; J C. Palmer, Commissary Sergeant; R. S. Barnett, Ordnance Sergeant. Upon the promotion of J. H. Owens, Aaron Katz, of Company B, succeeded him as Sergeant-Major, and upon his being captured, Robert A. Fleming, of Company A, was Sergeant-Major.

COMPANY A was from Guilford county. A. P McDaniel was its first Captain, commissioned 25 February, 1862, and upon his retirement in 1863, Lieutenant J M. Sutton was promoted Captain and wounded at Bethesda Church and on 21 September, 1864, in the Valley, and captured at Petersburg; P W Haterick (killed at Gettysburg), First Lieutenant; J. M. Sutton, Second Lieutenant; W L. Fleming, promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant in August, 1863; William R. Murray, promoted from ranks to Second and First Lieutenant in 1863; J. W Scott, promoted Second Lieutenant from Sergeant (chief of regimental corps of sharpshooters).

COMPANY B was from Mecklenburg county and its first Captain was J. Harvey White, commissioned 1 March, 1862, killed at Spottsylvania Court House in May, 1864. Samuel E. Belk, First Lieutenant; John M. Springs, Second Lieutenant, promoted Assistant Quartermaster; William M. Matthews, Second Lieutenant, promoted from First Sergeant; M. E. Alexander, promoted Second Lieutenant from Second Sergeant. Lieutenants Belk, Matthews and Alexander were wounded at Gettysburg.

COMPANY C was from Johnston, Chatham and Wake, mostly from Johnston. Its first Captain was John Leach, commissioned 28 February, 1862; was succeeded as Captain

by J C. Richardson (wounded at Petersburg), commissioned 17 April, 1863, both from Johnston county; George T. Leach, of Chatham, commissioned First Lieutenant 7 March, 1862; John H. Tomlinson, of Johnston county, commissioned Second Lieutenant in April, 1862, resigned and succeeded by E. Tomlinson in 1862; S. R. Horn, of Johnston county, was commissioned Second Lieutenant 21 July, 1862.

COMPANY D was from Guilford, Cumberland, Forsyth, Stokes, Bladen and Surry. David Scott, Jr., of Guilford county, was commissioned Captain 1 March, 1862, resigned and was succeeded 15 May, 1863, by Alexander Ray, of Cumberland county, promoted from First Lieutenant and killed at Petersburg, April 1865. Alexander Ray was commissioned First Lieutenant 1 March, 1862; Madison L. Efland, of Guilford county, commissioned Second Lieutenant 1 March, 1862, promoted First Lieutenant 15 May, 1863, and wounded; A. H. Westmoreland, of Stokes county, was promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant; W N. Westmoreland, Stokes county, was promoted from the ranks to Second Lieutenant in 1863.

COMPANY E was from Surry county. J C. Norman was commissioned Captain on 8 March, 1862, resigned the following December and was succeeded by First Lieutenant Robert A. Hill, killed in 1864, succeeded in turn as Captain by First Lieutenant B. W Minter; Samuel Walker was commissioned Second Lieutenant 8 March, 1862, promoted to First Lieutenant December, 1862, and resigned; B. W Minter, Second Lieutenant, promoted First Lieutenant and Captain; Henry Hines, Second Lieutenant, in 1862; Logan Bemer, promoted from Corporal to Second Lieutenant, wounded and captured in 1864; James A. Hill, Second Lieutenant, captured in 1864.

COMPANY F was from Alamance and Chatham. G. M. G. Albright was commissioned Captain 5 May, 1862, killed July, 1863, at Gettysburg, and was succeeded by A. G. Albright, promoted from First Lieutenant (wounded at Fisher's Hill, 1864); Jesse M. Holt, First Lieutenant, 16 July, 1863, promoted from Second Lieutenant, (killed at Winchester, 1864); Branson Lambe, commissioned in 1864, promoted

from Second Lieutenant; John J. Webster, commissioned Second Lieutenant May, 1862, and resigned; S. J. Albright, commissioned Second Lieutenant in 1862 and killed at Spottsylvania Court House in 1864.

COMPANY F was from Stokes. G. W Clarke was commissioned Captain on 20 March, 1862, and resigned May, 1862; was succeeded by John W Rierson, promoted from Second Lieutenant and who was in 1863 promoted to Major, wounded at Winchester and killed at Petersburg, April, 1865. He was in time succeeded as Captain by H. H. Campbell, promoted from First Lieutenant and killed at Winchester. G. B. Moore was commissioned First Lieutenant in March, 1862, resigned in June; John W Rierson, commissioned Second Lieutenant March, 1862; W H. McKinney was promoted from the ranks in May, 1862, to second Lieutenant, and wounded at Winchester; C. F Hall, promoted from ranks to Second Lieutenant, mortally wounded at Gettysburg; W F. Campbell, promoted First Lieutenant and wounded at Washington, D. C.

COMPANY H was from Stokes county. Captain Spottswood B. Taylor was commissioned on 20 March, 1862, resigned on account of health in November, 1863, and was succeeded by John E. Miller, promoted from Second Lieutenant, who was wounded at Snicker's Ford and captured September, 1864; Thomas S. Burnett, commissioned First Lieutenant 20 March, 1862, and killed in 1863; Charles A. McGehee, First Lieutenant, November, 1862, wounded at Gettysburg 3 July, 1863, and captured; Alexander M. King, Second Lieutenant, March, 1862; J Henry Owens, promoted Second Lieutenant from Sergeant-Major, December, 1862, and killed; Alexander Boyles, promoted First Lieutenant.

COMPANY I was from Union county. E. A. Jerome was commissioned Captain 20 March, 1862, and resigned in June following, and was succeeded by Thomas E. Ashcraft, promoted from First Lieutenant; John D. Cuthbertson, commissioned Second Lieutenant 20 March, 1862, promoted First Lieutenant; Joshua Lee, commissioned Second Lieutenant 20 March, 1862; James E. Green, promoted from the ranks,

Second Lieutenant 24 June, 1862; A. T. Marsh, promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant 19 May, 1864.

COMPANY K was from Wilkes county. William J. Miller was commissioned Captain 20 March, 1862, killed at Gettysburg 1 July, 1863, and was succeeded by Jesse F. Eller, promoted from Second Lieutenant; Thomas C. Miller, promoted from Second Lieutenant to First Lieutenant 1 July, 1863; Thomas C. Miller, commissioned Second Lieutenant in August, 1862.

This regiment lost in killed its first Colonel, who was twice wounded; both of its Majors, one of them, Rierson, several times wounded and its Adjutant. Its surviving Colonel was wounded three times, at Gettysburg, Fisher's Hill and in the assault upon the Federal lines at Hare's Hill on 25 March, 1865, in which last engagement he was captured within the enemy's works.

As it is, I have only the approximately correct report of the losses of one of the companies of the regiment, and that only in one battle, but I think the losses of the other companies may be fairly estimated from the losses of this one.

Company B lost at Gettysburg out of about 65 men, 8 killed and 22 wounded, and of the four officers, three were wounded.

I meet many of these scarred and now grizzly veterans of the companies from Alamance, Guilford, Stokes and Surry at my courts in these counties, and hear sometimes from those from the other counties, and with very few exceptions they have shown themselves to be as good citizens as they were gallant soldiers. They illustrate that "peace hath her victories no less renowned than war."

The regiment reduced to a handful of men shared the fortunes of the historic retreat and surrendered at Appomattox, being then commanded by Captain Thomas E. Asheraft, the brigade being commanded by Colonel David G. Cowand. General Grimes having been made a Major-General, commanded the division.

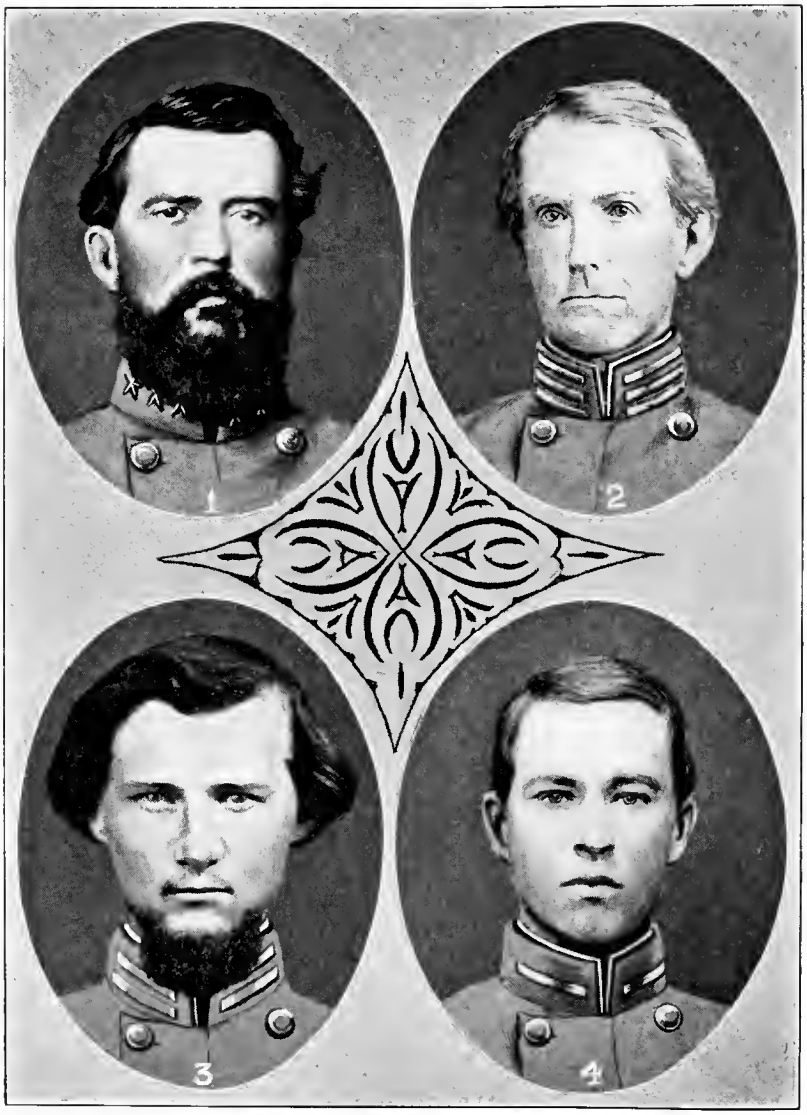
I cannot close this sketch without acknowledging my indebtedness to Captain Sutton and Private J. Montgomery, of Company A; L. Leon, of Company B, who kindly furnished

me with copy of a diary kept by him from organization of the regiment up to 5 May, 1864, when he was captured; Captain Albright, of Company F; Captain S. B. Taylor, of Company H, and Lieutenant W F Campbell, of Company G, for valuable information; and I hope that the publication of the sketches of the North Carolina regiments will excite interest enough among the old soldiers to give us further dates and incidents. I wish I could write a history of my regiment which would do the officers and men full credit for their patriotism and services.

The patriotism and heroism of these soldiers were illustrated by the patient and uncomplaining endurance of the forced march, the short rations, the hardships of winter camps and campaigns as much as by their fighting qualities. Posterity will hesitate to decide which is most worthy of admiration.

JAMES T. MOREHEAD.

GREENSBORO, N. C.,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

1. K. M. Murchison, Colonel.
2. Rev. John Paris, Chaplain.
3. J. Marshall Williams, 1st Lieut., Co. C.
4. R. A. Russell, 2d Lieut., Co. E.

FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT

By J. MARSHALL WILLIAMS, First Lieutenant Company C.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, N. C., on 10 May, 1862, and was composed of ten companies of infantry, viz.:

Company A—*Rowan County*—Captain Anderson Ellis.
Company B—*Burke County*—Captain, J C. S. McDowell.
Company C—*Cumberland County*—Captain, K. M. Murchison.
Company D—*Northampton County*—Captain, J A. Rogers.
Company E—*Iredell County*—Captain, —. —. Parker.
Company F—*Guilford County*—Captain, —. —. Watlington.
Company G—*Wilkes County*—Captain, A. H. Martin.
Company H—*Yadkin County*—Captain, D. S. Cockerham.
Company K—*Columbus County*—Captain, W B. Hampton.
Company K—*Granville County*—Captain, S. J. Parham.

Each company containing its full quota of men, it proceeded to elect Field Officers, which resulted as follows:

Captain J. C. S. McDowell, of Company B, Colonel.
Captain K. M. Murchison, of Company C, Lieutenant-Colonel.
Captain A. Ellis, of Company A, Major.

Subsequently the following Staff was appointed:
Lieutenant W C. McDaniel, Adjutant, of Company C.
D. R. Murchison, Quartermaster.
E. G. Greenlee, Surgeon.

W H. TATE, Assistant Surgeon.
REV. JOHN PARIS, Chaplain.
ROBERT G. RUSSELL, Sergeant-Major.
E. G. BRODIE, Ordnance Sergeant.
J J. FORNEY, Quartermaster Sergeant.

Thus it will be seen that this regiment was composed of ten companies from different parts of the State. Though high up in numbers, it was made up of good material; many of its officers and men had formerly belonged to the First Volunteers or "Bethel," Seventh and Eighth North Carolina Regiments.

Upon the completion of its organization this regiment was sent to the coast of North Carolina, and after three months service on picket duty, and other duties incident to camp life, it was ordered to the Army of Northern Virginia, and was temporarily placed in Law's Brigade, with the Sixth, Twenty-first and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments, which constituted a part of Hood's Division. Soon after it was assigned to this command, the first battle of Fredericksburg came off.

FREDERICKSBURG.

Here we "fleshed our maiden sword," and at once covered ourselves with glory. On 13 December, 1862, this regiment, with the Fifty-seventh, being new regiments, were detached and ordered to drive the enemy from a railroad cut, from which they had driven our troops in the early part of the day. At 5 o'clock p. m. this memorable charge was made in the most gallant manner in the presence of some of our prominent generals, and to use the language of General Hood, our commander, "They pursued the broken enemy across the railroad for a mile into the plains. Although scourged by a galling flank fire, it was not until repeated messengers had been sent to repress their ardor that they were recalled. I verily believe the mad fellows would have gone on in spite of me and the enemy together; and as they returned, some of them were seen weeping with vexation because they had been dragged from the bleeding haunches of

the foe, and exclaiming: 'It is because he has no confidence in Carolinians! If we had been some of his Texans he would have let us go on and got some glory.' " Our loss in this battle was comparatively light, considering the deadly work we were engaged in, but we left some brave men on the field, which served to remind us that in our next it might be our lot to fill a soldier's grave. After this battle we went into winter quarters on the Rappahannock river, and in a short time the campaign of 1863 was opened. We were then transferred to General Robert F Hoke's Brigade, which was composed of the Sixth, Twenty-first, Fifty-fourth and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments and assigned to Early's Division, Jackson's Corps. We took part in some of Jackson's strategic movements around Chancellorsville, and were engaged in several "brushes" which were very common at that time. On 3 May our division alone, was sent back to Fredericksburg, a distance of sixteen miles, and took position on Marye's Heights to prevent a flank movement on General Lee, then at Chancellorsville. On the following day Sedgwick's Corps, with other troops, crossed the river, and swept us from our position. Soon Rode's Division came to our assistance, and after a bloody struggle we regained our former position, and the enemy were driven back across the river. Many of our brave men fell in this battle. It was here that our much-lamented Colonel, J C S. McDowell, fell mortally wounded, and on the 8th yielded up his life, "as a holocaust to his country's need." His remains were then taken by a dear friend to Richmond, and placed in the capital by the side of the immortal Jackson, who had "crossed over the river" at the same time. After the death of Colonel McDowell, Lieutenant-Colonel Kenneth M. Murchison was made a full Colonel, and Captain James A. Rogers, of Company D, was made Major, vice Ellis promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel. Soon we joined the main army, then at Chancellorsville, and were assigned to Ewell's Corps,. and with the army took up a line of march for Culpepper Court House. From thence we moved northward, passed Little Washington, and moving with the utmost rapidity we soon entered the Valley.

IN THE VALLEY.

Upon reaching Front Royal, Rodes' Division of our Corps was detached and sent to Berryville, when our division (Early's) with Johnson's, were sent to Winchester. On reaching the vicinity of Winchester our sharpshooters became engaged, and soon drove the enemy into one of their advanced forts, which was very strong. A line of battle was soon formed, and all preparation made for an immediate attack. General Ewell finding it a difficult matter to procure a suitable position for his artillery on the hills commanding the town, spent the day in posting his batteries.

The town was strongly fortified, and it was thought that Milroy, with a garrison of 6,000 men, would make a desperate effort to hold it. General Ewell at once resolved to storm the works, and with all the artillery from the two divisions opened a galling fire upon their works, and in three hours' time the Federal guns were silenced. At 6 o'clock p. m., Hays' Brigade of our division, made a most gallant charge and carried their redoubts by storm, capturing and killing a good portion of the garrison. Night coming on, Milroy, with a handful of his men, deserted their command and fled in wild confusion and reached Harper's Ferry in safety.

In this engagement 2,000 prisoners, equally as many horses, and a vast amount of commissary stores were captured. On 18 June our regiment, then numbering 400 men, was ordered to take these prisoners to Staunton, a distance of 100 miles, and rejoin the army then in Maryland, at a specified time. The Fifty-fourth was thus deprived of a share in the battle of Gettysburg in which the rest of the brigade participated. With as little delay as possible we started en route for Staunton, marching eighteen miles a day, and guarding prisoners at night. On 3 July, 1863, we returned to Winchester, and in conjunction with a Virginia regiment, were ordered to guard an ordnance train to the army, then in Pennsylvania. Upon reaching Williamsport it was ascertained that the enemy was making some demonstrations in our front, and we were at once ordered by General Imboden, who was then in command, to take position and repel any

attack that might be made upon our wagon train, which had arrived there, but could not cross on account of the high stage of the water in the Potomac.

On the morning of the 6th a strong force of cavalry and artillery advanced on the Hagerstown and Boonsboro roads. Our force being small, four companies under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Ellis, were detached to support our only battery, and the remainder of the regiment deployed as sharpshooters, so as to check any advance of the enemy that might be made on the Boonsboro road. At 5 o'clock p. m. the enemy advanced their artillery, which was followed by dismounted cavalry, and a fierce little battle ensued, which lasted for an hour, when they retreated. In this fight 25 were killed and wounded from our regiment, and a good number from the regiment that had joined us.

General Imboden guarded our flanks, while Colonel Murchison manœuvered this little army with much coolness, and soon won the unbounded confidence of his men in his military skill and their admiration for his personal bravery.

RETREAT FROM GETTYSBURG.

On 8 July we again joined the main army at Hagerstown, Md., and with it we again crossed the Potomac. Marching continuously we reached Rapidan Station, and went into camp for a short rest, which was so much needed. From this camp heavy cannonading could be heard in our rear, and we were frequently annoyed by the cavalry dashes on our rear guard. After our rest we moved on Somerville Ford, to check a column of cavalry from crossing; but after a feeble demonstration, they withdrew to Raccoon Ford to reinforce some troops already there, and confronting Johnson's Division. We were hurried to that point and assisted in driving them back.

From here we moved to Orange Court House, and after being reviewed by General Lee, we went into camp and were held in reserve for two days. Colonel Murchison, after a short absence, joined us at this place, and took command of the regiment. In a short time we were sent out on picket

and captured a good lot of prisoners that had been cut off from their commands.

We then moved on to Madison Court House, and in approching Rapidan river, had a fierce encounter with the enemy's cavalry, which was soon driven back. We then continued our march in the direction of Culpepper Court House, and upon arriving there had a rest of two days, awaiting some troops to come up. On the 12th we resumed our march for Warrenton Springs and rested for the night. The next morning we crossed the river, and found many dead Yankees and horses where General Stuart had fought them the day before. He was then driving them in the direction of Rappahannock Station. Our whole army then began destroying the railroad for some distance, and after this work was accomplished we went on to Rappahannock Station and went into camp. The next day we moved to Brandy Station, and in passing through an open space of fields, we were subjected to a severe enfilading fire, from the horse artillery, which caused some confusion; but they were soon driven off, and we then moved on quietly and bivouacked near Brandy Station.

On 1 November, 1863, we moved our camp two miles west of Brandy Station on the railroad, and much to our surprise, we were ordered to build winter quarters; and what rejoicing there was in the anticipation of a long rest and a cessation of hostilities. Those of us who possessed a talent for making ourselves comfortable soon had good cabins, and as every officer was priding himself upon having the "best," a sudden change in our life of quietude and social enjoyment came over the spirit of our dreams.

RAPPAHANNOCK BRIDGE.

On the evening of the 15th our brigade was called out and hurried to the river to reinforce Hays' Brigade of our division, then on picket, and threatened by a heavy force. Just at dark we reached the river, and were hurried across on pontoon bridges, and took position behind some works that had been built to defend the passage of the river. It was thought by General Early that a successful resistance could

be made, or if forced to withdraw, it could be done under the batteries from the south side. In a short time Sedgwick's Corps with the assistance of Russell's and Upton's Brigades from the Fifth Corps, took possession of our bridge and the two brigades after some desperate fighting, were overpowered and compelled to surrender.

Out of the 2,000 men engaged and so recklessly exposed, 1,750 were captured and 150 killed and wounded. Those who escaped only reached the south side by swimming the river. From our regiment only three commissioned officers escaped, viz., Lieutenants Edward Smith, Fitzgerald, and the writer of this sketch, who was then carried fifteen miles at night, through a mist of rain and snow, in an unconscious condition, before a change of clothing could be had. Those that were captured were taken to Johnson's Island, Ohio, and were held until after the war.

If the writer is not mistaken, General Hoke was at this time home on a wounded furlough, and upon hearing of this dreadful disaster, came on and obtained permission to take the remnant of his brigade to Kinston, N. C., to be recruited by conscripts, and his old men then at home on sick and wounded furloughs. The Twenty-first North Carolina of our brigade was absent at the time, being on detached service in North Carolina, and thus escaped capture. The conscripts soon began to pour in from Raleigh, and for three weeks we were engaged in the monotonous business of preparing these men for more active service.

NEW BERN.

General Hoke, not yet entirely well of his wounds, became restless and obtained permission to "tackle" New Bern. On 30 January, 1864, we moved in that direction, by the Dover road, and were reinforced by Clingman's and Corse's Brigades. Upon reaching Core creek our sharpshooters were thrown out and soon became engaged with the enemy, when they were driven back to Bachelor's creek, where they were well fortified and made a stubborn resistance. Our artillery was soon in position, and a deadly assault was made upon

their works, when they fled in much confusion to New Bern, leaving behind several pieces of artillery and a good many prisoners. In this battle our loss in killed and wounded was heavy. Among the killed was Colonel Shaw, of the Eighth North Carolina. We then moved on to New Bern, and finding heavy reinforcements pouring into the city from Plymouth and other points, it was not deemed advisable to make the attack just at this time, and our little army withdrew; but not until much damage had been done to the enemy. We then returned quietly to Kinston, and remained there, drilling conscripts which were daily coming in until 13 April, when our brigade moved in the direction of Goldsboro, Clingman's and Corse's going in a different direction. This movement somewhat puzzled us, as we knew not "what was up" until we reached Plymouth, when some changes were made in our commands.

CAPTURE OF PLYMOUTH.

The Forty-third North Carolina and Twenty-first Georgia Regiments were temporarily attached to our brigades. Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia, being senior officer, took command of our brigade (General Hoke commanding the whole army). In the first charge on one of the advanced forts, which was very strong, Colonel Mercer was killed, and his men seeing no chance of getting in under this galling fire, began to waver, when Lieutenant-Colonel W G. Lewis, of the Forty-third, promptly taking in the critical situation, assumed command, and began to rally the men behind a bluff in a few yards of the fort. He at once sent for two pieces of artillery, which soon battered down one corner of the fort, and we went in without the loss of a man. This movement evidently saved the life of many a brave man.

From this time Colonel Lewis was in command of our brigade and was soon made Brigadier-General for his heroic conduct on this occasion.

We then moved on the town, and after a feeble demonstration by the enemy it was surrendered 20 April, 1864, with 2,500 prisoners, 100,000 pounds of bacon, 1,000 barrels of flour and a vast amount of other stores. Among these prison-

ers 22 had formerly belonged to our army, and had gone over to the enemy and taken up arms against us. These prisoners were sent to Kinston, given a fair trial by court-martial, convicted of high treason, and duly executed by our brigade.*

After this we went to Washington, N. C. The enemy soon fled destroying a vast amount of stores. At this place we remained several days in perfect quietude. We then moved back to New Bern, where General Hoke expected to add another gem to the diadem of his military fame, but alas! General Lee could no longer do without him and we were hurried to Virginia.

BUTLER'S ADVANCE ON PETERSBURG.

Arriving at Weldon, N C., it was ascertained that the enemy had torn up the railroad and burnt two of our bridges, and we were compelled to march fourteen miles and take the cars again. On 9 May at 6 o'clock p. m., we arrived at Petersburg just in time to save the city. Butler at that time was in possession of the outer works of the city, and had demanded its surrender on the following morning. As soon as we could get in position he was attacked in the most vigorous manner, and soon fled in wild confusion to Drewry's Bluff, and we in hot pursuit until stopped by the heavy shelling from his gunboats. We then crossed the James and took position at Chaffin's farm, and after some sharp picket fighting we were withdrawn and sent to Richmond by steamers. Arriving there, we were sent four miles east of the city, and went into camp for the first time in several days. The next day we again crossed the James river to check a column of cavalry that was supposed to be moving on the coal field railroad. The enemy made but a feeble demonstration, and after some brisk picket fighting they withdrew.

13 July, 1864, we were ordered back to Drewry's Bluff to

---

* After the war Secretary Stanton had in contemplation calling Gen. Hoke to account but the latter took the initiative by going to Washington and calling on Gen. Grant who promptly stopped the proceedings. —ED.

reinforce General Beauregard, who was threatened by a heavy force. Upon our arrival there the sharp-shooters became hotly engaged, and at 6 o'clock p. m. General Ransom's Brigade was moved forward and made a most brilliant charge on their works, but by some misunderstanding he was not supported and was compelled to fall back, losing some good officers, himself painfully wounded. The following day hot skirmishing was kept up during the entire day, both armies preparing for bloody work. General Beauregard by this time knew what a superior force in numbers he had to contend against, and displayed great military skill in getting his troops in position.

On the morning of the 17th he moved forward his entire line, and after a most desperate struggle for four hours, he drove them in some disorder to Bermuda Hundreds, under cover of their gunboats in the James and Appomattox rivers. Thus the "bottling up of Butler," so graphically detailed by General Grant, was completed, and the military career of this "Beast and modern Falstaff" was at an end (at least in Virginia).

In this battle our loss was very heavy—3,000 in killed and wounded. Among the killed was our noble Major Rogers, who fell pierced by two balls, while gallantly leading this regiment. Our new men behaved admirably, but being inexperienced a great many were killed.

After this battle our entire regiment, save commissioned officers, were duly exchanged and returned for duty, swelling our ranks to 700 men. At this time we only had five commissioned officers on duty, and the arduous duty of commanding these men devolved upon them alone.

We remained here several days watching the movements of the enemy. From here we were transported by steamers to Richmond to reinforce General Stuart, who was then fighting a heavy column of cavalry that was making a raid on the city. After a fierce engagement in which General Stuart was killed, the army withdrew, leaving many of their dead and wounded behind them.

We were then ordered to make a forced march, and again

join the main army at Spottsylvania Court House. Upon our arrival there General Lewis received orders from General Lee in his own handwriting to "continue your march by most direct road to Jowls' Mills and Mud Tavern, and join General Ewell's Corps between Stannard Mills and Crutchfield's; lose no time, and bring up your men in good order." This order forced General Lewis to march his men 37 miles that day, which was one of the longest marches in one day on record.

After reporting to General Ewell, we were assigned to Early's Division again, and had the honor of bringing up the retreat to Hanover Junction, and not being pressed at this time by military exigencies, were allowed to spend a quiet Sabbath in camp.

The next morning we moved for Mechanicsville, where we had a brisk skirmish with the cavalry, which was, as usual, soon driven back. On 11 June we reached Petersburg and took position in the trenches near the city. This position we did not fancy, as the enemy could "pick at" us from the slightest exposure. But, much to our comfort and surprise, we only remained in this position four days, when orders were received to be ready to march in a short time.

LYNCHBURG.

On the 14th our entire corps took up a line of march for parts unknown to us. After marching some days we reached Charlottesville, and took the cars for Lynchburg to meet Hunter's army then threatening the city, arriving at the latter place at 2 o'clock p. m. We were moved four miles west of the city and formed a line of battle on the Salem turnpike. Our skirmishers were advanced, and soon attacked the enemy in a spirited manner, and they fell back to Liberty in much confusion, we pressing them so closely they left many wagons, prisoners and commissary stores behind.

On the morning of the 22d we crossed the mountain range at Buford's Still in pursuit, and at Hanging Rock they were intercepted by our cavalry and a brisk little fight took place, in which they lost 200 prisoners, 15 pieces of artillery, 150 horses, and many wagons laden with stores.

The infantry was then so much exhausted from quick marches and hot weather, that they were compelled to give up the pursuit and rest a day. This pursuit was still kept up for two days by our cavalry until reinforcements came to their assistance.

On the following day we moved northward. Upon reaching Lexington, our corps was filed to the left for the purpose of passing through the cemetery to pay our respects to the memory of our fallen commander, the brilliant, matchless and immortal Jackson, who had "crossed over the river and rested under the shade of the trees." Upon approaching the grave, arms were reversed and in perfect silence we passed the sacred spot with sadness depicted in every man's face.

After this we crossed the Shenandoah river and moved on to Mt. Jackson, where Lieutenant-Colonel Ellis, of this regiment, having been exchanged, joined us and took command of the regiment. 2 July we passed Middletown and Newtown, and camped in four miles of Winchester. The next day we came in contact with a considerable force of the enemy and after a brisk skirmish they fled, leaving several pieces of artillery and a good many wagons.

8 July we crossed over into Maryland, "My Maryland," near Shepherdstown, when there was great rejoicing among us, as we knew the heart of her people was with us, though they were bound in fetters. We camped for the night at Sharpsburg. The next day we passed through Boonsboro and Middletown and camped eight miles west of the city. On the 12th we were hurried to Frederick Junction, and forced a passage of the Monocacy, and again the "dogs of war" were turned loose. After a struggle of three hours the enemy fled with a loss of 1,000 in killed and wounded, and 700 prisoners. Our loss was 450 killed and wounded.

WASHINGTON CITY.

On the 14th we reached Rockville, in the vicinity of Washington City, and at once formed a line of battle. Our sharpshooters advanced and drove the enemy from his outer works, where a beautiful view of the city could be had. Our bri-

gade occupied a position immediately in front, and across the yard, of a most magnificent mansion, upon an elevated plain, from which the dome of the capitol could be seen. This building was the property of F P Blair, (Postmaster General), and was occupied by him until we began to advance upon the city. We remained in this position three days, keeping up a spirited picket fire, which caused great excitement in the city.

For some reason, unknown to us, we withdrew our line without any interference, and moved continuously until we crossed to the south side of the Potomac, and went into camp at Big Springs, which is in a few miles of Leestown.

After a rest of two days we moved on, passed Hamilton, and before reaching Snicker's Gap a dash was made upon our wagon train and seventy of our wagons captured, which were soon recaptured with five pieces of the enemy's artillery. We then crossed the Blue Ridge, and camped for the night in eight miles of Charlestown.

1 September, 1864, we were ordered to Winchester to take the place of Kershaw's Division, which was to be sent to Richmond. Our army was much weakened by the loss of this Division, and it soon met with a series of disasters. At Winchester we remained five days watching the movements of the enemy, and were occasionally engaged in picket fighting. On the 19th a heavy force of the enemy was hurled against us which was repulsed till sun down. About that time the cavalry guarding our flanks were attacked and without being pressed, fled in a shameful manner, causing us to leave our strong works and fall back in some confusion to Strasburg, where we again formed, and all preparations made to receive the enemy, who were rapidly approaching. At 4 o'clock p. m., on the 22d they made a desperate assault upon us at Fisher's Hill, and after a struggle of three hours we were driven back. Our cavalry being insufficient to protect our flanks, we again had to fall back under cover of darkness to Mt. Jackson. In these battles our loss was unusually heavy in killed and wounded. Among the killed on the 19th were Major-General Rodes and Brigadier-General Godwin, the latter commanding our (Hoke's) old brigade, with many other good officers. From

Mt. Jackson we moved to Fort Republic, and were reinforced by Rosser's cavalry The enemy then had halted on the east side of Cedar Creek, and began to entrench themselves. General Early wishing to redeem his character as a military genius, at once resolved to move back and attack them, and by surprising and giving them an unexpected blow, a victory might be won. While his cavalry and artillery were making a feint on the right, his infantry would fall upon their left.

CEDAR CREEK.

At midnight our division was ordered to the point of attack, a distance of four miles over a most rugged path on the mountain side. We would sometimes lose our foot-hold and fall down the mountain side, and would have literally to pull ourselves up by bushes, roots or anything projecting from the mountain side. With nothing to sustain us but a determined will and a devotion to the cause in which we were engaged, at 5 o'clock a. m. 19 October, we reached the point of attack, still hidden from the enemy by a heavy fog. We forded and partly swam the creek, and dashed into their camp without firing a gun, capturing 1,500 prisoners and 18 pieces of artillery, while a good many were in bed and asleep. We then fell upon another corps immediately in front of our cavalry, which was soon panic stricken, and fled in dismay, leaving all their artillery behind, which was turned upon them. Our infantry followed on closely for four miles, when General Early gave over the pursuit.

A good number of our men, thinking the enemy had fled to Winchester, took advantage of this heavy fog and fell out of ranks and returned to plunder the camp, so rich in spoils. By this outrageous conduct our line was weakened, and Sheridan's cavalry coming to their assistance from Winchester, the enemy rallied and moved back upon us. Our line was then thrown in disorder, and soon retreated in much confusion, and the fruits of this brilliant victory lost. Many of us were soon ridden down by the cavalry and captured, killed or wounded, while our cavalry was of little assistance. The writer of this sketch was painfully wounded in this retreat,

and was carried six miles on a horse led by his faithful servant, Billy Williams, before his wound was staunched.

Right here I will digress for one moment: "Billy", as he was known throughout the division, was unlike his race; he seemed to love the excitement of war, and with his young master, saw the sun rise at Bethel and go down at Appomattox. And for the betrayal of a squadron of yankees into our lines, his name was placed upon the rolls of honor in Raleigh.

The enemy recaptured all their prisoners and guns they had lost in the morning and captured from us equally as many as they lost. Major-General Ramseur was killed. Lieutenant-Colonels S. McD. Tate and A. Ellis, commanding the Sixth and Fifty-fourth North Carolina Regiments, with many other good officers, were severely wounded in this trying disaster. Our brigade suffered intensely in this campaign, losing seven different commanders in the course of six weeks' time.

PETERSBURG.

The battle of Cedar Creek was the last event of importance in the Valley campaign, and practically closed it. The defeat of General Early and the desolation of the Valley by Sheridan made it impossible for an army to remain in that region. These failures caused much feeling of indignation against General Early, and he was soon relieved of his command. The remnant of his army was then placed under command of General J. B. Gordon, and sent back to Petersburg. Our division was assigned to General Pegram, and sent nine miles west of the city on the Boydtown Plank road, where we went into some cabins that had been built by other troops for winter quarters. Here we remained three days only before the enemy began to manœuver in our front, when we were called out, and in a short time our division and Gordon's (which had just come up) were attacked at Hatcher's Run 6 February, 1865, and a struggle, unprecedented in its fury, and protracted beyond all expectations, was commenced, and we were soon compelled to fall back a short distance. Mahone's and Wilcox's Divisions

came to our relief, and by indefatigable exertion we regained our former position, and the enemy fled in confusion. Our loss was very heavy in killed and wounded. Among the killed was our much lamented General, the "gay and gallant" Pegram, who had been married but a few days.

From here we were moved two miles below Petersburg, and placed in Walker's Division, and took positions in the trenches formerly occupied by General Ransom and at some points in a stone's throw of the enemy. Here we had a long rest, but were much annoyed by the daily shellings from their heavy guns.

HARE'S HILL.

At 4:45 a. m., 25 March, 1865, a detail from our brigade and another emerged from our works in column of attack and dashed across the narrow space that separated the two armies, tore away the abatis and rushed into Fort Stedman, completely surprising the garrison and carried the works. Instantly the captured guns were turned upon the adjacent forts and in a short time a brigade of the enemy was put to flight, and three batteries on our flanks were abandoned, and were for a short time in our possession. In this brilliant charge many pieces of artillery were taken and spiked, and five hundred prisoners, including one Brigadier-General, were captured. General Gordon opened this battle with great spirit and skill, but was not sustained. The troops on his right made but a feeble demonstration, and were soon repulsed. The enemy in a short time recovered from the surprise and poured in a hurricane of shells into the works they had just lost, at the same time throwing forward a heavy line of infantry, which caused us to fall back, losing many prisoners and a great many killed and wounded. This repulse was followed up and after a stubborn resistance our picket line was taken, and then a lull in the tempest for one day, which was but a prelude to its final and resistless burst. "The mighty huntsman now had the game secure in his toils, and only awaited the moment of his exhaustion to dispatch him."

THE RETREAT TO APPOMATTOX.

On 2 April, 1865, a most terrific bombardment from one end of the line to the other commenced. At the same time the enemy's infantry surged forward like a mighty wave, and rolled up to our works. As one line recoiled from our deadly fire another would take its place, as though determined to break through by sheer weight of numbers. Our little band, so much exhausted from hard fighting and superhuman exertions, was compelled to fall back in the direction of Appomattox river. Following the river by the most accessible roads, we reached Amelia Court House, thirty-eight miles from where we started. Here General Lee expected to find a quantity of supplies for his troops, but, by an inexcusable blunder of the Richmond authorities the cars passed by without stopping to unload the supplies. We then had been two days without any food, and not a ration to be had. Our disappointment was complete, for the condition we were left in was desperate, and for some time we were wrapped in disconsolate silence. But for this blunder, General Lee could have preserved his army intact and passed Burkeville in safety before the enemy could have reached there. On the night of the 5th we left Amelia Court House, marching by way of Deatonville in the direction of Farmville. Upon reaching Sailor's creek, and after some desperate fighting and losing some of our best men, we moved on to Gettersville, a distance of four miles, much jaded, footsore, and half starved, and soon became engaged in another desperate fight, in which our lamented Captain A. H. Martin, commanding this regiment, fell instantly killed, while gallantly holding his men to the front. When the enemy reached his dead body, they had it decently interred, and wrote upon an envelop, placing it upon the grave, "Here lies the body of a brave man, Captain Martin, of the Fifty-fourth North Carolina." In this battle our regiment lost more than three-fourths of its men in killed, wounded and prisoners, after which the remnant moved on to Farmville, and found that the enemy had just taken a battery in our front and had in possession our only line of retreat. General Lee at this crit-

ical moment seemed very much exercised, and evinced a desire to lead a charge on them if his men would follow. At once many exclaimed, "No, no, but if you will retire we will do the work." As he rode off, General W G. Lewis, our brigade commander, so distinguished for his intrepid valor, rallied a few men and led the charge until he, with many others, fell severely wounded, and was unavoidably left in the hands of the enemy. The writer of this sketch was then acting as his Inspector General, and was the only member of his staff that was left to tell the tale of this bloody tragedy.

This charge was evidently the last one of importance. As the enemy moved on for a stronger position in our front, under cover of darkness, we moved on sluggishly, and at every step some brave man was compelled to step out of ranks from overpowering fatigue. At 12 o'clock M. we reached the vicinity of Appomattox Court House, and had a few hours of repose, which was so much needed.

THE SURRENDER.

On the morning of the 9th an advance was begun, but finding overpowering numbers in our front, and upon all sides, this little army then reduced to something over 8,000 infantry and 3,000 cavalry and artillery actually in line, was halted pending negotiations for its surrender, which was made on that bright Sabbath day. On the succeeding days the rolls were made out and the army paroled in accordance with the terms agreed upon between Generals Lee and Grant. The fragments from the various commands were gathered and marched to a spot designated for that purpose, stacked their arms and deposited a few furled colors. Having received their paroles, our battle and famine-worn soldiers took up the line of march for those homes they had so bravely fought to defend for four long years of blood, hardship and toil.

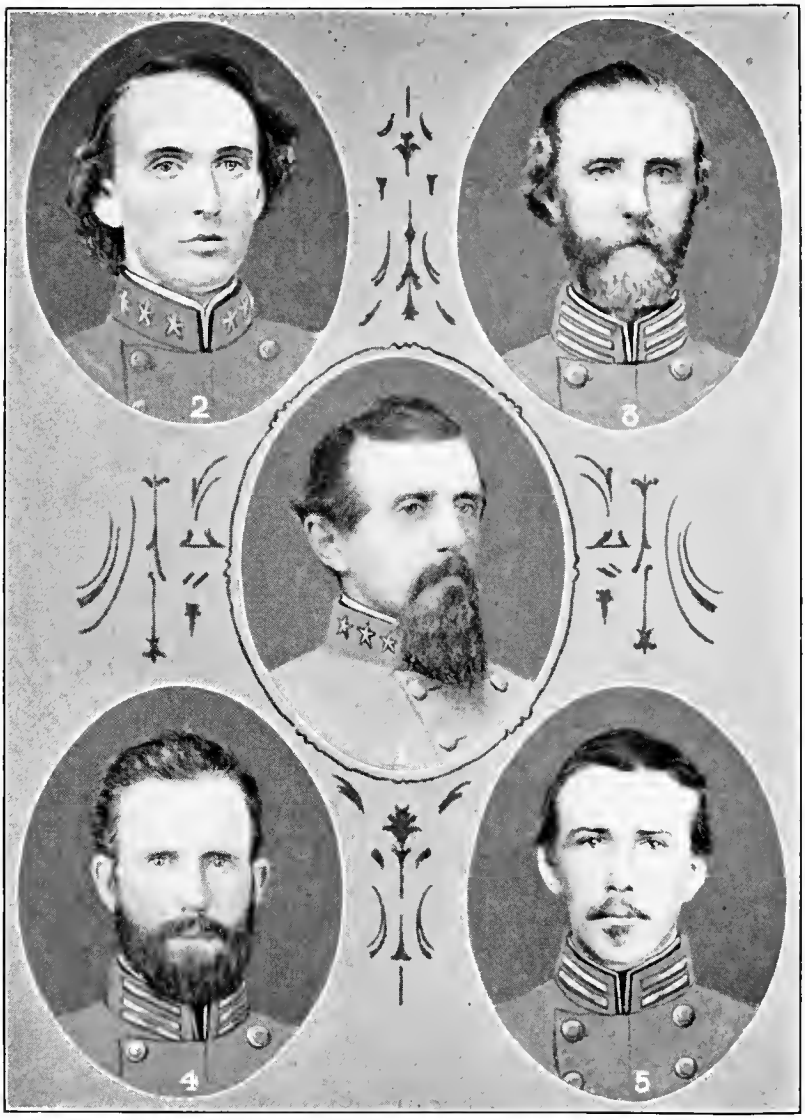
Thus closes the volume of the bloody record of the Fifty-fourth Regiment of North Carolina troops, and to those of us who still survive, it is indeed pleasant to recall that fearful struggle for independence and to look back upon a series of

battles and victories unequalled in history; and every one of us will speak with pride of the time when he was a soldier in the Army of Northern Virginia.

NOTE.—I have been much indebted to General W G. Lewis (who has since died) for information; also to Mrs. Paris, who so kindly furnished me with diaries containing data, casualties, etc., that were written by our beloved old Chaplain, the late Rev. John Paris, who was so noted for his piety, and untiring devotion to the cause in which we were engaged. He was indeed one of God's nobility.

J. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.



FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

1. A. H. Belo, Colonel.
2. John Kerr Connally, Colonel.
3. Rev. William Royall Chaplain.
4. D. D. Dickson, Captain, Co. C.
5. C. M. Cooke, 1st Lieut. and acting Adjutant.

FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

By CHARLES M. COOKE, Adjutant.

The Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, in the early part of 1862. The companies composing the regiment were:

Company A—*From Wilson County*—William J. Bullock, Captain.

Company B—*From Wilkes County*—Abner S. Calloway, Captain.

Company C—*From Cleveland County*—Silas D. Randall, Captain.

Company E—*From Pitt County*—James T. Whitehead, Captain.

Company F—*From Cleveland, Burke and Catawba Counties*—Peter M. Mull, of Catawba county, Captain.

Company G—*From Johnston County*—J. P Williams, Captain.

Company H—*From Alexander and Onslow Counties*—Vandevere Teague, Captain; Alexander J. Pollock, First Lieutenant.

Company I—*From Franklin County*—Wilson H. Williams, Captain.

Company K—*From Granville County*—Maurice T. Smith, Captain.

John Kerr Connelly, of Yadkin county, who was for a while at the National Naval Academy at Annapolis, and who had been Captain of a company in the Eleventh Regiment of North Carolina Volunteers, was elected Colonel of the regiment.

Captain Abner S. Calloway, of Company B, was elected Lieutenant-Colonel.

Captain James T. Whitehead, of Company E, was elected Major.

WILLIAM H. YOUNG of Granville county, was appointed Adjutant.

W N. HOLT, of Company G, was appointed Sergeant Major.

GEORGE W BLOUNT, of Wilson county, Quartermaster.

W P WEBB, of Granville county, Commissary.

DR. JAMES SMITH, of Granville county, Surgeon.

DR. ISAAC G. CANNADY, of Granville county, Assistant Surgeon.

REV WILLIAM ROYALL, of Wake Forest College, Chaplain.

A. H. DUNN, of Company I, Quartermaster-Sergeant.

W B. ROYALL, of Company I, Commissary Sergeant.

J W C. YOUNG, Ordnance Sergeant.

PETERSON THORPE, of Company K, Hospital Steward.

CHARLES E. JACKEY, of Pitt county, Chief Musician.

Lieutenant-Colonel Calloway resigned and Major Whitehead died within a few months after the organization of the regiment, and Captain Maurice T. Smith, of Company K, was made Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain A. H. Belo, of Salem, who commanded a company in the Eleventh Regiment of North Carolina Volunteers, was made Major. Lieutenant-Colonel Smith was killed at Gettysburg and Major Belo became Lieutenant-Colonel, and upon the resignation of Colonel Connally, on account of severe wounds received in the same battle, Lieutenant-Colonel Belo became Colonel. On account of the fact that the senior Captain of the regiment was in prison from Gettysburg until the close of the war, the regiment had no other field officers.

Adjutant Young resigned in November, 1862 and Henry T. Jordan, of Person county, was appointed Adjutant. He was captured at Gettysburg and, after that Lieutenant Chas. R. Jones, of Iredell county, acted as Adjutant for several months and then C. M. Cooke, from Company I, was assigned to that position and held it until the close of the war. Surgeon Jas. Smith resigned in December, 1862, and Dr. B. T. Greene, of Franklin county, was appointed Surgeon. A. H. Dunn died in August, 1862, and Henry S. Furman, of Franklin county, was appointed Assistant Quartermaster Sergeant. W N. Holt, Sergeant-Major, was made Lieutenant

in Company H, and Jesse A. Adams, of Johnston county, was made Sergeant-Major.

The regiment, after it had been sufficiently drilled to take the field, was sent to the Department of the Pamlico, then under the command of General James G. Martin, and remained there during the summer and early part of the fall of 1862. It was on duty a greater part of the time around Kinston and in Trenton. The first time the regiment was under fire was on 7 August, 1862. A Federal gunboat had come up the Neuse to a point a few miles below Kinston, and the regiment was sent down to prevent the landing of the troops. We were formed in a line on the south side of, and not far from the river; the gunboat came up to a point nearly opposite the position occupied by the regiment, but after the firing of a few shells went back without attempting to land any troops.

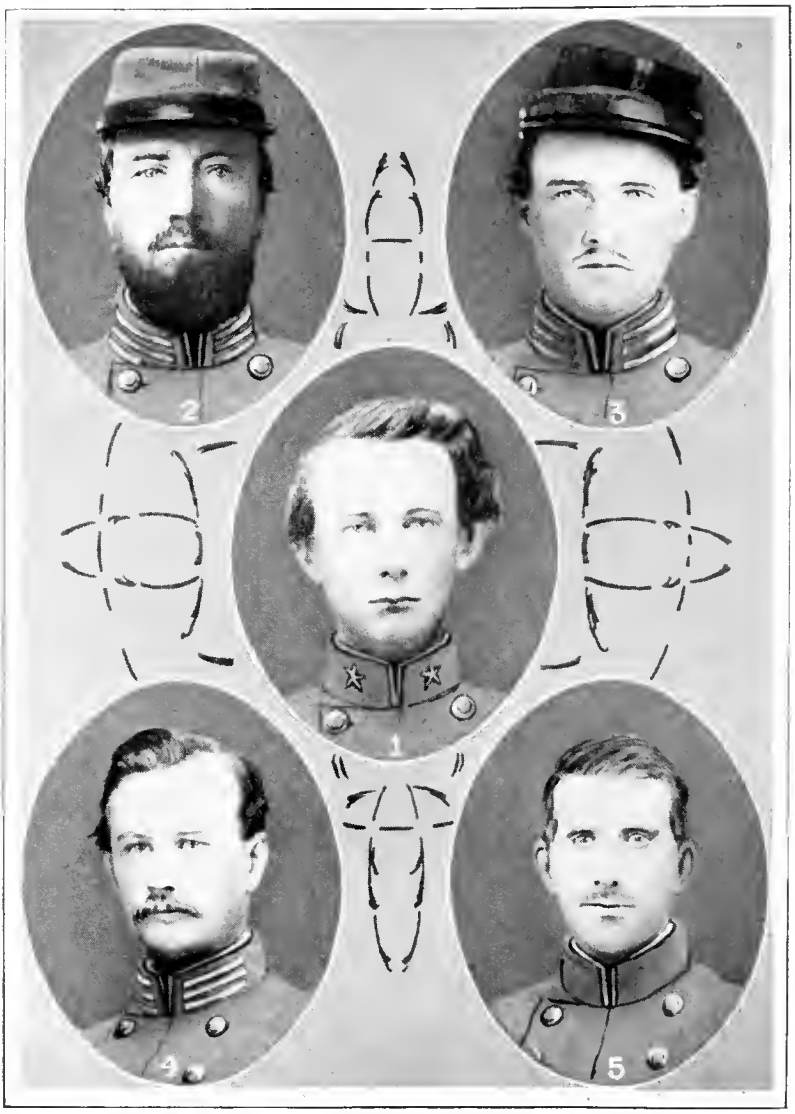
The regiment during the time spent in that section was thoroughly drilled and disciplined.

WASHINGTON, N. C.

On 3 September, while the regiment was in camp near LaGrange, there was a special order read on dress parade that 200 men were needed for daring service and volunteers were called for. That number was at once obtained and they were organized into two companies of 100 each. Captain P M. Mull, of Company F, was put in command of one company, and Captain Maurice T. Smith, of Company K, in command of the other, and the Lieutenants were selected from the different companies. Captain Williams, of Company I, was so anxious to be among the number that he procured the consent of the Colonel to his going as First Lieutenant of one of the companies. It was ordered that these companies be prepared with three days' rations to march the next morning at sunrise. Captain Mull was senior officer and in command of the detachment. Just as the sun rose the next morning we moved out of camp, marching a little north of east, and we were then informed that the movement meant a surprise attack upon Washington, N C., and that we would be joined before we reached the place by other troops. We met on the

5th, between Greenville and Washington, a detachment from the Eighth, and also from the Seventeenth Regiment, and an artillery company, but without cannon, armed as infantry, under the command of Colonel S. D. Pool, who, from this time, being the ranking officer, took command of the force on the march, although General J G. Martin had the general direction of the movement. Later, Captain R. S. Tucker, with his company of cavalry, joined us. We camped on the night of the 5th within a few miles of Washington, and before dawn the next morning, we commenced our march upon the town. We struck the Federal pickets just outside of the town before it was fairly light; we followed at double-quick, and with a "Rebel Yell," entered the town. The Federal troops were taken by surprise, and after firing a round or two, fell back through the town upon the river, under cover of their gunboats. We were in possession of the town, the troops from our regiment being stationed on a square near the center of the town. We held the position for several hours, but the cannon from the gunboats were turned upon us, and the Federal infantry, having re-formed, commenced to fire upon us with long range rifles, while we were armed with the old smooth-bore muskets. We were forced to fall back to the place where we had camped the night before; the enemy did not pursue us, and the next day we commenced our march back to camp. Captains Mull and Williams, both of whom behaved with great bravery, were wounded; of the men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment engaged, seven were killed and eight wounded. There was no other meeting with Federal forces while the regiment was in this section.

On 1 October, while the regiment was doing picket duty at Wise's Fork, between Kinston and New Bern, it was ordered to Virginia, and for a while did provost duty in the city of Petersburg. With the Second, Eleventh, and Forty-second Mississippi, it was formed into a brigade, and General Joseph R. Davis was assigned to its command. The regiment remained in this brigade until January, 1865, when it was transferred to Cooke's Brigade. The Twenty-sixth Mississippi Regiment and the First Confederate Battalion were brought into the brigade in the early part of 1864. It was a



FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

1. James S. Whitehead, Major.
2. W. H. Williams, Captain, Co. I.
3. P. M. Mull, Captain, Co. F.
4. H. G. Whitehead, Captain, Co. E.
5. Robert W. Thomas, Captain, Co. K.

fine brigade. The Second and Eleventh Mississippi, with the Fourth Alabama and the Sixth North Carolina, had constituted the immortal Bee Brigade at the first battle of Manassas, and General Whiting afterwards commanded that brigade. In forming the brigade for General Davis, the Sixth North Carolina was sent to Hoke's Brigade, the Fourth Alabama was transferred to a brigade of Alabama troops, and the Forty-second Mississippi, which was brought to the Army of Northern Virginia for that purpose, and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina, took their places in the old brigade. Although all the other regiments, except the Fifty-fifth, were from Mississippi, their relations with the officers and men of that regiment were quite as pleasant as they were with each other. The regiments of Davis' Brigade were a part of the force which General Longstreet carried to Suffolk, Va., in the spring of 1863.

DUELS BETWEEN OFFICERS.

It was while near Suffolk that an incident occurred which illustrates the high spirit of the officers of the regiment and how jealous they were of its honor. One evening about dark, a heavy piece of Confederate artillery was captured by an unexpected and surprise attack by a brigade of Federal troops. Captain Terrell and Captain Cousins, the one Assistant Adjutant-General of General Laws' Brigade, and the other on the staff of that General, reported that the Fifty-fifth North Carolina had been assigned to protect the battery, whereas, in fact, it was a mistake. As soon as Colonel Connally heard of the report, he went to see those gentlemen and stated to them that they were mistaken; that the Fifty-fifth Regiment had held the position to which it had been assigned, and was in no way responsible for the disaster; and demanded that they should correct their report at once. This they declined to do. Thereupon Colonel Connally returned to his regiment, called a meeting of the field officers and Captains, stated the circumstances to them, and insisted that the honor of the regiment required that its officers should demand satisfaction from those who had slandered it. He proposed that the field officers should first chal-

lenge the Alabamians, and if the matter was not satisfactorily arranged, consistent with the honor of the regiment, and if they should be killed, each officer should pledge himself to take up the quarrel and fight until the last man was killed, unless proper amends should sooner be obtained. To this the officers generally assented, but Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, who was an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and a young soldier of unquestionable bravery, arose and stated that he was conscientiously opposed to duelling, and that he would not resort to that method of settling any question. Colonel Smith's Christian character and his personal courage were so well known, that his scruples on the subject were respected, and Major Belo proposed to take his place; and so it was arranged that Colonel Connally should challenge Captain Terrell, and Major Belo should challenge Captain Cousins. Captain Satterfield, of Person county, of Company H, was Colonel Connally's second, and Lieutenant W H. Townes, of Granville, of Company D, was Major Belo's. The challenges were accepted and Captain Terrell selected as weapons double barreled shotguns, loaded with buckshot, and Captain Cousins selected the Mississippi rifle at forty paces. According to appointment, the parties next day met in a large field in the neighborhood, in one part of which were Colonel Connally and Captain Terrell and their friends. In another part were Major Belo and Captain Cousins and their friends. As soon as Major Belo and Captain Cousins came to their place of meeting, they took the positions assigned to them by the seconds, and at the command, fired their first shot. Major Belo's shot passed through Captain Cousins' hat, and Captain Cousins' first shot entirely missed Major Belo. Captain Cousins' second shot passed through the coat of Major Belo just above the shoulder and Major Belo's second fire missed Captain Cousins. In the meantime, in the other part of the field, the friends of Colonel Connally and Captain Terrell were engaged in an effort to make an honorable settlement of the affair, and Captain Terrell, who was a gallant officer and true gentleman, became satisfied that he had been mistaken in the report which he had made and which had been the cause of offence, and he withdrew the same, which

action prevented any further hostilities between him and Colonel Connally, and came just in time to prevent the exchange of a third shot between Major Belo and Captain Cousins.

SUFFOLK, VA.

On the night of 30 April Davis' Brigade was in the front of the town of Suffolk, which was occupied by the Federals, and around which the Union forces were stationed behind formidable intrenchments. About 9 o'clock that night Major Belo was sent with four companies of the regiment to relieve the pickets in the rifle pits to our front, with instructions to hold the position in case there should be an attack. The next day the Federal forces made several demonstrations in front of the rifle pits, and in the afternoon opened upon them with several pieces of artillery. Captain Mull, by command of Colonel Connally, took Company F to the support of the men in the rifle pits, and very gallantly did Captain Mull and his company do this, for they went through a severe artillery fire for nearly three quarters of a mile, and although they lost some of their best men, they never faltered. About the same time two Federal infantry regiments came outside their breastworks, and formed into line. Colonel Connally then ordered Major Belo to reinforce the men in the rifle pits with four other companies of the regiment. This was promptly accomplished under a very fierce fire and not without loss. The Fifty-fifth Regiment was the only regiment on the line that was armed with the old smooth-bore muskets. The others were armed with rifles. This must have been discoverd by the enemy during the day, and was the cause of their selection of the part of the line occupied by that regiment for their attack. The two Federal regiments moved forward in splendid order for the attack. The Federal artillery ceased firing upon that part of the field. The soldiers of both armies on the right and left were watching with deep interest the movement. The attacking column had moved so near to our position, that the other troops were beginning to whisperingly inquire of each other what was the matter. But Major Belo knew that the effectiveness of the arms, which his men held, depended upon short range, and cool and clear-headed, as he

always was, he had ordered that not a shot be fired until he gave the command. The advancing column was now so near, that the features of the men's faces could be distinguished. Every one of the men in the rifle pits had his musket in position and his finger on the trigger, and at the word "fire" the sound of Major Belo's command, seemed to expand into one grand roll of musketry; for there had been the fire of five hundred muskets as if by one man. Not one had snapped fire and there was not a single belated shot. The shower of leaden hail was too much for human courage. The assaulting regiments fell back in confusion, with some loss. But they were quickly rallied by their officers, and returned to the attack. This time the fire by Major Belo's command was reserved until they had advanced several yards further than before, when again a deadly fire swept them back with greater loss.

Again and yet again they attempted to storm the picket force, but were repulsed each time, until finally abandoning their purpose, they retired from the field. The old smooth bore muskets in the hands of 500 brave North Carolina patriots had done their work. About this time Lieutenant-Colonel Smith came down to Major Belo with Colonel Connally's compliments to inquire if he needed other reinforcements. Major Belo returning his compliments to Colonel Connally, replied that he thought the battle was over. The Fifty-fifth Regiment had been but a short while in Davis' Brigade, and it was their first engagement since then, and the cordial words of commendation of the gallant behavior of the regiment expressed by the Mississippians was very gratifying to us. Thenceforward they were as jealous of and as quick to defend the honor of our regiment as we were ourselves. Some years after the war, Major Belo met an officer of one of the regiments engaged in this attack, and he informed Major Belo that the term of enlistment of the men of those two regiments was to expire the next day and they were to be mustered out of service, and that it was at their own request they were ordered to make the attack, but that it proved a very sad experience to them.

Shortly after this, Longstreet returned with his command to the Army of Northern Virginia, our brigade accommpanying him. When the Fifty-fifth Regiment left the cars at Hamilton's crossing, near Fredericksburg, to take its place in its brigade in Heth's Division, A. P Hill's Corps, of the Army of Northern Virginia, it was both in respect to its discipline and its appearance one of the finest regiments in the army. Colonel Connally was a fine tactician, and was without a superior as a disciplinarian. He was admirable on the field in his handling of his regiment. The time which had been spent in Eastern North Carolina had allowed the opportunity for the drilling of the regiment, and it had been faithfully attended to. The regimental band, composed of seventeen pieces, led by Professor Charles E. Jackey, educated at Heidelberg, was a very fine one. The men of the regiment were well clad, and the ranks of each company were full. It was well officered, and all had full confidence in its field officers, and no volunteer regiment, in the opinion of the writer, ever had three better field officers. They were all young men—erect and soldierly in their bearing, proud of their regiment and enthusiastic in their patriotism. Colonel Connally was about 26 years of age. Daring in spirit—with confidence in himself and his regiment and the pride of his troops. Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, the eldest, not yet 30 years of age, was from Granville county He was an accomplished gentleman and had been a member of the "Granville Grays," Company D, Twelfth North Carolina Regiment. He was of commanding presence, and a prudent and efficient officer. Major A. H. Belo was a fine specimen of young Southern manhood, had seen service before as Captain of Company D, Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, and was about the same age as Colonel Connally. Intrepid, but always cool and ever alert.

Changes had taken place in the company officers since the organization, and the following were the officers of the companies at that time:

COMPANY A—Captain, Albert E. Upchurch; Lieutenants, B. F Briggs, T. J. Hadley, T. R. Bass.

COMPANY B—Captain, George Gilreath; Lieutenants, John T. Peden, Hiram L. Grier.

COMPANY C—Captain, Edward D. Dixon; Lieutenants, George J Bethel, Philip R. Elam, Thomas D. Falls.

COMPANY D—Captain, Silas D. Randall; Lieutenants, Wm. H. Townes, Jas. H. Randall, Joseph B. Cabiness.

COMPANY E—Captain, Howell G. Whitehead; Lieutenants, James A. Hanrahan, Godfrey E. Taft, William S. Wilson.

COMPANY F—Captain, Peter M. Mull; Lieutenants, Joel J. Hoyle, A. H. A. Williams, Peter P Mull.

COMPANY G—Captain, Walter A. Whitted; Lieutenants, Marcus C. Stevens, Charles R. Jones, Mordecai Lee.

COMPANY H—Captain, E. F. Satterfield; Lieutenants, N. W Lillington, Benjamin H. Blount, W N. Holt.

COMPANY I—Captain, W H. Williams; Lieutenants, B. H. Winston, Charles M. Cooke.

COMPANY K—Captain, R. W Thomas; Lieutenants, Wilkins Stovall, W H. H. Cobb, R. McD. Royster.

The regiment, as it marched from the railroad depot to take its place in the line, with its bright arms gleaming in the sun of that beautiful day, with quick martial step, its company officers splendidly dressed, as if for a grand parade, its field officers mounted on fiery chargers, and its magnificent band playing first "Dixie," and then "Maryland, My Maryland"—presented one circumstance of war, that is, its pomp, and if not its most impressive, certainly its least horrible. Little did it occur to any of us that the aspect of this organization would be so completely and so unhappily changed within a few weeks.

GETTYSBURG.

The regiment crossed the Potomac with the Army of Northern Virginia in fine spirits, and when it reached Cashtown on the night of 29 June, it was in splendid condition. The regiment marched out of Cashtown early on the morning of 1 July, going down the Chambersburg Turnpike toward Gettysburg. We came in sight of the town about 9 o'clock a. m. The Union forces were on the ridge just outside of the

town and formed across the Turnpike to dispute our advance. Marye's battery was placed by General Heth on the south side of the turnpike and opened fire on the enemy. Davis' Brigade was immediately thrown into line of battle on the north of the road and ordered to advance. Archer's Brigade was formed on the south of the road and was ordered forward about the same time. There was a railroad which had been graded but not ironed, which ran nearly parallel with the turnpike and about one hundred yards from it. The Fifty-fifth Regiment was on the left of the brigade, and owing to the character of the ground was the first one to come into view of the enemy, and received the first fire in the battle. It was a volley fired by the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania Regiment, commanded by Colonel Hoffman, of Cutler's Brigade. Two men in the color guard of the regiment were wounded by this volley. The regiment immediately returned the fire and inflicted considerable loss upon the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania Regiment. The Eleventh Mississippi Regiment was on detail duty that morning, so only three regiments of our brigade, the Second and Forty-second Mississippi Regiments, and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina, were present. The regiments in our front were the Seventy-sixth New York, the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania and the One Hundred and Forty-seventh New York of Cutler's Brigade. After the enemy's position became known by their first fire, our brigade charged them in magnificent style. The left of our regiment extended considerably beyond the right of the enemy's line—and at the proper time our left was wheeled to the right. The enemy fled from the field with great loss. From the beginning of this engagement it was hot work. While the regiment was advancing, Colonel Connally seized the battle flag and waving it aloft rushed out several paces in front of the regiment. This drew upon him and the color guard the fire of the enemy and he fell badly wounded in the arm and hip. His arm was afterwards amputated. Major Belo, who was near him at the time, rushed up and asked him if he was badly wounded. Colonel Connally replied: "Yes, but do not pay any attention to me; take the colors and keep ahead of the Mississippians." After the defeat of the forces in front

of us, the brigade swung around by the right wheel and formed on the railroad cut. About one-half of the Fifty-fifth Regiment being on the left extended beyond the cut on the embankment. In front of us there were then the Ninety-fifth and Eighty-fourth New York (known as the Fourteenth Brooklyn) Regiments, who had been supporting Hall's battery, and were the other two regiments of Cutler's Brigade, and the Sixth Wisconsin, of the Iron Brigade, which had been held in reserve, when the other regiments of that brigade were put in to meet Archer's advance. Just then the order was received to retire through the road-cut, and that the Fifty-fifth North Carolina cover the retreat of the brigade. The Federal Regiments in front of us threw themselves into line of battle by a well executed movement nothwithstanding the heavy fire we were pouring into them, and as soon as their line of battle was formed, seeing a disposition on our part to retire, charged. They were held in check, as well as could be done, by the Fifty-fifth Regiment covering the retreat of the brigade; a part of the regiment was in the road-cut and at a great disadvantage. One of the Federal officers on the embankment, seeing Major Belo in the cut, threw his sword at him, saying: "Kill that officer, and that will end it." The sword missed Major Belo, but struck a man behind him. Major Belo directed one of the men to shoot the officer and this was done. This somewhat checked their charge, and we fell back to another position. The loss of the regiment was very great in killed and wounded, and a large number were captured in the road-cut. From that time until 3 o'clock in the afternoon we were not engaged. About that time Early came in with fresh troops from the left. We formed in line with them on their right and were hotly engaged in the battles of that afternoon, driving the enemy before us and capturing a number of prisoners. At sundown we were in the edge of Gettysburg, and the regiment was placed behind the railroad embankment just in front of the Seminary. In the afternoon Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, while the regiment was waiting in reserve, walked towards the right to reconnoitre and was mortally wounded and died that night. Major Belo was also severely wounded in the leg just as the battle closed

The three men who went farthest in the Pettigrew-Pickett charge at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

1. E. Fletcher Satterfield, Captain, Co. H. Killed at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.
2. T. D. Falls. Promoted to 2d Lieut., Co. C, Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.
3. J. A. Whitley. Promoted to Sergeant, Co. E, Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

that evening. Davis' Brigade, during the night, was moved from its position on the railroad cut near the Seminary to a piece of woods across Willoughby Run, west of the mineral springs, and there rested during the 2d. On the night of the 2d it was moved to its position on the Confederate line known as Seminary Ridge, on the right center, and stationed in McMillan's woods. Our division (Heth's) on the left of Longstreet, and Davis' Brigade the left centre of the division. General Heth had been wounded on the 1st and General Pettigrew was in command of the division. General Pickett's Division of Longstreet's Corps was on the right of Heth's Division, and occupied a position just in the edge of Spangler's woods.

FARTHEST AT GETTYSBURG.

It was from these positions that we moved out to that last fatal charge, on the afternoon of 3 July. Heth's Division was not supporting Longstreet, as has been repeatedly published, but was on line with his troops. Our regiment had suffered so greatly on the 1st that in this charge it was commanded by Captain Gilreath, and some of the companies were commanded by non-commissioned officers. But the men came up bravely to the measure of their duty, and the regiment went as far as any other on that fatal charge, and we have good proof of the claim that a portion of the regiment led by Captain Satterfield, who was killed at this time, reached a point near the Benner barn, which was *more advanced than that attained by any other of the assaulting columns.* Lieutenant T. D. Falls, of Company C, residing at Fallstown, Cleveland county, and Sergeant Augustus Whitley, of Company E, residing at Everitt's, in Martin county, who were with Captain Satterfield, have recently visited the battlefield, and have made affidavit as to the point reached by them. This evidence has been corroborated from other sources and the place has been marked by the United States commission, and the map herewith copied from the United States official survey of this historic field will show the position attained by these men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment, in relation to other known objects on the battlefield such as the

Benner barn and the Bronze Book which marks the high-water mark of the struggle for Southern independence. The measurements for the map were made by the late Colonel Batchelder, of the United States Commission, and by Colonel E. W Cope, United States engineer, for this field. This map shows that those killed *farthest to the front* belonged to the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment.

The forces engaged in this last charge which settled, not only the result of the battle of Gettysburg, but the fate of the Confederacy, were as follows:

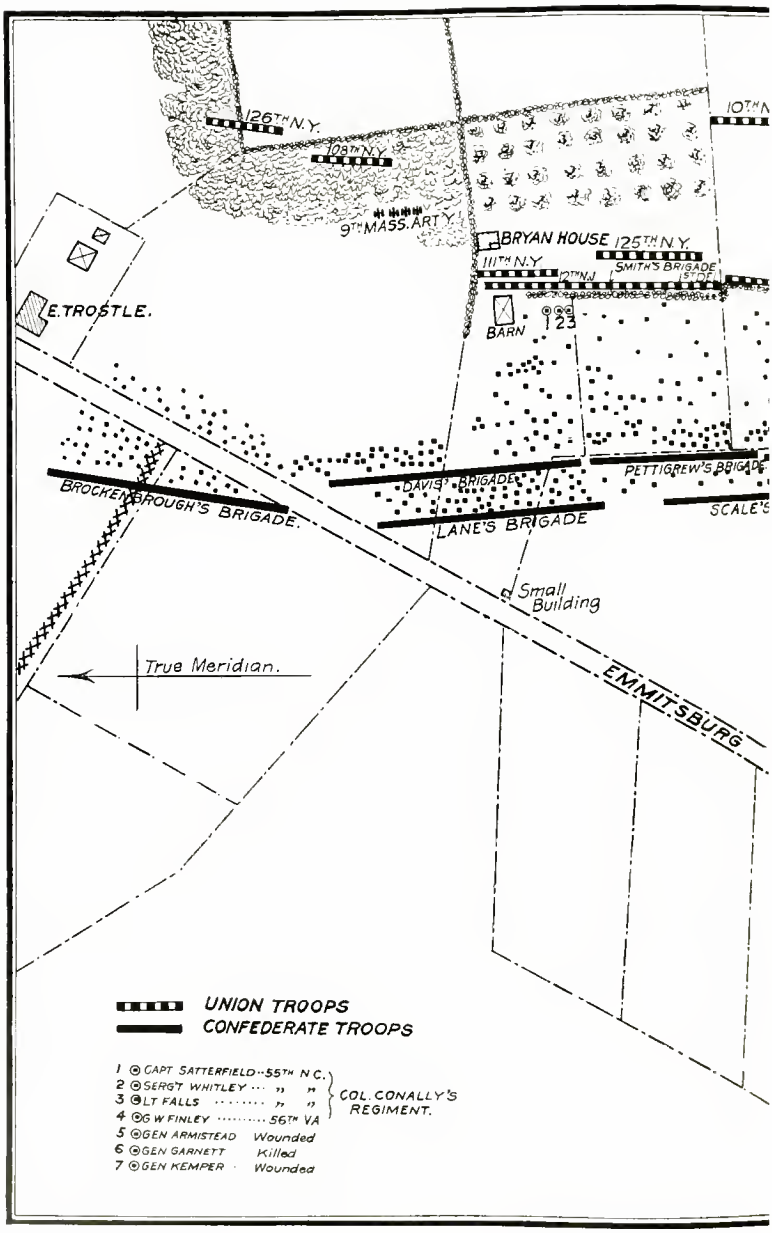
Longstreet's Corps, composed of:

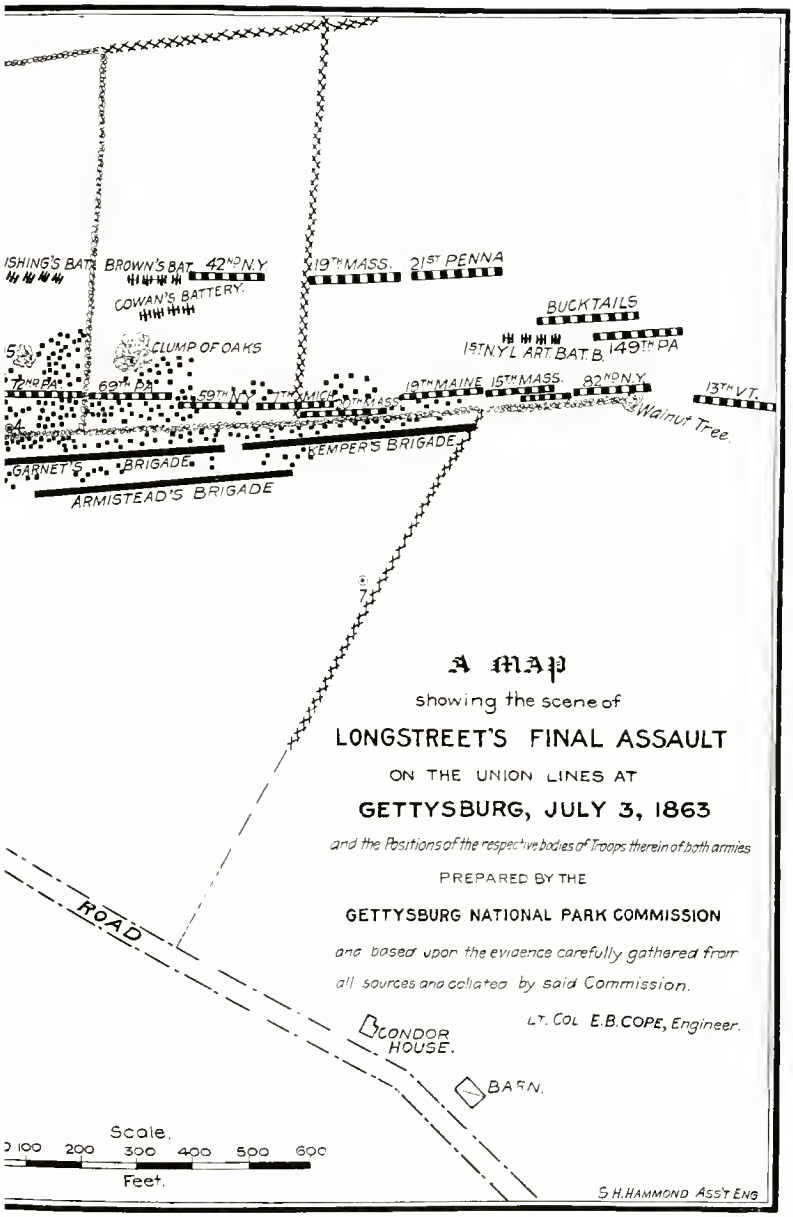
1. *Pickett's Division—Kemper's Brigade,* First, Third, Seventh, Eleventh and Twenty-fourth Virginia Regiments; *Garnett's Brigade,* Eighth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-eighth and Fifty-sixth Virginia Regiments, supported by *Armistead's Brigade,* Ninth, Fourteenth, Thirty-eighth, Fifty-third and Fifty-seventh Virginia Regiments in the second line.

2. *Heth's Division,* commanded by Brigadier-General Pettigrew; *Archer's Brigade,* commanded by Colonel Fry, Thirteenth Alabama Regiment, Fifth Alabama Battalion, and the First, Seventh and Fourteenth Tennessee Regiments; *Pettigrew's Brigade,* commanded by Colonel Marshall, Eleventh, Twenty-sixth, Forty-seventh and Fifty-second North Carolina Regiments; *Davis' Brigade,* Second, Eleventh and Forty-second Mississippi Regiments and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment; *Brockenborough's Brigade,* Fortieth, Forty-seventh and Fifty-fifth Virginia Regiments, and Twenty-second Virginia Battalion.

3. One-half of General *Pender's Division,* to-wit.: *Scales' Brigade* commanded by Colonel Lowrance, Thirteenth, Sixteenth, Twenty-second, Thirty-fourth and Thirty-eighth North Carolina Regiments, and *Lane's Brigade,* Seventh, Eighteenth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-third and Thirty-seventh North Carolina Regiments.

So there were eighteen regiments and one battalion from Virginia, fifteen regiments from North Carolina, three regiments from Mississippi, three regiments from Tennessee,


126TH N.Y.
108TH N.Y.
9TH MASS. ART'Y.
BRYAN HOUSE
125TH N.Y.
111TH N.Y.
SMITH'S BRIGADE
E. TROSTLE.
BARN
1 2 3
DAVIS' BRIGADE
PETTIGREW'S BRIGADE
BROCKENBROUGH'S BRIGADE.
LANE'S BRIGADE
SCALE'S
Small Building
True Meridian.
EMMITSBURG
UNION TROOPS
CONFEDERATE TROOPS
1 CAPT SATTERFIELD ··55TH N.C.
2 SERGT WHITLEY ··· " "
3 LT FALLS ····· " "
4 G.W. FINLEY ····· 56TH VA
5 GEN ARMISTEAD Wounded
6 GEN GARNETT Killed
7 GEN KEMPER Wounded
COL. CONALLY'S REGIMENT.


ISHING'S BAT.
BROWN'S BAT.
42ND N.Y.
COWAN'S BATTERY.
19TH MASS.
21ST PENNA
BUCKTAILS
CLUMP OF OAKS
1ST N.Y.L ART BAT. B.
149TH PA
5TH
7TH PA
69TH PA
59TH N.Y.
19TH MAINE
15TH MASS.
82ND N.Y.
13TH VT.
Walnut Tree.
KEMPER'S BRIGADE
GARNET'S BRIGADE
ARMISTEAD'S BRIGADE
A MAP
showing the scene of
LONGSTREET'S FINAL ASSAULT
ON THE UNION LINES AT
GETTYSBURG, JULY 3, 1863
and the Positions of the respective bodies of Troops therein of both armies
PREPARED BY THE
GETTYSBURG NATIONAL PARK COMMISSION
and based upon the evidence carefully gathered from
all sources and collated by said Commission.
LT. COL E.B. COPE, Engineer.
ROAD
CONDOR HOUSE.
BARN.
Scale.
100 200 300 400 500 600
Feet.
S.H. HAMMOND ASS'T ENG

and one regiment and one battalion from Alabama, in the assaulting columns.

The contention between Pickett's division and Heth's Division, the latter commanded then by Pettigrew, has doubtless arisen from the following: The portion of the enemy's forces just in front of Pickett's Division was behind a low rock wall which terminated at a point opposite Pickett's left. About eighty yards to the rear of this point there was another stone wall which commenced there and ran along by Benner barn towards the cemetery, and the enemy, instead of continuing his line to his right from the termination of the first wall, and through the field, dropped eighty yards to the second wall, and continued his line behind that. So to have reached the enemy in Pettigrew's front, his troops must have marched eighty yards beyond a continuation of their line from the point where Pickett reached the enemy in his front. Some of Pickett's men passed over the first line of the enemy and a few of them reached a point some forty yards in the rear of the line and near the Federal battery.

Some of the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment reached a point within nine yards of the rock wall in front of them. That was seventy-three yards beyond a continuation of the line of the first wall, and allowing two yards for the thickness of the first wall, and adding to that the forty yards beyond the rock wall to the point reached by some of Pickett's men, and running a line parallel with the first wall so as to strike the most advanced point reached by Pickett's men, and continuing beyond to the most advanced point reached by the men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment, it will be found that the latter point is thirty-one yards in advance of that line.

The Fifty-fifth Regiment was a part of the rear guard on the retreat, and in the attack made upon them at Falling Waters, they lost several killed and wounded. The loss of the regiment at Gettysburg amounted to 64 killed and 172 wounded, including the few casualties at Falling Waters and the number of captured, about 200, added to these made an aggregate of more than one-half the number of men in the regiment. All of the field officers and all of the Captains

were either killed, wounded or captured. Lieutenant M. C. Stevens, of Company G, was the ranking officer, and commanded the regiment on the retreat until it reached Falling Waters, when Captain Whitted had sufficiently recovered from his wound to take command. Captain R. W Thomas, of Company K, however, returned to the regiment soon after we went into camp on the Rapidan, and commanded the regiment with great acceptability until Lieutenant-Colonel Belo's return the following winter. In the official report of his division at Gettysburg, made by General Heth, and found in the records published by the United States Government, Colonel Connally, Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Belo are particularly mentioned for gallant and meritorious conduct, but Col. Connally was so severely wounded that he was never able again to command the regiment. This was a great loss, for he was not only brave and loyal in his support of the Southern cause, but his sentiments and conduct were so chivalric, that he impressed all the men and officers of the regiment with his own lofty ideals, and Lieutenant-Colonel Smith was dead. The very soul of honor, he was older and less impetuous than Colonel Connally, but gentle and refined as a woman; he was conscientious and painstaking in the discharge of every duty and enforced among the men the same rigid rule of attention to duty he prescribed for himself. No hasty utterance and no unclean word ever escaped his lips, and by his daily life, he taught us what a beautiful thing it is to be a Christian gentleman.

Colonel Connally was left in a house near the battlefield and fell into the hands of the enemy. His left arm was amputated and from that and the wound in his hip it was thought for a long while he would die. His brave spirit pulled him through. As a lawyer and in politics he attained high position in Galveston, Texas, and Richmond, Va., but after several years he became an eloquent preacher of the Gospel and now resides at Asheville, N. C.

The regiment, after its return to the line of the Rapidan, was engaged in drilling and picketing at the fords until October, when it went with the Army of Northern Virginia to Manassas and became engaged in the battle of Bristoe Sta-

tion. The position of the regiment in that battle was on the left of the brigade, which was just to the right of Cooke's Brigade. A piece of forest was in front and consequently our loss was slight as compared to the loss of some of the regiments of Cooke's Brigade. The regiment was also with the army at Mine Run, and was a part of a line that was formed for the charge upon the enemy's left flank in the early morning, when it was discovered after throwing out a skirmish line that General Meade, during the night, had withdrawn his forces.

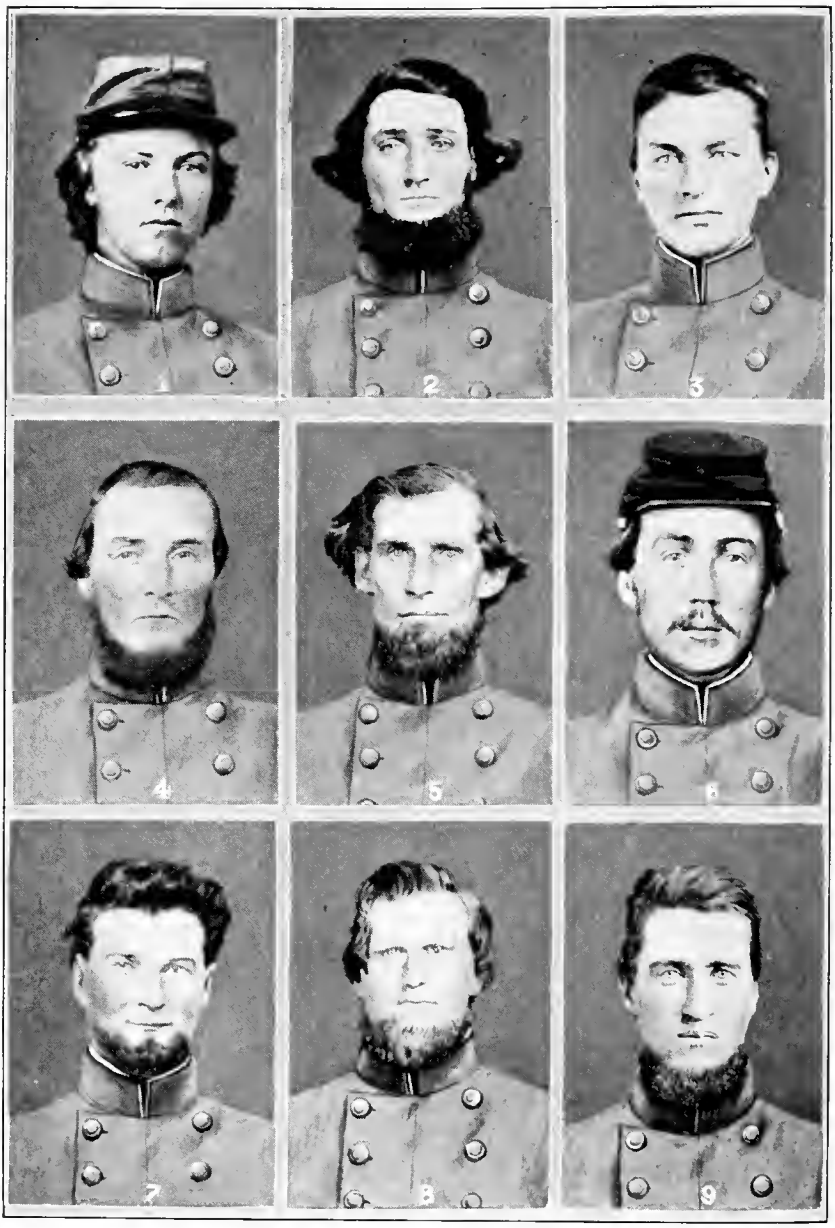
Colonel Belo returned to the command of the regiment late in January, 1864, but he had not entirely recovered from his wound received at Gettysburg. It was made on the leg by the fragment of a shell, and in his determination not to be captured, he fell back with the army from Gettysburg. A portion of the time he was in such danger of capture that he exposed himself greatly, and by the time he reached Winchester the condition of the wound was so serious that for several days it was feared that amputation would be necessary.

Soon after his return to the regiment, our brigade, one severely cold night, was ordered out of camp and marched to Gordonsville. As soon as it reached that point, the Fifty-fifth Regiment was sent out to picket the roads on the south. The rain was falling and sleeting and the clothing on the men was frozen. The next day the regiment with the brigade was marched some distance to the southwest and bivouacked for the night with orders to have very few fires, the purpose being to intercept a raiding detachment of the Federal army, but the detachment went around us, and after enduring the intensest suffering that night, the regiment returned to camp.

THE WILDERNESS.

On 4 May, 1864, the regiment, Colonel Belo, now recovered of his wounds, commanding, left its camp near Orange Court House, and commenced its march to the Wilderness. It was going down the Plank road towards Fredericksburg about 2:30 o'clock in the afternoon of the 5th, when it was discovered that the enemy were advancing up the road. Heth's Division was formed into line of battle, not for the

purpose of advancing or bringing on an engagement, but as General Lee said to A. P Hill, to hold the enemy in check until Longstreet's Corps and Anderson's Division of A. P Hill's Corps should come up. Davis' Brigade was formed on the left of the road; our regiment was the right centre of the brigade and on the crest of a small hill or ridge. It was in a dense forest of small trees; the hill in our front sloped gradually to a depression or valley which was a few yards wide, and then there was a gradual incline on the opposite side until it reached a point of about the same altitude as that occupied by us, about 100 yards from our line. We had 340 men, including non-commissioned officers, in our regiment. About 3:30 o'clock, our skirmish line was driven in and the first line of the Federal forces charged, but they got no further than the crest of the hill in front of us, and were repulsed with great loss; from then until sunset, they charged us with seven successive lines of battle, but we repulsed every one of them. Our line never wavered. The officers and men of the regiment realized that the safety of the army depended upon our holding the enemy in check until the forces left behind could come up, and there was a fixed determination to do it, or to die. About 6 o'clock the enemy were pressing us so heavily with their successive lines of fresh troops it was thought that they would annihilate us before nightfall, and a conference of the general officers on the field determined that it would probably become necessary as a last resort, to make a vigorous and impetuous charge upon them with the hope that we might be able to drive them back. Colonel Belo, who was sitting just in the rear of the regiment by the side of a little poplar tree, sent his orderly to the line to the writer of this sketch (C. M. Cooke), instructing him to report to him immediately. I went at once. He then stated to me that the necessity of a charge seemed apparent and that the order for making it would probably soon be given, and he desired that I return to the line and notify the men that they might be prepared for it, and take the command of my own company and also C, which was the flag company, the commanding officer of which had a few moments before been severely wounded, and to see that the flag was kept well to the front,



FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT

1. John P. Cannady, Sergeant, Co. K.
2. Wm. Ellis Royster, Corporal, Co. K.
3. Henry C. Adcock, Musician, Co. K.
4. John H. Williams, Private, Co. K. (Killed near Petersburg, Oct., 1864.)
5. Rhodes Frazier, Private, Co. K.
6. Albert Eaks, Private, Co. K.
7. John H. Dean, Private, Co. K. (Killed at the Wilderness.)
8. James C. Knott, Co. K. (Killed at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863.)
9. James W. Adcock, Private, Co. K.

and to make the charge with all the dash that was possible. I went back to the line and gave the men the information. They expressed hope that it might not be necessary to make the charge, but there was no disposition to shirk the duty if it had been imposed. But the order for the charge was not given, and about sunset the firing had nearly ceased in our front, and Thomas' Georgia Brigade of Wilcox's Division came in and relieved us, and we were sent to the right of the road where we rested for the night. We had held the enemy in check. Not one yard of our line had given away one foot during the three hours the fearful onslaughts had been made upon us, but of the 340 of the regiment, 34 lay dead on the line where we fought and 167 were wounded. The Sergeant of the ambulance corps counted the next day 157 dead Federal soldiers in front of our regiment.

On 6 May, early in the morning before sunrise, the Federal forces opened the battle on our left before Davis' Brigade was in line, and while our arms were yet stacked, and forced the troops to the left of us, and our brigade along with them, back upon and along the road. These were fresh troops which Gen. Grant had moved into position during the night, and they were attacking the troops of A. P Hill's Corps, which had been fearfully depleted by the engagements of the day before. But just at this time Longstreet's Corps came up and Kershaw's Division relieved our division. Our regiment was not engaged further during the Wilderness fight. Our brigade composed part of the rear guard of the army on its march from the Wilderness to Spottsylvania, and consequently, the regiment did not reach Spottsylvania until 9 May. We had some skirmishes along the march—nothing serious. On the afternoon of 10 May our regiment was part of the force which made an attack upon the enemy's right near Talley's mill. We charged and captured a piece of artillery and drove the enemy across the Mattapony. The regiment upon this occasion behaved with great gallantry, charging for half a mile up the hillside through an old field. Though subjected during this charge to a fire from both artillery and small arms, the loss was not very great; we were charging up hill and the

fire of the enemy went over our heads. On this charge three color bearers were shot down in succession before we captured the artillery. The regiment was engaged in the battle of the 12th at Spottsylvania, but as we were behind temporary breastworks, and some distance to the right from the point where Grant broke the Confederate lines, its losses on that day were comparatively small.

SECOND COLD HARBOR.

At the second battle of Cold Harbor the regiment reached the field late in the afternoon of 2 June. The Federal troops were attempting to occupy an advanced position on our left for the battle of the next day. Davis' Brigade was put in to prevent this, and charged them just about sunset. We checked the advance of the enemy, but it was a fearful charge. The ground was unfavorable on account of a thick undergrowth and the loss was considerable. Colonel Belo was seriously wounded in this charge and was never able afterwards to take command of the regiment. We were engaged in the battle all the next day, but we were protected by temporary breastworks, and we did not suffer as heavily as some of the regiments, but the punishment we inflicted upon the enemy was fearful.

Colonel Belo's wound was in the arm, half way between the elbow and shoulder joint; the bone was shattered and the operation of re-section was performed. The loss to the regiment was irreparable. He had been with the regiment in all its hard-fought battles, and had the absolute confidence of every man in the regiment. He was cool and intrepid. He never lost his head in the midst of the fiercest conflict, nor failed to discover and seize the advantage of a position. He had a genius for organization, and appreciated every detail that contributed to the effectiveness or character of a military organization. He was in North Carolina at the time of General Lee's surrender. He went to General Beauregard and was assigned by him to the command of a force. He was detached from the main body of General Johnston's army, and when the latter surrendered, instead of surrendering with it, he and Captain Lillington, of Company H, who was with him

at the time, rode off to join the army of General Kirby Smith, across the Mississippi. But before he reached that army it had surrendered and he went to Galveston and made that place his home. He became the editor of the *Galveston News* and acquired both fame and wealth. He died at Asheville, N. C., a few months ago and was buried at Salem, N C., his old home.

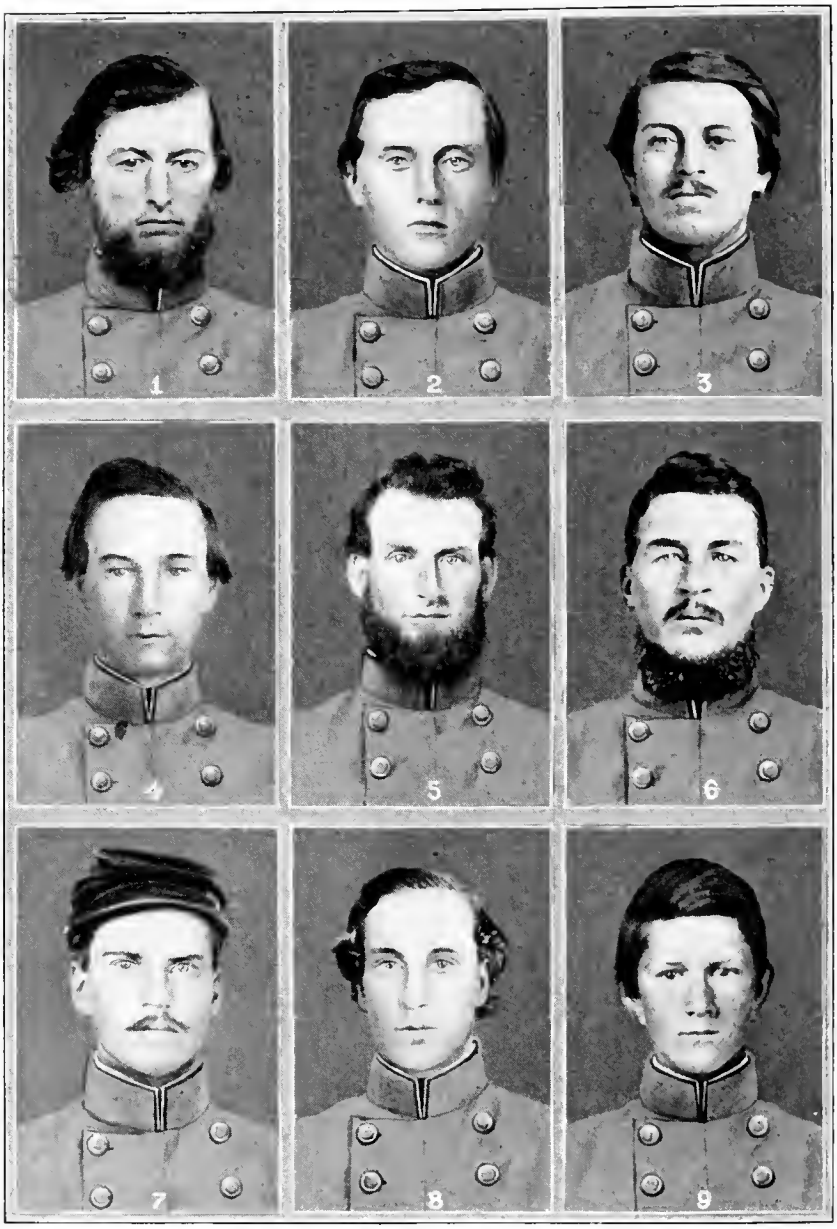
The regiment after this time was commanded at various times by Captain P M. Mull, of Company F; Captain R. W. Thomas, of Company K; Captain W A. Whitted, of Company G; Captain B. F. Briggs, of Company A; Captain N. W Lillington, of Company H; and Captain John T. Peden, of Company B; but Captain Whitted was in command the greater part of the time.

The regiment, after Cold Harbor, spent about a month on the north side of the James river, near Malvern Hill, and during that time had an engagement with the enemy near White Oak Swamp, in which the Federals were repulsed, and the regiment lost several men. We were afterwards transferred to the lines southeast of Petersburg, and the point occupied by the Fifty-fifth Regiment was to the right of the point where the mine was sprung on 30 July. The part of the line occupied by our regiment was so near to that of the enemy that sharpshooting was kept up constantly between the lines with casualties of almost daily occurrence. The enemy had a number of mortar guns planted just in rear of their lines, from which shells were discharged almost constantly night and day. As some measure of protection, the men and officers of the regiment dug holes in the side of the hill, upon which the line of our regiment was formed. The headquarters of the regiment was a hole six by nine feet square, thus made in the side of the hill with an opening to the rear, and it was in this place that the writer, Adjutant of the regiment, received all orders from superior officers, received and made all reports and all regimental orders, and there the commanding officer and himself slept at night.

THE CRATER.

On the morning of 29 July, the Federal commander made

a feint by advancing a part of his forces on the north side of James river, near Malvern Hill, towards Richmond. This was done in order to cover his real purpose of springing the mine near Petersburg, and to weaken opposition at that point by inducing us to withdraw our troops towards Richmond. The Fifty-fifth Regiment, with its brigade, was a part of the forces which were moved rapidly across the country, crossing the James river near Drewry's Bluff, to check the enemy's advance. We reached a point in front of the enemy not far from Malvern Hill, on the night of the 29th, and were placed in line to reinforce troops already there, but the enemy made no attempt to advance further. At a very early hour the next morning, we were awakened by the reverberation of a great sound which seemed to have been produced a long way off, and at the same time there was a trembling of the earth, such as that caused by an earthquake. A few hours afterwards a courier came with orders directing us to return at once to the lines near Petersburg. We commenced to march immediately and beneath a scorching sun; we went at almost a double-quick, and in crossing the large, shadeless fields in the low-lands of the James river, a number of men were overcome by the heat, but we reached Petersburg on the night of the 30th, and found that the enemy had been driven back from the advanced position which they had gained, and for a while occupied after the springing of the mine. Early next morning, there was a truce for several hours to bury the dead between the lines, and our line was formed then just as it was before, except there was a bend around the excavation made by the explosion of the mine. The position of our regiment was some yards to the south of the excavation. The Fifteenth regiment of Cooke's Brigade was just in the rear of it. The springing of the mine was a complete surprise to us, and both officers and men were for several weeks thereafter anxiously expecting a repetition of the act, and were nervous over it. At one time or another, every member of the regiment was sure that he heard the sound of the sappers and the miners digging away down in the ground beneath him. There was scarcely a night that some one of the regiment would not come out of his hole and crawl to the regimental



FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

1. Geo. W. Currin, Private, Co. K. (Killed at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863.)
2. James K. Wilkerson, Private, Co. K.
3. Charles Stovall, Private, Co. K. (Killed at Gettysburg.)
4. Marion H. Hester, Private, Co. K.
5. Thomas B. Daniel, Private, Co. K.
6. Alexander Adcock, Private, Co. K.
7. Robert B. Ellixon, Private, Co. K. (Wounded seven times at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863. Taken prisoner and died at Point Lookout.)
8. John P. Ellixon, Private, Co. K.
9. Benjamin P. Thorp, Private, Co. K.

headquarters and whisper the announcement that he could plainly hear the sound of the digging in the ground way below him. The suggestion of the adjutant or commanding officer that it was mere imagination would never avail, and so it would often happen that a good part of the night was spent by those officers in going around and testing the accuracy of these reports; and in assuring the men that there was no real sound, but only that of imagination. It was customary to relieve the regiment about one day in every ten from the terrible strain of this service in the trenches, and to take them to some point in the rear where there was shade, and allow them to bathe themselves and to wash their clothing.

DAVIS' FARM.

The 18 August was one of those days off with Davis' Brigade. About one-third of the men had been detailed that morning and sent to work on the breastworks. The balance of the brigade about the middle of the afternoon, were resting about a mile in the rear of the line, when we were ordered to move rapidly to the right some two or three miles, to meet the enemy, who, passing around the extreme right of our infantry line, had crossed the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad at Davis' farm. As soon as we came in sight of the enemy, we were formed in line of battle and ordered to charge. The charge was made with the Fifty-fifth Regiment in the center of the brigade. The charge was made with dash and spirit, at double-quick, for half a mile, and through a corn field a greater part of the way, under a fierce fire of both artillery and infantry. After passing through the corn field, we came to a pine forest of scattering growth. We drove the first line of the enemy through this, and then came to a forest from which the large trees had been mainly cut, and which was very thick with small growth and under-brush. It was so dense that the enemy, who were only about 75 or 100 yards from us, behind some temporary breastworks, could not be seen. We stopped a moment and reformed our line and then continued the charge, but in the difficulty to our advance presented by the thick undergrowth and the brush from the large trees which had been felled, we had not gone more

than forty yards before we were repulsed with great loss. It was then about twilight, and the volley the enemy poured into our ranks appeared to be a veritable sheet of flame. The losses of our regiment there were relatively greater than in any other battle in which it participated. There was scarcely an officer or man who did not bear either in his body or clothing the marks of the terrible conflict. Of the 130 men who went into the charge, at least one-half were either killed or wounded. Lieutenant J J Hoyle, of Company F, was killed while gallantly leading his company; he was ever a faithful and conscientious officer; Lieutenant W. H. Townes, of Granville county, as brave an officer as ever drew a sword, commanding Company D, was mortally wounded. Of the thirteen men of Company I present, three were killed and all the others were wounded. After the repulse, we fell back some fifty yards waiting and expecting that the enemy would advance, but this he failed to do, and during the night we were moved further to the rear. Captain Whitted commanded the regiment in this engagement. The next afternoon the men detailed the day before having come in, our regiment had nearly as many men in ranks as it had the day before, and Captain B. F Briggs, of Company A, was in command. Our line was lengthened by fresh troops, and late in the afternoon another attempt was made to dislodge the enemy from his position, our regiment charging over the same ground as on the day before, and it was repulsed at just about the same point, and with very nearly as great losses. We returned to the trenches near Petersburg and there remained until the engagement on 1 October on the right of our line, in which General Heth's Division was engaged with an infantry division of the Federal forces and some of their cavalry, and in which General Archer was mortally wounded. The losses of the Fifty-fifth Regiment in this engagement were slight. In the battle of Hatcher's Run or Burgess' Mill, on 27 October, the right of our brigade rested on Hatcher's Run. One of the Mississippi Regiments was on the right, and our regiment was in the centre. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon, the enemy had broken through our lines on the south side of Hatcher's Run and the first we

knew of it they had crossed the run and were firing into our rear. General Heth and General Davis, who were just in the rear of our regiment at the time, directed Colonel Stone, of the Second Mississippi, since Governor of the State of Mississippi, to wheel the three right regiments of the brigade perpendicular to our line, and to drive the enemy back across the run. The order was promptly executed, and the Fifty-fifth Regiment, being the third regiment from the right, was next to the angle, and was subjected, therefore, to enfilading fire from the main army of the enemy, and to a front fire from the flanking force. The charge was made with great desperation and the enemy were driven in great disorder and confusion across the run, and our lines on the south side were re-established. The losses of the regiment were serious. Lieutenant M. C Stevens, who, up to this time, had escaped unhurt, rashly exposed himself in this exigency and was killed.

BELFIELD.

About 1 December, 1864, when the enemy with considerable force of both cavalry and infantry, cut the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad, near Jaratt's Station, and threatened the base of our supplies at Belfield, our regiment was a part of the force that was sent to attack and drive him back. We came upon the enemy near Jarratt's station, and drove in his skirmish line. We formed in line of battle and charged through a piece of pine forest that was covered with sleet; the long icicles hung from every limb, and the trees were so weighted that many of the limbs touched the ground. It was fearfully cold and the men suffered terribly, for we were neither well shod, nor warmly clad. A few shots were fired into our column as we were marching through the forest, but when we emerged from it into an open field near the railroad, the enemy had fled. This movement was noted for the great suffering of the men on account of the severe weather. The snow and sleet fell upon us the second night after we left camp.

On 6 February, 1865, the regiment in the meantime having been transferred to Cooke's Brigade, participated in the fight of Cooke's, Johnson's and Pegram's Brigades with some of the Federal forces, in the battle fought between the

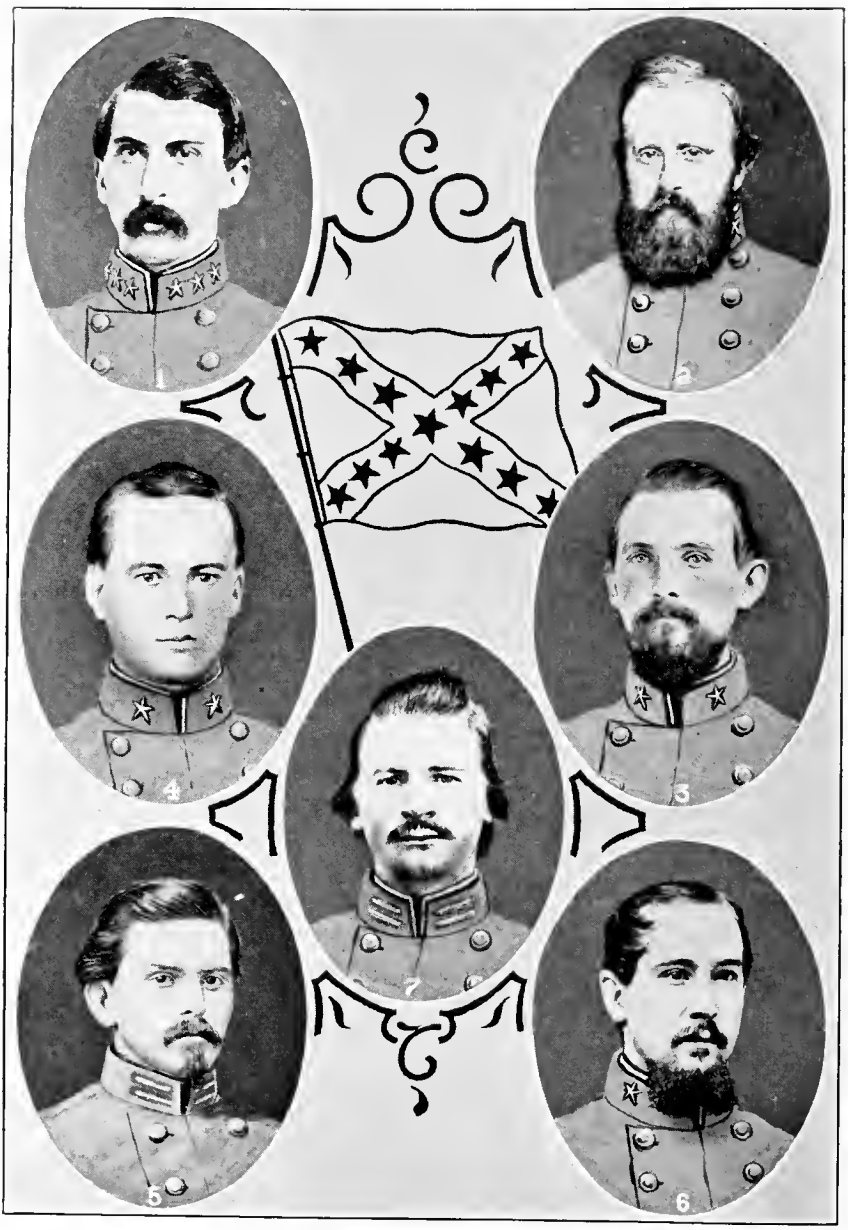
lines north of Hatcher's Run. The casualties of the regiment were small. On 24 March the regiment, with its brigade was moved to the left and put into position to support General Gordon's attack the next morning, on the forts and line of the enemy east of Petersburg. When the attacking forces moved over the intrenchments for the charge, we moved into their places, but as the attack was a failure we were not put in action; when we returned to our former position we found that the enemy had just attacked and captured the men we had left in the rifle pits in the morning. They made a movement as if they were going to charge our main line, but after a few shots from us they changed their purpose.

LINES BROKEN.

When the general attack was made upon the right of our line on 31 March, we occupied a position a few hundred yards north of Hatcher's Run. In the battle that day, the writer of this sketch was seriously wounded. The regiment was engaged with its brigade in the stubborn resistance that was made and continued until the morning of 2 April to prevent the enemy from turning our flank. The lines around Petersburg being broken that day, the glorious remnant of the unconquered Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment shared in the vicissitudes of the heroic and historic retreat which ended in the surrender at Appomattox. The handful of the regiment on 9 April, 1865, was commanded by Captain W. A. Whitted.

C. M. COOKE.

LOUISBURG, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.



FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. Paul F. Faison, Colonel.
2. G. G. Luke, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. H. F. Schenck, Major.
4. John W. Graham, Major.
5. E. J. Hale, Adjutant.
6. Moses John de Rosset, Surgeon.
7. James M. Clark, Ensign.

FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

By ROBERT D. GRAHAM, Captain Company D.

This regiment was composed of ten companies which assembled at the camp of instruction, known as Camp Manguin, located on the North Carolina railroad, four miles west of Raleigh, in the Spring and Summer of 1862.

Company A—*Camden County, mainly*—As twelve months' volunteers, they had formed a part of the detachment captured at Hatteras 29 August, 1861, and had recently been exchanged. Its officers were successively as follows: G. Gratiott Luke, Captain, April, 1861, elected Lieutenant-Colonel 31 July, 1862; Noah H. Hughes, Captain, 1 August, 1862, from First Lieutenant 17 April, 1862, died 1 June, 1864; Thomas P Savilles, Captain, 1 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant, 17 April, 1862; Henry W Lane, First Lieutenant, 1 August, 1862, transferred from Company G, killed 12 June, 1864; Edward P Hanks, First Lieutenant, 12 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 17 April, 1862; Caleb L. Grandy, Second Lieutenant, 1 June, 1864; Wm. H. Seymour, Second Lieutenant, 12 June, 1864; Caleb P Walston, First Sergeant, became Captain in the Sixty-eighth Regiment.

Company B—*Cumberland County*—This company came in under Frank N. Roberts. A good portion of this command was from the old *ante bellum* organization known as the Lafayette Light Infantry, and with their present Captain had formed a part of the First North Carolina Volunteers known as the "Bethel" Regiment, who were six months' volunteers, and who had been in the battle of Bethel 10 June, 1861. Its officers in succession were: Francis N. Roberts, Captain, 30 September, 1861 (who had been a Lieutenant in the Bethel Regiment), killed 18 June, 1864; Alexander R. Carver, Captain, 18 June, 1864, for gallant service from Sec-

ond Lieutenant, 1 May, 1864, served in Bethel Regiment, was retired 22 February, 1865, being disabled by wounds; William T. Taylor, Captain, 22 February, 1865, from Sergeant-Major, served in Bethel Regiment; R. W Thornton, First Lieutenant, April 1862, captured 22 May, 1863; Daniel M. McDonald, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, captured at Hatteras 29 August, 1861; Captain White being then tenant, 1 April, 1862, killed 20 April, 1864, at Plymouth; James A. King, Second Lieutenant, 1 July, 1864, killed 21 August, 1864, at the Davis House, near Petersburg.

COMPANY C—*Pasquotank County*—Alexander P White, Captain, April, 1862; Matthew W Fatherly, First Lieutenant, 26 March, 1862; John B. Lyon, Second Lieutenant, 23 April, 1862, resigned, and appointed Captain in the Sixty-eighth Regiment; William P Bray, Second Lieutenant, 23 April, 1862; Edward S. Badger, Second Lieutenant, 1 March, 1864. The bulk of Company C, under original enlistments, had been among the earliest volunteers and captured at Hatters 29 August, 1861; Captain White being then Lieutenant in the Independent Grays, commanded by Captain Thomas Cahoon.

COMPANY D—*Orange County*—This company was brought in by John W Graham, who had entered the service as Second Lieutenant 20 April, 1861, in the Orange Guards, which with the Guilford Grays, (both of them *ante bellum* volunteer companies,) had been ordered to coast defence duty at Fort Macon. In June, 1861, he was appointed Aide-de-Camp to General R. C. Gatlin, commanding the Department of Eastern North Carolina, and received a commission as First Lieutenant in the Eighth Regiment North Carolina State Troops. The company was officered as follows: John W Graham, Captain, April, 1862, from Aide-de-Camp, promoted to Major 1 September, 1863; Robert D. Graham, Captain, 1 September, 1863, from First Lieutenant 22 May, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 17 May, 1862, from private. David S. Ray, First Lieutenant, 17 May, 1862, from private, killed 22 May, 1863; Joseph B. Coggin, First Lieutenant, 1 September, 1863, from Sergeant, wounded 17 June, 1864, and died therefrom in Petersburg hospital 16 September,

1864; Robert T. Faucett, First Lieutenant, by promotion and transfer from Second Lieutenant in Company H 18 September, 1864, from First Sergeant of Company D; Charles R. Wilson, Second Lieutenant, 17 May, 1862, from private; William Turner, Second Lieutenant, 25 July, 1863, from Sergeant.

COMPANY E—*Northampton County, mainly*—Jos. G. Lockhart, Captain. April 1862, resigned 11 October, 1864; King J Rhodes, Captain, 11 October, 1864, from First Lieutenant 4 May, 1863, and Second Lieutenant February, 1863 (served in Bethel Regiment); Jarvis B. Lutterloh, First Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, killed 28 April, 1863 (had served in the Bethel Regiment); John Jacobs, First Lieutenant, 11 October, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 4 May, 1863; George B. Barnes, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, promoted to Assistant Quartermaster 1 August, 1862, with rank of Captain; Wm. S. Moody, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, resigned 1 February, 1863; Robert B. Peebles, Second Lieutenant, 5 August, 1862, from First Sergeant, promoted and transferred to Adjutant Thirty-fifth North Carolina Regiment, later A. A. G. Ransom's Brigade; Alex. B. McDougald, Second Lieutenant, 9 June, 1863; Cornelius Spivey, Second Lieutenant, 18 September, 1863, killed 17 June, 1864; Wm. J. Thomas, Second Lieutenant, 1 November, 1864.

COMPANY F—*Cleveland County, mainly*—Henry F. Schenk, Captain, April, 1862, Major 31 July, 1862, retired 1 September, 1863; Benjamin F. Grigg, Captain, 5 August, 1862 (Lincoln county,) from Lieutenant 10 May, 1862, (had been First Sergeant in the Bethel Regiment); V J Palmer, First Lieutenant 10 May, 1862 (Rutherford county); John R. Williams, Second Lieutenant, 10 May, 1862, killed at Ware Bottom Church, near Drewry's Bluff, 20 May, 1864; Alfred R. Grigg, Second Lieutenant, 10 August, 1862; A. B. Percy, Second Lieutenant, 20 May, 1864.

COMPANY G—*Henderson County*—Henry E. Lane, Captain, April, 1862, resigned 31 May, 1864; Otis P Mills, Captain 31 May, 1864, from First Lieutenant 12 April, 1862; Benjamin D. Lane, First Lieutenant, 1 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 12 April, 1862; James M. Davis, Second

Lieutenant, 12 April, 1862; Julius A. Corpening, Second Lieutenant, 1 October, 1864, from private; Wm. F. Kinsey, Second Lieutenant, 1 October, 1864.

COMPANY H—*Alexander, Caswell, Orange, and other Counties*—T. C Hallyburton, Captain, April, 1862, appointed Assistant Commissary of Subsistence 1 August, 1862; Wm. G. Graves, Captain, 1 August, 1862, from Second Lieutenant 22 April, 1862, (had served in the Thirteenth Regiment); J. D. Patterson, First Lieutenant, 22 April, 1862, resigned 13 February, 1863; Samuel R. Holton, First Lieutenant, 13 February, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 22 April 1862, (often detailed on brigade staff); Robert T. Faucett, Second Lieutenant, 28 February, 1863, from Sergeant, and transferred with fifteen men from Company D, promoted to First Lieutenant and transferred back to Company D 18 September, 1864; Robert W Belo, Second Lieutenant, 1 March, 1863, from First Sergeant (lost a foot at Ware Bottom Church 20 May, 1864); Solon G. Birkhead, Second Lieutenant, 18 September, 1864, from First Sergeant in Company D, enlisted from Randolph county.

COMPANY I—*Rutherford County*—This company was composed of recruits mainly from Rutherford county and enlisted March, 1862, by First Lieutenant J W Kilpatrick and Private L. Harrill, both then of Company D, Sixteenth North Carolina Troops, sent home for recruits. They secured 76 men and organized 7 April, 1862, at Fredericksburg, Va., by electing J. W Kilpatrick Captain, L. Harrill First Lieutenant, J H. Sweezy Second Lieutenant, and H. A. L. Sweezy Third Lieutenant. Later the following officers were elected to fill vacancies and promoted as follows: At the battle of Seven Pines Captain J. W Kilpatrick was killed and L. Harrill promoted to Captain 31 March, 1862, J. H. Sweezy to First Lieutenant, H. A. L. Sweezy to Second Lieutenant, and Joseph M. Walker elected Junior Second Lieutenant. During the Summer of 1862 J H. Sweezy, First Lieutenant, resigned on account of ill health and soon afterwards died. This caused the following promotions: H. A. L. Sweezy to First Lieutenant 2 August, 1862, J. M. Walker to Second Lieutenant, and Philip H. Gross was elected Third

Lieutenant from the ranks. At the battle at the Davis House on the Weldon Railroad 21 August, 1864, First Lieutenant H. A. L. Sweezy was killed, and the following promotions followed: J. M. Walker to First Lieutenant, P H. Gross to Second Lieutenant, and Orderly Sergeant L. M. Lynch to Third Lieutenant. During the month of February, 1865, in the siege at Petersburg, Lieutenant L. M. Lynch was killed, and C. P Tanner was elected Third Lieutenant. This company was attached to the Sixteenth North Carolina State Troops and made the thirteenth company in that Regiment. On 8 April, commenced the long march to Yorktown, a distance of 130 miles, and arrived on the 19th. On 2 May, 1862, Yorktown was evacuated, and at Williamsburg the Sixteenth Regiment was held as a reserve to support the line of battle. This was on the famous retreat of General Joseph E. Johnston up the Peninsula between the James and York rivers. At Seven Pines 31 May, 1862, this attached company, only in service about two months, went into that fearful battle and fought like veterans. Captain J W Kilpatrick, Drummer J. G. Price, W M. Brooks, A. K. Lynch and H. R. Sorrels were killed, and seven wounded. Soon after this battle the company was ordered to Camp Mangum, Raleigh, N. C., and was made Company I, Fifty-sixth North Carolina Troops.

Total commissioned and non-commissioned officers and men of Company I were (first and last), 146; killed in battle and died from wounds, 23; wounded and sent to hospital, 24; died from diseases, 29; discharged for disability, 5; besides a large number of slight wounds not reported.

COMPANY K—*Mecklenburg, Iredell, etc.*—Frank R. Alexander, Captain, April 1862, mortally wounded in night charge of 17 June, 1864, at Petersburg, and died 20 June, 1864 (Mecklenburg); John F. McNeely, Captain, 20 June, 1864, from First Lieutenant 11 December, 1863, and Second Lieutenant 1 April, 1862 (Iredell); James A. Wilson, First Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, resigned 11 December, 1863 (Mecklenburg); James W Shepherd, First Lieutenant, 20 January, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 1 April, 1862 (Iredell); Charles M. Payne, Second Lieutenant, 20 December, 1862, from Sergeant (Davidson county), often de-

tailed on Regimental Staff as Acting Adjutant; John A. Lowrance, Second Lieutenant, 1 July, 1864 (Mecklenburg).

May 21, 1862, Colonel H. B. Watson assumed command of the Camp of Instruction, with Captain Alfred H. Belo as Adjutant of the Post and Battalion Drillmaster. The letter designation above given for each company showed the relative rank of its Captain; but the dates of their commissions as they now appear in Moore's Roster, are not thus accurately corroborated.

July 31.—Organized to-day by the election of Field Officers. The following shows the result, with Staff and succession as far as preserved:

PAUL F. FAISON, Colonel. Had been Major Fourteenth North Carolina Regiment. (Northampton.) Class of 1861 at West Point.

G. GRATIOT LUKE, Lieutenant-Colonel, from Captain of Company A. (Camden.)

HENRY F. SCHENK, Major, from Captain Company F. Retired 14 August, 1863. (Cleveland.)

JOHN W GRAHAM, Major, 1 September, 1863, from Captain Company D. (Orange.)

EDWARD J. HALE, JR., Adjutant, 1 August, 1862; promoted to Assistant Adjutant General of Lane's (N C.) Brigade 24 October, 1863. (Cumberland.)

JOHN W FAISON, Adjutant, 1 December, 1863. (Northampton.)

GEORGE B. BARNES, Assistant Quartermaster, 1 August, 1862, from Lieutenant Company E. (Northampton.)

T. C. HALLYBURTON, Assistant Commissary, 1 August, 1862, from Captain Company H.

JAMES M. CLARK, Color Sergeant 1 August, 1862, and Ensign 12 September, 1864, from Sergeant Company D. (Orange.)

C. A. THOMAS, Surgeon. (Warrenton.)

CHARLES H. LADD, Surgeon. (South Carolina.)

MOSES JOHN DEROSSET, Surgeon. (Wilmington.)

CADER G. COX, Assistant Surgeon. (Onslow.)

WM. T. TAYLOR, Sergeant-Major, from private Company

B, promoted to Captain Company B, 22 February, 1865. (Cumberland.)

JOHN MABLE, Sergeant-Major, 21 April, 1863, from private Company K. (Mecklenburg.)

WM. W GRAVES, Quartermaster Sergeant, from Company A. (Pasquotank.)

STEPHEN C. MULLEN, Commissary Sergeant, from Company A. (Onslow.)

JOHN J ELENO, Ordnance Sergeant. (Onslow.)

BAILEY BRICE, Hospital Steward, from Company A. (Moore.)

WM. FENONI, Drum Major, (Italy), 1 August, 1862.

WM. W WALLACE, Drum Major. (Northampton.)

1 August, 1862, Colonel Faison assumed command, and on the 8th the regiment moved to Goldsboro.

For the next three months we were frequently on the march and counter-march in reconnoissances between Goldsboro, Warsaw, Magnolia, Beaver Dam Church, Wilmington, the seacoast and Tarboro. Off the coast we saw the blockading squadrons, which our *Advance* and other vessels eluded on frequent trips.

3 November, marched through Tarboro to meet our forces retreating from Williamston, and all went into camp near Cross Roads Church. The Twenty-sixth Regiment was sent out on reconnoissance.

4 November, Governor Z. B. Vance, who had been elected Governor from the position of Colonel of the Twenty-sixth Regiment, arrived with General J. G. Martin, Adjutant General of North Carolina. Vance's reception by his old command was something unique. As the enemy were not in speaking distance, so fine a disciplinarian as their model commander, Harry Burgwyn, had to waive ceremony for the time being. The sincerity of their congratulations was attested by utterly ignoring the dignity hedging about his new position, and recalling the camp-fire scenes where the jovial spirit by his wit and humor had always found a silver lining to the darkest cloud, and led them to look upon any sacrifice

that might be offered in the name of "the good Old North State," as a privilege.

CHECKING FOSTER'S RAID.

5 November, Martin's command, consisting of the Seventeenth, Twenty-sixth, Forty-second, Fifty-sixth and Sixty-first North Carolina Regiments, Walker's squadron of cavalry and two or three batteries of artillery, set out for Hamilton. Within six miles of that place the enemy was reported between us and Tarboro. Countermarched to within three miles of Cross Roads Church. Just at nightfall Crawford's company of the Forty-second Regiment encountered the enemy's cavalry, losing none, and the enemy, according to prisoners captured on the 6th, suffering a loss of sixteen killed and wounded. Six of their dead were left on the field. Slept in line of battle expecting a general attack at daybreak.

6 November, the enemy retreated, and we pursued through a drenching rain; bivouacked in six miles of the terminus of the railroad from Tarboro.

7 November, it snowed through the day and into the night; Marched to the railroad terminus. At this point General Martin organized three brigades of the six regiments, the Forty-fourth North Carolina Troops having joined us on the 5th; Colonel Faison commanding a brigade composed of the Seventeenth, under Lieutenant-Colonel Lamb, and the Fifty-sixth under Lieutenant-Colonel Luke. The Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment, Colonel Sion H. Rogers, came in on the 9th.

11 November, Faison's Brigade reached Hamilton. It is evident now that the campaign is ended, and the enemy frightened from his attempt on Tarboro, has returned to Washington, N. C. Their raid was under command of General Foster, late a superintendent of the United States Military Academy at West Point while Colonel Faison was a Cadet there. The utterly wanton destruction of household and other private property left in their trail has not inspired their pursuers with any respect for their soldierly qualities. It is estimated that they have carried off 3,000 laborers (slaves) from Martin and adjoining counties—a more legiti-

mate prize, as without such wasting of the sinews of war, the struggle may be prolonged indefinitely.

SERVICE ON THE BLACKWATER.

15 November, the Fifty-sixth Regiment takes up line of march for Franklin, Va., and crosses the Roanoke at Hill's Ferry, a mile from Palmyra. 16 November, through Bertie county by Woodville, bivouacked in a mile of Rockville, making nineteen miles. 17 November, reached Murfreesboro, about twenty-two miles. 18 November, marched through the town; reception and escort by Colonel Wheeler's Cavalry. Reached Monroe, Va., a ferry on the Nottoway river, eighteen miles. 19 November, crossed the Nottoway, passed through Franklin, six miles beyond, and went into camp. Line of defense includes this point with old South Quay and Cherry Grove. Heavy intrenchments thrown up along this line,—a week's work. General Roger A. Pryor, with a portion of Pettigrew's Brigade, is in command at Franklin, General Pettigrew's headquarters being at Petersburg.

8 December, a detachment of the Fifty-sixth, with another from the Forty-second North Carolina State Troops, have rebuilt the bridge over the Blackwater at Joyner's Store. A gunboat on the river was fired into by a portion of Company I, under Lieutenant Sweezy. 9 December, detachments returned from Joyner's Store, bivouacked near the Fifty-second North Carolina Troops, who had been with us at Wilmington last Summer. 10 December, rejoined the regiment in camp, expecting an advance of the enemy by morning. Lieutenant Fatherly, of Company C, had fired into a patrol gunboat at the junction of Nottoway and Blackwater rivers. 11 December, Colonel Faison, with six companies, reported to General Pryor at Franklin, leaving four with Colonel Luke at New South Quay. General Pryor made a foraging expedition across the river through Carrsville and Windsor, returning on the 28th without loss, and having taken one prisoner.

While on the Blackwater we were thrown with the Eleventh North Carolina Troops, now under Colonel Collett Leventhorpe, who had been a Captain in the British army. To this regiment the Fifty-sixth would concede the palm for

superiority in the manual of arms, while for excellence in tactics, military bearing and discipline, it yielded to none. Colonel Faison was fresh from West Point, and the officers had chosen him with a full appreciation of the importance of these essentials. Of our service along the Blackwater the writer heard General Pryor say: "Colonel Faison was always on time with his regiment."

The regiment was also fortunate in the assignment of its Quartermaster, Commissary and Surgeons, Captains Bower and Hallyburton being efficient men of affairs, while Drs. Thomas, Ladd, DeRosset and Cox stood high in their profession. Dr. DeRosset had taken a foreign course, and was an accomplished French and German scholar.

EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA.

4 January, 1863, off with Pettigrew's Brigade for Rocky Mount, N. C., reaching that point about dark. 17 January, on to Goldsboro, and camped within a short distance of Cooke's Brigade, Daniel's being on the other side of the town.

An advance of the enemy is anticipated from the coast. 20 January, went into bivouac near Pettigrew's Brigade, two miles east of Magnolia Station. 21 January, bivouacked near the academy east of Kenansville, and reported to General Robert Ransom, and thus became a part of that brigade.

22 February, off for Wilmington, and at Camp Lamb until 24 February, when we marched out to Old Topsail Sound. 9 March, General Ransom followed with the Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments.

23 March, Captain John W Graham, Company D, detailed to relieve Adjutant Hale as Judge Advocate, since early in January, of court-martial, sitting in Wilmington. Lieut. R. D. Graham has been acting Adjutant in the absence of Lieutenant Hale. Brigade remaining here about ten days, and passing through Goldsboro, where a short halt was made, reached Kinston 1 April.

17 April, marched out of camp, east of the premises of George Washington, and proceeding across the river, expected to go down the Dover road some eighteen miles to reinforce the Firty-ninth North Carolina, which had engaged

the enemy at Sandy Ridge. Learning of their withdrawal, bivouacked on the south side of the river. 19 April, march to Wise's Fork, and offer battle; but the enemy withdrew, and we returned to camp at Kinston.

24 April, the Fifty-sixth is on picket duty east of Wise's Fork, below Kinston. Companies H and K, under Captain F R. Alexander, hold the Neuse river road; E, G and I, under Captain L. Harrill, the Dover road at Gum Swamp, while A, B, D and F, under Major H. F Schenk, were posted on the Upper Trent road at Noble's Farm. Company A was held in reserve.

FIRST GUM SWAMP.

28 April, the enemy driving in the picket line, attack Companies E, G and I about 3 p. m. Their line shows four flags, indicating as many regiments, say 1,600 men, in the front line, while our total is 180 men, with earthworks proving rather a death-trap than a defence. The slight elevation of the railroad embankment, four or five feet, as it emerges eastward from the swamp, had been utilized to face the enemy advancing on our left flank. This faced north, while a breastwork of equal length, say 150 yards, facing east, starting at a right angle from this improvised line, extended around southward and then westward into the same swamp.

Thus the enemy, advancing to the crest of the elevated ground on the south, overlooking the railroad embankment, could count our men aligned along it. In this unequal contest the detachment of three companies under Captain Harrill held their position for two hours, when they were joined by the Colonel, who, after continuing the fight stubbornly on this and the second line occupied on the west side of the swamp, over three hours, at the approach of night, finding the enemy in sufficient numbers to surround his men, withdrew them. Citizens in their rear report the enemy's loss at 10 killed and 18 wounded. Our loss was one officer and three men killed. This officer is Lieutenant Jarvis B. Lutterloh, of Fayetteville, commanding Company E. His genial spirit and gallant behavior had made him a favorite throughout the regiment. The men killed were N. T. McNeill, of Harnett;

W M. Vickers, of Orange, and Miles Nelson, of Henderson county.

A courier from General D. H. Hill about sundown reached the four companies at the upper Trent river crossing to warn them that they were now cut off, when Major Schenk drew in his pickets, and avoiding the column by a circuitous march, had all at Wise's Forks within the lines about sunrise. This was the Major's last field service. He had long fought against failing health, but was now completely broken down and was at once sent to the hospital, from which he was eventually retired by the board of examining surgeons, with the respect and sympathy of his many friends.

16 May, Cooke's North Carolina Brigade has come to Kinston from the vicinity of Charleston. 17 May, the Fifty-sixth relieves a regiment of Daniel's North Carolina Brigade on outpost duty at Gum Swamp, which is eight miles below Kinston, on the Dover road. The line of defense has been improved by Colonel Rutledge with his Twenty-fifth Regiment of Ransom's Brigade. The breastwork, already noted, extending out of the east side of the swamp at a point on the south (right), and continuing around to the north to the fatal railroad embankment, (here running back through the swamp at a right angle,) is now carried across it, extending the arc of the circle northwest until it enters the swamp again. The railroad embankment thus becomes a traverse, while others are added against the enfilade from the east and south. The country road from New Bern to Kinston here winding like the letter S crosses the railroad three times, and thus with it completes a dollar mark ($) within two miles behind us. A redoubt with one gun commands the first crossing immediately in our rear.

21 May. Scouts late this afternoon report an advance of the enemy from New Bern, four companies of cavalry having crossed Core Creek.

SECOND GUM SWAMP.

22 May. While the regiment is in line of battle, seven companies occupying the circular earthworks, with the other three posted at gaps in the swamp occurring on the right

FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. A. P. White, Captain, Co. C.
2. Matthew W. Fatherly, 1st Lt., Co. C.
3. John B. Lyon, 2d Lieut., Co. C., and Captain in 68th Regiment.
4. Robert D. Graham, Captain, Co. D.
5. David S. Ray, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
6. Robert T. Faucette, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
7. B. F. Grigg, Captain, Co. F.
8. Valentine J. Palmer, 1st Lieut., Co. F.

flank, Company I occupying the extreme point a mile to the south, our pickets are driven in at daylight. Lieutenant Graham soon thereafter calls the attention of the Colonel to an order plainly heard on the left, "Throw out your skirmishers," and is sent out with six men to reconnoiter. Finds the enemy advancing a strong line of skirmishers, with a line of battle behind them, opens the battle by getting the first fire, and returns to report their position. The left wing, ready and waiting for them as they rush forward to the assault, receives them with a steady fire, and they take shelter in a screen of dense woods separated from us by an open space of 100 yards in width.

The fire here is maintained briskly for some time, and then their next regiment advances against the right wing of our seven companies, where the reception is equally effective, again silencing their fire. These demonstrations after a considerable interval are renewed with the same result, and the third time all is silent.

At this point Colonel Faison expressed to the writer a determination to charge them, and sent him around their right flank with twenty men to locate them. It was soon evident why they had not up to this time, about 10:30 a. m., used against our front their third regiment of infantry supporting the first two, nor the three pieces of artillery held under cover near the Dover road and supported by the four companies of cavalry, of which we heard the evening before, constituting the brigade here assembled. Another force, whose strength we must learn by feeling it, is now rapidly closing in on the Dover road directly in rear of our right flank. They have not pierced any point in the line committed to the Fifty-sixth; but however there, they have gained the rear of the redoubt, and can soon rake the road through the swamp with our own gun. The Colonel is amazed that there is no attack upon them by the always reliable regiment that had been posted at the next crossing as our reserve. They soon develop a considerable force, taking the redoubt in the rear, and a hasty retreat along the railroad before they can gain it, now offers the only escape from capture by the two brigades between which the battalion is being wedged in. Colonel

Faison accordingly withdrew it, and keeping up a running fire, saved the greater portion of his command before the enemy got possession of the railroad.

The enemy had rushed in between Graham's reconnoitering party and the retiring battalion, but by a circuitous route through the swamp, he joined the rear companies as they were successfully replying to an attack from the swamp upon the left flank of the column. The defence was here vigorously maintained for some time, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke shouting: "Give it to them boys; it will be all right to-morrow." But the left flank and rear of our new line of battle are now open to the advancing brigade that we have fought throughout the morning on the east side of the swamp, while our right flank and its rear are commanded by the other brigade, which after gaining the crossing that was occupied by our reserve regiment when the battle opened, is rushing in from that point on the west to join the line coming over the railroad embankment from the south, and thus completing the circle around us.

The battle is evidently over, and we must save as many men as we can through the swamp in our rear north of the railroad. Plunging into the dense tall growth of reeds, we were met by demands to surrender. The alternative seemed to be capture or to receive a volley of musketry at close quarters. But the cover of the reeds was complete at a short distance. Taking advantage of this and playing men as pawns, the writer sent the smaller number between himself and the enemy directly into their hands. Without waiting to see this manœuvre completed, he faced about and set the column in motion in another direction. The enemy realized only about 20 per cent of the prize that was within their grasp at this point; for 150 men were thus rescued with the assistance of Lieutenant Charles M. Payne, of Company K, since an able Presbyterian Doctor of Divinity, recently deceased.

Adjutant Hale, who had acted with coolness and gallantry throughout the whole engagement, was near this point of the rear guard and brought out a good number.

If there was any officer of the regiment who failed to measure up to his duty in either of the two battles at this outpost,

we never discovered it. A court of inquiry acquitted the Colonel commanding. Of this result none of his comrades had entertained the least doubt.

Major E. J. Hale has recently written me: "I notice that Professor D. H. Hill, in 'Confederate Military History,' Vol. IV, page 155, says that the Fifty-sixth and Twenty-fifth Regiments were surprised at Gum Swamp 22 May, 1863. This is not true of the Fifty-sixth, whatever may be true of any others. We had been engaged for some hours at intervals with the enemy in our front, which we had completely protected and defended by repulsing his three several attacks. No part of the line defended by or belonging to the Fifty-sixth was punctured.

"After the third repulse of the enemy an order was given to withdraw the regiment to the Kinston side of Gum Swamp, as the enemy had crossed it some miles south of us. I was shot while directing this movement, but paid no attention to the matter until next day. Shortly after we had gotten most of the men across the country road, I remember that you and I were chatting beside the railroad about the want of orders. We saw the Twenty-fifth in line a few hundred yards to the rear (west). Word was started to them that with a change of front to the south, we would join them in attacking this new force of the enemy which was then coming up from that direction. But suddenly the Twenty-fifth was marched away towards Kinston. Our support being thus withdrawn, we then had nothing to do but to save as many as possible from capture."

Captain W G. Graves now writes: "I have never felt any scruples about this fight, as no blame could be placed upon the men or regimental officers."

General R. Ransom, just returned from sick leave, barely escaped capture as he was coming to the outpost and had only passed to the front of the reserve, when he was met by a volley from the enemy at that instant emerging from the swamp to attack the rear of the redoubt and of our right flank. Two regiments of the enemy had gained this position, led by a native guide in a circuitous, all night march of fourteen miles in single file through a marsh that they found well nigh

impassable. They thus avoided by several miles the line committed to the Fifty-sixth, and came upon the field from the southwest.

Colonel Faison was just then quiet for the want of something to shoot at; and was ready to make a counter-charge at the most favorable point; but it seems that his silence was mistaken in the rear for a surrender. This misunderstanding and the consequent withdrawal of the Twenty-fifth at the very instant when it should have charged and united with us to crush their rear attack, was the mistake of the day. But from such mistakes even Napoleon was not free.

Major-General D. H. Hill, reaching the outpost with Ransom's and Cooke's Brigades about 5 p. m., pushed the enemy back within his fortifications at New Bern, a shell there killing Colonel J. R. Jones, of the Fifty-eighth Pennsylvania, who had commanded the two brigades in the attack on the Fifty-sixth North Carolina. The brigade in our front was immediately under Colonel Pierson, of one of the four Massachusetts regiments, while Colonel Jones accompanied the column that penetrated the swamp. He was a brave, energetic officer, and doubtless would have been appointed a general for this affair which he reported that afternoon as "partially successful." He therein says that "the enemy was able to defend himself sometime under cover of a swamp, and when finally broken, his men mostly escaped," and that he "almost took General Ransom himself, who was accidentally at the post."

Our loss was three Lieutenants and 146 men captured, Lieutenant D. S. Ray, of Company D, dying of his wounds next day in New Bern. He was a gallant and meritorious officer, who had the confidence and affection of the company, of which he was in command, Captain John W. Graham being on detail as Judge Advocate of the court-martial at Wilmington. Lieutenant Graham was promoted to First Lieutenant, and Sergeant Wm. Turner to Second Lieutenant.

Query: How did it happen, when it was known at the outpost on the afternoon of 21 May, and presumably at headquarters early in the evening, that a column was advancing from New Bern on the same road by which the four regi-

ments had attacked this outpost within the last four weeks, and this column was morally certain to reach it next morning, that an effective force of three brigades at Kinston, only eight miles distant and ample to give the enemy a complete surprise by striking the first blow, or at least simultaneously with their assault upon our single regiment and possibly cutting off their line of retreat, if strategically disposed during the night, did not start towards the scene of action until the next afternoon, after the incident was closed? No explanation is found in the official records or other source of information.

28 May. The brigade is off for Virginia *via* Goldsboro and Weldon, reaching Petersburg by train in the night. 29 May, on to Richmond, and bivouacked at Camp Lee, (State Fair Grounds.)

2 June. Right-about to Petersburg again, and next day proceeded to Ivor, on the Norfolk & Petersburg Railroad.

13 June. Brigadier-General R. Ransom has been promoted to Major-General; Colonel M. W Ransom to Brigadier-General to-day Back in Petersburg and march over to Drewry's Bluff on the James river, half way between Petersburg and Richmond. The appearance of troops in permanent quarters, on garrison duty, is here a novel sight to our command, so constantly in motion.

17 June. Back to Petersburg, and 21 June to Half-way Station, towards Richmond. Occupied former cabins of Daniel's North Carolina Brigade.

During this month all the enlisted men captured at Gum Swamp, have been exchanged and returned to duty.

26 June. Night march to Seven Pines.

29 June. Ransom's Brigade is engaged in dismantling breastworks constructed here by the enemy under McClellan a year ago. Major-Generals Arnold Elzy, Robert Ransom, and Daniel H. Hill have recently been successively in command at Richmond. Both Ransom's and Cooke's Brigades had been ordered up to participate in the counter-invasion to the north, but at the solicitation of these post commanders were retained for protection of the capital. General Lee's letter on the subject says: "I have always considered Cooke's

and Ransom's Brigades as part of the Army of Northern Virginia."

BATTLE AT CRUMP'S FARM.

Ours was now a duty of observation and reconnoissance to meet any demonstration of the enemy from the seacoast. Thus an opportunity was given to participate in one of the most brilliant campaigns of the war—sharp, quick and decisive. The enemy watching our capital could learn approximately the strength of the small force, protecting it. Accordingly General Dix and General Keyes, advancing cautiously by the way of the White House, apparently had a walk-over.

2 July. General D. H. Hill, without waiting for them to approach nearer to his fortified line of defence, which he had not enough troops to adequately man, moved out rapidly upon them with Ransom's North Carolina, Cooke's North Carolina, and Jenkins' South Carolina Brigades, Branch's Virginia Battery of Artillery and three others,—a total of sixteen guns—and a squadron of cavalry. He met them at Crump's farm, near Deep Bottom bridge, between sunset and dark, and immediately opened such a vigorous assault that the enemy were compelled to assume the defensive, and night found them in full retreat, doubtless believing that those three brigades must have been immensely reinforced since their last reports had come in. Ransom's Brigade sustained the only loss on our side, one man killed and two wounded. Six or seven prisoners taken admitted a loss of thirty on their side.

11 July. To Petersburg again, and camped on Dunn's farm.

RAID AGAINST WELDON BRIDGE CHECKED.

28 July. A part of the Forty-ninth and three companies of the Twenty-fourth North Carolina Regiment and a battery of Georgia Artillery, met Spear's Regiment of New York Cavalry and Dodge's Mounted Riflemen and several pieces of artillery at Boone's Mill, ten miles south of Weldon and two miles from Jackson, N. C. The Fifty-sixth Regiment arrived that evening, but the enemy had withdrawn.

Disposition was made for attack that night; but they did not return. The Forty-ninth lost one man killed, and in the Twenty-fourth three were wounded. The enemy buried 11 of their dead on the field.

1 August. Back to Garysburg, and camped near Mr. Moody's.

12 August. To Halifax Court House, and 13th took boat for Hamilton. Down the Roanoke seventy-three miles, arriving in the afternoon.

14 August. Company D, under Lieutenant Graham, detached to Poplar Point, and threw up breastworks covering the river landing.

16 August. Returned through Palmyra and Halifax to Garysburg.

1 September. Captain John W Graham, on retirement of Major Schenk, is promoted to Major, Lieutenant Robert D. Graham to Captain, and Sergeant Joseph B. Coggin to First Lieutenant. For the succeeding four months, eight companies of this regiment and the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment were posted in the West to meet any incursions from East Tennessee, and to break up the refuge found there by deserters and lawless characters from the several States, and to see that the conscript act was fairly enforced. The effort was to gain friends, and make no new enemies for the State in her desperate struggle, and thus keep the people united in domestic tranquility. The moral effect of this movement was salutary, whether now viewed from a Confederate or Federal standpoint, and it is beyond doubt that it was so regarded by General Grant when the war was over, and the proscription naturally following it was at fever heat.

Two companies, H and E, under Captain W G. Graves, were protecting the building of the Confederate ram Albemarle on the Roanoke near Halifax, at Edwards' Ferry.

24 October. Adjutant E. J. Hale, Jr., is promoted to Assistant Adjutant-General and assigned to Lane's Brigade. As his modesty naturally forbade the incorporation of his military record in his history of the Bethel Regiment, and as he contributed so largely to the efficiency of the Fifty-sixth,

it will be a pleasure to every survivor of the latter to have an outline of so brilliant a career here preserved for the honor of the State that we all love so well.

Private in Bethel Regiment 17 April to 13 November, 1861; Second Lieutenant 2 December, 1861, and Adjutant Fifty-sixth Regiment 1 August, 1862, to 24 October, 1863; Judge Advocate Court-martial at Wilmington January to March, 1863.

Designated by General Lee to convey to General Grant assent and permit to remove his dead and wounded lost at Cold Harbor 2 June, 1864, Grant reluctantly thus acknowledging a defeat.

Assigned as Assistant Adjutant-General to Taliaferro's Division, Army Northern Virginia, but reassigned to Lane's Brigade on petition of its officers, in consequence of General Lane being absent, wounded.

For "conspicuous gallantry and merit" recommended by Generals Lane, Wilcox and A. P Hill for Colonel of the Twenty-eighth Regiment on request of all its officers then present, 26 September, 1864; but the act of Congress was found to provide only for the regular line officers.

In March, 1865, he was commissioned Major and Assistant Adjutant-General; wounded at Second Gum Swamp and at the Wilderness, and was in the surrender at Appomattox. At the crisis in the battle of Fuzzell's Mills, 16 August, 1864, (commanding the Darbytown road in front of Richmond), Lane's Brigade was put in under the eye of General Lee to recapture the lost line. Colonel Barber commanding, was wounded and the charge arrested, but the Adjutant-General assumed command and pushed forward to a speedy victory. In the presence of the troops he was thanked by the chief engineer, General Stevens. For the latter's consideration he then recommended that the line of defense be here so changed as to give full effect to the modern long-range small arms, commanding approaches over wide plains, therefore to be preferred instead of precipices. This was then a new departure in fortifications, but was promptly adopted and superintendence of the work given to Captain Hale, so that when the next morning dawned the enemy found four miles of such de-

fences awaiting their assault, and withdrew. It was effectually adopted by the Turks at Plevna, while much later the British lost Majuba Hill by adhering to the antiquated system.

In the North Carolina victory at Reams Station, 25 August, 1864, he had a similar experience. General Conner was disabled and Colonel Speer killed just as Lane's Brigade started forward. He assumed command, and they were among the first over the line.

Losing only by a legal technicality the promotion to Colonel in the line, as above mentioned, the extraordinary commission of Major and Assistant Adjutant-General of Brigade was given him as some measure of compensation. He was succeeded as Adjutant by John W Faison.

FIRST EXPEDITION AGAINST NEW BERN.

In January, 1864, an expedition was organized for the recapture of New Bern, under Major-General George E. Pickett.

28 January. Reached Goldsboro, and on the night of the 30th proceeded to Kinston, where the Fifty-sixth reported to General Corse, commanding a Virginia Brigade. At night General Barton, commanding his own brigade and the other four Regiments under General Ransom, marched out on the Neuse River road for New Bern.

31 January. Column consisting of Hoke's North Carolina, Clingman's North Carolina, and Corse's Virginia Brigade (temporarily including the Fifty-sixth North Carolina), took the Dover road, passed through Gum Swamp, whence we marched down the railroad track some six miles, turning into the country road again at Sandy Ridge, the scene of a fight between the Forty-ninth North Carolina and the enemy last year, and went into bivouac about eight miles beyond, making twenty-three miles that day. Skirmishers out that night from Corse's Brigade under Major Graham, of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina.

1 February. Set out at 2 a. m. and captured the outpost at Bachelor's Creek. Here Colonel Shaw, Eighth North Carolina State Troops, was killed at the opening of the en-

gagement. A portion of Hoke's men, with Companies B and I, of the Fifty-sixth, were actively engaged. Our total loss was eight killed and fifty wounded. We captured 250 prisoners with the block house. The railroad crosses the creek at this point, and the Fifty-sixth made a race to strike the track in the rear of the train carrying the residue of the enemy to New Bern. They escaped. The fort was destroyed and a large quantity of Quartermaster and Commissary stores secured.

Our part being thus accomplished, we listened in vain for Barton's guns as a signal for our further advance. At night Captain R. D. Graham, with 100 men from Companies D and K, of the Fifty-sixth, with two pieces of artillery, was posted by General Corse on the Washington road as a force of observation against a garrison cut off in the fort at the crossing of Bachelor's Creek. At daylight Colonel Chew came out with the Twenty-ninth and Thirtieth Virginia Regiments and with Graham's detachment moved upon the garrison. The Thirtieth and the artillery was moved around to the right of the road, while the rest of the force took position on the left. A demand was then made for surrender; and the enemy finding himself within point-blank range of the artillery in his rear, to which he could not reply, without bringing his own outside the fort, capitulated. Our spoils were a section of artillery with caisson, and 100 stand of small arms, with a supply of ammunition. The prisoners, 120 men and four officers, Captain Cowdy commanding. Meanwhile the enemy had advanced from New Bern upon Hoke, and been repulsed.

General Martin, on the Wilmington road, had carried everything before him up to the reserve works. Every assault had been successful, and General Barton could readily have found men to take the task assigned him. But as he reported it impracticable, the whole expedition was finally abandoned, when it seemed the general opinion that a determined assault would have been crowned with success.

I leave the above recital, as most of this sketch, just as written during the war. On consulting U. S. Official Records, I now find that I have expressed the opinion of both

General Hoke and General Pickett. But it therein also appears that General Barton in his official report, says that before abandoning his attempt to cross Brice's Creek, he made, together with the two brigade commanders under him, a personal reconnoissance. He requested a court of inquiry, and this request was recommended accordingly to Adjutant-General Cooper by General Lee.

5 February. Rejoined our own brigade under General M. W. Ransom at Kinston, and 7 February reached Weldon on train *via* Goldsboro.

8 February. Ordered to Richmond, but countermanded just as the train is about to pull out. In camp again near the Moody house. Daily exercises in company and battalion drill, each Captain successively acting as regimental commander.

EXPEDITION TO SOUTH MILLS.

26 February. Off for Franklin, Va., on the Blackwater, crossed at Old South Quay, and marched to South Mills, Camden county, N C. From this point commissary stores are gathered; and a detachment of the enemy appearing, is chased down the Dismal Swamp canal by Colonel Dearing with his battalion of cavalry to within twelve miles of Norfolk. Captured a First Lieutenant, Surgeon and half a dozen privates. The object accomplished, the wagon trains under our protection having been loaded and started back, the return commences on the night of 4 March, and at the two creeks first to be crossed, Graham's company of the Fifty-sixth, as rear guard, had prepared bright fires that there should be no delay in crossing. The enemy were reported to have ascended the Chowan river, and were expected to pay us some attention before we were back across the Blackwater with our long train of wagons loaded with provisions. Halted at Sandy Cross, twenty miles from South Mills, for two days. No appearance of the enemy.

RECAPTURE SUFFOLK.

7 March. Proceeded to within eight miles of Old South Quay and learned that the enemy had again occupied Suffolk.

9 March. Passed through Somerton at 10 a. m., and at a

church within three miles of Suffolk, routed a cavalry outpost and pressed on to the railroad. Here the enemy's cavalry formed to charge the Twenty-fourth Regiment; but a few well-directed shots put them to flight. Captain Cicero Durham, promoted to Assistant Quartermaster for gallantry in the line and known as the Fighting Quartermaster of the Forty-ninth, gathered a squad of a dozen mounted men among the teamsters, and charged them in turn. Seeing the paucity of his numbers, they made a stand, but were attacked with such vigor that they resumed their flight before the infantry could get within range. The Fifty-sixth was second in the column, led by Lieutenant-Colonel Luke, and complimented on the good order sustained on a double-quick pursuit of three miles. The only escape for the cavalry was by completing a semi-circle outside the earthworks, defending the town, before we could run through on the street and road forming the chord to the arc. With their spurs and the aid of the shells from our artillery, they beat the race.

We had no cavalry and did not lose a man, but General Butler, like Job's war horse, "smelleth the battle afar off," and pens to the Secretary of War the following bulletin as it appears in Official War Records:

FORT MONROE, 12 March, 1864.

No. 1.

Cole's Cavalry, Second United States, had a skirmish the day before yesterday with the enemy near Suffolk, Va. While making a reconnoissance, they came upon Ransom's Brigade, consisting of four regiments of infantry, four pieces of artillery and 300 cavalry. The enemy made a charge upon two squadrons of Cole's, and were handsomely repulsed with a loss of about sixty.

The charge brought the colored soldiers into a hand-to-hand fight with the rebels, and the enthusiastic testimony of their officers is that that they behaved with the utmost courage, coolness and daring. I am perfectly satisfied with my negro cavalry.

BENJ. F BUTLER,
Major-General.

Hon. E. M. Stanton.

We pursued them to Bernard's Mills, capturing the camp of the white troops and returned with one piece of artillery and considerable stores.

Three negro soldiers took refuge in a house in town and refusing to surrender, perished in its flames. Another, rushing out with his gun and fighting to the last, was shot.

11 March. Returned to Franklin *via* Carrsville. 12 March, off by rail to Weldon, and in camp near Mr. Moody's at Garysburg, and 17 March, muster and inspection for January and February, 1864, by Colonel Paul F Faison.

THE PLYMOUTH CAMPAIGN.

14 April. The Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth and Fifty-sixth North Carolina State Troops, under General M. W Ransom, set out by rail and reported to Brigadier-General R. F Hoke at Tarboro. The Forty-ninth was on outpost duty near Edenton, and its place was now supplied by the Eighth, from Clingman's Brigade.

15 April. The column, consisting of Hoke's North Carolina Brigade under Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia Regiment, which was then with it; Kemper's Virginia, under Colonel Terry, and Ransom's North Carolina Brigade with Pegram's Battery, under General Ransom, and Stribblings', Graham's Virginia, Miller's, Moseley's and Reade's batteries of artillery belonging to Colonel Dearing's command, and Dearing's Battalion of cavalry, took up the line of march against Plymouth. At Hamilton we were joined by the Thirty-fifth North Carolina. Passing through Williamston and Jamesville, we reached the vicinity Sunday, the 17th, a little before nightfall.

Immediately a strong line of skirmishers, including Company I, of the Fifty-sixth, was thrown out from Ransom's Brigade, under Major Graham, and pushed forward nearly to the entrenchments. A picket post of eleven men was surprised, nine captured, one killed and one escaped. A reconnoissance in force was made in front of Fort Gray, on Warren's Neck, between the mouths of two creeks emptying into the Roanoke, two miles west of Plymouth, and Dearing's ar-

tillery crippled one of the boats so that it sank on reaching the wharf. A redoubt was immediately begun on the Jamesville road leading south for our 32-pound Parrott gun. The iron-clad Albemarle, Captain J. W. Cooke, was expected during the night. Fort Gray's armament was one 100-pounder and two 32-pounders.

18 April. The Albemarle, for some reason, was making slow progress down the Roanoke, and the day passed without a sign of it. Shelling at intervals was kept up, the Fifty-sixth suffering but one casualty, the wounding of a man in Company H. During the night Colonel Faison, with 250 men, had completed the earthwork near the Washington and Jamesville road from which to bombard the fort at Sanderson's.

At sundown a demonstration on both sides of Lee's Mill, Bath road, was made against the enemy's south front by the artillery and Ransom's Brigade. Our assaulting column was formed with the left resting on Frank Fagan's house on the Jamesville road, a mile and a quarter south of town, and two regiments, the Twenty-fourth and Eighth, beyond the Lee Mill road at Redd Gap. The Fifty-sixth was next on the left, and then the Thirty-fifth, while the Twenty-fifth connected us with Hoke's right. The batteries following on the heels of a battalion of sharpshooters composed of Companies B, I, E and A, of the Fifty-sixth, under their worthy Captains, Roberts, Harrill, Lockhart and Hughes, led by Captain Jno. C. Pegram, Assistant Adjutant-General, driving the enemy over their breastworks, advanced steadily from position to position, firing with the utmost rapidity, while the rest of the brigade in the line of battle kept pace with them. Ransom was conspicuous on the field, keeping his mount throughout the engagement. This was kept up till 10 p. m., the enemy replying with great spirit from his forts and gunboats, carrying twenty pieces. The object was as far as possible to draw the enemy's fire in this direction, while Hoke's Brigade assaulted in earnest the "85th Redoubt" at the Sanderson house, some distance to our left. The fort was carried after a very stubborn resistance and the death of its commander, Captain Chapin. Among our killed we mourn the

loss of the brigade commander, the gallant Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia. Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson, of Company D, and 14 men of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina were wounded at our end. Colonel Mercer was a West Point classmate of Generals J E. B. Stuart, Hood, Custis Lee, and W D. Pender. He is buried at Tarboro beside his last named comrade.

19 April. Towards day Colonel Wm. J. Clarke, with his own, the Twenty-fourth, and the Fifty-sixth Regiment, was posted below the town on the Columbia road, to prevent escape in that direction. But the enemy was still confident in the strength of his fortifications, even after the loss of the "85th Redoubt" and the arrival of our ram, Albemarle, the same night passing the big guns at Warren's Neck unharmed. It sank one of their gunboats, the Southfield, and chased off the other two, the naval commander, Flusser, being killed on the deck of the Miami. The enemy still held a continuous, thoroughly fortified line, well constructed, from a point on the river, near Warren's Neck, along their west and south fronts, and terminating on the east in a swamp, bordering which a deep creek, known as Conaby, a mile or two further east, runs into the Roanoke river, on the south bank of which Plymouth is situated. It has four streets parallel with the river and five at right angles to it. Fort Williams, projecting beyond the south face of the parallelogram, is ready for action on all four sides and enfilades, right and left, the whole south front of the fortifications, while Battery Worth was built to command the west, water and land, approach. Between the latter and Warren's Neck was 85th Redoubt at Sanderson's house. At Boyle's steam mill near the road entering Second street from the west was another redoubt outside the entrenchments, and within the southwest angle still another at Harriet Toodles' On the east centre was Fort Comfort, with a redoubt on either side of the Columbia road at James Bateman's and Charles Latham's. General Hoke ordered an assault from this (east) side by Ransom's Brigade. Accordingly that night our sharpshooters effected a crossing of Conaby creek on felled trees with some opposition. A pontoon bridge was laid, and before the night was far ad-

vanced, the brigade was over. With a line of skirmishers out in front, the brigade slept in line of battle, and perhaps never more soundly, for tired nature's sweet restorer was welcome, even on the eve of certain battle.

20 April. At the first break of day Ransom was again in the saddle, and his ringing voice came down the line: "Attention, brigade!" Every man was upon his feet instantly, and the adjusting of twisted blankets across the left shoulder and under the belt at the right hip was only the work of another moment; the line of battle was formed, "Fix bayonets," "Trail arms!" "Forward march!" and the charge began. The alignment was as follows: The Fifty-sixth on the right, flanked by Company I, as sharpshooters, (resting on the Roanoke and near the "Albemarle," then engaged, as it had been at intervals through the night, with Battery Worth on the river face of the town), and Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth, Eighth and Twenty-fourth successively on to the left. On our part of the line a large drove of cattle was encountered and driven on as a living wall between us and the enemy until they reached the canal, down which they refused to plunge, or escort us further. Maddened by this strange spectacle of "man's inhumanity to man," they turned about, and "with no reputation to lose," dashing through our line, sought safety in flight. The canal was found with steep banks, but fortunately with fordable water. Ranks were necessarily broken in getting across, but were soon in perfect order on the farther side, and the forward movement resumed. The next obstacle was a swamp, in places waist deep, through which the regiment floundered as best it could, impeded by the mire and cypress knees with which it abounded. The Fifty-sixth was the first through, and immediately reforming under an oblique fire from the left, charged up a slight hill, and routed the opposing regiment sheltered behind a fence of palings, here the outer line of the town. This and the adjacent houses blocked further advance in regimental line of battle.

But the halt here was only for a moment. Company I pressed straight forward, sweeping everything before them between Water street and the river bank, while the Twenty-fifth on getting through the swamp and finding the Fifty-sixth

in its front, debouched to the right and thus went up Water street between the Fifty-sixth and its detached company. At the same instant General Ransom, reaching this point, the Fifty-sixth moved off by the left flank and entered the town on the next street east, by filing to the right, left in front. Major Graham was at the extreme left, now head of column, and on gaining the open space about the county jail, deployed the regiment forward into line of battle, just in time to checkmate a battery of artillery taking position to rake the street with its guns. These movements and the obstacles encountered, again divided the regiment, carrying the Colonel and Lieutenant-Colonel back to Water street to direct the extreme right, while the Major, with eight companies, pressed forward to silence the artillery. The fire, delivered before we could reach them, was fortunately a little too high, the shells in a direct line being plainly visible as they passed over, and the guns were at once in our possession—not, however, until one brave fellow had blown up his limber in our faces, killing his nearest horses and wounding several of our men. It would be a pleasure here to record his name. The man retreating with the caisson was killed in the street, with four of his six horses, by a shell from Fort Williams.

This wing of the regiment, then, without waiting for any support, as all seemed to have enough to do, swept on fighting between these two streets the entire length of the town, and without a halt charged the redoubt in their front, constituting a west section of the enemy's heavy line of fortifications, facing front and rear. Here they captured a Pennsylvania regiment, and Major Graham, mounting the works with the regimental flag, waved it to Hoke's Brigade, now under Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis (afterwards Brigadier-General), and thus announced that the way was open on that side. In this last charge the Twenty-fourth went in abreast with us, having entered the town by the Columbia road, which leads into Second street, after crossing Conaby creek with a northwest trend and then midway changing to due west. While the Eighth and Thirty-fifth swung around to invest Fort Comfort, the Twenty-fourth overcoming all opposition before them at the Bateman and Latham redoubts, pushed forward

and connected with our left flank as we struck the fortifications,—redoubt and entrenched camp.

Major Graham's prisoners, some 300 of infantry and artillery, were turned over to Captain Joseph G. Lockhart, when, under shelter of a ravine, uniting his battalion with Hoke's Brigade, he swept down first the west and then the south intrenchments to Fort Williams, into which General Wessels had withdrawn with the remnant of his army. The Twenty-fourth came up on the other side. After consultation with Colonel Lewis, it was deemed unnecessary to assault it, as its surrender would be compelled by our artillery with the aid of sharpshooters being rapidly posted to overlook its interior from the windows and tops of the nearest houses. The two opposing generals then met in a personal interview, and the demand to capitulate was refused. But the inevitable was soon acknowledged by raising a white flag, as we had silenced every gun in the fort.

Meantime, the part assigned to Harrill's men, under their fearless leader, had been as effectually accomplished. Through water hip deep, they had crossed the canal and swamp, and keeping near the river, passing around houses and bursting through garden and yard fences, they reached the rear of Battery Worth, containing the 200-pounder, specially provided to anticipate the coming of our iron-clad Albemarle. One volley was sufficient. The white flag was run up and the battery, with some twenty artillerymen, surrendered to him.

Taking the prisoners with them from this battery on the river, they immediately charged to their left and thus struck in the flank and rear the right section of the enemy's line of battle occupying the breastworks, here on Water street, facing up the river. His demand to surrender was promptly complied with, and while Harrill here gathered in his prisoners, largely outnumbering his own rank and file, Lewis' men who had held the attention of the enemy in their front, came in at a double-quick over the causeway leading through the swamp on the west of Plymouth, passed Harrill's position and joined Graham's detachment at the upper ravine further to the south, as above noted.

How does it happen, then, that the capture of Battery

Worth, or Fort Hal, noted above as by Company I, has been claimed for Company B, with whom were Colonel Faison and Colonel Dearing, a portion of the Twenty-fifth supporting the artillery? Both claims are literally true.

A correspondent to the *Fayetteville Observer*, 22 April, 1864, says: "On the river face of the town was a camp entrenched to resist any attack from the water, and a little lower down an earthwork for the same purpose." The latter, admitted to be Battery Worth, we must observe the distinction between the two, though close together.

As to the time of the first movement, Captain Harrill's report is embodied in the foregoing narration. General Wessells report: "At daylight the following day, 20 April, while my right and front were seriously threatened, the enemy advanced rapidly against my left, assaulting and carrying the line in that quarter, penetrating the town along the river and capturing Battery Worth." This left the entrenched camp not yet captured, and as no other Confederate troops were in that quarter at that early hour, the claim of Company I to Battery Worth is thus affirmed.

From this point of time General Wessells thus continues: "A line of skirmishers was formed from the breastworks perpendicularly towards the river in hopes of staying the advance. This effort succeeded for a time; but the troops seemed discouraged and fell back to the entrenchments."

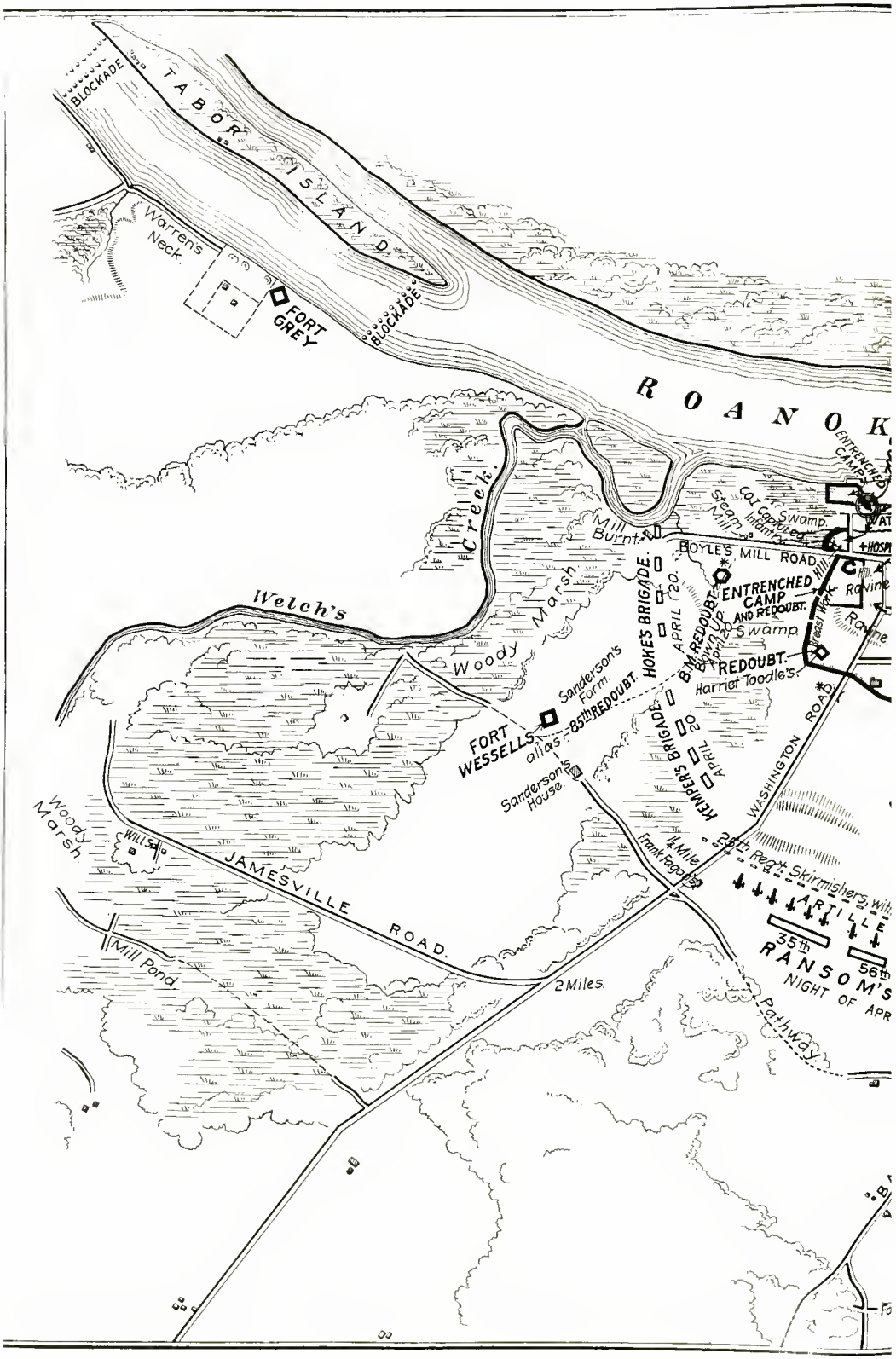
The conduct of the Fifty-sixth was well calculated to create such discouragement, as it broke through all obstacles, driving the enemy from the streets, yards, houses, cellars, and bomb-proofs from which Major Graham says they came out like a colony of prairie puppies, or ground hogs on the 2d of February. As those not captured in this charge were thus gradually pressed back to their double-faced entrenchments, the infantry garrison in the entrenched camp at Battery Worth, guarding the water approach and, owing to the contour of the ground, not in sight from his side of the fortifications when Capt. Harrill some two hours before had taken the artillerymen out of the battery, appear now to have had their attention diverted from the commotion of the Albemarle down stream to their right and Hoke up the river to their left. They now

for the first time saw their enemy in the town, and were ready with the portion of the retreating line that had joined them, to enfilade Company B as it came up. Here Colonel Faison, with this gallant company under Captain F N. Roberts, had his hands full for some time and accomplished important results, as described by the subsequent Captain, then First Sergeant A. R. Carver:

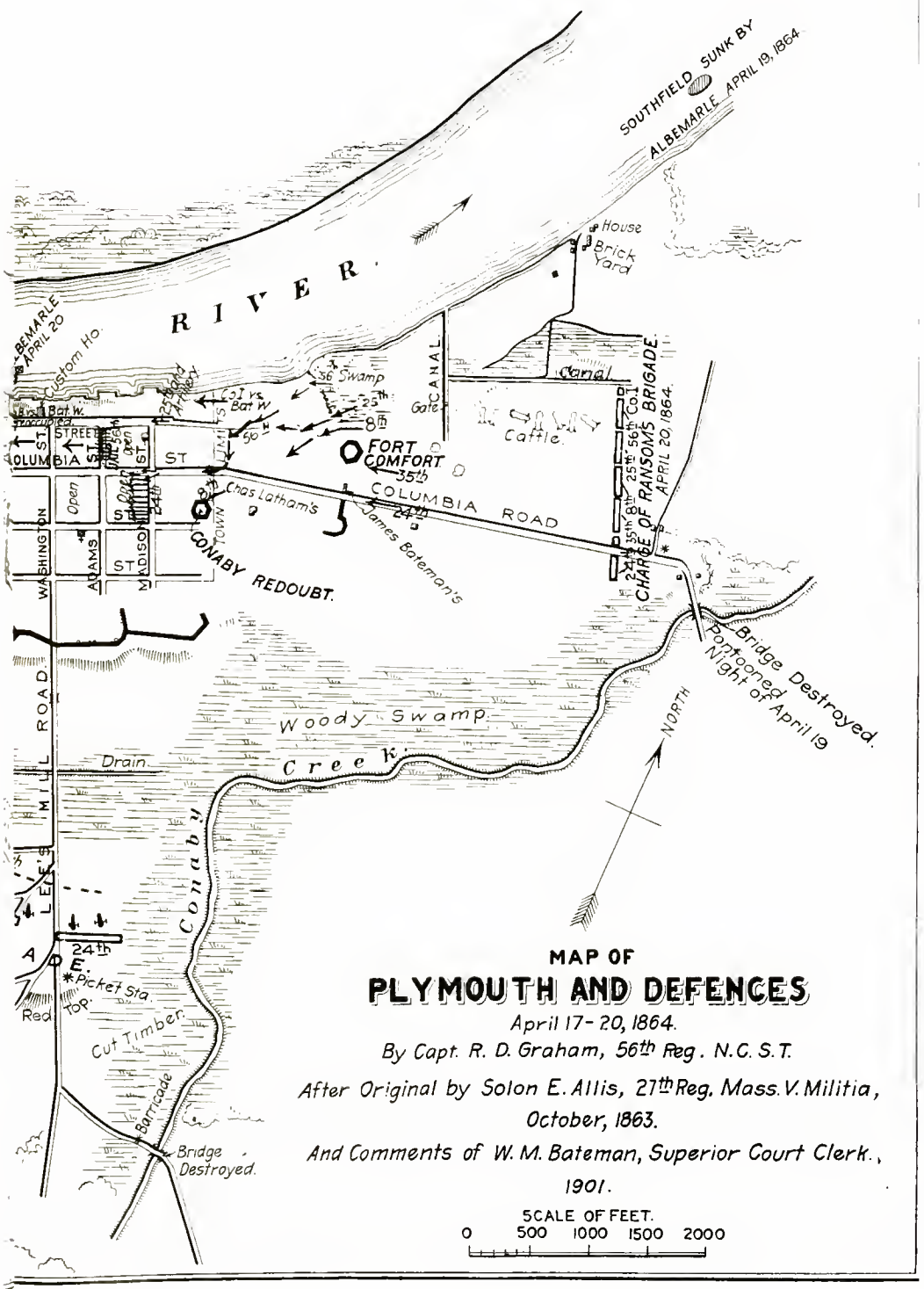
"In this charge our Lieutenant, B. W Thornton, fell on Water street with a bullet through the side of his forehead near the eye. I stopped long enough to see the wound, and thought him dead; but he survived for a day or two. Our company had become detached by the evolutions and obstacles in getting through the town. Just before General Wessells capitulated, say by 9 or 10 o'clock, we had reached the vicinity of Fort Hal, with the 200-pound gun bearing on the river. It was full of the enemy, on whom we were firing with our rifles and they were briskly returning our fire. Colonel Faison came up to me during this firing, when I pointed to a hill on the right overlooking the fort, and said if the artillery were posted there, we would have the fort in five minutes. Soon after he left me, I saw our battery open from the hill, and immediately a white handkerchief was hoisted on a bayonet above the fort. I was very near and ran for the fort. General Dearing got across the moat and into the fort ahead of me, and jumped on the big gun as if he were going to spike it, when I met an officer at the gate and demanded his surrender. He asked to be allowed to surrender to some higher officer. I called General Dearing and he told him to surrender to me. He thereupon handed over his sword and pistol, which I kept during the war. I think he belonged to the infantry He had on his overcoat."

So there were two captures of the same fort, separated by an interval of two or three hours.

General Dearing (Colonel at Plymouth), subsequently fell 6 April, 1865, at High Bridge, on the retreat towards Appomattox Court House, in a hand-to-hand contest with Major Read, of General Ord's staff, both antagonists going down together. The big gun was naturally the chief attraction to him, and of course he believed to the day of his death that his



BLOCKADE
TABOR ISLAND
Warren's Neck.
FORT GREY.
BLOCKADE
ROANOK
ENTRENCHED CAMP
Swamp.
Co. I Captured Infantry
Steam Mill
Mill Burnt.
BOYLE'S MILL ROAD
Hill
ENTRENCHED CAMP AND REDOUBT.
Swamp
Ravine
Ravine
Creek.
Welch's
Woody Marsh
HOKE'S BRIGADE.
APRIL 20.
B.M. REDOUBT.
Blown Up April 20.
REDOUBT.
Harriet Toodle's.
Sanderson's Farm.
FORT WESSELLS
alias 85th REDOUBT.
Sanderson's House.
KEMPER'S BRIGADE.
APRIL 20.
WASHINGTON ROAD
Woody Marsh.
WILLS
JAMESVILLE ROAD.
Mill Pond.
2 Miles.
1/4 Mile
Frank Fagan's
25th Reg't. Skirmishers, with
ARTILLE
35th
56th
RANSOM'S
NIGHT OF APR
Pathway.



MAP OF

PLYMOUTH AND DEFENCES

April 17-20, 1864.

By Capt. R. D. Graham, 56th Reg. N.C.S.T.

After Original by Solon E. Allis, 27th Reg. Mass. V. Militia, October, 1863.

And Comments of W. M. Bateman, Superior Court Clerk., 1901.

SCALE OF FEET.

0 500 1000 1500 2000

portion of the line had captured it, whereas it clearly appears that it had been silent for at least two hours, ever since Captain Harrill carried off the artillerymen who had served it. It was the infantry of the adjoining entrenched camp, together with some others, who had taken refuge in the vacant fort, that he and Colonel Faison so effectually silenced; and we may say in the spirit of the generous Schley, "there was glory enough for all."

The possibilities of such independent actions by detachments may be better understood when it is remarked that within the fortifications on the west side were three ravines, and on an elevation between the lower one and the river was planted Battery Worth, with the entrenched camp lower down. The redoubt at Boyle's steam mill on the road on this side of the town, appears to have been blown up by a shell entering its magazine, and so it offered no resistance to our infantry, while that at Harriet Toodle's, about the southwest angle, and the intervening entrenched camps were taken with the connecting breastworks.

The writer was near General Hoke when he received General Wessels, accompanied by his officers, as his prisoner. There was everything in his courteous and considerate bearing to lessen the sting of defeat. Dismounting from his horse and clasping the captive's hand, he assured him of his respect and sympathy, and added: "After such a gallant defense you can bear the fortune of war without self-reproach."

General Wessels' official report, made after his exchange four months later, says that Hoke's conduct was courteous and soldier-like. His return of casualties, killed, wounded and missing was 127 officers and 2,707 men, from the Sixteenth Connecticut Infantry, Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, Second North Carolina (Union) Infantry, Twelfth New York Cavalry, Eighty-fifth New York Infantry, Twenty-fourth New York Battery, and One Hundred and First and One Hundred and Third Pennsylvania Infantry. Besides 3,000 stand of small arms and some twenty pieces of artillery, there was a large quantity of all other supplies.

In our advance there were no shirks. The respective muster rolls might be exhibited as lists of those deserving hon-

orable mention. The splendid conduct of Color Guard Corporal Job. C. Hughes, of Camden county, is here gratefully remembered.

The regimental colors were carried by a Sergeant, later on given the rank of Ensign by the Confederate Congress, and he was supported by eight volunteer Corporals. This guard of three ranks in line of battle formed the extreme left of the right centre company. This position fell to Company D, and was retained by it to the end of the war. It was thus in the assault upon the redoubt beyond the head of Second street that the Captain of this company found Hughes at his side while a blue coat in front was drawing a bead on him within a space less than the width of the street—"Hughes, kill that Yank," followed, and the enemy's aim was as deliberately changed to save his own life. There was one report from two rifles, and both men went down. It was the last shot ever fired by the Federal. His sight was as good as that of his foeman, his minie ball perforating Hughes' blanket thirteen times, as it was twisted and worn as above described, but ended with the penetration of the breast-bone—probably owing to his not having driven the ball home in too rapidly loading his piece. Within about a month he was at his post again. He was a brother of the gallant Captain of Company A. In this charge the brave Corporal Wm. Daves, volunteer to the Color Guard from Company I, was killed, and J. P Sossaman, of Company K, was also severely wounded at the flag.

The "Albemarle" had advanced along the river front with the charge, firing over the line. The honor of capturing Fort Comfort on our left, fell to the Thirty-fifth North Carolina and it was renamed Fort Jones in honor of its Colonel.

General Hoke was thereupon promoted to Major-General in recognition of this successful initiation of his campaign, and of a well earned record for gallantry and efficiency in the Army of Northern Virginia, and Colonel Dearing was made a Brigadier-General. Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis was soon thereafter promoted to Brigadier-General.

In the Fifty-sixth Regiment, we have one complete company report of casualties:

Company D: Mortally wounded, James W Hall, John W Holsenback, and Simpson Riley—3. Severely wounded, Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson, Corporals G. W Montgomery, and Wm. W Redding, Privates Wm. F G. Barbee, D. W King, Cyrus Laws, James R. Miller, Burroughs Pool, James Roberts, Lewellyn Taylor, Thomas J Taylor, Harris Wilkerson—12. The commander of the company and others were also struck, but not put *hors du combat.* In Company F, Lieutenant V J. Palmer, bravely leading Company F, was severely wounded as we passed the court house. Lieutenant B. W Thornton, of Company B, was mortally wounded, the ball entering just above the eye, and coming out near the ear, but was still able, though his sight was gone, to recognize the writer when he visited him with other wounded that evening. He was a faithful and efficient soldier from Fayetteville. The other regiments of the brigade also bore conspicuous parts. One company, at least, of the Fifty-sixth, and perhaps nearly the whole regiment, here secured a complete equipment of first class rifles.

Company I was most fortunate in doing its gallant part, having none permanently disabled and the ever faithful Daves at the colors being its only man killed to-day.

Since writing the above we have found in the files of the *Fayetteville Observer,* 9 May, 1864, the report of Adjutant John W Faison, and give the casualties accordingly:

COMPANY A—Killed: L. Sawyer. Wounded: Sergeant S. Smith, Corporal T. G. Ferrell, Wm. Garrett, J. C. Hughes (in breast), J H. Johnson, Henry Williams, Wm. Gallopp and Wm. Gilbert.

COMPANY B—Wounded: Lieutenant B. W Thornton, mortally, Sergeant L. H. Hurst, W Carver, J. T. Moore, Wm. Handy and R. H. Averitt.

COMPANY C—Wounded: J. S. Sawyer, B. Hackney, J Howard, R. Pendergrast, L. Williams and J Parker.

COMPANY D—(Given above, 3 killed, 12 wounded).

COMPANY E—Wounded: Lieutenant J. M. Jacobs, Sergeant A. Harrill, Corporal Wm. Turner, H. McNeill, H. Wheeler, W H. Holland, W H. McBryde, W H. Thomas and Joseph Banks.

COMPANY F—Lieutenant V J Palmer, Corporal A. Nolan, Allen Cogdale, Adney Cogdale, Wm. Chitwood, H. M. Gladden, J. G. Webb, J W Lindsay, T. P Cabiniss and N. W Ross.

COMPANY G—Killed: T. W Nobbin and Izark D. Kinzey; wounded, H. Allen, E. Carlin, J Hollingsworth, L. M. Greer, H. Perry, Leroy Smith, and S. Taylor.

COMPANY H—Wounded: Lieutenant S. R. Holton, C. Donoho mortally, T. J. Barnwell, N Fox, T. Gately, J. Miles, D. Miller, B. J. Page, Wm. Thompson, D. Thompson and J. Chisenhall.

COMPANY I—Killed: Wm. Daves, T. R. Campbell, Sam Green, H. Harrill, J. P Philbeck, H. W Price and R. H. Wall.

COMPANY K—Wounded: John Strider, J. P Sossaman and W Auten.

In the same issue is found the report of Captain S. H. Gee, Assistant Adjutant and Inspector General, giving Ransom's total casualties in the three days' operations, as follows:

	Killed.		Wounded.		Total.
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	
8th N. C. T.	2	18	5	102	127
24th "	2	11	3	85	101
25th "	0	3	0	20	23
35th "	1	19	4	84	108
56th "	0	4	4	80	88
Maj. Moseley's B. Art.	0	0	0	17	17
Maj. Read's "	0	2	1	9	12
	5	57	17	397	476

The surrender, already noted, took place at 10:30 a. m. Several interesting, though partial, accounts of this affair were published in the *Fayetteville Observer* soon after the battle.

21 April. Major J. W Graham, with Company I, Twenty-fourth, Captain Boykin; Company K, Twenty-fifth, Lieutenant Bullerson; and Company D, Fifty-sixth, Captain R. D. Graham, was placed in charge of Fort Gray on Warren's Neck.

22 April. Visited by the commanding Major-General, who found the post in much better order than we had.

25 April. Detachment rejoined the brigade. At 10 a. m. the column set out for Washington, N. C., leaving as a garrison at Plymouth Martin's North Carolina Brigade, which has just joined us.

26 April. Arrived in front of Washington, N C. Some shells thrown at us from the enemy's forts. The enemy withdrew during the night to concentrate at New Bern. Thus the second point in the campaign was scored in Hoke's favor, this time without the loss of a man.

28 April—2 May At Greenville probably awaiting the arrival of the Confederate marines and pontoons from Richmond. Crossed the Tar river here and Contentnea creek at Coward's bridge, where we were joined by Whitford's Sixty-seventh North Carolina State Troops.

5 May. We passed the Neuse on a pontoon bridge, not far from where we left the Contentnea. On nearing New Bern, Lewis' Brigade made a dash upon the redoubts at Deep Gully; but the enemy fled to avoid capture. The main column then crossed the Trent River at Pollocksville, captured a block house near a mill dam, and took position near the railroad bridge. Dearing's cavalry and artillery moved to the south and captured the block house on Brice's creek that General Barton thought such a Gibraltar last February, and took fifty prisoners. A section of Dixon's North Carolina Battery, from Orange county, under Lieutenant Halcott P Jones, supported by part of Evans' South Carolina Brigade, now under General "Live Oak" Walker, moved to the front and engaged the enemy's railroad iron-clad monitor. Ransom's Brigade was not far from the south bank of the Trent.

Preparations were made for putting in the river that night a pontoon bridge, first parallel with the stream, securing it to the bank at the lower end and swinging the other across with the current under the protection of our guns, to the New Bern side within the enemy's line of fortifications. The spirit of the troops assured success, and thus was to culminate our North Carolina campaign of 1864.

PETERSBURG AND RICHMOND.

6 May. The intended assault has been abandoned, and

General Palmer, U. S. A., is left in quiet possession of New Bern; for the morning finds us on a forced march for old Virginia again. General Benjamin Franklin Butler is coming up the south side of the James river *via* Bermuda Hundreds, with 30,000 men to attack Petersburg. If possible, we must get there first. General R. F. Hoke, in a recent letter, says: "Your mention of what was intended at New Bern is correct and I had no doubt of its success. The recall was one of the greatest disappointments I ever had."

8 May. Reach Kinston at 8 a. m. and *via* Goldsboro proceed to Weldon.

9 May. Off for Petersburg by rail as far as Jarratt's Station. Here Kautz's Federal cavalry have dashed in and cut the line of railway. March thence along the track to Stony creek, about twenty miles, that night. The weird hooting of the great owls in the swamps was almost human in its intonations and called forth comments, half in earnest and half in raillery, here and there along the line, such as: "That is a bad sign, boys; hard times in old Virginia, and worse a'coming."

10 May. At Stony creek we take the trains that have come out to meet us, and are soon in Petersburg. Stack arms on Poplar Lawn. The generous hospitality of Judge Lyon, Wm. R. Johnson, and other citizens is pleasantly remembered. Hear that the place has been held till our arrival by the single brigade of Johnson Hagood's South Carolinians. Lieutenant-General D. H. Hill, too earnest to be long quiet, is occupying the anomalous position of volunteer Aid-de-Camp to General Beauregard, commanding at Petersburg, pending a dispute with the President as to an assignment proper to his rank. (This quarrel seems to have resulted in a failure to present his appointment to the Congress for confirmation.) He was noted for a disposition "to feeel the enemy;" and on such occasions his feelings were very rough. Our *coup de main* of 2 July, 1863, at Crump's farm below Richmond, he had just repeated here with more terrible odds, against General Butler's advancing column. With this handful of men, he had met him near Chester and made such a desperate assault as to put him on the defensive to await

FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. Otis P. Mills, Captain, Co. G.
2. A. C. Robertson, Ord'ly-Sergt., Co. G.
3. W. G. Graves, Captain, Co. H.
4. L. Harrill, Captain, Co. I.
5. Jos. M. Walker, 1st Lieut., Co. I.
6. C. P. Tanner, 2d Lieut., Co. I.
7. J. F. McNeely, Captain, Co. K.
8. J. W. Shepherd, 1st Lieut., Co. K.
9. Chas. M. Payne, 2d Lieut., Co. K. (Picture in Supplementary Group, 4th vol.)

further developments. In the time thus gained reinforcements arrived, and we knew that with the Army of Northern Virginia we could successfully hold Richmond and Petersburg against all opposing forces then in the field. With Major-General Hoke, there were now Ransom's North Carolina, Lewis' North Carolina, Walker's (formerly Evans') South Carolina, Corse's Virginia, and Kemper's Virginia Brigades. This division took position a short distance beyond Swift creek.

11 May. Moved to Half-Way House. The enemy now appears in great force between us and Petersburg, occupying both the railroad and turnpike. We offer battle; but nothing follows beyond some sharp skirmishing. Ransom's Brigade forms the extreme Confederate left, near the river.

BATTLE OF 12 MAY.

12 May. This brigade is moved across the turnpike and posted near the winter quarters on rising ground to the right, facing Petersburg, forming now the right flank. In the afternoon, advanced down the railroad towards Petersburg, and occupied breastworks at a point near where the fortified line crosses this road. Here the line terminates after changing its general course and running off at almost a right angle (towards the river on the left near ———— house). Our artillery is engaged with that of the enemy in the woods to the front. A line of skirmishers is scarcely formed and thrown out to our right and rear for a reconnoissance under "the fighting Quartermaster of the Forty-ninth," Captain Cicero Durham, when they receive a volley from a line of battle in ambush, and this gallant leader and many of his brave comrades have fought their last fight. A rush is made by the enemy, and Generals Hoke and Ransom, just arrived at the house for consultation, barely escape capture. On came the line as to an easy victory, but not as quick as was our command in leaping to the other side of the breastworks. After a sharp fight they were repulsed by the well-directed shots of a portion of the Fifty-sixth Regiment holding the top of the steep bank of earth, while their comrades in the deep ditch below handed up their rifles as rapidly

as they could be reloaded. There were here many instances of individual bravery, and it is a matter of regret that the State, at whose call these men offered their lives, has no fuller account of them. In Company B, D. P Blizzard was killed, and the gallant A. R. Carver, then a Lieutenant and subsequently Captain, lost an arm. David McKee, of Company D, Orange county, is now remembered as among the conspicuous ones in the position which he occupied, and from which he fired sixteen times with steady aim, and it is thought, with fatal effect, at such close quarters. When the exposed portion of the brigade, after resisting the assault upon it, had been withdrawn behind this effective fire, the Fifty-sixth as rear guard, retired in perfect order. They had simply practiced the tactics of Forrest and checkmated a rear attack of the enemy. "Face about and get in their rear," was his only order for a similar occasion. The perfect discipline of the command was evinced by there being no sign of a panic. Thomas Owens and George Griffin, of Company I, were also among those who displayed coolness and courage in this action, the former being severely wounded. From exposure he had lost his voice so that he could not speak above a whisper. The wound directly above his breast instantaneously cured his *aphonia*.

But the enemy is evidently in such force that we concentrate upon our second line of defences. Each side watches for the initiative from the other. At night there is cheering along our lines, and the cause is that Beauregard has just come in from Petersburg.

SECOND DAY'S FIGHT.

13 May. The writer saw Beauregard on the field. Of medium size and military bearing, his most striking feature is his sharp bright eye, and a thoughtful, intelligent expression befitting his reputation as one of the best military engineers. Firing kept up through the day by the artillery and skirmishers.

THIRD DAY'S FIGHT.

14 May. Brigadier-General Ransom is severely wounded

in the left arm by a minie ball and does not return to the brigade till the fall. Colonel Wm. J Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth, as senior Colonel, succeeds him. Battle at long range continued through the day.

FOURTH DAY'S FIGHT.

15 May Yesterday's program continued, in which we again lose a brigade commander, Colonel Clarke being wounded in the shoulder by the fragment of a shell. Colonel Leroy M. McAfee, of the Forty-ninth, then assumes command. The Fifty-sixth occupied a position on the line near the Washington Artillery, of New Orleans.

Without the means of corroboration, I here note that we hear that the President, who has come down from Richmond, orders General Beauregard to make a general assault to-morrow, and that Beauregard files a protest, in view of the terrible odds against his available force—at least 3 to 2, probably double that—and protected by breastworks.

BATTLE OF DREWRY'S BLUFF.

16 May. Soon after midnight the brigade is moved from the trenches, occupied for the last three days, and formed in line of battle across the turnpike, facing towards Petersburg, with the left of the Fifty-sixth resting on the turnpike. Up to this time it was thought we were going out to get a rest. This opinion, however, was dispelled by the issuing of an extra quantity of cartridges. But for the first time in our history, we start in on the reserve line. Just before dawn we move forward supporting Bushrod R. Johnson's Tennessee Brigade. They suffer severely near the turnpike, their advance being impeded by obstructions of telegraph wire upon which many of them are tripped within deadly range. But they gallantly carry the line in their front, while our Twenty-fourth and Forty-ninth take the enemy's line of works in a piece of woods to their right. The assault is, as Mr. Davis had predicted, successful at every point; while Major-General Robert Ransom, having come out from Richmond with three Brigades, is sweeping down their left flank, and rear, capturing some regiments entire. Before Ransom

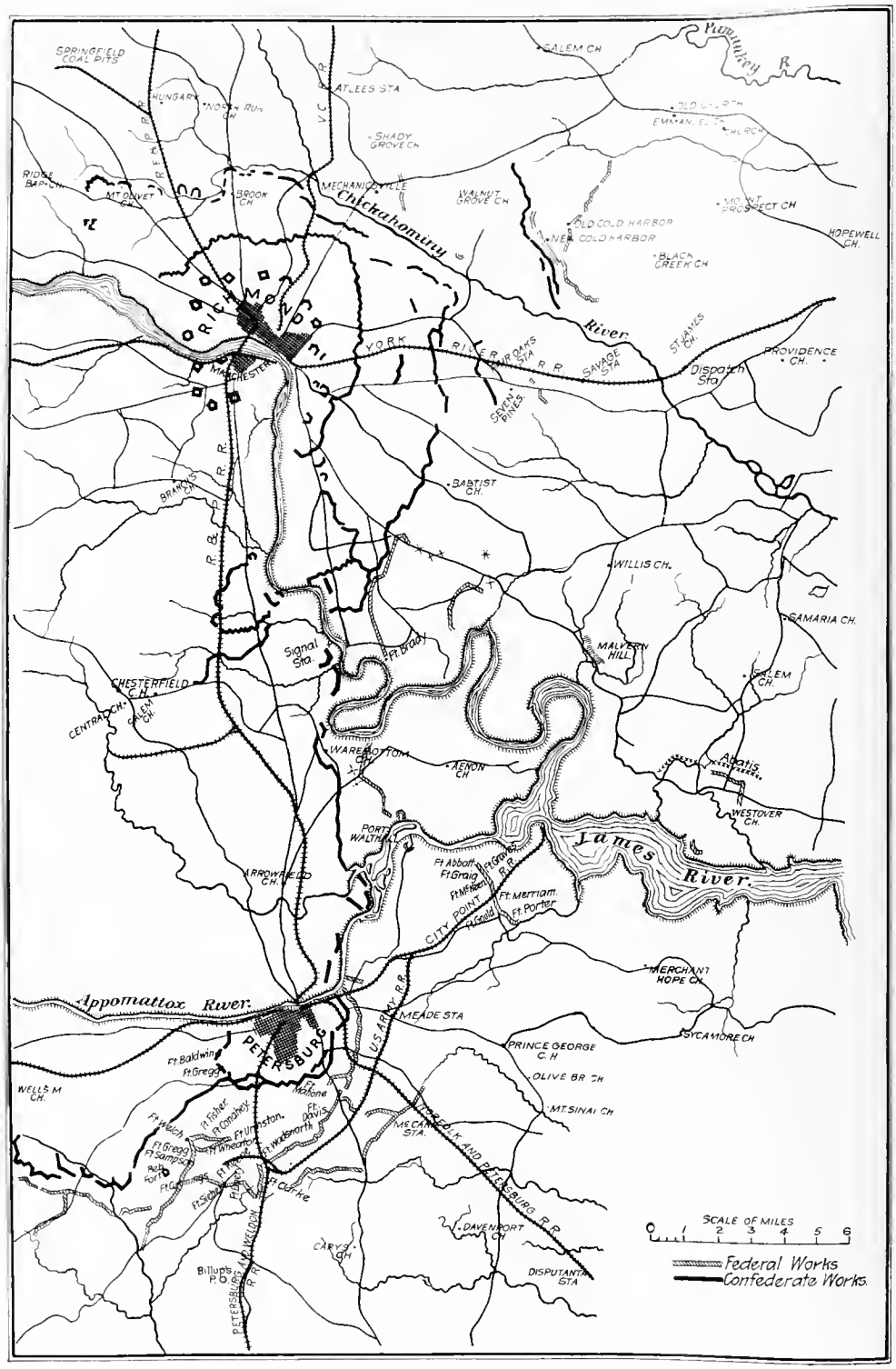
reaches them, spasmodic efforts here and there are made to regain lost points along the line, from which we had dislodged them; but they are repulsed in each instance. They rush down the turnpike with their artillery nearly to our lines, just taken from them, and open fire; but their guns are soon in our hands, men and horses going down under the terrible fire with which they are met. It was not far from this point that the writer saw the President during this battle. He was probably nearer Butler than he had been for four years, as his courier whom we captured in the vicinity, said he was then very near the general. (At the National Democratic Convention of 1860, in Charleston, S. C., Butler gave fifty-seven successive votes for Davis as his choice for President of the United States.)

And now we waited anxiously for the attacks to be made on the right flank and rear of the enemy by General Whiting with the two or three brigades in his hands on the Petersburg side. But in vain! This plan carried out with the courage for which the General had already made a reputation among the bravest and the best soldiers in the Army of Northern Virginia, should have resulted in the capture of all Butler's artillery and wagons, (that he was safely withdrawing in our sight), and a good portion of his Army of the James. General D. H. Hill was with General Whiting, but without command. Both his prayers and imprecations to deliver the *coup de grace* were without avail. Is it an evil genius that thus hovers above the Confederate cross? For this is not the first time that it has been checked on the high tide to an effective victory by a voice that certainly came not out of the North, saying: "Thus far shall thou go, and no farther."

The only casualty remembered in the regiment as of to-day is the mortally wounding of Green Bowers, of Company D, by a rifle ball which also went through an artillery horse near him on the front line.

BUTLER BOTTLED UP.

17 May. Though we have not captured Butler, we have "bottled him up" (as General Grant reports it to Mr. Lincoln), between the James and Appomattox rivers, and a



Region embraced in the Operations of the Armies
against
RICHMOND and PETERSBURG, VA.
Reduced from Map of the Engineer Bureau, War Dept

much smaller force will be amply sufficient to hold our shorter line across the narrow neck from bend to bend of the here converging rivers, which lower down diverge considerably before uniting, thus suggesting General Grant's figure. Our line extends from near Bermuda Hundreds on the former to a point in the vicinity of the Confederate Fort Clifton on the latter. D. H. Hill urges another assault.

18 May. With a picket line advanced, we throw up a counter line of works, receiving a shelling from Butler's gunboats.

19 May. Company D is out in front, some 500 yards to the right of the Howlett house, rectifying the line of rifle pits to conform to the possible line of attack and defence. Consultation with General W G. Lewis, recently promoted from Lieutenant-Colonel to Brigadier-General, and well known as an engineer of ability, who appears on the line.

BATTLE OF WARE BOTTOM CHURCH, OR CLAY'S FARM.

20 May. Companies B and H, Captains F. N Roberts and W G. Graves, relieve Company D, which joins the regiment. About 2 p. m., Beauregard makes a general assault from right to left on Butler's line, and drives it in three-quarters of a mile on the right, and something less on the left. Our troops on this part of the line were put in too spasmodically, in unsupported detachments, allowing the enemy to reinforce from point to point as successively threatened, or to make a counter-charge and flank movement with fresh troops against ours before they could recover from the disorder incident to a headlong rush into the contested positions. The fight upon the part of the Fifty-sixth ended with the enemy's picket line, from which we had driven their advanced line of battle, in our possession. The loss to the Fifty-sixth was 90 killed and wounded in less than half as many minutes, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke being one of the wounded. In Company D, as follows: Washington Blackwood, Jesse Clark, John Clark, James Hicks, Elzy Riley, James Roberts, Wm. N. Simmes and Corporal J. Erwin Laycock; also James M. Clark, Ensign, and Jesse Brown and William E. Faucett, all wounded. Jesse Brown, like Corporal Hughes at Ply-

mouth, had his twisted blanket pierced a dozen times by a minie ball which burnt his arm without breaking the bone, and he will return to duty in a few days. The Captain of Company D promoted Solon E. Birkhead from private to First Sergeant for conspicuous bravery in this battle, known as the battle of Ware Bottom Church, or Clay's Farm. Among the wounded in Company H was Lieutenant R. W Belo, who lost a foot. Company I lost some of its best men: Sergeant Amos Harrill (brother of the Captain), Corporal W C. Beam, George Griffin and the brothers, Jack and Joe Tessenear, all killed, and twelve men wounded. Company A here lost a great favorite in the killing of the brave Isaac G. Gallopp.

21 May. Busy strengthening the new line, and 22 May Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson and others rejoined the company, having been wounded at Plymouth.

23 May. Flag of truce to bury the dead on the contested ground between the two lines. A ghastly sight. Some are not recovered, as they fell within the enemy's lines, three days ago—a sad uncertainty around some hearthstones until peace on earth shall return again. Information is obtained of the gallant "Live Oak" Walker, whom we met on the field just to our right, 20 May, in command of Evans' (S. C.) Brigade, Colonel Elliott now commanding. The enemy report him doing well after the amputation of his leg.

Some of the casualties of the last week's operations were:

COMPANY B—Killed: D. P Blizzard; wounded, Lieutenant A. R. Carver and John Tart.

COMPANY C—Wounded: Corporal J. Matthews and Wm. Childers.

COMPANY E—Sergeant J N Clark and B. Garner; wounded, B. F. Sikes.

COMPANY G—Killed: James Tucker; wounded, R. P. Smith and C. Love.

COMPANY H—Wounded: Sergeant T. J. Montague, Corporal N. A. Horne, David May, J O. Scoggins, Sergeant S. A. Thompson, Corporal H. C Murchison, W F. Lackey (supposed killed), H. Bledsoe, J Bolin, G. W Bogle, S. L.

Carden, John Lee, F. Patterson, T. J Peel, M. Stewart, J. H. Vickers, W S. Whitaker, G. Roberts, W T. Patterson. Missing: N. P Combs, J. L. Casote and J. S. Massey.

COMPANY K—Wounded: Sergeant J J McNeely, G. W Edwards, Z. Morgan and A. C. Shields.

COMPANY I—Wounded: Sergeant C. P Tanner, G. W Spurlin, D. P Smart, J. M. Michael, J W Campe and J. J. Morton.

COMPANY F—Wounded: Lieutenant J. R. Grigg, W C. Wolf, M. Crowder.

25 May. In the romantic intimacy that has sprung up between the pickets of the two opposing armies, a soldier in the Twenty-fifth North Carolina lends his pick to a Yankee to dig his rifle pit, a new one being made necessary by our last move upon them; and the blue coat returns it after completing the job.

31 May. Major-General Hoke, with his division, consisting now of Clingman's North Carolina, Martin's North Carolina, Hagood's South Carolina and Colquitt's Georgia Brigades is ordered to Cold Harbor.

2 June. A demonstration in force by us is made along the whole of the line between the two rivers, leaving the enemy's right intact, but pushing back their left some 400 yards, while in the centre the ground lost by them in the first assault is recovered by a counter-charge. During the whole night our pickets kept up a rapid firing.

During this week General Bushrod R. Johnson receives a commission as Major-General, and to him are assigned Ransom's North Carolina, Evans' South Carolina (commanded by General Elliott, promoted to succeed Walker), Gracie's Alabama, and Wise's Virginia Brigades. This division now holds Butler in the bottle by guarding the shortened line from the Howlett house (near Dutch Gap), to Fort Clifton. Captains Grigg and Graham, with two companies of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, relieve the picket line just before day, and find that the innocent fireflies have caused much of the commotion of the night, the men firing at the flicker without waiting for the crack of a

rifle or the sound of a bullet. No more ammunition was wasted in such mimicry of war.

3 June, 1864. Grant, at 5 a. m., renews the assault at Cold Harbor, pressing up to our works in solid columns. But the contest is over in sixty minutes, and they are repulsed with a loss of 12,737 (as per official report), many of these being negroes. An advance is again ordered by him at 8 a. m., but his men refuse to move. He had doubtless hoped to make these assaults the culmination of his "Wilderness Campaign." The former Adjutant of the Fifty-sixth, now Assistant Adjutant General of Lane's North Carolina Brigade, was the bearer of General Leee's reply to General Grant's proposition that both parties might bury their dead and attend to their wounded. General Lee, having none uncared for, declined this, and only yielded when General Grant formally asked to be allowed to care for his own.

4 June. Ransom's Brigade, Colonel H. M. Rutledge commanding, proceeds to Bottom's bridge on the Chickahominy, below Richmond, and reports to Major-General Robert Ransom. Colonel Rutledge is taken sick and sent to the hospital and the command of the Brigade goes to Colonel Paul F. Faison, of the Fifty-sixth, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke commanding the regiment.

5 June. The Forty-ninth and Fifty-sixth are posted near the railroad bridge.

7 June. Company K, Captain F. R. Alexander, and Company D, Captain R. D. Graham on picket line near the stream. Our friends, the enemy, make a proposition to us, the Dutch Captain declaring, "I would like to keep de beaceaple as far as bossiple." We agree that long range isolated sharpshooting shall not be indulged in. They were Pennsylvania dismounted cavalry.

9 June. Brigade marched to Chaffin's farm, and occupied the winter quarters at Fort Harrison. The rest is very much enjoyed, and a number of us visit friends belonging to the Confederate fleet in the James.

13 June. In touching distance of our baggage to-day for the first time since we crossed the State line—over a month since. Such is war.

INVESTMENT OF PETERSBURG BEGUN.

15 June. Crossing the James on a pontoon bridge at Drewry's Bluff, we marched all night to Petersburg.

16 June. The Fifty-sixth is detached at Pocahontas Bridge, and held in readiness to report to General Gracie, commanding the Alabama Brigade, if called for, at Swift Creek. The rest of the Brigade under Colonel Faison reports to General Beauregard on the line of intrenchments to the east of Petersburg, and south of the Appomattox river. The head of Grant's army is now on the south side of the James and advancing from City Point. Petersburg is evidently the new objective point. Hoke's Division has here met their first assault, and after a very stubborn contest, retired from a section of the outer line near Jordan's house. Beauregard with this reinforcement, makes a counter-charge, and re-establishes the original line. This is on the south of the Appomattox, and out near the Baxter road. Here Captain John C. Pegram, our efficient Adjutant-General, was mortally wounded while placing the Brigade in position.

Late this evening the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, being joined by the Forty-ninth North Carolina returning from the position just named, where the brigade had been hotly engaged, and well handled, under Colonel Faison, moves out to Swift Creek, and uniting with Gracie's Brigade, the column advances under that gallant officer, driving Butler back to Bermuda Hundreds and establishing a junction with Pickett's Division coming down from Richmond. The enemy had torn up the Richmond & Petersburg Railroad at the point of crossing the turnpike.

Having thus put Butler back into his bottle, we turn the cork over to Pickett's Division, the line now confronting him again being the same that was occupied by Beauregard's army immediately after the defeat of Butler at Ware Bottom Church 20 May. The emergency had compelled Beauregard to quietly abandon for the time this position to meet Grant's advance from City Point, posting Gracie at Swift Creek to check Butler in any attempt to enter Petersburg from the north side of the Appomattox.

17 June. Morning finds us crossing the Appomattox

again, with scarcely an hour's rest, and that was spent in waiting for a train. The Forty-ninth and Fifty-sixth immediately go into line of battle, with our brigade, about a mile to the east of Petersburg, and extending at a right angle south from the Jerusalem road. Here we throw up a new line of breastworks. After some very desperate fighting, in which the three other regiments bore their full share, in front of this position, Beauregard found the original line here untenable with such odds against him, and had withdrawn thus far, preserving each organization, but losing several pieces of artillery, especially in Graham's Petersburg Battery. Johnson's Tennessee Brigade is said to have sustained the heaviest losses. In this new position a box of cartridges upon one of our men of the Fifty-sixth was exploded by the concussion of a bullet from the enemy—the only instance recollected during the war. Here, too, First Lieutenant Jos. B. Coggin, of Company D, a brave and efficient officer, from South Lowell, Orange county, was mortally wounded.

VOLUNTARY NIGHT CHARGE OF 17 JUNE.

About dark, word is passed along the line that General Beauregard says that if we will hold our own until 10 o'clock, all will be well. The "King of Spades" did not explain. So the guess lay between whether we would then get a rest, or have the privilege of digging another hole in the ground.

Before the time is up, and without other troops taking our place, Ransom's Brigade was rapidly moved down the rear of the line, by the left flank, and took position in some pine woods near the Baxter road. In a short time the line was advanced and took position on the open ground in front. The men supposed we were supporting a line of battle in our front held by Wise's Brigade; but the fact was that they had been overpowered and compelled to abandon this position.

We were now the only line between the enemy and Petersburg. This was soon made evident by a terrible volley, which killed among others, that fearless and most competent officer, and courteous gentleman, Captain Frank R. Alexander, of Mecklenburg, as he was advancing to make a reconnoissance with his splendid Company (K). From the cap-

tured line the brigade was now exposed to the rapid fire of a double line of battle, the flash of their guns coming both from the ditch and over the embankments above it in its rear, as they now faced us. No organization could wait for orders or live in short range of such a fire. We must make a change of base immediately. With a simultaneous impulse the brigade arose and dashed forward. In a few minutes the line was ours, and the roar of musketry over. The Thirty-fifth met with the fiercest resistance, and in their hand-to-hand struggle in the works, lost their own stand of colors temporarily and took two from the enemy. In this charge was also the Twenty-second South Carolina, of Elliott's Brigade, gallantly moving forward with the first on the left, and sweeping the enemy's line before them. The complete casualties cannot now be given; but the heaviest loss was sustained by the Thirty-fifth North Carolina, which lost 70 killed, among them their superb leader, that Christian gentleman, Colonel Jno. G. Jones, of Person county. The wounding of Wm. I. Gillis, Frank Roberts, James Berry and James McKee, of Company D, Fifty-sixth North Carolina, are recalled as a part of the casualties in this remarkable battle. The prisoners were passed up the line to the right. Soon thereafter, the Captain of the Color Company of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina noticed what seemed (in the night), to be a good portion of the brigade abandoning the works and moving compactly to the rear. Rushing out to them with commands and entreaties, and protesting against immediately giving up what had been gained at such a cost, he discovered that these were the prisoners there consolidated and on the march to the rear. Of course, he did not further interfere with the procession.

Later in the night a Federal officer was found on the captured line, suffering too severely to move, and begging to be sent to the rear; but on being quietly asked if he would not rather take his chances with his own people in the morning, as it was now evident that we were about to be recalled, he with cheerful and very quiet resignation awaited our departure.

Company I secured an equipment of Springfield rifles and

a supply of ammunition. Some of these guns were ornamented on the stocks with carvings of fish, animals, snakes, turtles, etc. They were highly prized and carried by the men to the close of the war. They were carved by the Minnesota Indians, from whom they were here captured.

ALL DAY WITH SPADE AND RIFLE.

18 June. The brigade was withdrawn towards Petersburg by the Baxter road, and after crossing a streamlet, east and in sight of Blanford cemetery, was assigned a position on the crest of the first rising ground, the right resting on the Jerusalem Plank Road. Major John W Graham covered the movement with a line of skirmishers, composed largely of Company I under its gallant Captain, retiring them in the early dawn, after repulsing an attack by an opposing line of skirmishers. Soon a new line was laid out by the engineer, and with the insufficient tools brought out of the battle of last night, as gathered on the field, the men prepared to receive an assault. The Captain of Company D insisted that his company should be placed further to the front at the brow of the hill so as to command its eastern face.

Assent is about to be given by the engineer in charge, Colonel D. B. Harris, when the enemy are seen constructing a battery out to the left which threatened a partial enfilade of this salient. This objection he met by a proposition to construct traverses against this cross fire, being confident that the enemy could never reach the top of that hill if his men could sight them from the time they began the ascent. The location of a section of artillery (from Pegram's Virginia Battery), already in position immediately to the left of this spot, (to the right of a ravine crossing the line,) doubtless decided the engineer to adhere to his first plan. Momentous consequences and one of the bloodiest battles of the war are to follow this decision. The work proceeded as rapidly as could be with men so long on a constant strain, and now three consecutive nights without sleep, and faring almost as roughly as to rations. Lieutenant-Colonel G. G. Luke, disabled by a severe carbuncle, which is aggravated by this exposure, reluctantly seeks relief at the hands of the sur-

geon in the rear, and Major Graham is left in command, giving his attention specially to the left wing, while the right separated from his by the ravine and the artillery just mentioned, is under Captain Frank N. Roberts, of Company B. This is the third day of the three for which our grand commander, the invincible Lee, has sent us word that we must hold Petersburg for him at all hazards. The question of martial courage would seem to have been already decided; and now comes that of physical endurance. The men work with a will, cracking jokes with their wonted cheerfulness. Meanwhile the legions of Grant are not idle, as we can see them massing in our front, and their artillery has again commenced playing upon us. But for the turn affairs took last night, this new line would have been ready by daylight for the enemy's reception. As it is, we must meet them again while it is barely inhabitable, as nearly every man came off the battle field this morning with an extra gun, while spades and picks are the exception; and considerable time has been consumed in gathering in implements as best we could from the town.

The contour of the ground enables the enemy to form their lines of battle unmolested some 300 yards in our front behind the intervening ridges, while from their redoubts, as fast as completed, they give us a raking fire in different directions. Elliott's South Carolina Brigade is now immediately on our right, with the left resting on a section of Wright's Virginia Battery in the Jerusalem road. They are the first to receive the compliments of the enemy to-day, and get material assistance from the right wing of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, as our line following the lay of the ground trends from him to the northeast, and thus commands a portion of Elliott's front across the road, as his faces east.

Soon after midday over the ridges just described the enemy to the south of the road is seen advancing in splendid array five columns deep and with perfect alignments. On they come over half the distance, with few shots wasted on them. Now the battle opens in earnest, and they make a dash for Elliott's lines. But in vain. They reel before the well-directed fire of the men who were trying to make every shot tell. The ranks waver, break and rally again, only to

meet a similar reception. A Federal officer, mounted on a beautiful gray, is seen gathering group after group about him upon which to reorganize a line of battle, as he dashed about the field.

The best marksmen in the Fifty-sixth North Carolina successively try to bring him down, and a Captain's shot cuts a small limb just over his head. It was felt that if he went down, the charge was over on that side of the road. But the death of such a man would not only be a loss to his country, but to humanity; and the charge not being renewed, it is a satisfaction even on this side to know that he escaped. Now their artillery seems determined to make our regimental right wing its target in revenge for our deadly cross-fire; but their gunners come in for our best attention, though at such a distance, and their fire materially slackens. But in this cannonading we lost the commander of our right wing, Captain F N. Roberts. Faithful to every duty, his genial presence always brought good cheer with it, and no one in the whole brigade was more universally beloved. To every camp-fire he was always a welcome addition.

Company D barely escaped a wholesale slaughter. A shell ricochetting across the field, bounded into the trench; but quick as thought, John Alvis Parker had it upon his spade and hurled it back, with the simple exclamation, "Get out of here." It exploded as it went over. There was no braver deed during the war.

Next the storm shifts to the left of our salient, along the fronts of the left wing of the Fifty-sixth, the Twenty-fifth and the Thirty-fifth. The charge is delivered just as Field's Division, of the Army of Northern Virginia, have come up the line from the left as far as this salient and ravine, and that half of Ransom's Brigade is about to be replaced. They thus find a double line ready for them, though crowded into unfinished works. The commander of the Fifty-sixth, now on the left, says: "At this point the fine array of the troops of Gen. Grant, who had also been sent to the south side of the Appomattox, could be seen; and the old flag floating proudly to the breeze, recalled memories of other days, when covering a united country, and could but extort a feeling of admira-

tion for the men so proudly advancing beneath its folds, as foemen worthy of our steel." But they recoil before the withering fire. The first act in the bloody drama, south of the Jerusalem road, is simply here repeated. This is about 3 p. m., and here this commander, Major John W Graham, receives a flesh wound through the right arm, retiring him from duty. That portion of Ransom's Brigade is then relieved by Field.

The open ground and ravine necessary to be crossed in passing the artillery at the salient, delay our relief from moving further to the right until darkness shall conceal the movements that there are no sufficient trenches to cover. Meanwhile the enemy is organizing a movement against the other portion of Faison's brigade line held by the Twenty-fourth and the right wing of the Fifty-sixth, from the right on the Jerusalem road back northward to this hill that we were so anxious this morning to render secure against the enemy's investment. Last night they had been routed by a forlorn hope, a single line of battle, that had left its own position vacant and driven them from a captured section. They may now hope to find a weak joint in our harness, if we have practiced a similar strategy to give them the last two bloody repulses to-day. Their troops are rapidly massed now in our immediate front, and rush to cover below us along the run at the foot of the steep hill. Just before sundown they advance up the slope, and it is with difficulty that the ardor of the men to fire at the first view of them is restrained; but they appreciate the order to wait until they can sight the belt-buckle as a target, when one or two well-directed rounds ends the business of the day, and it is thought with greater loss to them than on either our right or left, as this time they have been allowed to come in speaking distance.

Thus the day closes; but at the foot of this salient, the enemy, out of reach of shot and shell, has come to stay, as predicted to the engineer this morning. But more of this hereafter.

In the night Kershaw's Division moved up our lines as we march out under a sharp musketry fire of the enemy,—

doubtless, from the commotion, expecting a counter-charge. We hear this was soon followed by a second charge on our position, only with increased loss. John Clark, of Orange, was credited with having unhorsed a field or general officer in this battle.

In the unique affair of last night, the loss of the gallant Lieutenant, Cornelius Spivey, of Company E, killed on the field, should have been noted. Also that that faithful and intrepid officer, Captain Thomas P Savilles, of Company A, of Camden, was severely wounded through the arm just as the forward movement began, and immediately reporting to the Captain of Company D that this left his company without an officer, requested that he would lead both companies, as he was knocked out, and must retire. But the present recollection is that upon the suggestion that it would be found pleasanter behind the enemy's guns, than before them, he pushed forward with the first to enter their lines. Any officer might well be proud to command Company A on any occasion. They were mostly young men, laughing in the face of danger, and bearing the fatigues of the campaign with a cheerfulness that was an inspiration to all around them. Captain Savilles was their worthy Captain. **Captain Noah** H. Hughes, after holding out with a wonderful tenacity, had broken down and died in a Richmond hospital the first of the month. His worth was attested by the affectionate attachment and admiration of such a company.

19 June. The brigade remains in reserve, the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-ninth and Fifty-sixth in bivouac on the Plank road, near the corner of Sycamore street, leading to New Market. We are not beyond the long range of the enemy's rifles, and with little shelter find the sun very oppressive.

A letter of 20 June, 1864, from Sergeant M. Cagle, gave the following additional casualties of Company B in late engagements: "Wounded: Sergeant L. H. Hurst, Corporal Holmes, Henry Usry, Olin Jackson (arm lost), Calvin Culbreth, B. C. Johnson, Joel Hudson (mortally), B. F Kendrick, E. T. Gardner, Joel Barefoot, and D. Vann. Missing: W L. Brown, Wm. Bowden, J. D. Blizzard, L. L. Tart and

Furney Wood. Most of the above occurred in the night charge of the 17th instant. The company greatly deplores the loss of Captain F. N Roberts. He was highly esteemed and greatly beloved by all the regiment."

BATTLE OF JONES' HOUSE.

22 June. The Brigade reports to Lieutenant-General A. P Hill, on the extreme right to the south of the city near the Jones house. He attacks the left flank of the enemy, capturing about 1,600 prisoners, with very small loss on our side, Lane's and Scales' North Carolina Brigades leading the assault, our regiment being in reserve.

23 June. Near the scene of yesterday's action we make a further protest against Grant's perpetual extension by the left flank, and present towards him a line of breastworks running off south from our south front at a right angle and facing east. This completed, Elliott's and Ransom's Brigades return to the east of the city after night.

24 June. At midnight the Brigade moves out again, still under the command of Colonel P F. Faison, of the Fifty-sixth, and enters the line to the south of the Petersburg & Norfolk Railroad. There is no covered way here, and the movement, liable to draw a fusillade from the enemy at short range, at the least noise, is necessarily executed very slowly over the exposed ground. Thus daylight finds two lines of troops "occupying the same space." There is a gap in the works caused by a stream of water immediately on our left, towards which we are moving. So we remain close neighbors until night shall come again to enable the troops we are relieving to get out quietly. In the progress of the siege, (though the word up to this date may as appropriately be applied to either of the contending armies, each behind strong works and each with its line of supplies still intact), such streams are dammed to form impassable ponds in front of the lines.

25 June. Day is breaking before we are fairly in position. The left of the brigade rests on the Norfolk Railroad. We hear that General Lee, in that spirit of banter with which he would occasionally pay a compliment, says of our suc-

cessful, though unexpected, night charge of the 17th instant, which restored the broken line, and further checked the enemy's advance, that he has had other troops to straggle to the rear, but Ransom's are the first to straggle to the front.

But of more serious import is his declaration, as repeated to us: "I now have General Grant just where I want him." His whole demeanor shows that he is perfectly sincere in this, and the army is inspired by the same buoyant hope. He has seen many of his bravest and best men go down in the last sixty days, but it is well known that the enemy taking the initiative against him in this campaign, have suffered frightfully, and it is thought no exaggeration to estimate the total loss on that side so far as equal to Lee's total effective opposed to him through the long series of bloody engagements from the Wilderness to Petersburg. (Statistics have since fully confirmed this.)

PROGRESS OF THE SIEGE.

Lee's line protecting Richmond and Petersburg, facing north, east, south and then east again, now extends considerably over thirty miles. He still has the railways to Weldon, and to Danville intact for supplies, and Virginia and North Carolina have united and completed a connection between Danville and Greensboro, the people of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, contributing the rails of the line but recently laid between Charlotte and Davidson College.

Our first duty now is to make our ditches, that we will in all probability, occupy for some time while awaiting developments, as strong and comfortable as we can. Brush is brought in from the rear to construct booths for shade, and blanket houses are set up and staked by a simple device with horizontal poles on forked posts; the inner facing of the breastworks is strengthened with revetments of timber; the streets and sinks kept thoroughly policed; and safe covered-ways constructed at convenient intervals to avoid the losses incident to a beleaguered line of battle and its communications. We are now becoming familiar with a new engine of destruction, the mortar gun. The name is derived from its

resemblance to the domestic utensil. It is remarkable with what accuracy a shell thrown out at an elevation of from 45 to 75 degrees may be made to come down on a given point. A cannon ball passes so swiftly that it leaves the whistling sound through the air to follow it; but the mortar shell slowly revolving in its descent overhead, aided by the hissing of the fuse, heard first on one side, then on the other, leaves its audience in a state of uncertainty, not to say anxiety, as to which seat the stranger intends to take. To the question addressed to a young Captain by one of his company, "Don't you dread those mortar shells more than anything else?" the reply was made: "No, they are the first things I have yet encountered that a man ought not to be afraid of." "How is that?" "Why, the omniverous beast is a ventriloquist; you cannot dodge it; and it is a poor philosophy that fears what it cannot avoid."

For days the losses on both sides are considerable from this annoyance. Then bomb proofs are constructed by making perpendicular excavations immediately behind the trenches along covered ways leading to them or beyond; over these square or oblong recesses are laid stout logs; then a bed of leaves; and on that a mound of earth. Gradually sleeping apartments were thus supplied along our whole eastern front, as at any point along this line, battle might be delivered at any time, night or day. The men thus protected began jocosely to treat mortar-shelling as an entertainment; and it was not out of order for veterans to run to cover when the play began. As the siege progressed, unexploded shells and fragments were gathered by our ordnance department, and payment made to the soldiers who brought them in from the field. A whole shell was a prize, and races were made in some instances for them while yet in mid-air, with such exclamations as: "That's mine, I saw it first;" and, "No, you are out of its range; it is coming my way." It might explode in mid-air, or after striking the ground; but that was viewed rather as a matter of disgust than of fear. Mortar guns of proper calibre were specially cast by the Confederates to return some of those shells to the enemy.

FORT HELL AND MORTAR BED.

Strong forts for heavy ordnance and at points most threatened, especially the salients and on the cavalier lines, are constructed and mounted. Of course this was not the work of a day, nor a week, nor a month, but goes on steadily, one third of the command under arms, the others working by details. Where the distance between the lines will permit, a picket line is established and protected by rifle pits. This is manned each night to prevent a surprise, and the skirmishers withdrawn therefrom at daylight. Near the salient occupied by the portion of Pegram's Virginia Battery, on which the centre of the Fifty-sixth Regiment rested in the battle of 18 June, the enemy have gradually dug in towards our line until they are in speaking distance. Here at the slightest commotion, taken as a demonstration on either side, an incessant musketry fire is begun and continued through the night. The point is called "Fort Hell."

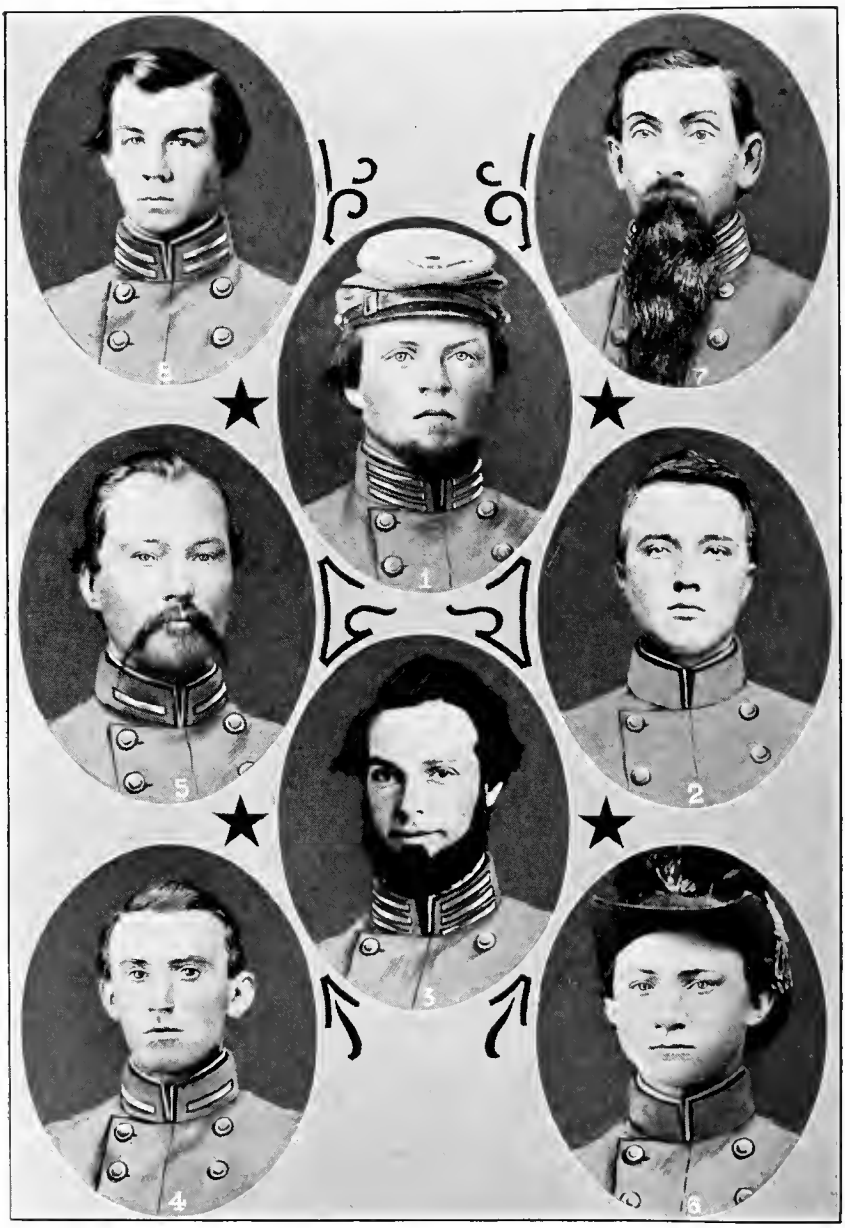
The field where our line crosses the Norfolk Railroad is called "The Mortar Bed," for a similar reason. These missiles are rained upon Colquitt's salient facing fort Stedman at the crest of the hill, here nearest the railway, and upon the cavalier line immediately behind it. But the daily returns have almost ceased to show casualties from the mortars. There is no difficulty in catching a sight of these shells against a white cloud in the air after the report of the gun, and before they have reached the altitude from which they are to descend; but with a clear sky, the first warning of its vicinity may be the puzzling hiss of the fuse in its descent.

27 June. Wm. Cole died of wounds received in the battle of the 18th instant. He was an exemplary citizen and a good soldier. 4 July, James R. Miller is wounded on the skirmish line guard duty.

22 July Wm. J Tinnin is mortally wounded, and dies on the 23d. He had served faithfully as First Sergeant, and in the difficult position of Commissary Sergeant. On this date Thomas C Scarlett was severely wounded.

SAPPING AND MINING.

The Army of Northern Virginia, to which Beauregard's



FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. T. P. Savilles, Captain, Co. A.
2. Henry Williams, Private, Co. A.
3. Frank N. Roberts, Captain, Co. B.
4. J. A. King, 2d Lieut., Co. B.
9. J. R. B. Walker, Private, Co. B.
5. D. M. McDonald, 2d Lieut., Co. B.
6. Wm. J. McDonald, Private, Co. B.
7. Joseph G. Lockhart, Captain, Co. E.
8. Jarvis B. Lutterloh, 1st Lieut., Co. E.

(Picture in Supplementary Group, 4th vol.)

army has been transferred as the Fourth Corps, under General R. H. Anderson (Longstreet having recovered from his Wilderness wound and returned to his old corps), has now successfully withstood attacks from front, rear, flank, and overhead. Is there any other direction on earth from which the ingenuity of man may hope to approach? No. But there is an untried route under the earth. Early in this month, the enemy began running tunnels from two or three different points to undermine our lines. Our sappers and miners go down into the earth to meet them, and time after time, while Brigade Officer of the Day, has the writer placed his ear to the wall of a tunnel cut beneath Colquitt's salient, sometimes occupied by our brigade, but was unable to distinguish any sound different from the natural roaring experience by closing the ear. All along our line, at points facing practical bases on their side for such underground operations, we were boring for them with our long range augers. Those augers were constructed with poles for handles, and on the larger end a fold of sheet iron or steel securely fastened, which with two upright edges lacking, say, two inches of coming together, formed the bit of the chisel. As fast as these filled with the compact earth in digging, they were withdrawn and cleaned out with a bayonet. A depth of twenty-five feet had failed to disclose the modern catacomb. But evidently great expectations are raised over the way, and we must be on the *qui vive*. Three o'clock each morning now finds us in full line of battle, there to remain until the sun is fully up.

BATTLE OF THE CRATER.

30 July Six weeks ago to-day occurred the dispute over the location of the line to defend the first salient at the ravine north of the Jerusalem road, then held by the right centre company of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina State Troops. Meanwhile our brigade has moved one space to the left, replaced by Elliott's. To-day the spot takes its place in history to be remembered long after the disputants shall have been forgotten. At sunrise, as our line of battle was about to break ranks for another day, a dull thud is heard to our right and a

cloud of dust and smoke hides the horizon. This salient has thus become the centre of the Crater at Petersburg. Soon after the lodgment at its foot, to which they had been repulsed, on the 18th ult., the idea of springing a mine here occurred to the enemy (originating with Lieutenant-Colonel Pleasants, a coal miner of Pennsylvania), and now under the complete cover afforded, and with the racket at *Fort Hell,* they have at last effected it. It was to have been exploded while it was yet dark; but the fuse went out and had to be relit. The immediate loss to us is 256 men from the Twenty-second South Carolina Regiment of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade, and the detachment still there from Pegram's Battery. A field piece of ours here carried up by the explosion, falls across the enemy's line, so close are they at this point. The smoke and dust have not cleared away before Colonel L. M. McAfee, in command of Ransom's Brigade, is moving the Twenty-fifth, now on our right under Major W S. Grady, and the Forty-ninth joining them, under Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, to the first ridge between the Crater and Petersburg, and in a few minutes they are in position to receive any advance in that direction, while the Fifty-sixth, under Captains Lawson Harrill, acting Colonel, and R. D. Graham, acting Lieutenant-Colonel, followed by the Thirty-fifth and Twenty-fourth, deploy in single file, and move up the line to the right to meet any demonstration in their front, contributing by their steady fire materially to hold the enemy in check, while a forlorn hope is being organized for a countercharge. It was sure death for one of them even to start to the rear from this (north) side of the crater. Elliott's fine Brigade, though yielding ground to the avalanche of earth thus thrown against them, are not stampeded, but immediately take position on the south and also facing the crater, similar to McAfee's to the north and west, leaving a gap for the play of our reserve artillery at Blandford Cemetery.

The explosion has made an excavation along our line 170 by 65 feet. The cloud of dust and smoke is seen rolling away against the rising sun; but all is still quiet along Burnside's line. It had been intended that his colored division should lead the assault; but this was countermanded for fear of the

moral effect, if it should prove to them a second Cold Harbor. So Ledlie's Division, the First of Burnside's Corps, led the charge as far as the excavation, into which they all went. They were followed by Potter's Division, piling in on them. Griffin's Brigade of this division climbs to the edge of the Crater, and advances to sweep through the gap in the Confederate line, but are driven back into the hole by our concentrated fire of musketry from right and left, and the eight field guns and mortars facing them from Blandford Cemetery.

Another Brigade of Potter's Division is then brought forward, but does not come over their line. Then Burnside's Third Division, under General Wilcox, rushes out to the Crater, which they now find too full to admit them. A short dash over the intervening space gives them possession of a section of the Confederate line between the Crater and the Jerusalem road. But this emergency had been anticipated, and now from embrasures enfilading this line, Wright's Battery rakes them with grape and canister from left and right, and their only safety is back on the other side of the breastwork.

The three white divisions having effected no permanent lodgment, Burnside now sends in his colored division under General Ferrero. They gain the vacant Confederate line, but not one of Wright's guns, or if so, but for a few minutes. Their punishment is much severer than that received by Wilcox's men; and they are compelled to beat a retreat, leaving many dead, wounded and prisoners in the trenches.

The Eighteenth Corps then comes in, and Turner's Division makes the next advance. Though suffering severely they effect a partial lodgment within our lines behind traverses and in covered ways.

It is now about 2 p. m. While the enemy has made five desperate and distinct ventures to break through the gap, we have only been waiting for General Mahone to bring us a small, but important reinforcements of one brigade to our line of battle from the extreme right at Hatcher's Run, to make a counter-charge. He now arrives, and the forlorn hope, made up for this purpose, consists of the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments of Ransom's North Carolina Brigade, Wright's Georgia Brigade, Gracie's Alabama Brigade, part

of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade, and Wieseger's Virginia Brigade, all under command of Major-General Mahone. The intervening space was raked by the artillery and musketry of the enemy, but a quick dash through the storm of shot and shell restores the line to the right and left of the Crater, from which a white handkerchief is soon hoisted, and the battle is over.

The severest loss to the enemy is in and around the Crater, for into this frightful gap where their troops were massed in great numbers, our mortar guns had been playing for some time, while the surface of the ground was here commanded by the Fifty-sixth and other infantry regiments of the two Carolinas and the artillery. The writer from what he saw during and immediately after the battle, estimated their loss at fully 3,000, and a few days thereafter before making his notes obtained a Northern paper putting the loss at 5,000. Ours, all told, is only about 500, as the distance charged across is very short, and otherwise we have had the advantage of position since their first mad rush was over. Among others we mourn the loss of Major W S. Grady, our "Rough and Ready," who led the Twenty-fifth, and Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, who fell at the head of the Forty-ninth. Major Grady's splendid constitution and vitality bore him up for thirty days in spite of his nine severe wounds. The eight field pieces of artillery brought up between this gap and Petersburg, and continuing in this fight to the finish, I was informed, were those of Latham's North Carolina and Ramsay's North Carolina Batteries, while Wright's Battery and the remaining guns of Pegram under those two officers, were served effectively on the disputed line.

Conjointly with this attempt on Petersburg, General Grant has to-day made an equally fierce assault upon Fort Harrison, where he found General Lee in his usual attitude ready to meet him. This had taken every available man from the south side of the James river, so that our only means of checking Burnside's advance, at the Crater, was by reducing the line of battle to a skirmish line on either side of the captured section, and with the surplus thus formed and Mahone's addition of one brigade, about one-fifth of the forlorn hope, crush-

ing them before they discovered our weakness. We have been crediting Grant with more courage than generalship. In this instance he has shown both; but at both points he has been met by equal courage and greater skill, and his superior numbers have availed him nothing. The dead lay thicker on this field than any before seen by the writer, and he thinks that the negroes came in with the desperate belief that they were to receive no quarter from their friends in the rear or the foes in their front, and thus continued the struggle after all hope of escape was over. This is inferred from conversation with negroes wounded on the field.

A heavy cavalier line is next constructed in rear of the Crater, despite the continued attentions of the enemy to retard it. Sharpshooting and mortar-shelling go on briskly. Upon our parapets we make loop-holes with sand bags and gabions, and also used blocks of wood with iron facings for the riflemen. Occasionally a man is struck through the little port hole made for his rifle.

STATE ELECTION.

The first Thursday in August, 1864, the North Carolina regiments vote in the trenches under fire for Governor. The candidates are the incumbent, Zebulon B. Vance, and William W Holden, editor of the *North Carolina Standard*. We feel toward Vance that he is one of us, by former comradeship, and his able administration, doing so much for his State troops in the field. So that the vote is overwhelmingly in his favor. The path of public safety lay in keeping our people united to the end, whatever that might be. The credit for this most illustrious part of his whole career he generously divides with his two chief counsellors in his Chapel Hill address on the life of Governor Swain.

LIFE IN THE TRENCHES.

Now for days we have incessant rain; great sickness follows, and disease from the exposure is claiming more victims than the missiles of death. The writer finds himself frequently in command of the regiment in the changes thus occasioned, but for a greater portion of the time we are under

Captain Harrill. Captain W G. Graves was disabled for a time by a shell wound.

Nothing can abate the grim humor of the Confederate soldier. A gentleman appearing on the line in a silk hat was seriously condoled with upon the loss of his cow Upon replying that he had never owned a cow, he was asked: "Well, then, what are you doing with that churn upon your head mourning?" A little further on he was requested to contribute that *stove pipe* to complete a bomb proof. The healing balm was applied when in sympathetic tones he was told not to mind those fellows; that they were teasing every fool that passed by But the witticisms of the time, running from grotesque to the pathetic, would make a separate volume. Behind their flashes may be found the *esprit de corps* of the veterans who, in the trenches, faced death almost continuously for ten months.

THE TAR HEELS.

The following, familiar to all the Army of Northern Virginia, illustrates the complacent pride with which the North Carolina soldiers adopted the distinctive sobriquet of *Tar Heels,* first banteringly given them. Historians had generally ignored our first steps in the contest with Great Britain and disposed of our latter domestic status with the statement that the principal productions of North Carolina are "tar, pitch and turpentine"—which, of excellent quality, are found in about one-fifth the area of the State
after one of the fiercest battles, in which their supporting column was driven from the field and they successfully fought it out alone, in the exchange of the compliments of the occasion the North Carolinians were greeted with the question from the passing derelict regiment: "Any more tar down in the Old North State, boys?" Quick as thought came the answer: "No; not a bit; old Jeff's bought it all up." "Is that so; what is he going to do with it?" was asked. "He is going to put it on you'ns heels to make you stick better in the next fight."

20 August Ransom's Brigade, under Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, of the Twenty-fourth, Captain R. D. Graham in

command of the Fifty-sixth, marching through Petersburg to the extreme right, reported to Major-General Henry Heth. General Grant, persisting in his left flank movement, is now uncomfortably near the Weldon Railroad.

BATTLE AT THE DAVIS HOUSE.

21 August. General Heth moves forward to the assault, with Dearing's Artillery behind us, playing over the woods in our front upon the enemy on the far side. Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, leading the brigade and Captain W G. Graves, who has just returned after recovering from his wound, acting as Colonel of the Fifty-sixth Regiment, with Captain R. D. Graham acting Lieutenant-Colonel. The five regiments move forward in splendid style by company front, with intervals corresponding to regimental strength, across the open field at the Davis house, and just to the east of the Weldon Railroad. At the skirt of the woods each is thrown forward into line on its right company, and the battle opens.

As we drive the enemy's skirmishers before us, their artillery far out in the open field beyond the woods in front and Dearing's from our rear, exchange shots, which pass each other above our heads. Abatis impede our advance; but once through this, the alignment is quickly restored under a galling fire, and the movement is steadily forward again.

And now in the face of the foe, who are still doing all the shooting, our line of battle, under the severe punishment it is receiving at short range, staggers and writhes like a monster serpent, mortally wounded, and as if about to snap at every vertebra. A beardless youth shouts: "On with the yell, boys; on with the yell."

It had been observed that a soldier never turned to the rear with this shout of defiance and victory on his lips, and that its effect was two-fold; subjective, in that it raised to the highest pitch the enthusiasm of the advancing column; and objective, in that it had a correspondingly demoralizing effect upon the line thus assaulted by a foe who assumed victory as already assured to them. It does not fail on this occasion. The old Fifty-sixth, in the centre, responds with a will and volume that the Comanche tribe might have envied;

the deadly aim of the enemy is diverted at random, and the fussillade slackens perceptibly, while the brigade, like a human tornado, rushes over their line.

Lieutenant M. W Fatherly, commanding Company C, was the first man in from this regiment, and Wm. Bowen, about the same time, the first from Company D. Re-alignment is quickly made, and we rush forward to the next line of the enemy, found dismantled, along the south edge of the woods. It is abandoned before we reach it. Here, while the enemy strongly posted on elevated ground across an open field, are playing on us with shell and canister, we are also now in the deadly range of our own artillery. We send back to ask if the third line is wanted, and are answered: "No; the first line was enough," and are withdrawn to that.

Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, Captain Graves and Lieutenant S. R. Holton, of Company H, Fifty-sixth North Carolina, acting on brigade staff, are among those remembered for conspicuous bravery to-day, but not a man faltered. No casualty list is at hand. The brave Corporal, D. F A. Sloan, of Mecklenburg, was shot down with the colors, but gallantly supported and rescued by his comrades, P T. Sossaman and R. J. Stough. Lieutenant H. A. L. Sweezy, always at his post and to-day gallantly leading his company (I), was killed; also Rufus Davis, of the same company, and the ever faithful Lieutenant James A. King, Company B. The brigade, as shown above, is commanded by a Lieutenant-Colonel, and has only two other field officers present for duty In the night the brigade skirmish line is thrown out under Captain Graham.

22 August. Back to the trenches again, the left of the Brigade resting on the City Point Railroad.

25 August. Major John W Graham returns to the regiment, having recovered the use of his arm, wounded 18 June near the salient that became the Crater of 30 July. During his absence he had attended the wedding of Colonel John A. Gilmer, of the Twenty-seventh North Carolina, married on crutches with other wounded officers as groomsmen, including Lieutenant-Colonel Jos. C Webb, also of the Twenty-seventh, and himself.

SIEGE LIFE CONTINUED.

Quite a contrast to such scenes were the bare trenches, glaring in the summer sun, when dry, and slippery with mud after a rain. Occasionally the sharpshooting, and artillery duels by tacit consent would be off for some days. The renewal of the bloody work would not begin until in perfect good faith the attacking party had given warning by some such cry as, "Rats to your holes." From time to time unofficial interviews in which tobacco, coffee, newspapers, etc., were exchanged, would take place in front of the lines in easy range of the guns of either side. A victory gained by them in any quarter they would announce to us by a fierce salute of half a day or more from shells and mortars, to which courtesy the scarcity of our ammunition did not permit us to reply. Battles to the right, as that at Reams Station, 25 August, 1864, for possession of the railway, or to the left, to find and probe any weak point in our armor, could be distinctly heard.

In September, taking advantage of a very dark night, they rectified their line in our front from the City Point road south to their batteries on Hare's Hill. This change of line was to escape the enfilade from our forts crossing the Appomattox. The writer as Brigade Officer of the Day, pointed this out to Engineer Officer Cohen, and sat by him on the battery at Colquitt's salient until he had drawn a complete diagram of it. Then lifting our hats to a sharpshooter on Hare's Hill, about 300 yards in front, who had complimented us with a half dozen close shots, we retired. That night while still on duty and making his rounds, he was knocked senseless by a bullet on the left of the neck. Fortunately the speed of the ball had been affected materially by striking the ground; and then ricochetting over the breatswork, it was received on the coat collar. Otherwise, instead of a few days suffering, the result would have been immediately fatal. He was at the time the last effective officer left with his company, and as the Fifty-sixth had many others who would have done the same, mention is here made of Company D's next morning report (of 23 September). Under the heading of officers present effective, it read: "1 Captain, if it is a fight; but not

for a march." Such still was the grim determination in Lee's army

24 September. Beauregard informs us that the enemy are going to open a terrific shelling upon our position, and we must "lie low." This was awaited for some time; but James W James, going out too soon, was pierced through the chest by a shrapnell shell back at the wagon yard on the west side of Petersburg. He survived this frightful wound until that night. He was a brave and faithful soldier.

About the middle of August, between the Crater and Colquitt's salient, we exploded a mine under a portion of the enemy's line. I think there were no casualties in the Fifty-sixth—again under Captain Harrill. In fact, it amounted to nothing beyond an object lesson.

26 September. B. H. McKee, and 1 October J. F Brown and Jesse Clark, were wounded in the trenches—all first-class men. It is hoped that some account may yet be had of the casualties of each of the companies of this regiment through the war and a more detailed sketch of their particular experiences. There was a considerable list of casualties among officers and men that I did not note, and cannot now obtain.

1 November. Thus the time wore on, with many incidents, however, that cannot be recalled. At the division inspection now made, the regiment is complimented on its fine military appearance and the general condition of arms and accoutrements. As much could not be said of clothing, for none were indebted to the Quartermaster for an *overdraft*, and no requisition had been honored for some time.

INSPECTION BY GENERAL LEE.

But the event of this period is an inspection by General Lee in person. He is neatly attired in regulation gray, but without the general's white buff coat collar and cuffs. A turn-down collar, of the same material as the gray cloth coat, bears three stars; but there is no gold wreath around them, nor a particle of gold lace upon the sleeves, where from cuff to elbow a full dress uniform would have given him four parallel cords through many a twist and turn forming the hiero-

glyphic chevron interpreted to be the initials C S. A. With the modest suggestion of rank on the collar, he might have been mistaken for a Colonel in his best fatigue suit, if the triplicate arrangement in the two rows of buttons upon the breast were overlooked. His hat is a soft black felt; but in the summer he had been seen along the lines with a white straw. Hair and full beard are both short. Complexion is of a healthy, ruddy hue, indicating a temperate life. He is six feet high and well proportioned. There is a fearless look of self-possession without a trace of arrogance, while the bright, intellectual, sincere, even sympathetic expression of the eye inspires a feeling of confidence and comradeship in which one forgets to note its color. Such is Lee in the zenith of his fame, age 57, in November, 1864. At the outbreak of the war the Confederate Congress had created five officers with the rank of full General. These were appointed in this succession: Samuel Cooper, who continued through the war as Adjutant-General, having just resigned the same position in the United States Army. Albert Sidney Johnston, killed in the battle of Shiloh; Robert E. Lee; Joseph E. Johnston; and P G. T. Beauregard. Braxton Bragg and Kirby Smith were subsequently given the same rank. Around Lee as around no other, clung the hearts of the soldiers in the field and of the people at home. The Congress voiced the unanimous demand when it raised him to the rank of General-in-Chief. This made the second vacancy in the rank of General, filled as above noted. His General Order No. 1, as Commander-in-Chief, was issued 9 February, 1865.

An incident illustrating General Lee's thoughtfulness of others, occurred just after his passing to the right of the Fifty-sixth. At the exposed point, before noted in Colquitt's salient, he got up and leisurely examined the change in the line that had been reported to him, against the entreating protest of General Gracie, of Alabama, then holding that point, who informed him that more than one man had already been picked off there by sharpshooters. Finally looking around and seeing that he had not been allowed to make this examination alone, he said: "General Gracie, I think you ought

not to expose yourself here; let's get down." We hear that General Gracie is killed at this point a few days later.

Equally characteristic is the following incident, which I might have recalled to Captain Williams before he closed his admirable sketch of Company C, Tenth Regiment (Artillery). It is given as received from his predecessor, in command of that battery at the battle of Gettysburg. During the ferocious artillery duel preceding the charge of Pettigrew and Pickett, General Lee, with other officers, was for a time immediately in the rear of this battery below the crest of the hill. A young Lieutenant, from a command not yet engaged, finely mounted, galloped up and stationed himself in an exposed position out in front and near by, and was looking back to see if he had attracted the desired admiration. General Lee took in the situation at once. Beckoning him to come back, and then ignoring the rank designated by his full dress uniform, said: "Young man, who are you?" He was answered with name, rank and command, and replied: "Thank you for the information; I might have mistaken you for some citizen who wished to witness a battle. As I am somewhat older than you, will you pardon me for expressing an opinion? I think you should not expose your life unnecessarily; your country may need it. Return to your command."

The Army of Northern Virginia knew its leader, and he knew them. It had been demonstrated that the Army of the James could not enter Petersburg; also that the two cities were safe even after the Army of the Potomac, though repulsed at point after point, had made its way down by the left flank and joined it. For it had now taken "all summer," and General Grant had not yet been able to "fight it out on this line."

"THE LAST DITCH."

But it was true as he said, we had "robbed the cradle and the grave," and were now "in the last ditch." While our additions were individually raw recruits, they did not constitute new organizations, but were immediately consolidated with younger members of their families and neighbors already constituting veteran corps. They were generally

familiar with the use of fire arms. Our only trouble was that there were not enough of them.

While our last stake is being thus played for all it is worth, confident even in our last ditch, the Northern people have been fully aroused to the determination that the war shall not last another year. Volunteers coming? No; the day for them on both sides has long since passed. Drafts are made of many more additional men than we can number in the aggregate of veterans and conscripts combined, thus making the odds here at least 4 to 1. Draft riots in New York inspire a faint hope that the Empire State will give no more men against us. But quiet is soon restored up there, and there is a mighty increase of population in our front. Some expectation was raised that the vote for General McClellan against Mr. Lincoln (on the encouragement of which Mr. Stephens and Mr. Davis had a very acrimonious controversy, see their correspondence *in re* Cable, see Official Records) would be strong enough at least to indicate a desire of the Union States to have some offer submitted to us looking to a settlement by arbitration. Delusive hope. A feeling akin to that which on our side had in August elected Vance over Holden, in North Carolina, now on the other carried Lincoln triumphantly through over McClellan. If Grant found his force again insufficient, he could again double it, and all would be properly equipped and fed. We had no more.

Among the drafted men confronting us circulars were sent by "grapevine telegraph," offering them protection and occupation in our rear, if they were peaceably inclined. This at first met with some success, and as many as twenty-five one night came through our regimental picket line from a single regiment.

Recently, Hampton had made a cavalry dash in the rear of Grant's left flank, and driven from their pens into our lines 1,600 head of fine beef cattle. (*See* Vol. I, Ninth North Carolina.) This showed that the spirit that had opposed Grant all summer, was still with us. Friendly exchanges of tobacco, crackers, newspapers, etc., had ceased with the appearance of the too friendly circulars; but nothing could keep down the spirit of banter, now and then cropping out

between the lines. Thus a blue coat calls over to know if Johnny has "any *corn dodgers* for supper," and is answered: "We have something very good with them." "What's that?" "Why, Hampton's beef."

It so happened that quite a number of our recent *permanent visitors* had been from drafted men assigned to the Fifth New Hampshire. A call was made one night to know if Johnny was awake, and answered in the affirmative. Then: "What regiment is that over there," and from the Fifty-sixth was shouted back, as reliable war news: "The Fifth New Hampshire." The night was very still, and voices could be heard at a long distance quite distinctly. This sally was met with the heaviest shout of laughter remembered to have been heard during the war, and as the joke was passed down their line, it was taken up from point to point, with merry peals until lost in the distance.

WINTER IN THE TRENCHES.

The winter in the trenches was one of great hardship, though scarcely an assault was delivered from either side. Fuel had to be brought in by hand, about a mile, as had been the timber for the bomb-proofs in the summer. Our winter quarters, as well as chimneys, were made of barrels, boxes, or any material that could be had, and held in place with daubs of mud.

The cases were not isolated through the regiment, of men who had gone through every movement by day or night, and had never missed a battle. Some had been wounded, on different occasions, but had managed to return in time for the next, while others, always to the front, had been spared from both wounds and disease The following therefore is given not as exceptional, but as of a class. At the close of 1864, the Captain of Company D obtained leave of absence on business. On the application was endorsed by the regimental commander: "Approved. Has not missed a march or a fight in which his company was engaged." By the Brigade Commander: "Approved, because deserved." By the Division Commander: "Approved, as by Brigade Commander," and so on to the headquarters.

TALK OF PEACE.

Christmas, 1864. "Peace on earth, good will to men?" No, not yet; but evidently a proposition in some shape is about to be made from the Confederate side. Rumors have been current of inducing General Longstreet, who is said to be a personal friend of General Grant's, to have an interview with him, and submit a proposition that he can now take his pick of the blue and the gray, and enforce the Monroe Doctrine against Napoleon III, now occupying Mexico. The above is given as recorded in my journal. The U. S. Official Records show that General Longstreet that winter, at the request of General Ord, commanding the Army of the James, finally met him in an interview, and was informed that there might be a satisfactory adjustment through a military convention, and if General Lee desired an interview, it would not be declined. (See Mr. Davis' message to Confederate States Congress, 13 March, 1865.)

On our part of the line, while the officers were strict disciplinarians, knowing that the bravest mob counts for little on a battlefield, they were "with the boys" off duty, and many life-long friendships were thus formed in the field. The writer would thus be asked (in confidence) this winter if he hadn't really given up all hope. The most effective reply was, that we all had the same opinion of General Lee; that he was as humane as he was brave; that he would not uselessly sacrifice the lives of men who always protested against his exposing his own—the protest having been actually enforced at Spottsylvania Court House—that he had often shown his confidence in us, and that we must not prove unworthy of it; that when all was over, he was great enough to say so.

On Christmas day, a dinner was distributed from the ladies of Petersburg to the soldiers on the line, and highly appreciated. But it was evident that at many a hearthstone there was now suffering for food. Home letters to the soldiers were in many cases anything but cheerful. So the year closed. Of this period, Captain L. Harrill says:

"During this long siege the men were on short rations, scantily clothed, and lived under ground, in what was known as bomb-proofs. They would eat anything. The writer was

invited to a "squirrel dinner" of large, grey wharf rats found along the Appomattox river."

THE PEACE COMMISSION.

January, 1865. The left of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina is resting on the City Point Railroad. In the south side of the deep cut is excavated regimental headquarters, protected by bracings and supports of heavy timber. The Forty-ninth and Twenty-fifth to our right; the Thirty-fifth and Twenty-fourth to our left. Here the Peace Commissioners, authorized by Congress and appointed by Mr. Davis, crossed the lines, going out to meet Mr. Lincoln and Mr. Seward, of his Cabinet, at Fortress Monroe. The appointees were Messrs. A. H. Stephens, Vice-President Confederate States; R. M. T. Hunter, of Virginia, formerly United States Senator, now a Confederate States Senator; and J. A. Campbell, of Alabama, formerly Associate Justice Supreme Court, United States, now Assistant Secretary of War. The feeling in the army that all had been done, which our resources and human valor could accomplish, was manifested by the prolonged cheers which greeted their departure as the news ran along the line. North Carolina had a right to be heard from in this matter. The first States had seceded without awaiting an overt act towards the destruction of slavery after Mr. Lincoln's election; but after a thorough canvass, with the Chief Executive and almost all the State press in favor of it, she had in February, 1861, voted down the proposition to call a State Convention with authority to consider a question that had not yet arisen. But with the opening of the war at Fort Sumpter 12 April, 1861, and the call of Mr. Lincoln for a quota of troops, her volunteer companies, of which there were a number throughout the towns, immediately reported themselves to Governor Ellis, who had replied to the Federal Government, substantially: "You cannot get a man from North Carolina." The State Convention in afterwards unanimously withdrawing from the Union, had acted deliberately, and though she swore to her own hurt, yet to the end she changed not. Casting about 113,000 votes, she has contributed over 125,000 troops, and her dead heroes slain in battle

number twice those from any other State. Not for a moment did she think of deserting her associates. Terms with one must be terms with all. In this spirit Senator William A. Graham, in full accord and after consultation with General Lee, introduced the peace commission resolution, which was adopted; and he would have gone out as its Chairman, but for Mr. Stephens' unexpectedly accepting the complimentary tender of the position which Mr. Davis thought his state of health would compel him to decline. General Lee not only approved, but urged the measure and prompt action, saying, "My lines may be broken any night, and where I am to rally, I do not know. The truth is, I shall not rally at all." When told that the commission was appointed, but their hands were tied by the President's instructions to insist upon the recognition of our independence, he exclaimed, not profanely, but with great feeling, "I wish to God that I was dead; the war is over, and Mr. Davis ought to acknowledge it."

This account of the origin of the Peace Commission of January, 1865, and of General Lee's full concurrence with him, I received from Governor Graham just after the close of the war. He also said that Mr. Davis explained this complimentary tender to Mr. Stephens as an effort to conciliate him. From U. S. Official Records it is now evident this referred to a sharp and bitter correspondence in the matter of Mr. David F Cable, of Ohio.

What was General Lee to do? A soldier cannot resign his sword while under fire. He must see the battle through first. And there had been almost a continuous battle since the first of the preceding May Congress raised him to the first rank of General-in-Chief of the Confederate States Armies; but it had not yet empowered him to treat for peace. It was afterwards further understood by us that in some way, General Grant was sounded by him and had declared himself powerless to settle any question not purely military.

Of course, the Commission accomplished nothing. Diplomacy made all out of the Federal refusal of independence that was possible. There were bonfires and speeches in Richmond; but they did not decrease the overwhelming num-

bers and resources of General Grant, or add to the depleted ranks and supplies of General Lee. Mr. Blair, who opened the matter on the Federal side, gave no encouragement to insert in the Confederate commission the clause: "and to secure peace to the two countries," and Mr. Lincoln's surprise at finding it there is manifest in his special message to Congress.

Through January and February there was bitter weather, with rain, sleet and snow. There was some comfort in the bomb-proofs with a coal fire, which often had to be started with nothing but a match and freshly cut green pine wood. With pocket knives we would whittle a lot of shavings, very thin, perseveringly dry these in the blaze until they would ignite, and thus eventually get a starter upon which to put the coal, occasionally at last to have the chimney knocked in by a shrapnel shell, if it protruded at all, after becoming a better target with its smoke.

Furloughs were cut off unusually early by the failure of the Peace Commission, if such it can be called. And even before that any officer returning after the expiration of his leave, must report in person to General Lee. Means of transportation were limited. On some lines there were tri-weekly trains, which the ever ready Vance facetiously said, meant that the train went up the road one week, and tried to get back the next. At Greensboro the writer returning with two Virginia ladies, managed to get them on a train exclusively for the Confederate Treasury girls fleeing before Sherman from Columbia for Richmond; but the guard was inexorable against their escort. His time was up next day, and this the last chance to make it. The ladies kindly smuggled him in at a window about the centre of the car, and thus he kept his record.

The crisis was evidently approaching. In the army opposed to us were not only white men from this and other countries, but the colored troops alone within the call of its commanding officer for the next campaign, were not less than 150 regiments; more than our effective present, as given above. The States claimed by us as Confederate had contributed to the Union armies 350,000 men. First and last, the Confeder-

ate soldiers actually in the field were hardly more than double that; while the other soldiers brought out from the North and West, were six times as many. Truly the North was in earnest at last, and many men who had admitted the Constitutional right of a dissatisfied State to secede, were in the front fighting for the Union, just as on the Southern side the strongest original Union men, with the old cry: "Blood is thicker than water," were now in to the finish to help their neighbors out of a difficulty with "the last man and the last dollar." These had been Mr. Holden's pledge, when he signed the Ordinance of Secession 20 May, 1761, and our inimitable Vance alluded to it when taken to Washington by his captors, saying: "We have spent the last dollar, and I have come on as the last man."

Some idea of the status of our money is shown when it is stated that at Christmas, 1864, the writer obtained as a special favor, at $125.00 a side of calf-skin out of which to have a pair of boots made. The lowest water-mark reached by Federal currency was $2.56 for $1.00, some time prior to Gettysburg and Vicksburg, occurring the first week in July, 1863. Meal was now $50 per bushel and flour $700 per barrel, reported by Mr. Davis as prices then paid by the Government. He thereupon submitted a proposition to try to borrow gold, and make specie payments.

RELIEF ON HATCHER'S RUN.

15 March. We were relieved by Gordon's Corps, and Ransom's Brigade (probably with the rest of Johnson's Division in their vicinity,) moved out to the extreme right on Hatcher's Run. The change from living in the ditches and sleeping in bomb-proofs, is very much enjoyed. The days are occupied by guard-mounts, company and squad drills in the forenoon, and battalion drill and dress parade in the afternoon. Nine days pass without the enemy's front persistently protruding beyond our right flank. We must go back and wake him up.

24 March. While in the execution of battalion evolutions on the drill grounds, a courier rides up and delivers a dispatch to the commanding officer, Major John W Graham.

Back to quarters, where the evening is spent in cooking rations and getting ready for a night march.

BATTLE OF HARE'S HILL, OR FORT STEDMAN.

25 March. Before daylight the brigade under Colonel Rutledge moves through Petersburg, and a little before dawn finds us on familiar ground near the line between City Point Railroad and the Norfolk Railroad. Ransom is put in command of Wallace's Brigade, with his own. But the halt here is only long enough to form in line of battle for a dash at the enemy in our front; for Gordon's people, who had replaced us here on the 15th instant, have just been moved up the line to the right and are to advance in line abreast with us. The left of the Fifty-sixth, the regiment to-day again under Major Graham, is near the City Point road, and to its right is the Forty-ninth and then the Twenty-fifth. Captain Lawson Harrill, in command of Company I, now on the left, and Lieutenant Charles M. Payne, of Company K, on the right, now move briskly over the line with the skirmishers, and on their heels follows our line of battle. The skirmish line quickly unhooks our *chevaux de frise*. Through them pass the nearest sections or platoons, and wheeling immediately into line, we rush forward bounding over their breastworks, and the position is ours before the enemy are ready for the work of the day. At the earliest dawn we know that the line is ours as far as we can see up to the crest of Fort Stedman on Hare's Hill, to our right. We are now on the Baxter country road at the old race track, and find that the Fifty-sixth forms the extreme left of the Confederate line, that has come in. Our movement had been covered by the darkness, and we now look for troops to come up on our left. We understood that Pickett was to come from Butler's front at Drewry's Bluff, and take the line from our left to the river. The morning wore on, with the enemy paying us their respects both with infantry and distant artillery on our left, and shelling from a point to our right. The men who had charged through Plymouth before breakfast were not to be idle spectators, for the rest of the day of the drama in which we had acted only the first scene. So Major Graham

prepared to wheel to the left and charge in the rear the fort on the City Point road. It was supported by a Michigan Brigade, commanded by Colonel Ely, (whose acquaintance was subsequently made, while we were recovering from wounds, in Petersburg,) and they had shown no disposition to get out of our way, or let us alone. At the same time we are in the range of a fort on the south and another on the north bank of the Appomattox river to our left, who are displaying a spirit of rivalry in their attentions to us. Before our assault can be delivered against our nearest foe, a solid column of blue appears upon the rising ground to our front and right. Their alignment is perfect, and down they dash only to be repulsed by the steady volleys from our line. Over again they come, and again they are driven back. The third time they meet with no better success. Now, except to our left and an occasional shell from the right, there is comparative quiet.

Here we find a peculiar use for those troublesome bayonets, for the retaining of which we had been complimented on the inspection of the division. As a protection against the flank fire we dig the loose earth and form ridges between which to lie. Every man in this section was soon protected except Robert Kell Gates and the Captain of Company D. In a few minutes Gates was instantly killed, and the Captain wounded in the leg. About the same time, we could see on our extreme right that the captured line was being gradually abandoned. Major Graham held the regiment together until it could be ascertained whether there was any order to that effect, when Adjutant Thomas R. Roulhac, of the Forty-ninth, came down the line to transmit the order from General Ransom, and the Fifty-sixth, as ordered, waited its turn and came off last from the field. The writer gratefully remembers the gallant Sergeant Hotchkiss, who assisted him back within our line. The command of the company was turned over to Lieutenant Robt. T. Faucett. Before reaching the lines he was struck again, this time in the shoulder by a piece of shell from the artillery at the Appomattox. The enemy regretting their neglect to turn out in time to meet us more handsomely in the early morning, were now doing all in their power to

make the procession more interesting as we returned. While we had advanced and taken their second line, they had lessened the gap we had made in their first line, finally overwhelming and capturing half of Company I, with its gallant Captain fighting to the last, and their trenches here were lined now with men by whom we had to rush on our return without an exchange of compliments. In this galling fire on our flank, many good men went down, and it is a matter of sincere regret that subsequent events have allowed no opportunity to get a complete list of casualties even in any company. In this enfilade, Major Graham fell, pierced through both legs by the same ball, but was borne by his devoted men within the lines, directed by the gallant Lieut. V J Palmer, and Capt. W G. Graves. On his way to the rear the stretcher was stopped by a kindly word of General Lee, who inquired his condition.

The behavior of the whole regiment and brigade was never better than in this action of 25 March, 1865. Advancing from a point in the lines that we had held all winter, and of course considered impregnable against those people, and their own seeming as strong as ours, no man had faltered in his duty. The pluck of the Confederate soldier was probably never better shown than to-day by our Ensign, James M. Clark, of Orange county. Cut down in the terrible flank fire, with a leg bone shattered below the knee, he delivered the colors that he had borne aloft through so many storms of battle, to Bedford McKee, by whom they were brought across our lines. Then seizing between his teeth the folds of his blanket, spread beneath him, he crawled over the ground until safely back in one of our rifle pits. Standard and banner had been ripped and rent, but never a stain upon its honor. Company F went in under Captain Grigg with forty-four men, and came out with only eight under Lieutenant Palmer.

Company I was on the extreme left of that part of the lines held by the Confederates, and after the battle had been raging for some time, Captain Harrill received an order from General Ransom with his compliments, saying the *traverse there must be held.* The defense of this traverse for the time, checked the enemy rushing along their main line

to enfilade the regiment. About 9 or 10 o'clock, as the regiment was withdrawing last from the field, the enemy made another desperate charge in front and at the same time the Second Michigan Regiment rushed along the main line and captured Captain Harrill and about twenty of the company, while Lieutenants J. M. Walker and P H. Gross and some twenty of the men escaped with the regiment. J. C. Gross and Thomas Robbins were killed. Lieutenant Walker, in command of the remnant of Company I, passed through the battle of Five Forks and some skirmishes on the retreat to Appomattox.

The post of the regiment was a most critical and important one, protecting the flank and rear of others, withdrawn one by one, ahead of it, and it might have surrendered with honor after this was accomplished and itself almost surrounded at close quarters. But it was needed back on the line, and to the line it went, though with a loss of about 250, over one-half. Major Graham and Captain Graham were taken from the Confederate hospital to be the guests of Mr. Wm. R. Johnson, and received every attention from that elegant and patriotic family, and the well known physician, Dr. Lassiter. Here General Ransom was our earliest caller and telegraphed our friends of the provision made for our comfort.

In this battle the gallant Captain Taylor, of Company B, Fifty-sixth, from Fayetteville, lost a leg, and Captain White was shocked by the immediate explosion of a shell.

It was said that Pickett's Division had failed to make connection with our left because of the breaking down of the railroad trains furnished them. Exactly the dimensions of this sortie, the writer has never learned, but it was evidently a reconnoissance, possibly to be followed up by a last desperate venture. (General Lee's report sustains this view, and says he found the enemy's interior line too strong to be taken without a costly sacrifice of life.) The loss probably fell heaviest on the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, as it was the last to retire; but we were in no condition to lose one man even for four of the enemy. The Federal officers met during the removal of the dead, were exultant and evidently found some

satisfaction to-day for the terrible punishment they had received in the battle of the Crater, to which they referred.

The Confederate loss in this affair was, according to General F. Lee, 2,949, including 1,000 captured. The enemy report a loss of 98 killed and 509 wounded, 481 missing of their infantry; and four killed, fourteen wounded and twenty-five missing of the artillery. That afternoon General Ransom meets General Hartranft and during the flag of truce 120 Confederate dead and 15 badly wounded are turned over to us. Nearly one-half of the Confederate loss to-day fell on Ransom's Brigade, Colonel Rutledge reporting 1,364 lost out of his 2,300. General Lee says in his report: "All the troops engaged behaved most handsomely, including two brigades under Brigadier-General Ransom."

Somehow the war had not been fought out on the line last *summer;* but if we are now spoiling for a fight, General Grant evidently has enough people with him at last to readily accommodate us, and get home by next summer. His losses can be supplied; ours cannot.

26 March. The brigade moves out to the right, and Lieutenant-Colonel G. G. Luke, who has just returned, takes command of the Fifty-sixth. On the east front and particularly near the Crater, night after night witnesses the most continuous musketry firing, the reverberating volleys, heard back in the city, rivaling discharges of artillery. Behind such rackets the most important movements are made. Gaps might probably be found now in either line, as in ours particularly 17 June, and 30 July, 1864. But only on one side was there a thought of making another advance. On the other side the alternative might now be presented of fighting our way through to General Jos. E. Johnston's army then retiring through the Carolinas before General Sherman, or a race for the mountains of Virginia.

FAILURE TO NEGOTIATE PEACE.

If there was the faintest hope of a reconsideration of the Hampton Roads affair, it was vain. The time had passed. For it now appears that the interview referred to across the

line between General Ord and General Longstreet, took place about the first of March. Pursuant thereto General Lee wrote to General Grant, 2 March, 1865, "sincerely desiring to leave nothing untried which may put an end to the calamities of war," and adding: "I am authorized to do whatever the result of the proposed interview may render necessary or advisable." Evidently our President and Confederate Senate had at length fully acquiesced in the measure so earnestly seconded by General Lee at its initiation. But it was now too late.

General Grant replied from City Point, 4 March, 1865: "In regard to meeting you on the 6th instant, I would state that I have no authority to accede to your proposition for a conference on the subject proposed. Such authority is vested in the President of the United States alone. Gen. Ord could only have meant that I would not refuse an interview on any subject on which I have a right to act, which, of course, would be such as are purely of a military character, and on the subject of exchanges, which have been entrusted to me."

The situation had changed since January Mr. Lincoln himself could not now control it, and General Lee was put upon his mettle; for to the last he was resolved to die rather than submit to an unconditional surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia.

The record of this event is thus expanded because many of the most intelligent of the rank and file of this regiment were deeply interested in all that was heard of it at the front, and on a satisfactory compromise being attained, were ready with more than its quota if the joint expedition to oust the unfortunate Maximilian from Mexico were seriously called for. Though the too diplomatic instructions to our commissioners proved fatal, no one doubted the sincerity of Mr. Davis' convictions or that he had the courage of them. When the subsequent steps taken to reopen the matter all failed, he followed with a message to the Confederate Congress, 13 March, 1865, making a very able presentation of his side of this affair, and in the concluding sentence portraying with prophetic ken the "Fool's Errand," (the attempt to set up carpet-bag State Governments): "There remains then for

us no choice but to continue the contest to a final issue, for the people of the Confederacy must be but little known to him who supposes it possible they would ever consent to purchase at the cost of degradation and slavery permission to live in a country garrisoned by their own negroes and governed by officers sent by their conqueror to rule over them."

For data relating to much of the battle of Hare's Hill and subsequent events the writer is indebted to survivors of Companies D, F, H, I and K, the statement of Mr. C. P Tanner, well known as one of the bravest men in Company I, being the most exact. The regiment was engaged skirmishing through the 27th and 28th of March and worked all night of the 27th constructing breastworks beyond the pond on Hatcher's Run at Battery 45. With about an hour's rest, they marched back into line of battle on the night of the 28th and were skirmishing and manœuvering all day of the 29th, the enemy several times dashing against their line only to be promptly driven back. This was in the vicinity of Burgess' Mill, on Hatcher's Run. All day of the 30th they awaited an attack at Five Forks.

BATTLE OF FIVE FORKS.

As Grant now resumed his left flank movement, to gain the only roads by which Lee could hope to effect a junction with Joseph E. Johnston, retreating before Sherman in North Carolina—the Southside Railroad from Petersburg, and the Lynchburg from Richmond intersecting at Burkeville Junction,—Lee had sent out this detachment four miles to his right to meet Sheridan at Five Forks on his advance from Dinwiddie Court House, a few miles southeast. The road from Dinwiddie Court House trending northwest towards Petersburg, comes into two others, the White Oak running east and west, and the Ford road north and south, at the point of intersection; hence the name of Five Forks. At sunset on 30 March, General Pickett with Corse's, Terry's and Stuart's Brigades of his own, and Ransom's and Wallace's of B. R. Johnson's Division under General Ransom, took position in line of battle and awaited the assault. The enemy not coming within range, they, next day, 31 March,

moved upon him, took one line of battle, and drove Sheridan's advance back to the Court House that afternoon, where night ended the battle, in which the cavalry divisions of Rosser, W H. F. Lee and Fitzhugh Lee also participated under the latter. The Fifty-sixth, under Colonel Luke, was with the brigade under Colonel Rutledge, in the left wing of this column, and after crossing a creek under fire, charged the right flank of the enemy, and compelled the retreat of the whole line, after their left had been steadily resisting Pickett's right lower down the creek.

Early next morning, 1 April, the detachment, occupying this exposed position, fell back nearly to the White Oak road in time to check the movement of Warren's Fifth Corps against their left rear. While Rosser was sent off to guard the wagon train, W H. F Lee was posted to the right and Mumford to the left of Pickett; but there was the gap of four miles between them and the right of Lee's lines. Ransom's Brigade was immediately to the right of Mumford. Mumford was at 4 p. m. overwhelmed and Ransom's left flank and rear hotly assailed, while the demonstrations against W H. F Lee were not so strong, and by a counter-charge were repulsed.

But Pickett's whole command was soon enveloped from front, left, and rear, and his right seriously threatened. For some time the unequal contest was gallantly maintained. The Fifty-sixth, fighting the enemy on the front and rear, repulsed five distinct charges. Captain Sterling H. Gee, our Assistant Adjutant-General, was killed at the point so stubbornly held by this regiment. No officer had a better record, and he was the happy bridegroom of only a week. He was succeeded by Adjutant Robert B. Peebles, of the Thirty-fifth North Carolina Troops, well known for bravery and efficiency throughout the command, and who had risen from the ranks in Company E of the Fifty-sixth. Pickett's loss is 4,000 men, 13 stands of colors and 6 guns, over half of his forlorn hope.

In this battle the Fifty-sixth Regiment maintained its record for courage and discipline. True to that, it could not retire without orders. After little rest for a week, these last

manœuvres had extended over two days. It was successful both in charging and afterwards in repeatedly repulsing the heavy columns of the enemy. With their support on the left flank crushed at last by a rear attack, they vainly believed, as did General Ransom, that to others would be assigned the part of checkmating the odds of over 5 to 1, now gradually surrounding them. Captain Graves had opened the battle in command of the regimental sharpshooters, and now with Lieutenant-Colonel Luke, Adjutant Faison, Lieutenants Palmer, Walker, Faucett, Badger, Wilson, Turner and others, shared with the men in handling the muskets most effectually. Another round would have killed a few more of the enemy, but it only meant a needless massacre of the survivors on our side by overwhelming numbers now in touching distance. In the final melee here and there men escaped, as General Ransom, with his staff and a forlorn hope on the right, cut their way out to the Southside (Danville) Railroad, where they were consolidated that night with Anderson's Corps. In this last charge he lost his second horse of the day, the superb thoroughbred Ion, shot under him. Bitter criticisms were made of the management of this reconnoissance; but we may generously grant that its commander (Pickett) was fortunate in getting back with any portion of his force; and the choice of that portion was hardly left to him.

Here closed the career of the Fifty-sixth as a regiment, contributing to-day its full proportion of the 700 men lost by the brigade. But there remained about a company's strength with all the rear guard details, disabled men returning to duty, and the surgeon's, quartermaster's and ordnance corps. With a few general lines we will now see these to the end.

2 April. With little resistance except at Fort Gregg, on the south front, where there is some stubborn fighting, the Confederates now concentrate upon their inner line, running around Petersburg from the Appomattox on the east to the same river on the west, where they repulse all assaults to dislodge them. Richmond and Petersburg cannot be held another day. General Lee's dispatch is delivered to Mr. Davis, while attending morning service at St. Paul's church in Richmond, that he must start that night "or run the risk of

being cut off in the morning. It will be a difficult, but I hope not an impracticable operation. The troops will all be directed to Amelia Court House."

THE RETREAT.

As we file across the Pocahontas Bridge over the Appomattox, the blowing up of the iron-clad gunboats in the James can be heard, while the sky is lurid with the burning of tobacco warehouses and army stores in Richmond. The writer hoping soon to be able to report for duty, if then within the Confederate lines, was fortunate in meeting an old Chapel Hill friend, Captain Bradford, commanding a field battery from Alabama. On a horse loaned by him, he made his way *via* Goode's Bridge to Amelia Court House and found the command reorganizing. Was indebted for similar courtesies by the way to Dr. John E. Logan, of Greensboro, N C., a Surgeon in Grimes' Division, and to Captain Gregory, of Washington, N C., belonging to the same command, and to Captain A. B. Williams, Company C, Tenth North Carolina Regiment (artillery).

5 April. Lee has concentrated his forces at Amelia Court House, his losses in the last ten days being one-third of his effective force, leaving him now less than 30,000 infantry. Here trains had arrived with ample rations for his army, on Sunday, 2d April, and in the excitement some one had hurried them on to Richmond without stopping to unload. Since reading Colonel Cheek's sketch of the Ninth (First Cavalry), I think that one of Sheridan's scouts in gray here played us this trick, and acted the officious quartermaster.

From the cribs in the country the men were furnished with raw corn, to take their chances of roasting it on the retreat. Three small infantry corps were now formed from what remained of the Army of Northern Virginia, and to these commands are assigned Longstreet, Ewell and Anderson, (Major-General John B. Gordon commanding, the latter at the surrender), while Fitzhugh Lee has the cavalry corps, the remnant of the regiment and brigade being in Anderson's Corps. (See General Lee's report to Mr. Davis, 12 April, 1865.) Captain McNeely commanded the last of the Fifty-

sixth. The naval battalion from the destroyed gunboats, were under Commodore Tucker, and assigned to Custis Lee's Division under Ewell. This point is thirty-eight miles southwest from Richmond, and within twenty miles of Burkeville. But after this fatal delay of twenty-four hours, Lee can no longer hope to connect with Johnston, and resumes his march on the night of 5 April for Farmville, over on the Lynchburg Railroad, distant thirty-five miles west.

6 April. At Sailor's Creek, surrounded and without artillery, the commands lose in killed, wounded and prisoners 6,000 men. Generals Ewell, Custis Lee, Kershaw and Dubose of Ewell's Corps, and Generals Corse and Hunton of Pickett's Division, Anderson's Corps, are captured. Ransom's remnant got through with little damage.

7 April. At Farmville rations have been brought down from Lynchburg. These are issued and the command now reduced to two corps, under Longstreet and Gordon, marches out four miles on the road towards Lynchburg, and halts on chosen ground to allow the wagon train to get ahead. Here the assault of Humphrey's Corps is repulsed after he has lost 571 men. The honor of this affair, a part of which passed under the eye of the writer, belongs to Hoke's Brigade under General William Gaston Lewis. After a loss of two-thirds of the men carried into action, he rejoined the retiring army that had safely passed in his rear, and deeply affected by the slaughter of so many brave comrades, with streaming eyes he asked General Gordon why he had sent his brigade in alone against such odds as twenty to one, and was assured it was the last resort to save the corps. No higher compliment could have been paid.

Within seven miles of Appomattox a determined effort was made to break through the line of retreat held by the remnant of Cox's and Lewis' Brigades, the latter connecting with Cummings' North Carolina Battery. This was defeated with great loss to the enemy. General Lewis assisting to serve the guns, firing grape and canister, was dangerously wounded and left at a house near by.

That night, the 7th, Lee pushes on towards Appomattox Court House, with Gordon in front, followed closely by

Longstreet, and Fitzhugh Lee covering the rear. Progress is slow and cautious. The vicinity of the Court House is reached on the evening of the 8th. But Sheridan with two strong divisions of cavalry, Ord's infantry and the Fifth Corps of the Army of the Potomac is across our path.

9 April. The Confederate cavalry has moved from the rear to the front during the night, with orders to resume the march at 1 a. m. As late as the night of the 8th, General Lee had not abandoned all hope of escape; and as to an unconditional surrender, he said: "Sooner than that I am resolved to die."

Accordingly he directed Gordon and Fitz Lee to attack Sheridan's cavalry at daylight on the 9th. The charge was made, Cox's North Carolina Brigade leading, and the cavalry pushed back with the loss of two guns and a number of prisoners. But the gray line is then ordered to come back. The Army of Northern Virginia has made its last charge, and fired its last shot.

The surrender is on terms with the honors of war. In the conclusion of the formalities there is nothing to humiliate the vanquished. The skeleton regiments unattended stack their arms at the points designated, and there silently and forever furl their banners. The wounded receive attention from the medical corps of both sides. The writer, not yet recovered, is furnished an ambulance back to Burkeville Station in company with Captain H. A. Chambers, wounded in command of the Forty-ninth at Five Forks and also still disabled.

An interesting volume could be made up of deeds of daring along the retreat. In his report of the surrender, three days thereafter, General Lee states his effective force at 7,892 infantry with arms, and 75 rounds of ammunition, and 63 pieces of artillery with 94 rounds of ammunition, and he believed the cavalry who had reached Appomattox Court House about 2,100 effective men. The number since published in the U. S. Official Records includes without distinction the quartermaster's, ordnance and medical corps and the disabled. The total here surrendered by this brigade

consolidated, was 41 officers and 394 men. Here I saw a large number of Federal prisoners turned over to General Grant's army. The inevitable should have been gracefully acknowledged by the civil authorities at Hampton Roads the last of January, 1865, and the further sacrifice of life and property avoided; but under constraint of his office and for the last three months against his own private judgment, Lee had fought to a finish.

10 April. On the printing press at General Grant's headquarters the forms of parole to be signed by the Confederate officers for themselves and on behalf of their men, with the certificates furnished to the officers, are printed and dated as of to-day, Monday. This done, and General Grant having shared his rations with us, the homeward march in small bands of unarmed men commences, many carrying a copy of General Lee's farewell address, which is as follows.

General Orders No. 9.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
APPOMATTOX COURT HOUSE, 10 April, 1865.

After four years of arduous service, marked by unsurpassed courage and fortitude, the Army of Northern Virginia has been compelled to yield to overwhelming numbers and resources. I need not tell the survivors of so many hard-fought battles, who have remained steadfast to the last, that I have consented to this result from no distrust of them; but feeling that valor and devotion could accomplish nothing that could compensate for the loss that would have attended the continuation of the contest, I have determined to avoid the useless sacrifice of those whose past services have endeared them to their countrymen.

By the terms of agreement officers and men can return to their homes, and remain there until exchanged. You will take with you the satisfaction that proceeds from the consciousness of duty faithfully performed; and I earnestly pray that a merciful God will extend to you His blessing and protection.

With an unceasing admiration for your constancy and devotion to your country, and a grateful remembrance of your

kind and generous consideration of myself, I bid you an affectionate farewell.

R. E. LEE,
General.

For the preservation of many dates and much of the material in this imperfect sketch, grateful acknowledgment is here made to the writer's valet and friend, David Blount, who reached him and his brother at Petersburg a few days after they were both wounded, and attended him thence faithfully to Appomattox Court House, and back again. He carried his journal through in a small valise, and was thus occasionally the target for a joke by the wayside. Hailed with the question whether he was carrying baggage for the division, he replied with the utmost politeness and sincerity: "No, sir; this is just Marse Robert's valise." He was told by his new acquaintances at Appomattox Court House that he could do much better by going North with them, but replied that when he wanted friends, he knew where he could find them. He accommodated them, however, with a few hundred dollars in Confederate money for as many units in greenbacks. Safe at home again, he told his fellow freedmen in his 4 July speech, 1865, at Hillsboro, N. C., that he knew who were his best friends, and that he had stood by two of his white folks when General Grant was *mortarfying* Petersburg, and when he could do nothing more, he had surrendered with General Lee at Appomattox. At his honored grave I now pay this tribute.

Thirty-odd years have passed since the events herein but partially portrayed. The issues then settled can never arise again. The wind was sown, and the harvest was the whirlwind. *Inter arma silent leges;* by a higher law than all constitutions, out of a vital germ slumbering through eighteen centuries, came emancipation.

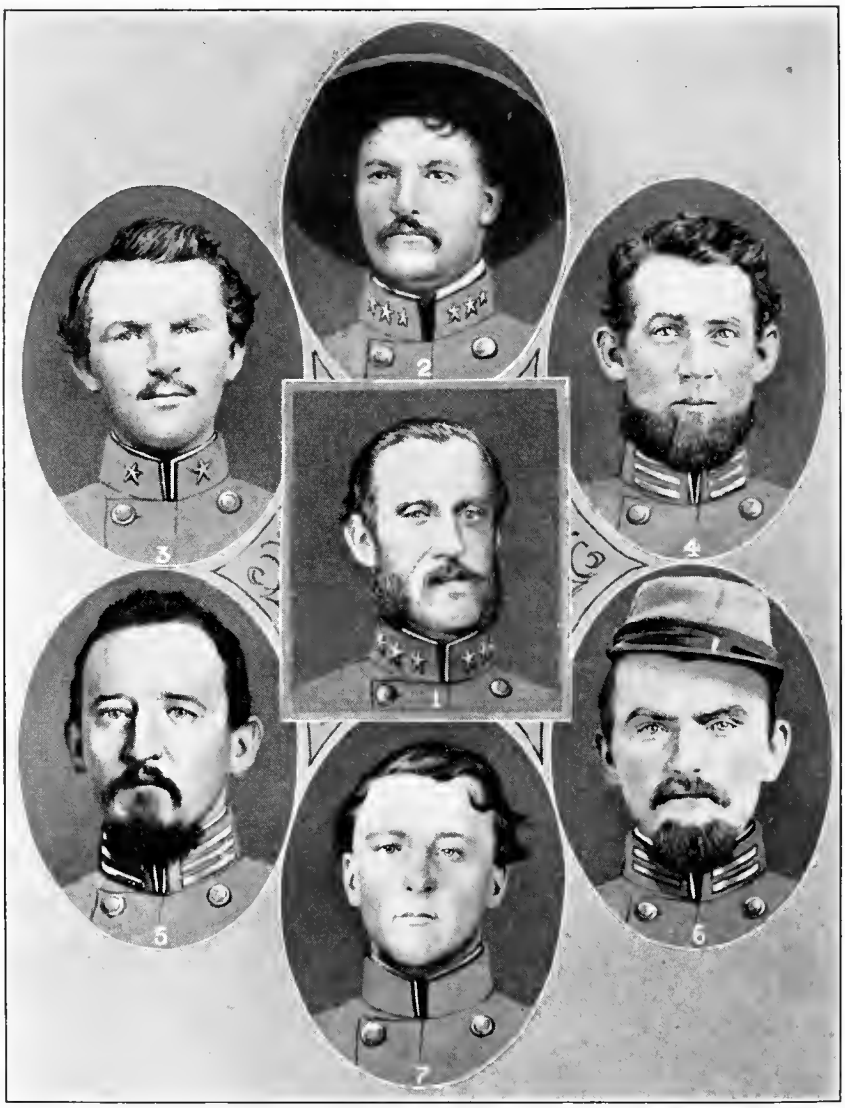
The Constitution had guaranteed slave-property to the owners as a vested right. The South to perpetuate this right, broke the Union. The North, to preserve the Union, as a military necessity, broke the Constitution. But the ostensible issue was the right of any State to secede on its own motion. This brought about another double paradox; for while a full proportion of the Union lines was composed of

men who before the war had never disputed the proposition as a reserved State's right, however inexpedient, they were confronted on every battlefield, from first to last, by men in gray, who (relying only on the inalienable right of revolution), could find nothing whatever, expressed or implied, in the Constitution providing for a secession. The motto on either side, however, when the conflict came, was that of the brave Decatur: "My country! Right or wrong, my country." To the North this meant the Union. To the Confederate soldier it meant his State; and her call he obeyed.

Like the Protectorate of Cromwell, the Confederacy has taken its place in history, with the powers that be no more. England under the restoration, may ignore her *Ironsides;* but North Carolina accepting the situation in good faith, and returning to a Nation whose origin she was the first boldly to propose, will never blush to exhibit her long Roster of Confederate Soldiers.

RO. D. GRAHAM.

WASHINGTON, D. C,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FIFTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

1. H. C. Jones, Colonel.
2. A. C. Godwin, Colonel.
3. James A. Craige, Major.
4. John Beard, Captain, Co. C.
5. William Johnston, Captain, Co H.
6. James F. Litaker, 1st Lieut., Co. F.
7. John D. Barrier, Sergeant, Co. F.

FIFTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

By COLONEL HAMILTON C. JONES.

The Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiment was organized at Salisbury on 6 July, 1862. Its field officers were:

Archibald Campbell Godwin, Colonel.
Hamilton C. Jones, Lieutenant-Colonel.
James A. Craige, Major.
Edward A. Semple, Adjutant.
William G. McNeely, Quartermaster.
Charles S. Morton, Surgeon,
A. H. Binion, Assistant Surgeon.

Of the company officers, the Captains were as follows:

Company A—*Rowan County*—William H. Howard.
Company B—*Rowan County*—William S. Brown.
Company C—*Rowan County*—John Beard.
Company D—*Forsyth County*—James E. Mann.
Company E—*Catawba County*—Daniel Rhyne.
Company F—*Cabarrus County*—James C. Cannon.
Company G—*Lincoln County*—John F. Speck.
Company H—*Rowan County*—William H. Howerton.
Company I—*Alamance County*—William A. Albright.
Company K—*Rowan County*—Alfred Miller.

There were many changes in the personnel of the company officers in the course of time, by resignation or death.

Of the field officers Colonel Godwin was a native of Nansemond county, Va. He had left home when only 19 years old, and in 1849 crossed the plains on foot in the throngs of the thousands seeking the gold fields of California. There he remained until the beginning of the war, having in the meantime amassed considerable fortune, a greater part of which he left in California and hastened east to tender his services

to Virginia, his native State. At the beginning of the war he was made Major in the Confederate regular army, and for a short while was assistant Provost Marshal of Richmond, and afterwards was sent as commandant of the prison at Salisbury, where he organized the Fifty-seventh Regiment. He was in every sense a magnificent gentleman. He was of commanding presence, being about six feet high and symmetrically formed. He was a man of intelligence, possessed a high order of courage and very great self-reliance, all of which combined to make him the type of the Confederate soldier. He commanded the regiment until 5 August, 1864, when he was made Brigadier-General, succeeding to the command of Hoke's Brigade, and was killed in the battle near Winchester 19 September, 1864.

James A. Craige, the Major of the regiment, had seen service with the Sixth Regiment prior to his appointment to the Fifty-seventh, and the writer, the Lieutenant-Colonel, had seen service as a Captain in the Fifth North Carolina State Troops. Of the company officers, non-commissioned officers and privates, few, if any, had seen any active service. There were many Scotch-Irish from Rowan, Iredell, Cabarrus, and Mecklenburg; there were Germans from Catawba, Lincoln, Rowan, Forsyth and Alamance. They had been reared in the ways of peace, but they made magnificent soldiers, patient, enduring and fearless.

THE BATTLE OF FREDERICKSBURG.

After the regiment was organized at Salisbury, in the summer of 1862, it was ordered to Richmond, and was there attached to Davis' Brigade in the division of General G. W. Smith, commanding the Department at Richmond. The main army at the time lay along the line of the Rapidan. The Fifty-seventh Regiment remained at Richmond until 6 November. While there it had been carefully drilled and admirably disciplined; it was well equipped, and when it was sent, in November, to join the army upon the Rapidan, it numbered more than 800 rifles, and was a soldierly-looking body of men. It was attached to Law's Brigade, Hood's Division, along with the Fourth Alabama, Sixth North Caro-

lina and Fifty-fourth North Carolina. Within a few weeks after it joined the army at the front, came the battle of Fredericksburg, on 13 December, 1862. In that battle the Confederate army occupied a semi-circular line of hills that overlooked the river bottom below Fredericksburg, and terminating at Marye's Heights, just above the town. The enemy occupied Fredericksburg, the river bottom, and the Bowling Green road that runs not far from the river. Across this river bottom ran the railroad, about half way between the Confederate line and the Bowling Green road. The fight began on the Confederate right and left. Furious assaults had been made on Marye's Heights and had been repulsed. Repeated assaults had been made on A. P Hill's Division on the Confederate right, and were meeting with momentary success, when the Federal troops were driven back by General Hoke, then a Colonel commanding a brigade. During this furious fighting on the extreme right and left, the Federal troops had effected a lodgment in the railroad cut just where it crosses the small stream known as Hazel Run. This railroad cut was just deep enough to make an excellent breastwork for infantry, and the position was occupied by a brigade of New Jersey troops. Two commands had been sent by General Hood to dislodge this force from the railroad, but were both repulsed. A line of woods stretched along the outer edge of the river bottom, where the ground was marshy, and between this line and the railroad there was some six or eight hundred yards of almost level ground. About 3 o'clock in the evening General Law was ordered by General Hood to make another effort to clear the enemy from the railroad. He ordered the Fifty-seventh Regiment to make the attack, supported by the Fifty-fourth North Carolina, also a new regiment. The regiment, when it received the order, was in the woods just spoken of, and in order to clear the woods, owing to swamps and thickets, was compelled to go across a corduroy road out into the open. It went by fours-left-in-front. As the first company cleared the woods, a battery opened on it from the Bowling Green road, yet under this fire, company after company, as it cleared the woods, went steadily into line without a falter or

a sign of confusion, and the line was formed as accurately as if on parade; then at "quick step" it started for the enemy's line on the railroad. It was in full view of almost the entire Confederate army on the surrounding hills, and of a larger part of the Federal along the Bowling Green road. As it started there came a cheer from the hills. The line moved at "quick step," with arms at right-shoulder-shift. The enemy's artillery redoubled its fire, but the marksmanship was bad, and the regiment was receiving little punishment, and moved as if on parade. At about 400 yards the enemy opened with their rifles from the railroad, but the regiment had been ordered not to return the fire until the enemy broke, and so they marched in silence. Then the files began to fall out, killed or wounded sometimes from shells and sometimes from the infantry fire, but the gaps were closed up and the regiment marched steadily forward still silent. Then the bullets flew thick and the ground in the wake of the regiment began to be strewn with those brave men, thicker and thicker. Then the fire became terrific, and at about 125 yards from the railroad the order was given to "double-quick." Then it was that those men who had never seen a battle before, had never seen Confederate troops in action, raised that Confederate yell that seemed to be a part of the nature of the Confederate troops. There was a sudden dash forward into the thunder and smoke of guns, and the Fifty-seventh Regiment was at the railroad with their guns loaded, and those of the enemy who had not fled were captured then and there. The regiment had received no orders to halt at the railroad, so Colonel Godwin, in obedience to what he considered his orders, planted his colors upon the far bank of the railroad, and immediately the regiment was again in line and making towards the Bowling Green road. It was now attacked upon its flank, yet it never faltered nor hesitated until it had gone through this ordeal, a distance of nearly 200 yards, and an order came from General Law to retire to the railroad. Then was seen what is rarely seen even with veteran troops. The regiment faced about under a murderous fire, marched back and took its position in the railroad cut without confusion. Just before this movement, Company F, from Cabarrus, which oc-

cupied the left of the line, made a half turn to the left and held the enemy in check upon Hazel Run while the regiment was retiring to the railroad. It was one company standing alone in the midst of a great battle field, and yet when its task was done it went in good order to the railroad. The struggle had lasted in all perhaps twenty-five minutes, and in that time 250 of the Fifty-seventh Regiment were stretched dead or wounded upon the plain. Of the officers, four of the Captains were either killed or permanently disabled. Captain Miller and his two Lieutenants—Frank Hall and Lawson Brown—were killed; Captain Cannon, of the Cabarrus company, was permanently disabled, and Captain Speck, of Lincoln county, lost a leg. Captain E. J. Butner, of Company D, from Forsyth, was also killed.

This was the first experience of this regiment in battle, and the writer looks back now in wonderment how these raw troops endured so manfully the shock of such awful battle. They were nearly all conscripts and nine-tenths of them were farmers or farmers' sons from the counties mentioned above. They fought under the eye of their comrades on the hills, who cheered them with a mighty cheer when they came back to the railroad. They fought, too, under the eye of their great commander-in-chief, and he repaid them with a flattering notice in an order issued the next day. This regiment was engaged in many battles after this, and when it surrendered at Appomattox its fame was still untarnished, but it had no such trial as befell it upon the threshold of its experience. The lesson that the writer drew from this experience was that, the high-spirited Scotch-Irish and the patient Germans of North Carolina are unsurpassed in the qualities that go to make great soldiers.

It is not the purpose of the writer in any degree to disparage the conduct of the Fifty-fourth North Carolina Regiment, for it came across that awful plain in good order, but the place assigned it was too far in the rear to break the force in any great measure or the shock to the Fifty-seventh, but it did all that it could do and all that it was required to do, under the leadership of its gallant commander, Colonel James C. S. McDowell.

ANOTHER BLOODY VICTORY.

The winter of 1862-'63 the regiment spent in camp at Port Royal, on the Rappahannock, below Fredericksburg, where it remained until the opening of the campaign in the spring of 1863. When General Hooker crossed the river on 2 May, 1863, and took his position on the line of Chancellorsville, Early was left with his division and several other brigades to hold the line below Fredericksburg, while General Jackson made his celebrated flank movement and gave the enemy battle at Chancellorsville. During this engagement the enemy's extreme left, under General John Gibbon, pressed forward and occupied the turnpike leading out of Fredericksburg, a few miles above Marye's Heights. Here on 4 May the Fifty-seventh had another rough experience. General Hoke was ordered with his command to dislodge a part of the enemy from a strong position on this turnpike. Unlike the position at Fredericksburg, the ground in front of the enemy's position up to within 100 yards of the turnpike was broken by defiles, and covered with the stunted post oak that seems to grow in that part of Virginia where nothing else is planted. The advance was under the immediate leadership of General Hoke, and was exceedingly difficult, and anything like true alignment was out of question, so that when the advancing line of four regiments reached the level ground near the enemy's line it was necessarily in considerable disorder. Here, as it reached the open ground, it was greeted with a most terrific fire of musketry and canister from the enemy's line. For a moment it looked as if the exploit would result in a failure, but in that supreme moment there came that same Confederate yell, so well known to Confederate ears, and equally well understood by the foe, and in another instant there was a rush, the enemy's line was taken and the enemy driven back with great confusion. The regiment had maintained its former renown, but it won another bloody victory. Colonel Godwin, its gallant leader, was wounded, as was also Adjutant-Lieutenant Semple. Among the company officers, Captain William C. Lord, of Company A, a gallant and gifted gentleman from Salisbury, was killed, as was

also First Lieutenant John H. Boyd, of Lincolnton, who commanded Company G, and Captain William Johnston, of Company H, of Cabarrus.

THE GETTYSBURG CAMPAIGN.

When the Gettysburg campaign opened, General Early's Division led the column into the valley and surprised General Milroy at Winchester. With him went Hoke's Brigade, under the command of Colonel Isaac E. Avery, of the Sixth North Carolina Regiment, that brave and most efficient commander, who within a few weeks was to fall mortally wounded on the heights of Gettysburg. Milroy's command was surrounded by an entrenched camp and consisted of some 1,500 or 2,000 men, and Hoke's Brigade, the Fifty-seventh, being still a part of it, was selected to charge one face of the entrenched camp. The enemy made a poor defence, however, and were all captured with little or no loss to the Confederates, Milroy having in the meantime effected his escape and left his command to their fate. Then came the momentous march into Pennsylvania. Early's Division, with Hoke's Brigade, marched by Gettysburg and went to the city of York. During the march of the division through Pennsylvania to this point, within twelve miles of the Susquehanna river, the column had encountered no opposition, had seen no Federal troops, nor even heard the sound of their drums or bugles. The country through which it had marched was largely inhabited by Germans, proverbially phlegmatic, and no sign of excitement had been visible among them. The Confederate army was restrained by strict orders and there was little sign of invasion from an hostile army to be seen along the route of their march. The barns were filled with grain, the fields were dotted with cattle and horses, and the Confederate Quartermaster and Commissary in an orderly way provided the army with sustenance. There was no straggling and consequently the passing army left only the tracks of its soldiers and its artillery on the highway; it left the fences and the houses, too, yet these same men had just come from the Valley of Virginia, a fenceless and houseless country, thanks to the presence of the Federal army.

IN THE ENEMY'S COUNTRY.

The column entered York on Sunday morning. It looked as though they were unexpected, for the church bells were ringing and crowds of well-dressed men and women were on the sidewalks on their way to church. They stopped and gazed at the troops as they passed with something like stupefaction, but there was no sign of alarm even among the ladies. They, however, seemed to give up the idea of going to church that day, and the ladies went to their homes and during our stay there they were rarely ever seen on the streets. The men, however, mingled freely with the Confederate officers, and there was little or no sign of bitterness apparent. They drank together and discussed the war and many other subjects together. Some of the men, of course, were ardent Union men, and expressed their sentiment freely, but a great many, and it seemed to the writer a majority of them, were bitterly hostile to Mr. Lincoln's administration and condemned the war on the South. The seeming preponderance of the anti-administration sentiment might have been due to the fact that the Union men had fled or were keeping themselves close. When the division left the place some prominent men even went so far as to insist that leading Union men should be arrested and carried away prisoners, for the reason, as they said, that the Union men had been dominating and tyranizing over them ever since the war began. General Early preserved the most perfect order during our stay there. He levied a contribution of $100,000 on the banks, but took no private property without paying for it. A foundry in the outskirts of the town which was used by the government for the manufacture of war material he burned.

ON TO GETTYSBURG.

After remaining some five or six days in York, the division took up its march for Gettysburg. Its march was leisurely, for no enemy had been seen or heard of since leaving Virginia. As the head of the column reached a point some three or four miles from Gettysburg, somewhere about mid-

day, two reports of field guns were heard in the direction of Gettysburg, and forthwith officers began to discuss the significance of it. Owing to a peculiar atmospheric condition, the sound seemed farther off than it really was, and it was supposed by all to be a cavalry engagement some twenty miles away, but in a few minutes the firing became rapid, many guns apparently being engaged, many more, in fact, than were generally used in cavalry engagements. While officers were still discussing the matter, John W Daniel, now United States Senator from Virginia, then the young and brilliant Adjutant-General on General Early's staff, was seen approaching the head of the column at full speed. He brought an order from General Early saying General A. P Hill was hard pressed at Gettysburg, and for the division to make all haste to his assistance. Men disengaged themselves of their blankets and whatever else encumbered them, leaving them to be gathered by the rear guard and wagon train, and took the quick step for Gettysburg. The last mile was made at double-quick, for they could already see a cloud of white smoke floating over Gettysburg and could hear the noise of the great conflict. When the division reached the suburbs of Gettysburg it took position on the extreme left of the Confederate line. There was three brigades, Hoke's under Isaac E. Avery, on the extreme left, next Hays' Louisiana, and then Gordon's Georgia Brigade. The division went into line and halted ten minutes to rest the men. From our position we could see the Confederate and Federal lines arrayed one against the other in open ground, no breastworks, no fortifications, but they stood apart in battle array and were in plain view for two miles except where the line was lost in the depressions of the hills. Then a Confederate brigade away on our extreme right, moved forward upon the expectant enemy; there came a jet of white smoke from along the enemy's line and a scarcely audible roar of musketry, filled in by the sound of the artillery; then there came the expected yell, a rush, and the enemy's line broke. As this first brigade moved, a second was moving in echelon; there was the same yell, the same rush, and the same flight of the enemy. Still another brigade; the sound of the conflict and yell of men becoming

more distinct; a rush forward and the Stars and Stripes were seen in full retreat. As the conflict neared our position the effect was marvelous; the men were wild with excitement, and when their time came they went in with the wildest of enthusiasm, for from where they stood they could see two miles of the enemy's line in full retreat. It looked indeed as if the end of the war had come. The Fifty-seventh Regiment was on the extreme left of the Confederate line, and its opponents broke at the first fire, in fact they scarcely waited to receive the fire, and consequently the loss of the regiment at this point was comparatively slight. On the right of the brigade, however, the Sixth and Twenty-first Regiments had a bloody combat with their portion of the enemy's line. The Federal troops retreated to Cemetery Hill, broken and apparently utterly routed. There was not an officer, not even a man, that did not expect that the war would be closed upon the hill that evening, for there was still two hours of daylight when the final charge was made, yet for reasons that have never been explained, nor ever will be, under the eye of that matchless commander, that the South loves and reveres, and the whole world honors, some one made a blunder that lost the battle of Gettysburg, and, humanly speaking, the Confederate cause.

CEMETERY HILL.

During the night of the 1st, the brigade lay in position between the town and Cemetery Hill. The night passed quietly, except that we could hear the picks and shovels of the enemy engaged in fortifying their line, and the rumble of guns and the tramp of infantry, as at intervals during the night their reinforcements arrived. When morning came, they had worked wonders in fortifying that hill in so short a time. Towards evening heavy cannonading began on our right, extending all along the full extent of our line from the town towards Round Top. Immediately afterwards Longstreet assailed this position with part of his corps, but was unsuccessful. Late in the evening General Hays, of Louisiana, received orders to attack the ridge in front of us with his brigade and ours, he being the senior of Colonel

Isaac E. Avery, who was in command of our brigade (Hoke's). The Louisiana brigade, though composed of five regiments, was small in numbers, and of our brigade only three regiments were present, the Fifty-fourth having been detached at Harper's Ferry on special duty. All during the day these two brigades, Hoke's and Hays', had lain quietly in a depression that in some measure protected them from the fire of the enemy's guns. The sun was low when the order came, and when the bugle sounded the advance, the line advanced in beautiful order, and as it pointed to the southwest there was a glint all along the line of bayonets that was very striking and marked how beautifully they were aligned. In an instant after becoming visible the enemy opened fire with artillery, but the brigades went forward in the same beautiful order across the interposing valley lying between the town and Cemetery Hill. Not only from the front but away out towards Culp's Hill, on the enemy's extreme right, artillery had opened on us. Before the hill was reached, the musketry fire had become very heavy, and the Fifty-seventh Regiment, which was on the extreme left of the line, suffered heavily from both artillery and infantry At the point where this attack was made there was a sort of bay or indentation in the ridge which compelled the Fifty-seventh Regiment, or rather the left battalion of it, to swing round almost half a turn before it struck the face of the ridge. In the meantime the Sixth and Twenty-first Regiments and the right battalion of the Fifty-seventh had reached the foot of the ridge and were driving the enemy from his intrenchments up the hill, so that when the Fifty-seventh was fully in position a rush was made and the enemy driven to the top and over the crest of the hill. There was but little daylight left when the attack commenced and twilight and then darkness settled on the conflict as this comparatively small force reached and occupied the summit of the historic Cemetery Hill. They had driven everything before them and dislodged every portion of the enemy's line in their front except a redoubt occupied by a battery of artillery and a body of infantry. The two brigades had lost heavily and were moreover much exhausted by the labor of the struggle, otherwise

even this last stronghold would have been carried. Had they received a reinforcement of another brigade they would undoubtedly have effected a permanent lodgment upon the crest of the ridge, which they had won. But no reinforcements came, but instead there came an order to retire, which was effected with considerable loss, as reinforcements began to arrive on that part of the enemy's line. So far as the writer's knowledge extends, this was the only portion of the crest of Cemetery Ridge that was taken and held by any portion of the Confederate line.

DEATH OF COLONEL AVERY.

In this charge the gallant Colonel Isaac E. Avery, who commanded Hoke's Brigade, fell mortally wounded and the command of the brigade devolved upon Colonel A. C. Godwin, of the Fifty-seventh Regiment. Colonel Avery fell before reaching the foot of the hill and his fall seriously impeded the attack, as it was not known to some parts of the line for some little time that he had fallen. The writer supposes that others will write the story of Colonel Avery's military life, or perhaps have done so, but I cannot forbear to say here that he was a gallant soldier, a very efficient brigade commander and had he lived, would have doubtless risen rapidly in rank.

The Fifty-seventh took no further part in the battle of Gettysburg after this attack on Cemetery Hill 2 July. It was in the rear of the army on the march to Hagerstown and afterwards to the Potomac river. It crossed at the ford just above Falling Waters about 2 o'clock in the evening on the day that General Pettigrew was killed; in fact we distinctly heard the volley, the short struggle as the enemy's advance struck Pettigrew's Brigade. After the return of the army to Virginia, the regiment, along with the other regiments, picketed along the line of the Rapidan river until the campaign began which closed with the battle of Bristoe Station. In this last named battle the Fifty-seventh Regiment was detached from the brigade and was formed at right angles with the railroad to protect the right flank of Johnston's Division during the fight. The enemy made no attack on this position and conse-

quently neither this regiment nor any part of the brigade was actively engaged.

THE FIGHT AT RAPPAHANNOCK BRIDGE.

After this battle of Bristoe Station the army was withdrawn behind the Rappahannock river and lay at Culpepper and on the plains of Brandy Station until 7 November. In the meantime detachments were engaged in tearing up the railroad for the benefit of the iron, which was much needed in the Confederacy. In order to facilitate this work a pontoon bridge was kept at the point where the Orange & Alexandria Railroad crossed the Rappahannock, and on the north side were some earthworks covering this bridge, and these on 7 November were occupied by Hays' Louisiana Brigade. On that day General Sedgwick with his corps advanced from Manassas and threatened the Louisiana Brigade. Hoke's Brigade, under the command of Colonel Godwin, was sent across the river to reinforce the Louisianians. After crossing, the brigade was directed to move to the left and occupy some slight trenches some three or four hundred yards off. It had scarcely reached the position assigned when a heavy column, composed of three lines of infantry, moved directly upon General Hays' position at the bridge. They met with a warm reception, but being protected from our artillery fire, across the river, by the nature of the ground and the breastworks, they speedily overpowered the Louisianians, driving them from their position and captured the works overlooking the bridge. By this movement Hoke's Brigade was entirely cut off from retreat. The position occupied by it was threatened by a line in its front, but the Sixth and Fifty-seventh Regiments were formed outside of the breastworks and attacked the enemy in their position at the bridge head, while the Fifty-fourth kept the line at bay in front. In the first charge the enemy were dislodged from a portion of the works that they had captured, but succeeded in holding the works commanding the bridge. The struggle here lasted with varying fortunes until nightfall, when the enemy sent forward a large body of troops and completely enveloped the brigade except on the side where lay the deep waters of the Rappa-

hannock river, which at that point had been dammed. A few managed to escape by swimming the river, but almost the entire brigade, officers and men, were captured. Some few of the officers were afterwards exchanged and took part with the regiment in its subsequent campaign, but the most of the rank and file remained in prison until the close of the war. It had been a bloody combat, and besides those captured, many lay dead and wounded about the breastworks.

As was always the case, there were a good many veterans of the Fifty-seventh Regiment who at the time of this disaster were in the hospitals and on detached service, and a few of the officers along with them. Among the latter were Major Craige and Captain John Beard, of Salisbury. Of the latter the writer will have more to say later on. It is sufficient to say here that he had been with the regiment through all its service and had acquired a reputation both for courage and skill in the handling of his company. As the senior officer, Major Craige gradually gathered together this remnant of the Fifty-seventh and in the course of time conscripts were sent to him and the regiment was again filled up to respectable proportions. Colonel Godwin, who at the time of the capture of the regiment was its Colonel, was exchanged in the summer of 1864, but was soon after promoted to the position of brigadier general and placed in command of Hoke's old brigade. The writer, who was Lieutenant-Colonel at the time, was not exchanged until February, 1865. Major Craige, the only other field officer, was severely wounded in the knee in the Valley campaign in August, 1864, and disabled for active service. The writer has not been able to communicate with him and so the greater part of this sketch, after the capture, has been furnished by Captain Beard. The Twenty-first North Carolina of our brigade was on detached service in North Carolina and thus escaped capture.

After the capture of the brigade, as above stated, the remnant of the regiment, under the command of Major Craige, retreated with the army behind the Rapidan, and in December the brigade was sent to North Carolina to participate in the campaign against Plymouth. The Fifty-seventh did not

participate in the capture of Plymouth, as it was left at Kinston to guard against a movement from New Bern. It returned to Petersburg just in time to meet General Butler and there participated in the battle of Drewry's Bluff. From there it was ordered to the South Anna to join the main army under General Lee, and was present at the second Cold Harbor battle, where it engaged the enemy on the second day, capturing many prisoners. From there it was sent to Richmond and thence to Lynchburg by rail to meet the threatened invasion under General Hunter, who was advancing up the valley. Upon the approach of General Early's command General Hunter commenced his retreat, but was overtaken by Early at Liberty, where a severe action took place, resulting in the complete defeat of General Hunter. In this battle the Fifty-seventh bore its part, having by this time been considerably recruited. General Hunter having retreated through West Virginia, Early's command moved down the valley to Harper's Ferry, which it reached on 4 July, 1864, while the Federal troops were engaged in celebrating the day with a great feast.

A FEDERAL CELEBRATION INTERRUPTED.

This the Confederates, after driving the Federals off, coolly appropriated—that is, the eatables and drinkables—and many of the Confederates got gloriously drunk on the whiskey and wine that was not prepared for them. The next day they crossed the river and some skirmishing was had with the enemy under General Lew Wallace. In this fighting Lieutenant F M. Graham, of Rowan county, a most excellent officer of the Fifty-seventh Regiment, was killed and the regiment sustained a heavy loss in men and officers. Colonel Godwin, soon after made Brigadier-General, was in command of the brigade, which was left at Frederick, Md., during the battle of Monocacy to protect the rear of General Early's march. It fell to the lot of the brigade to care for the wounded of that battle and to have them removed to Frederick and while so doing, had quite a spirited action with some Federal cavalry. It then followed General Early to Washington. Here it was posted on the Georgetown pike, where it had sev-

eral skirmishes with the cavalry of the enemy It brought up the rear of the army when it recrossed the Potomac, skirmishing with the enemy, at intervals, but getting across the river with no great loss. After crossing the men started for Winchester. At this time the regiment was in command of Major Craige. On the march they met the enemy east of Winchester. The action began with the sharpshooters of the brigade, commanded by Captain John Beard, and with this skirmish line the enemy were twice driven back. They, however, succeeded in getting a body of cavalry in the rear, and Captain Beard was ordered to fall back. In this action Major Craige, commanding the Fifty-seventh Regiment, was severely wounded in the knee and thereafter incapacitated for active field service. The regiment participated in all the subsequent actions in the valley, the now historic contest between Early and Sheridan for the mastery of that luckless region.

THE WINCHESTER FIGHT.

On 19 September occurred near Winchester another very serious engagement. General Pegram had been attacked by a heavy force and General Godwin, with his brigade, went in haste to his support. Pegram, overwhelmed, was retreating when Godwin came up. This for a time threw Godwin's Brigade in confusion, and here again the Fifty-seventh Regiment exhibited its old-time steadiness. It rallied first in the retreat and upon it the rest of the brigade soon rallied and opposed the advance of the enemy. At this point General Ramseur, in command of the division, finding the position untenable, took up a new position about 600 yards to the rear. Then ensued a very desperate and bloody fight. Time and again the enemy assailed the line and time and again they were repulsed with great loss. This continued until sundown, the fight having lasted nearly all day, when the Federal troops again turned our flank and compelled our somewhat precipitate retreat. From this battlefield and under these circumstances Godwin's Brigade, after an all-day's desperate fight, and with the enemy threatening and pressing its flank, came back in perfect order and without the slightest sign of confusion.

GENERAL GODWIN FALLS.

It bore with it, however, the dead body of its beloved commander, for General Godwin had fallen dead in the thickest of the fight. Captain Beard tells how, after one of the many attacks of the enemy had been repulsed, General Godwin rode up to him and with his hand on his shoulder said: "I am proud of the conduct of my old regiment, the Fifty-seventh." Before Captain Beard had time to reply a shell exploded just over them and a fragment striking him in the head, he fell from his horse into Captain Beard's arms, dead. The writer has spoken elsewhere of this gallant gentleman and brave soldier and would be glad, if space permitted him, to say more here, but will add only this, that he was universally beloved as a man and universally admired as a soldier by all his comrades throughout his entire service. A Virginian in command of a North Carolina regiment, and afterwards of a North Carolina brigade, he was as much beloved and admired by those under him as if he had been a North Carolinian or they Virginians.

There died on that battlefield another man in humble rank and far less famous, but none the less loyal and true, He was a color-bearer of the Fifty-seventh Regiment—Geo. B. Swink, of Company C, from Rowan county. After being wounded, and his color-guard almost destroyed, he stuck his colors in the ground and seizing a rifle fell dead, fighting for the maintenance of his cause and his flag.

After this engagement the brigade fell back to Fisher's Hill. Sheridan having followed Early up the Valley the two forces again confronted each other at Fisher's Hill. There was considerable and heavy skirmishing for twenty-four hours at that place, in which the Fifty-seventh Regiment took a prominent part. The Federal troops, however, succeeded in turning General Early's flank and getting partly in his rear, and the Confederate forces were driven in confusion still further up the Valley, with Sheridan still at their heels, till they reached Brown's Gap, where another stand was made.

END OF THE VALLEY FIGHTING.

About the middle of October, Early again moved down the

valley as far as Cedar Creek. On the night of the 18th the Fifty-seventh Regiment formed a part of the force which crossed the mountains and fording the Shenandoah river, attacked General Sheridan's forces in the rear. Seldom in the annals of war has there been witnessed such vicissitudes of fortune as befell these armies that day. By 8 o'clock the Confederate forces had captured the entire camp equipage of that army, twenty-four pieces of artillery and a large number of prisoners, but by 9 o'clock that night the tide had so completely changed that the Confederate forces were again in full retreat up the Valley. It has been many times recorded that General Robert D. Johnston's Brigade of North Carolinians was the largest body of Confederate troops that retired from its position on that field of battle in good order. Beside this noble brigade stood the Fifty-seventh Regiment, which was next in line, and this regiment came off with Johnston's Brigade in like good order and with great steadiness. This closed the fighting in the Valley and the Fifty-seventh Regiment with the rest of the brigade, was sent to Petersburg and stationed on our extreme right at Hatcher's Run. Here it participated in what is known as the "Fight at Hatcher's Run," and there it saw much hard service, the ground being covered with snow and ice. After this it was sent to a position immediately in front of Petersburg.

COLONEL JONES TAKES COMMAND.

At this point before Petersburg, in the month of February, 1865, the writer, having been exchanged, took command of the Fifty-seventh Regiment as Colonel. He found the regiment in command of Captain Philip Carpenter, of Lincoln county, Captain Beard being absent on some detached service. The brigade was under command of General Gaston Lewis, who had been temporarily assigned to the command of it. On 25 March, about 3 o'clock in the morning, the writer was summoned to General Walker's headquarters—or to General Lewis' There he found General Walker, General Robert D. Johnston, General Matt. W Ransom and, he thinks, General Gordon also. He was informed

that it was contemplated to make an attack upon the enemy's line before daylight and the writer was informed that he would command the force directed against Fort Steadman, a part of the enemy's line; and was directed to indicate two regiments which he would choose to make the attack at this point. He chose his own regiment, the Fifty-seventh, and the gallant Sixth, one that had never flinched on any of the many battlefields in which it had borne a part from First Manassas down to that eventful morning. It was then commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel McDowell Tate.

THE OBSTRUCTION REMOVED.

In front of Fort Steadman there was a *chevaux de frise* of rails sharpened, stuck deep into the ground and pointing outward. These had been bound together by a strong wire. To cut down this obstruction in front of the advancing line volunteers were called for from the two regiments and were quickly in readiness. At the writer's request, Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel McDowell Tate designated an officer of the Sixth Regiment to command this apparently forlorn hope. He chose for this service Lieutenant W W Flemming, of the Sixth, a beardless boy not more than 19 years old. It was desperate work, and he knew it, but he was marvelously cool and at parting the writer said to him:

"If you do this work this morning, and we both survive, your rank will unquestionably be considerably advanced." He replied:

"I do not say that I do not regard this, but I assure you if these men follow me, we will cut that abatis in your front."

Then in the dead silence of the night he moved out with his detachment armed with axes and they spread themselves along the front of Fort Steadman, and the two regiments moved out and lay down just behind this party. In the meantime the obstructions in front of the Confederate line had been stealthily removed. General Walker, who commanded the division had notified us that the signal for the assault would be the firing of a pistol immediately in our rear. There was a wait in perfect silence for perhaps 20

minutes or possibly half an hour. There was absolutely no sign of life along the enemy's lines. Their pickets lay just in front of their abatis in their rifle pits. Away in the east there was a band of white light in the sky which marked the approach of day.

THE CAPTURE OF FORT STEADMAN.

Suddenly there rang out on the stillness the sharp crack of a pistol. Instantly the enemy's pickets fired and there was a muffled sound of feet where Lieutenant Flemming's party was and along the line of the two regiments. Then came the rush and the rapid sound of axes and the crash of falling timber and the wild cheer from the axemen. The two regiments were at their heels and followed rapidly. Instantly there came a heavy fire of artillery and rifles from Fort Steadman, but it was of short duration, for in another minute the assaulting party mounted the enemy's works, capturing their guns and many prisoners. The writer's impression is that Lieutenant Flemming was the first man upon the breastworks, for he stood there when the line reached it and around him stood some of his men with their axes still in their hands. The enemy were pushed back, and through this gap the Confederate forces pushed in.

THE REGIMENT FORCED TO RETIRE.

On the right, however, at Fort Heiskel the attack had been less fortunate and thus when the day broke the enemy commenced a furious cross fire and from the front Lewis' Brigade was ordered to assault an earthwork diagonally to the left, the name of which is unknown to the writer. It was heavily armed, however, and after a desperate struggle the regiment was forced back after suffering very heavy loss. The writer was among the wounded and the command of the regiment devolved upon Captain Carpenter, a most gallant and efficient officer, who had borne a part in nearly every struggle in which the regiment had been engaged. Ultimately the whole line was ordered back within the Confederate lines and Captain Carpenter brought off the regiment in as good order as possible under the murderous cross fire.

Next day Captain Beard returned and took command of the regiment and was in command of it during the eventful march from Petersburg to Appomattox.

After the bloody repulse at Hare's Hill on 25 March the Confederate line retired to its trenches before Petersburg and lay there like a wounded lion at bay. Before it was the magnificent Federal army commanded by General Grant—a great captain of a great host. That army, infantry, artillery and cavalry was armed, equipped and supplied with all that money poured out in lavish abundance could supply. Its ranks were fully recruited, its horses fresh, its caissons and ordnance wagons loaded down with tons of ammunition, its commissary trains abundantly suppplied—all in readiness to receive the word from its great commander that would launch it on its hapless foe. And that foe! It was but the shadow of its former self, a remnant after the carnage of a hundred battlefields and of four years of ceaseless marching and fighting. Its ranks were thin, its guns were worn with use, its ordnance and commissary stores but scant. The men were but half clothed and were pinched from want and constant exposure in the trenches. But there they stood! No bugle could recall to their aid the thousands of their dead comrades whom they had buried on the battlefield, but the spirit of their noble dead abided with them and they feared nothing but God and the shame of fear; and so they waited.

On 1 April the great tragedy began. General Sheridan attacked our extreme right at Five Forks and drove back our cavalry and infantry supports. By this movement our flank was completely turned and the position at Petersburg rendered untenable. On the 2d the Federals opened all along the line, the fire was kept up during the entire day, and repeated assaults were made at different points in overwhelming numbers. At some points they were repulsed, at others they were successful, or partially so, but the result of it all was that the immediate evacuation of Petersburg and Richmond became necessary. By the morning of the 3d the army had crossed to the Chesterfield side. Then commenced the memorable march to Appomattox; and the Fifty-seventh Regiment was in the midst of it all, still patient, obedient

and fearless. Day by day they struggled on without food and with incessant fighting. Almost hourly they had to turn and beat off the attacking Federals, but they struggled on with spirits still undaunted as though they hoped that even at the last fate itself would relent at the sight of their devotion to their fast-falling cause. This march from Petersburg to Appomattox was not simply a retreat nor yet a conflict; it was the funeral procession of the Confederacy; it was an oblation of blood to the Manes of a heroic nation that had been born and had died on the field of battle.

But the struggle went on. On the second day after leaving Petersburg General Lewis was wounded and Captain Beard, of the Fifty-seventh, took command of the brigade as senior officer. When the command reached Sailor's creek on 7 April, they found that the bridge had been broken down, and General Gordon, in whose corps our brigade was, turned and made a last fight to hold the enemy in check till the bridge could be repaired and thus enable the artillery and trains to pass. The fighting was fierce. The brigade occupied a position just where the crossing of the road by a depression in the bed of the road afforded a slight protection. Here the enemy were repeatedly repulsed. The Fifty-seventh Regiment maintained its reputation on this last of its battlefields and faced its foe with undaunted courage, but the end of it was that the constantly increasing numbers of the enemy enabled it to surround this brigade and capture it almost to the last man. This was the last of the many battles in which the Fifty-seventh played its part so well, and here the curtain falls upon its story.

The writer has prepared this sketch from his personal recollections of the events where he was present and for the rest he has used the notes furnished him by Captain Beard. There were from first to last in this regiment men and officers who richly deserved mention and encomium, but it is impossible in the allotted space to mention them. Some died valiantly fighting and some are still alive, and some have passed away in the peaceful walks of life since that Sunday at Appomattox. But there are some names in addition to

those already mentioned that occur to the writer in concluding the sketch, which for special courage deserve at least a passing tribute, and this without detraction from others.

SOME BRAVE MEN.

Among those who fell while fighting with this regiment was Lieutenant Daniel W Ringo. His home was in Arkansas and his father was Judge Ringo of that State. He came to the regiment a mere boy, I think from some military school, and became a Second Lieutenant. On every occasion and upon almost every battlefield that the Fifty-seventh took part, he was conspicuous not only for his high courage, but for his remarkable intelligence and aptitude for the business of a soldier. After being shot in the knee and disabled, he served with the sharpshooters upon horseback and was killed on 19 September, 1864, near Winchester.

Captain Joseph G. Morrison, of Lincoln county, served with this regiment, first as Adjutant, which position he resigned to become Aide-de-Camp to General (Stonewall) Jackson, who was his brother-in-law. After the death of the latter he became Captain of Company F. Later he resigned to take a place on General Hoke's staff, in which position he lost a foot in the early struggles around Petersburg. He was well known throughout the brigade for his coolness and alertness in the face of the enemy.

Lieutenant James F Litaker, of Cabarrus county, was a quiet, unambitious man, but possessed of a courage rarely equaled and never excelled by any one the writer saw on the field of battle. Lieutenant L. H. Roney, of Alamance county, was distinguished likewise for great courage and efficiency. He was killed at Gettysburg and fell dead on the skirmish line. Lieutenant A. E. Semple, the first Adjutant, was also a gallant and very efficient officer. He was wounded on 4 May, 1863, above Fredericksburg and disabled from active service. The quartermaster, Captain Wm. G. McNeely, of Rowan, is entitled to mention for his faithful service during the entire history of the regiment. The surgeon, Dr. Charles S. Morton, and the Assistant Surgeon, A. H. Binion,

were able, cool and very efficient officers and were universally beloved in the command.

John D. Barrier, another member of Company F, though a mere boy, was distinguished for his cool courage and at the battle of Hatcher's Run Captain Beard selected him to bear the colors of the regiment, which he did through most trying circumstances and most heroically.

Sergeant J F. Pace, of Company C, from Salisbury, was only 16 years of age at the organization of the regiment, and was a private in Company C. His courage was so conspicuous at the battle of Fredericksburg that he was made First Sergeant of his company and in many of the later battles he commanded his company with great courage and skill. Sergeant J. M. Muse, of Company H, of Union county, was a most gallant soldier. In the retreat from Fisher's Hill, Hoke's Brigade covered the rear, marching all day in line of battle. On this retreat Sergeant Muse commanded his company and in one of the many attacks made upon the rear guard, he was killed, hat in hand cheering his men.

Richard VanEaton, of Davie county, a private of Company A, was also a most gallant soldier.

Among those most conspicuous for his gallantry and who fell at the head of his company at Gettysburg, was Captain S. W Gray, of Company D, from Forsyth county. He had been in all the battles in which the regiment had taken part and in all save the battle of Fredericksburg he had commanded his most excellent company

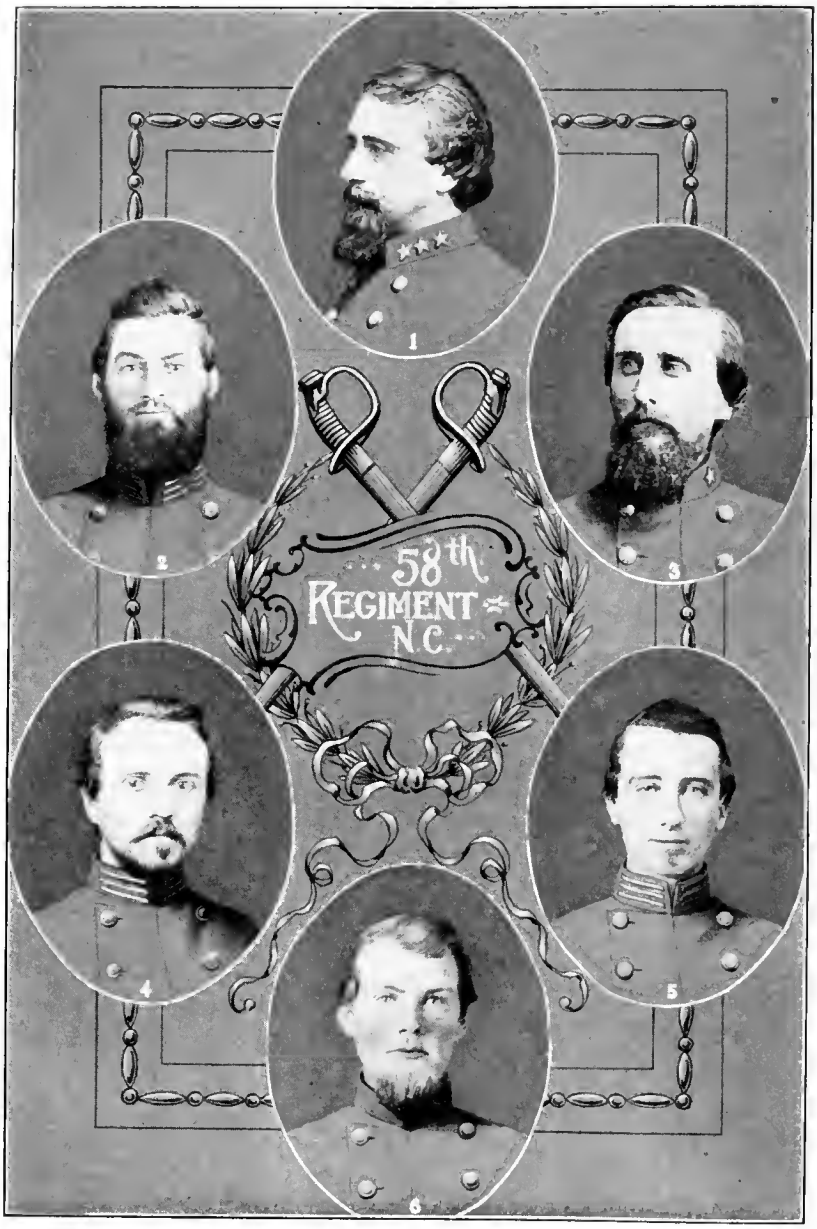
THE FIFTY SEVENTH DID ITS DUTY WELL.

In conclusion, the writer has only to say that when in the course of time history of this great civil struggle comes to be written by able and impartial historians, it is not to be expected that any one regiment can be designated among so many as specially distinguished for courage or efficiency; but in justice to the men and officers of the Fifty-seventh Regiment the writer can conscientiously say that few, if any, contributed more to the imperishable renown that surrounds the memory of the Confederate soldier. They did their duty

well and valorously, and in fighting, in common with their comrades, they have fixed a standard for the American soldier below which it is hoped he will never fall.

HAMILTON C. JONES.

CHARLOTTE, N. C.,
9 APRIL, 1901.



FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

1. John B. Palmer, Colonel.
2. Benjamin F. Baird, Captain, Co. D.
3. G. W. F. Harper, Major.
4. Isaac H. Bailey, Captain, Co. B.
5. F. A. Tobey, Captain, Co. A.
6. Drury D. Coffey, Sergeant-Major.

FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT

By G. W F. HARPER, Major.

In preparing the following sketch as a contribution to the History of North Carolina Troops, official records have been consulted where accessible. The dates and other memoranda in many cases were obtained from the writer's personal journal, in which daily entries were made during the war.

The part referring to the battle of Bentonville was written and published in 1887, in the Raleigh *Observer* and other papers in North Carolina and Tennessee. It is much to be regretted that repeated efforts failed to secure the pictures of more of the rank and file, and particularly of those devoted men, officers and privates who laid down their lives for their home-land on the field of battle.

The writer esteems it a privilege to bear witness to the courage, patience and endurance of his comrades, and he offers this imperfect sketch as an humble tribute to the high soldierly qualities which they uniformly displayed.

The regiment was organized in Mitchell county, North Carolina, 24 July, 1862, by the election of—

John B. Palmer, Colonel, of Mitchell county.

Wm. W Proffitt, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Yancey county, (resigned in 1863).

John C. Keener, Major, of Yancey county (resigned in 1863).

The regiment was raised as a part of a Legion of the three arms of the service to be commanded by Colonel Palmer.

The other field, staff and company officers and their successors, as appears in the Roster of North Carolina Troops, Vol. III, p. 633, and Vol. IV., p. 429, with some additions and corrections made by the writer are as follows, the reference last named, however, through error of copyist or com-

positor, designates the regiment after the reorganization, March, 1865, as the Sixtieth, whereas it should have been given as the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth Regiments consolidated.

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS—Edmund Kirby, of Virginia, killed at Chickamauga 20 September, 1863; Thomas J Dula (resigned 29 August, 1864); S. M. Silver, promoted from Major September, 1864 (resigned March, 1865); Thaddeus M. Coleman, commissioned March, 1865.

MAJORS—T. J. Dula, wounded at Chickamauga, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel 14 August, 1864; A. T. Stewart, killed at Jonesboro, Ga., 31 August, 1864; S. M. Silver, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel 14 August, 1864; G. W. F Harper, promoted November, 1864, from Captain Company H.

ADJUTANTS—Edmund Kirby, of Virginia, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel; Benjamin L. Perry, Beaufort, N. C.; Orville Ewing, Nashville, Tenn.

SURGEONS—W A. Collett (resigned 1863); W H. Harris.

ASSISTANT SURGEONS—O. M. Lewis, T. J. Mitchell, Alonzo White.

QUARTERMASTER—M. J. Bearden, Buncombe county.

SERGEANT MAJORS—H. Herndon; Jas. Inglis, killed at Dalton, Ga., 25 February, 1864; D. D. Coffey.

QUARTERMASTER SERGEANT—John E. Medearis, Caldwell county.

ORDNANCE SERGEANT—John A. Hensley, Yancey county.

DRUM MAJORS—H. Estes, Caldwell county; J Caldwell Blair, Caldwell county.

HOSPITAL STEWARD—James M. Riddle, Mitchell county.

COMPANY A—*Mitchell County*—Captains: Martin Wiseman (resigned 1862), F. A. Tobey Lieutenants: F. A. Tobey; W H. Wiseman, killed at Chickamauga 20 September, 1863; J J Wise, W A. Vance.

COMPANY B—*Mitchell County*—Captains: Jacob W Bowman (resigned 1862), Isaac H. Bailey, severely wounded and permanently disabled at Chickamauga 20 September, 1863. Lieutenants: J. C. Conley, J. W Pitman, I. H. Bailey.

COMPANY C—*Yancey County*—Captains: J P Horton, resigned 1862; S. B. Briggs. Lieutenants: M. P Hampton, W M. Austin, wounded at Chickamauga.

COMPANY D—*Watauga County*—Captains: D. C. Harmon (resigned 1862), B. F. Baird. Lieutenants: B. F. Baird, W P Mast, D. F. Baird, A. F. Davis, W M. Harrington.

COMPANY E—*Caldwell County*—Captains: A. T. Stewart, promoted to Major and killed 31 August, 1864; Thomas J Coffey. Lieutenants: J. B. Marler; T. J. Coffey; W E. Coffey (dropped).

COMPANY F—*McDowell County*—Captains: W Conley, died November, 1862; C. O. Conley, killed June, 1864, at New Hope Church, Ga., H. C. Long. Lieutenants: C. O. Conley; J D. Morrison, killed at Chickamauga 20 September, 1863; J. A. Fox, T. P Epps, R. H. Sisk, J B. Morgan.

COMPANY G—*Watauga County*—Captains: J. L. Phillips, wounded at Chickamauga and permanently disabled; John R. Norris, promoted from Lieutenant September, 1863. Lieutenant: C R. Byrd, wounded at Chickamauga.

COMPANY H—*Caldwell County*—This company was raised for Z. B. Vance's Legion, enlarged by transfers from Companies F and I of the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, and went into camp of instruction at Kittrell, N. C., May, 1862.

The effort to raise and organize the Vance Legion being unsuccessful, this company was assigned to the Fifty-eighth Regiment which it joined at Johnson City, Tenn., August, 1862.

Captains: T. J. Dula, promoted to Major; G. W F. Harper, wounded at Resaca, Ga., 15 May, 1864, promoted to Major November, 1864; L. W Gilbert. Lieutenants: W W Lenoir, promoted to Captain Thirty-seventh Regiment July, 1862; G. W F Harper; E. M. Hedrick; A. D. Lingle; L. A. Page, killed at Dalton, Ga., 25 February, 1864; L. W Gilbert, promoted to Captain November, 1864.

COMPANY I—*Watauga County*—Captains: John A. Mil-

ler, Wm. R. Hodges, J. C. McGhee. Lieutenants: J. C. McGhee, W S. Davis.

COMPANY K—*Mitchell County*—Captains: S. M. Silver, promoted to Major; D. R. Silver. Lieutenants: J. W Duncan, L. D. Silver.

COMPANY L—*Ashe County*—Captains: W Gentry, Calvin Eller, L. Hurley. Lieutenants: L. Hurley, E. Hurley, P Blevins.

COMPANY M—*Watauga and Ashe Counties*—This company consolidated with Company G in 1863. Lieutenants: Geo. W Hopkins, Thos. Ray, J. R. Norris.

The regiment was moved September, 1862, to Cumberland Gap and assigned to the division of General Stevenson, then investing that post.

On the retreat of the Federal Garrison, Colonel Palmer was placed in command at the "Gap" with his regiment, Caper's Georgia Battalion and a battery of artillery until the prisoners could be paroled and the captured stores secured, after which it moved into Kentucky, but unexpectedly met Bragg's army on its retreat.

During the winter of 1862 and 1863 it was stationed at Big Creek Gap, near Jacksboro, Tenn., with the Fifty-fifth Georgia, Thornton's Alabama Legion, Kolb's Alabama Battery and Baird's North Carolina Cavalry Battalion, the brigade under the command of Colonel Palmer. The winter was spent in outpost duty, picketing this and neighboring passes in the Cumberland mountains, and making several expeditions into Kentucky. The details for guard duty in this service were excessive, and the command suffered greatly from privation and exposure. The loss by death from disease was appalling, camp fever and an epidemic of measles being extremely fatal, the natural result of inexperience and a deplorable lack of hospital accommodations and facilities.

In the summer of 1863 the brigade was placed under the command of General J W Frazer, and the troops were stationed at Clinton and various other points in East Tennessee, the regiment eventually joining the army of Ten-

nessee under General Bragg, near Chattanooga, when it was assigned to Kelly's Brigade of Preston's Division in Buckner's Corps.

In the battles of Chickamauga, 18-20 September, the regiment bore a prominent part, and in the charge which captured the stronghold of the enemy on Snodgrass Hill at the close of that eventful Sunday, the loss in killed and wounded was over one-half of those carried into action. The Lieutenant-Colonel, Edmund Kirby, of Virginia, was killed, and Colonel Palmer and Major Dula wounded; Captains Bailey and Phillips severely wounded, Lieutenants Wiseman and Morrison killed, and Lieutenants Austin, Byrd and others wounded. In the capture of the prisoners, eight Colt's army rifles were taken, of which, by the order of General Preston, four were turned over to the color guard of the Fifty-eighth North Carolina, and two each to the Fifth Kentucky and Sixty-third Virginia Regiments, also of Kelly's Brigade.

The report of Colonel Palmer, made on the succeeding day, gives the names of the killed and wounded, and makes the loss in his regiment: Killed, 46; wounded, 114; missing, 1; total, 161; over 50 per cent. of the number carried into action.

It will be seen by referring to the official reports that the casualties in the regiment exceeded the combined loss of the other regiments of the brigade. A steel tablet erected by the Chickamauga National Park Commission marks the position on the crest reached by the regiment at sunset, when the prisoners were captured and the battle ended, and bears the following inscription, to-wit.:

"KELLY'S BRIGADE.
"PRESTON'S DIVISION—BUCKNER'S CORPS.
"COL. JOHN H. KELLY.
"SEPTEMBER 20, 1863, 7 P M. LAST POSITION.
"65TH GEORGIA—COL. R. H. MOORE.
"5TH KENTUCKY—COL. HIRAM HAWKINS.
"58TH NORTH CAROLINA—COL. JOHN B. PALMER.
"63D VIRGINIA—MAJ. JAMES M. FRENCH.
"The Brigade, the Sixty-fifth Georgia being attached to

"support a battery, reinforced about 6 p. m. by a regiment "from Anderson's Brigade of Hindman's Division, after an "hour's severe fighting on the slope in front of the knoll next "left of this position, participated there at dusk, with Trigg's "Brigade, in the capture of the Union troops occupying that "knoll. Of these 251 were captured by Kelly's Brigade.

"This was accomplished by Kelly's Brigade charging their "front, while Trigg's Brigade swung across to the ridge "further to the left and closed up the Union line from the "rear. While the Union troops were surrendering, the right "of Kelly's Brigade received a volley from the front of Van "Derveer's Brigade of Brannan's Division. This was about "7 p. m., and was the last firing in the battle.

"Strength in action 876. Casualties: killed, 62; wounded, "238; missing, 29; total, 329. Percentage of loss, 37.55."

Shortly after the battle Colonel Palmer was detached from the regiment and placed in command of the Department of Western North Carolina, with headquarters at Asheville, where he remained until the close of the war, the regiment thereafter being under the command of a Lieutenant-Colonel or Major. General Kelly was transferred to the cavalry, and General A. W. Reynolds ("Old Gauley"), of Virginia, placed in command of the brigade, now consisting of the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina, the Fifty-fifth and Sixty-third Virginia and the Fifth Kentucky Regiments, in Bushrod Johnson's Division of Longstreet's Corps, with which it began its march to Knoxville. Before proceeding far, however, the brigade was recalled, 22 November, to take part in the battles then opening around Chattanooga, and deployed in a thin line, was placed in the trenches at the foot of Missionary Ridge. Here it was annoyed by the premature explosion of the shells from our batteries on the ridge in rear, firing upon the enemy in front. A veteran of Company H, with a grim sense of humor, suggested to his Captain that the command occupy the other side of the breastwork—a brisk musketry fire then coming from the enemy. The suggestion was not adopted.

After three days in this position, with the larger part of

the troops on duty day and night, the regiment (one company at a time deployed in a skirmish line) was recalled to the top of the ridge, the charge of the enemy being made as the last company moved out. The Confederate line on the ridge, a very thin one, with no reserve line, was broken—it seemed almost without a fight—at a gap in the ridge some distance north of the position occupied by the Fifty-eighth, and the troops on this part of the line moved by orders to the rear and formed a line of battle across the road near the base of the ridge. Here occurred the only stubborn fight the regiment was engaged in during this battle. The opposing force, led by General Sheridan in several charges was handsomely repulsed, the battle continuing under the light of a full moon until long after dark. General John C. Breckinridge, in command at this point, when the troops were withdrawn about midnight enquired for the regiment then filing into the road, and being told, raised his hat and complimented the "Tar Heels" very highly on their part in the fight.

The army went into winter quarters at Dalton, Ga., under the command of General Joseph E. Johnston, in whom the army reposed unlimited confidence.

On 25 February, 1864, Sherman pushed forward a portion of his army to the front of Dalton, and several partial engagements ensued before he retired. A number of casualties occurred in the Fifty-eighth. Among the killed was James Inglis, Sergeant-Major, a Scotchman by birth, whose death was deeply regretted by his comrades.

On 7 May, Sherman again appeared before Dalton, and after several ineffectual assaults on Johnston's line moved by his right flank, and threatened Resaca, to which place the Army of Tennessee was withdrawn. On the 14th and 15th, in the general engagements at Resaca, the regiment bore its full part and sustained serious loss in killed and wounded. The writer being here wounded, and disabled for service until the latter part of the summer, cannot give details of the Atlanta campaign, in all the battles of which the Regiment in Reynold's Brigade, Stevenson's Division of Hood's Corps, participated. The loss in the numerous battles was con-

siderable, and the published records are very incomplete.

After the fall of Atlanta, the brigade was consolidated with Brown's Tennessee brigade, under General Jos. B. Palmer, of Murfreesboro, Tenn., a gallant officer, in whose brigade the regiment served until the close of the war. The name of this officer must not be confounded with that of Colonel John B. Palmer, who raised the Fifty-eighth Regiment and was its first commander. It is a singular coincidence that two officers bearing the same name and initials, and from different States, commanded the same brigade. They were both most gallant and efficient officers, without fear and without reproach.

In the march to Nashville the garrison at Dalton was captured, and the railroad north of Atlanta destroyed in many places. The army crossed the Tennessee river at Florence, Ala., 2 November, but unfortunately for the success of the expedition, was there held inactive until the 20th waiting for supplies.

At Columbia, Tenn., 28 November, the regiment led the advance of S. D. Lee's Corps on the Mount Pleasant pike, pushing vigorously the retiring enemy, and on entering the town, was ordered to seize the fort overlooking it, the block house enclosed being on fire, and the small arms ammunition therein keeping up a rattling explosion. The men, without orders and with the indifference to danger that so often characterized them, carried out the boxes of ammunition, some of them blazing, and the fire was soon subdued.

The town had been in the possession of the enemy for nearly two years, and the ladies were overjoyed to see the Southern Army, to which they were so loyal, and in which served so many of their relatives and friends. Our Tennessee brigadier rode at the head of the column, and the writer seeing him dismounted and affectionately embraced by females of all ages, congratulated him on meeting so many "kinfolks." He said it was his misfortune not to be acquainted with any of them. The scattering shots of the skirmishers did not check the ovation.

The regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel Silver, with the prisoners it had captured and others sent to it (altogether

about 1,700), was left as garrison for the fort and town, and thus missed the bloody battles at Franklin and Nashville, and later on Hood's disastrous retreat, by being ordered 14 December to Corinth, Miss., with the prisoners.

At Corinth, relieved of the prisoners, it was sent 26 December to Okalona to drive off a cavalry raid which had cut the railroad near that point.

On the return of the remnant of Hood's army to Tupelo, Miss., the regiment rejoined the brigade, now very small, and with it moved by rail to Branchville, S. C., and 4 February again confronted Sherman. Numerous skirmishes occurred at the various crossings of North and South Edisto, in all cases the enemy being repulsed, only to find unoccupied or undefended points above or below at which they crossed. The brigade reached the vicinity of Columbia 14 February, 1865, and was greatly disappointed in finding there no important reinforcements. The regiment had the post of honor as rear guard, and held the south bank of the Congaree until the morning of the 16th, when it was withdrawn and the bridge burned. On the 16th the brigade picketed the river bank, with its reserves in the nearest streets, receiving the fire of the enemy's skirmishers, which it was not permitted to return. The enemy, nevertheless, threw shells into the town, several of them striking the capitol, where their marks may still be seen. The following night the brigade moved to near the forks of the Broad and Saluda to prevent the crossing of the enemy until trains could be taken out of the city, and on the 17th began its march. Leaving the railroad at Blackstocks and fording the Catawba at Landsford, the brigade reached Charlotte on 23 February, from which point a week later it moved by rail to Smithfield Station (now Selma), where General Joseph E. Johnston, reinstated in command, was endeavoring to concentrate his small army.

The men thinly clad, carrying each a single blanket, without tents, and most of the time with scant rations, passed the severe winter of 1864-'65 in active field service. In the prime of life, active, cheerful and full of fun, living in the open air the year round, a great part of the time on the march, the men became inured to hardships and the winter's cold,

and complaints of suffering from exposure to the weather were rarely heard. The question of rations gave them more concern. All of this applies also to the field and company officers, who were equally exposed with the private soldiers.

In the transfer of the brigade to the East, the horses of the field and staff officers were left with the wagon trains in Mississippi, and only rejoined the command, then near Smithfield, about the first of April—all officers, the General and one or two members of his staff excepted, marching through South Carolina, and to and from Bentonville on foot. Wading the broad Catawba in February did not dampen or cool the ardor of the men, and no officer of the regiment disgraced himself by attempting to shun the swift, icy current.

A portion of the Army of Tennessee in detached commands arrived, and on 18 March, 1865, General Johnston made a forced march to Bentonville, where a concentration was effected with Hardee's Corps from Charleston, Hoke's Division and other troops from Eastern North Carolina. The presence of General Johnston again in command of veteran troops inspired the fullest confidence in the small army, which engaged in the battles of the succeeding day in fine spirits. The Fifty-eighth, in this, its last battle, numbered about 300 effectives. The brigade (Palmer's) was selected as the directing column for the Army of Tennessee in the assault on the enemy's line. The charge was made with great spirit and dash, and the enemy entrenched and with a high fence built in their front, gave way before inflicting great loss on their assailants. In the pursuit which followed, two pieces of artillery, limbering with all haste to the rear, were captured and driven back into our lines with their teams complete. In running down and taking the guns some of the artillerymen were shot while on the chests, and the old pine field was strewn with blankets, provisions and plunder of all sorts thrown away by the flying foe.

The rapid pursuit over fences and a deep ravine so scattered the attacking column that a halt was made to reform—this a half a mile or more beyond the entrenchments charged, and there was not an enemy in sight nor a gun nearby being fired. Before the line was completely adjusted the reserves

came up in splendid order. Pettus' Brigade before in support of Palmer now took the advance, and in a short time struck the enemy reinforced in a new position. Our lines having become too short for the circle so extended by pushing back the enemy, most of the regiments of Palmer's Brigade were promptly moved up to fill the gaps in the front line, which was now in the thick pine woods.

The Fifty-eighth North Carolina on the left of the brigade, under the direction of a staff officer, was moved up in support of and close to the front line, here facing south, and at the time hotly engaged. Firing was also going on on the right, extending partly to the rear, but not so near, and a battery of artillery kept up a most aggravating enfilade fire over the regiment, which would have made the position extremely uncomfortable if the gunners had slightly depressed their pieces. As it was, very little could be seen for the smoke which filled the woods, and the ground gently rising toward the battery, their shells for an hour flew almost harmlessly through the timber some ten feet or more overhead, and most of them burst in rear. The incident following will give some idea of the situation. The brigadier, very shortly after the regiment had reached the spot, rode up and asked, "Which is the right of your regiment?" A strange question from such a source at such a time the writer thought, but surprise was turned into amazement when the reply was quickly followed by the command: "Major, countermarch your regiment." It seemed just a little unnecessary to remind him that the regiment was already facing the enemy, who was close at hand, and being heard to that effect in a most convincing sort of way. The Major, however, did presume to say as much, only to hear, "Yes, I know, but I want you to look after these fellows over here," pointing over his shoulder to our rear and right. The regiment was accordingly countermarched, halted on the spot and fronted—this time facing north, or opposite to the direction we had just before faced—dressed on a line of guides a little oblique to the original line and the men ordered to lie down for shelter; General Palmer the meanwhile quietly seated on his horse apparently unconscious that anything unusual was

going on, though musket balls were flying pretty thick, and some of the enemy's shells must have passed near his head. After witnessing this singular manœuver, and leaving the Fifty-eighth Regiment "to look after those fellows" as ordered, the general leisurely rode off to some other part of his brigade on the front line, where the business in hand was not so dull and uninteresting. He did not have far to go.

The slender line without earthworks that so nearly encircled our position, held its ground against repeated assaults of the enemy in heavy force until 8 o'clock at night, when the firing ceased, and at midnight the army resumed the position of the morning.

A more remarkable experience befell a detachment of Tennesseeans of the brigade. In filling a gap in the front line as stated, Colonel Searcey in command, found a flank of the enemy which he proceeded at once to turn and attack in reverse. Before the movement, which was being successfully accomplished, had proceeded very far, however, a Federal reserve appeared, closed the gap and cut off the return of the Colonel with a part of his command. The detachment thus cut off made its way successfully through Sherman's lines and near his trains, capturing as they went an officer and forty men, to whom they were in the act of surrendering, but, discovering the small opposing force, the Tennesseeans seized the guns which had been thrown down and compelled the surrender of their would-be captors. The detachment marched with their prisoners through the woods and over obscure roads to Raleigh, and rejoined the brigade near Smithfield ten days after the battle, greatly to the surprise and delight of their friends, who were ready to give them up as lost.

The restoration of General Joseph E. Johnston to the command gave great confidence to the Army of Tennessee, and the forward movement, as was generally the case, put the men in fine spirits and willing to attempt any duty that he would require of them. In illustration of the faith of the men in their chief: two days after the principal battle, when Sherman's cavalry came so near seizing the bridge in the rear, the firing attracted attention, and some one asking

"what that fire in rear of the army meant," the reply came promptly from the ranks of the Fifty-eighth in the most unconcerned manner, "Don't be uneasy, my son. Old Joe has a wagon train back there some where, and there is no danger where HIT is." The general had well earned in the Atlanta campaign a reputation for taking care of his trains; but for the opportune arrival here of Henderson's little brigade of Stevenson's Division, en route for the army, his prestige in that particular, and perhaps in some others, might have been lost, together with our "spider wagons" and ordnance trains.

Referring to the published account of this incident General Johnston wrote 11 January, 1888, to the undersigned:

"The newspaper slip containing your article on Palmer's Brigade at Bentonville and the letter accompanying it were duly received, but at a time when press of business compelled me to postpone compliance with your request.

"I do not think, as you do, that the part taken by Cumming's Brigade, then commanded by Colonel Henderson, was a matter of luck. That Brigade was a part of at least 1,000 men that joined us from Charlotte that morning, and was made one of four little reserves, and was the nearest one to the point of attack on the Federal division, in which part of Hampton's and all of Wheeler's cavalry joined—defeating that division in a few minutes—before Taliaferro's Division and the three other reserves had a chance to join in the action. They were on the way to the place when it occurred. They and all of our cavalry made the wagons you mention quite safe, for they were fully able to dispose of one Federal division."

* * * * * * * * * *

The letter shows that the General was neither surprised nor unprepared in this encounter, and the old veteran's complacent feeling of trust and confidence in his chief was not misplaced.

In the list of the killed was the name of a young recruit, Augustin Greeen, from Watauga county, who came from his home to the Fifty-eighth Regiment the day before the battle. In the ranks near this unfortunate man marched a veteran of

the Mexican war and of the great Civil War. The one was taken and the other left. The old veteran came out of both wars unscathed, and still living (1901), draws a pension for service in Mexico.

The following extract is from General Order of Major-General Stevenson 23 March, 1865, relating to the part taken by the regiment in the battle of Bentonville:

"Never was more dash and gallantry displayed than was exhibited by Palmer's Brigade in their successful assaults upon the breastworks of the enemy."

General Palmer, who is since dead, in a letter to the undersigned, in 1888, says:

"The orders published by me at the time will show and it now gives me great pleasure to repeat that the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina Regiments in this engagement behaved with distinguished gallantry, and won for themselves a merited fame, which will last as long as the historic fields of Bentonville, will appear on the pages and in the annals still to be written of this grand old State, on whose soil her native sons have achieved such splendid distinction."

On 22 March the army was withdrawn to the railroad near Smithfield. While encamped here the Army of Tennessee was reorganized, and companies, regiments and brigades, all now very small, were consolidated. The Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth Regiments were designated as the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina battalion, with Lieut.-Col. Thaddeus M. Coleman and Major G. W F. Harper as field officers.

The army under General Johnston marched 10 April from Smithfield via Raleigh, and on the 16th encamped at Greensboro. Here the regiment was selected as a guard for the large accumulation of North Carolina quartermaster's stores, a duty that was faithfully discharged, the men being practically exempt from the demoralization which the pending surrender so generally developed. At Greensboro the regiment was paid in Mexican silver dollars—one dollar and fourten cents to each officer and enlisted man present.

There being no means of making change for the cents, the men, in groups of seven, drew for the surplus dollar. This pitiful amount was the only payment received for months,

and was the first coin seen by many of the men during the war. General Johnston's General Order No. 18, announcing the surrender of the army, was received 27 April. The paroles were received 2 May and distributed to the regiment, which immediately, as an organized body, marched to Statesville, where it disbanded—some marching to their homes in Ashe and Watauga counties, the greater number taking the cars for Hickory and Icard Station, the latter then the terminus of the railroad.

In the march from Greensboro one-third or more of the men, by order, retained their arms and forty rounds in the cartridge boxes. A small wagon carried a chest of reserve ammunition, a few rations, and after caring for any who might be sick, the blankets of the men. No excesses or depredations were committed, and the men cheerfully responded to the orders of their officers, to whom, as all knew, respect and obedience could no longer be enforced. The conduct of the rank and file of the regiment in the closing days of the war was in keeping with the fine soldierly qualities uniformly displayed by them throughout the long struggle, and reflects on all high credit and honor. On returning to their wasted homes, with rare exceptions, they proved themselves to be model citizens.

A small fraction only of those who went forth in the sixties in response to the call of their country now (1901) survive—the others have joined the mighty and daily increasing host beyond the dark river, and there answer to the general roll call of the just and unjust.

Truth will rise in triumph, and impartial history will surely tell to an admiring world the story of the heroic struggle and "how we fell."

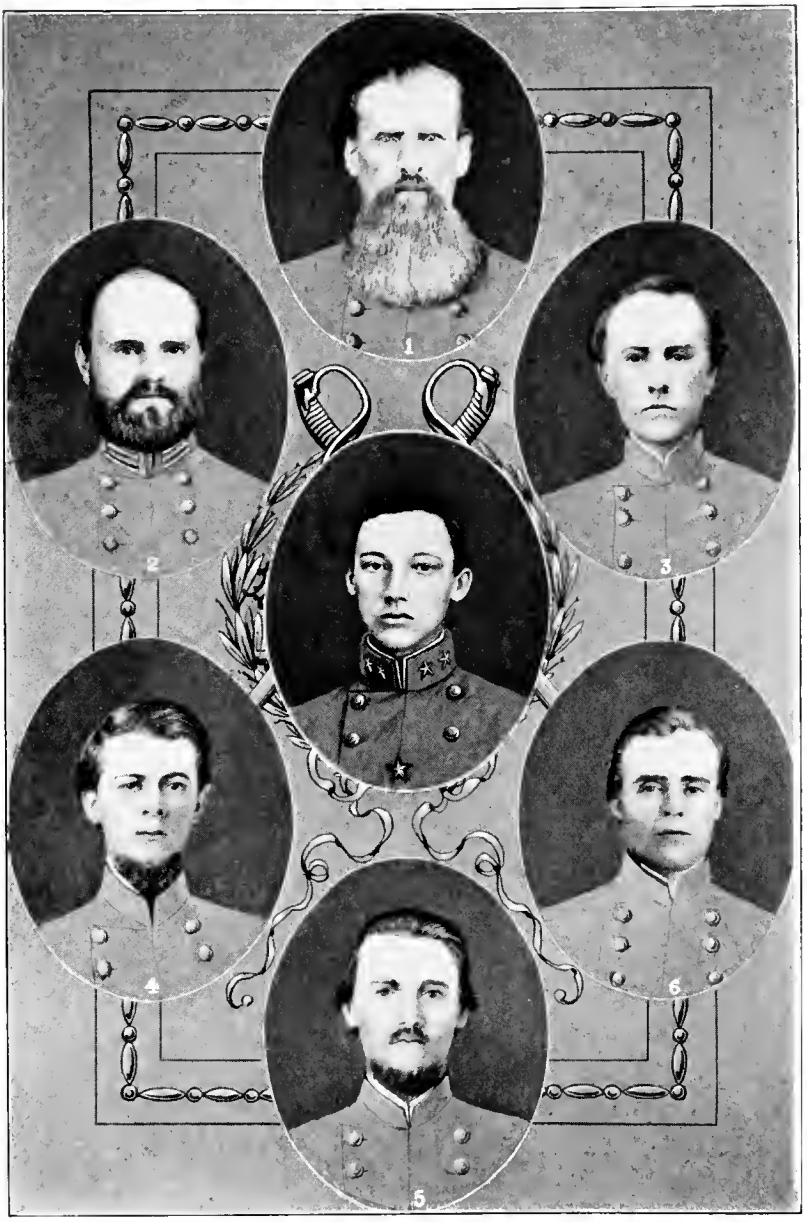
"Rest on embalmed and sainted dead."

* * * * * * * * * *

"Nor shall your glory be forgot
While fame her record keeps,
Or honor points the hallowed spot
Where valor proudly sleeps."

G. W F. HARPER.

LENOIR, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

* Edmund Kirby, Lieut.-Colonel. (Killed at Chickamauga.)
1. S. M. Silver, Lieut.-Colonel.
2. L. W. Gilbert, Captain, Co. H.
3. E. H. Crump, Sergeant, Co. H. (Severely wounded at Chickamauga.)
4. E. L. Moore, Sergeant, Co. F.
5. J. L. Craig, Private, Co. H. (Captured 1864, and died in prison.)
6. A. C. Craig, Sergeant, Co. H.

ADDITIONAL SKETCH FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT

By ISAAC H. BAILEY, Captain Company B.

The Fifty-eighth Regiment, Jno. B. Palmer, Colonel commanding, was composed of companies from the counties of Mitchell, Yancey, McDowell, Ashe, Caldwell and Watauga.

Mitchell County—Company A, Colonel Palmer's old company, commanded by Captain M. D. Wiseman; Company B, by Captain Isaac H. Bailey; Company K, by Captain S. M. Silver.

Yancey—Company C, by Captain S. B. Briggs; Company G, by Captain J. W Peck.

McDowell—Company F, Captain C. O. Conley.

Caldwell—Company E, Captain A. T. Stewart, and Company H, Captain G. W F Harper.

Watauga and Ashe—Captain Geo. W Hopkins, Company M.

Watauga—Company D, Captain B. F Baird; and Company I, Captain Jno. A. Miller.

Ashe—Company L, Captain W Gentry.

There were also three companies of cavalry. Do not remember where they were from, except Captain J. Milton English's company, from Mitchell. However, they were all from Western North Carolina. The cavalry companies were transferred when the idea of creating a legion was dropped.

The first general encampment of the Fifty-eighth North Carolina was at Johnson City, Tennessee, in the Spring of 1862. They were mustered into service as Partizan Rangers, but were soon attached to the regular army, where they gallantly submitted themselves to the orders of superior officers of the Confederate Army.

Their itineracy from Johnson City, Tenn., was as follows:

First to Bean's Station, Tenn.; thence to Cumberland Gap, at which place we were at the evacuation of the Federals. From the above place we followed the Federals to near Perryville, Kentucky, where we joined General Bragg. Shortly after we returned to Tennessee with the army After this we were stationed for a short time in the winter of 1862 at Big Creek Gap, Clinton, London, and still later at Chattanooga, Tenn.; and were in Chattanooga at the evacuation of General Bragg's army in the direction of Chicamauga, Ga.

In February and March, 1863, the regiment was stationed at Big Creek Gap, Tenn. In April, 1863, the Fifty-eighth and Sixty-fourth North Carolina, together with the Fifty-fifth Georgia and a battery of artillery composed a brigade at Clinton, Tenn., commanded by Colonel John B. Palmer. On 31 July, 1863, this same brigade under General J W. Frazer, was at Bell's Bridge, Tenn.

The writer had been ordered to Richmond for supplies for the Fifty-eighth North Carolina, consequently does not know all of the moves of the army before the important battle of Chicamauga. Leaving the main army at Chattanooga, Tenn., he was cut off from his return by way of East Tennessee by the Federal army having taken possession of the State. So he had to return through North and South Carolina, and found his command at LaFayette 18 September, 1863.

It was here that General Bragg called his army around him, telling them how he had retreated from Chattanooga, and how often he had offered the enemy battle, and that they had always failed to make the attack, and now had retired before him at all points. "We shall now turn on the enemy in the direction of Chattanooga, where in the providence of God we will lead the army to victory, and some to death."

The long dusty columns were drawn up, ready to march. The clothes of many of the men were in rags, and their feet bare; but their faces were bright and their bayonets glittering.

Orders had been issued that the men were not to cheer, for fear of attracting the enemy's attention, and the troops as

they passed before their generals, only took off their ragged old hats and waved them around their heads. This silent greeting seemed to touch the great generals greatly

The long shadows made by the declining sun that evening I shall never forget. I will here state that the Fifty-eighth North Carolina Regiment Volunteers belonged to Kelley's Brigade, Preston's Division, Buckner's Corps.

CHICAMAUGA.

As we approached the creek from LaFayette, the enemy was discovered in a large corn field on the opposite side. Our regiment, the Fifty-eighth North Carolina, together with the balance of the brigade, was put in position immediately in front of the enemy, and the division formed in line of battle to the left. A brisk skirmish was kept up until after dark, in which a portion of General Gracie's Brigade was engaged. We, the Fifty-eighth North Carolina, bivouacked that night in front on the battlefield (corn field) and without fire.

On the morning of the 19th, at a very early hour, just as soon as you could distinguish the blue from the gray, the whole army was put in position as far as we could see.

Our brigade was formed at the upper side of a wheat field, forty yards below the fence and woods that ran parallel with our division. After remaining in line about forty-five minutes the command was given: "Unfurl your banners." At this moment the sun broke forth, dispelling the fog, and as our banners floated out on the breeze the Federals, our enemy, General Boynton's command (with whom I am now acquainted), commenced playing "Yankee Doodle" and to move out eastward on an almost parallel line with ours. Almost immediately we were ordered to march in a parallel direction, the enemy inclining to the right and to the left.

Thirty years, one month and four days after this move, General Boynton, of the Federal army, told me that he immediately dispatched to Lee and Gordon's mills for twenty-two pieces of artillery, to be turned on us at once.

Whether it was twenty-two or thirty-two there was soon a

terrible cannonading around us, but with little damage—none to the Fifty-eighth North Carolina. Very soon after this we captured a battery of artillery on a round eminence in a corn field, and greatly hoped to get to guard them, but by the time we had exchanged a few chews of tobacco, we were ordered away For the balance of the day, with the rest of the brigade, we were held in reserve.

At about 7 o'clock Sunday morning, the 20th, the two flanking companies, A and B, commanded by Captains Bailey and Toby, of the Fifty-eighth North Carolina Volunteers, together with five companies from the other regiments, were put under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Kirby, of the Fifty-eighth, and ordered in the direction of Alexander's bridge across the west prong of Chicamauga river as skirmishers to feel the strength of the enemy in that direction.

We proceeded about one and a fourth miles when we came to an open field lying along the Chicamauga river some three fourths of a mile in length and about the same in breadth. When we had gone nearly half way down through the field, we could see fortifications all up and down the river the full length of the field and about twenty-five yards from the river bank.

Notwithstanding we knew that the enemy was behind the breastworks, we had to advance to feel his strength. So we slowly advanced until we came to the fortifications of fence rails leaning from our advance in the direction of the river to where the enemy had fallen back to and under the bank of the river to draw us over, then to fire on us as we would have to retreat over the fortifications just passed. As soon as the line of skirmishers had passed over the fortifications, the enemy fired from their ranks, three or four men deep, a most galling and enfilading fire into our ranks. We had now ascertained by sad and painful experience what we had been sent out to do.

We were then obliged to retreat through the rail fortification upon the woods and across the old fields of broom straw waving in the melancholy wind, and over a number of our most loved comrades left dead on the field. One of them, Thos. G. Tipton, had just saved the writer's life.

The battle was raging furiously all the day long from end to end of the field and for five or six miles up and down the river of death (Chicamauga). Charge after charge was made by the Confederate and Federal lines, each in turn, while the shells from the opposing batteries lumbered and burst over our heads. At about 3:30 p. m. we regained our regiment.

The Fifty-eighth North Carolina Vounteers, the Sixty-third Virginia and the Fifth Kentucky, in order named, moved to the front and formed in line of battle, the left resting on the Chattanooga road. The enemy occupied a range of ridges, from which they had repulsed no less than seven assaults made by our troops.

The approach to these ridges was along spurs and where ridges intersected ridges and through intervening depressions or hollows, all more or less wooded, but more open and exposed opposite the right of the brigade. One of the assaults had been male by General Anderson's brigade. Before we could reach him in such a way as to successfully relieve, he had been repulsed.

The line being again formed. the Fifty-eighth North Carolina, which was on the right, moved with steadiness through this comparatively open space till the extreme right arrived within ten or twelve feet of the enemy. The line of the brigade formed with the line of the enemy an angle of perhaps 83 to 24 degrees, the right of the Fifty-eighth being at the angle.

After exchanging fire with the enemy for about one and three-fourth of an hour, we attempted to dislodge him by assault, and for this purpose the Fifty-eighth North Carolina was transferred from the right to the left of the line, and moved forward, swinging somewhat to the right. When we arrived at the base of the hill, the enemy was heard to cry: "We surrender! We surrender!"

Colonel John H. Kelly, Eighth Arkansas Regiment, was in command of the brigade. He immediately stepped to the front, two horses having been shot from under him within the past few minutes, and called upon the officer who seemed to

be in command and demanded that if he proposed to surrender he should lay down his arms.

He came to the front saying: "Wait a moment!"

Kelly replied: "No, sir! lay down your arms instantly, or I will fire upon you," and turned to give his command, but before he could give the command ready, the enemy poured upon us a terrific fire, with a loud exclamation: "You are firing upon your friends." Having discovered that no friends were in advance, but that it was a most treacherous act on the part of the enemy, firing was continued with vigor. A deadly fire was, and had been ever since we came within range, poured into our ranks by the foe.

After a desperately contested fight from 3:30 p. m. to nearly nightfall, we succeeded in gaining the hill from which the enemy made three or four unsuccessful attempts to dislodge us by assault. However, owing to the conformation of the ground, the Fifty-eighth North Carolina was exposed to a galling fire from the front and on both flanks, the left flanking company being within ten or twelve feet of the enemy. In this action the regiment lost about half of its numbers, by official report of Colonel Kelly, commanding the brigade. Company A, Captain Toby, started on the charge with thirty-four muskets and reached the top of the hill with only twelve, losing twenty-two. In conjunction with Colonel R. C. Trigg, Fifty-fourth Virginia,, commanding another brigade, we captured two regiments of the enemy, which surrendered to Colonel Trigg during the temporary absence of Colonel Kelly, commanding our brigade. As the column commenced moving with the prisoners a volley was fired into our ranks causing a good deal of confusion, it then being dark. Early in the action Lieutenant-Colonel Edmund Kirby, while gallantly cheering his men, fell pierced by four bullets. Major Dula was wounded early in the engagement. *Vol. 51, Official Records Union and Confederate Armies, p. 441* Colonel Palmer, the only field officer with the regiment, was here wounded, but still continued in command, with his senior Captain, Isaac H. Bailey, to aid him as Major and Lieutenant-Colonel, after which Captain Bailey fell almost mortally wounded, left leg broken, shot

through the right side and one ear almost severed from his head Thirteen commissioned officers, including the Adjutant, had been killed and wounded; two-thirds of the right flanking company, Captain Toby's, having been killed and wounded, and about seven-tenths of the left flanking company, Captain Bailey's.

Arrangements having been made to replenish our supply of ammunition, we went into bivouac and rested for the night, on the hill which the Fifty-eighth, together with the remainder of the brigade, had so gallantly won, fighting against a superior force, posted in an apparently impregnable position. We moved steadily forward, beat and captured many of the enemy, and slept in his "stronghold." Whether you may call it whipping them or not, there was not a Federal to be found within thirteen miles of us by next morning who was at all able to get away.

The roll of honor of the regiment at this battle published in general orders, was as follows:

Company A, Sergeant Wm. A. Vance; Company B, Private William F Bradshaw; Company C, Sergeant John Hughes; Company D, Private Braxton Cox; Company E, Private, W N. Pender (killed); Company G, Private C. Gentry; Company F, Private George Jarrett; Company H, Private W P Bumgarner; Company I, Sergeant John Eggers (killed); Company K, Sergeant P H. Duncan; Company L, Private M. Harrel.

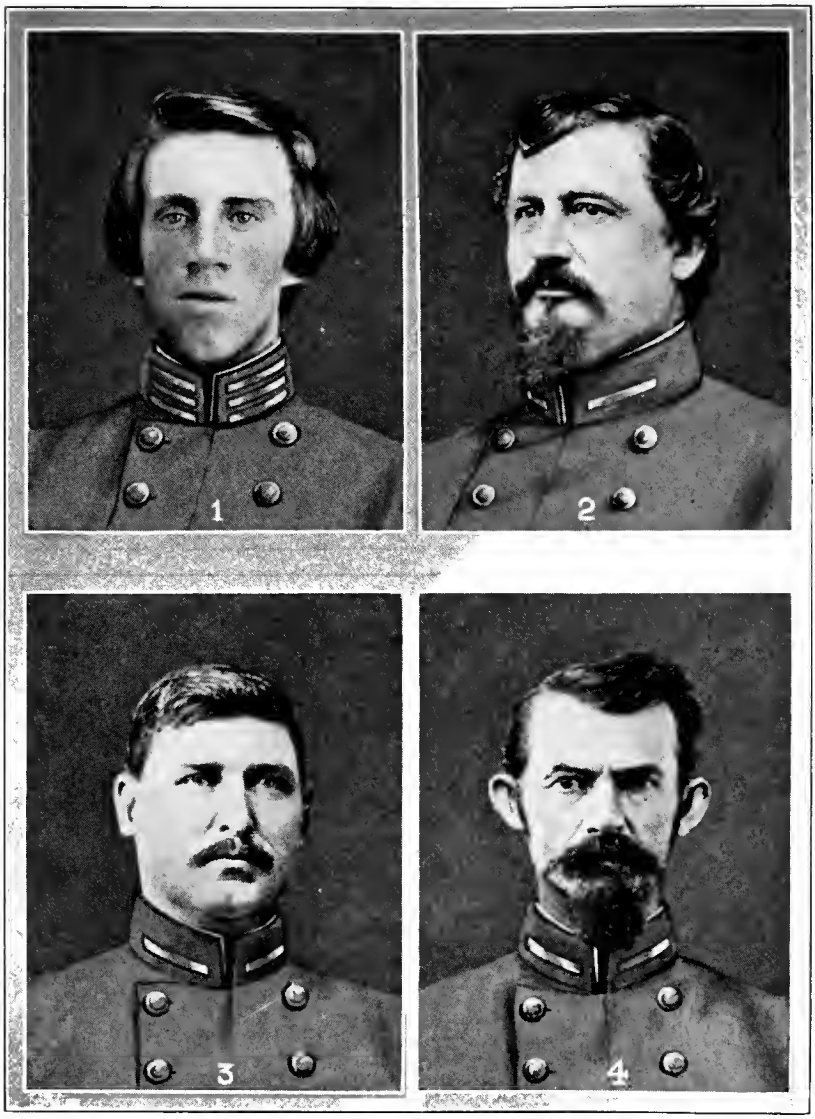
As all of the Fifty-eighth North Carolina did their duty so well it seems useless to make particular mention of any one; yet, I cannot refrain mentioning in a special manner Ebbin Childs, Colonel Palmer's orderly, whose smooth girlish face I see before me now, and whose bright sword flashed for the last time in the rays of the setting sun, as he fell within twenty steps of the enemy's line. His beardless face ablaze with the animation of battle, and his youthful figure transformed into a hero's statue. The dry parched earth of Snodgrass Hill was never reddened with nobler blood, and a braver man or boy never died. The regiment marched with the army from Chicamauga to Missionary Ridge.

From April to July, 1864, the regiment was in A. W Rey-

nold's Brigade, which in August was temporarily commanded by Colonel Wash. M. Hardy, of the Sixtieth North Carolina; then with Hood on his march to Nashville and return. Then at the battles of Cassville, Savannah, and the hard-fought battle of Averasboro, N. C., on 16 March, 1865. On 19-21 March at Bentonville, the last battle ever fought by our war-worn soldiers, it was a part of General Jos. B. Palmer's Brigade and commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Silver, fought with its accustomed valor. On 9 April, 1865, the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth consolidated into one regiment, were commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Thad. Coleman, and belonged to Brantley's Brigade, D. H. Hill's Division, S. D. Lee's Corps, in the Army of the West, then stationed near Smithfield, N. C. This is their last report (*Official Records Union and Confederate Armies, Vol. 98, p. 1064*) and as General Johnston began his last retreat 10 April, they were probably thus surrendered. The army passed through Raleigh 12 April and were near High Point when surrendered 26 April. They were paroled 2 May, 1865, the fragment of an ever glorious regiment and true to the last. Gallant, noble, battle-scarred veterans who had breasted the storm in each of these battles, and the intervening skirmishes. Now and hereafter the question may be asked, why we did not succeed? The answer is: They who justly deserve success, do not always win it. Braver men never fought or died, but overpowering numbers and munitions of war were against us.

ISAAC H. BAILEY.

BAKERSVILLE, N. C.,
26 APRIL, 1901.



FIFTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

1. Jos. B. Cherry, Captain, Co. F.
2. Lewis B. Sutton, 2d Lieut., Co. F.
3. D. W. Lewis, 2d Lieut., Co. D.
4. J. M. Wright, 2d Lieut., Co. A.

FIFTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

(FOURTH CAVALRY.)

By W P SHAW, Second Lieutenant Company D.

It may be questioned if in the entire range of our thought, there can be found any object more deserving of the highest admiration, and more worthy of the lasting gratitude, of the people of the South than the true Confederate soldier, or if there can be found any cause more worthy of the historian's patient labor than an honest and earnest effort to keep fresh and green the memory of his patriotic devotion to his country and home, together with his invincible valor so eminently displayed through the four long years of self sacrificing hardships and bloody strife of the Civil War. "Truly no dark ingratitude should ever overshadow the cherished memory of our gallant dead, whose manly forms rent and mangled by shot and shell, pierced by the bayonet's thrust, or borne down by the sabre stroke, fell upon the bloody battlefield, or wasted and died, in the hospital and the camp, of gaping wounds or burning fever." Yet little has been done to preserve from oblivion and forgetfulness the gallant deeds, self-sacrificing devotion to duty of those true sons of North Carolina, who so bravely stood for "the Lost Cause," and how rapidly the glorious deeds of our heroes are fading from our memory is made more apparent as we look about us for published data and the record of the glorious deeds done by the soldiers of our State. Especially is this true, as we look for historic records of separate regiments and commands. And now since time has kept his steady, restless and unbroken march, year after year, until more than an entire age has passed between us and the events we would put on record, we find many of the scenes and incidents once so clear to our memory, so vivid in our minds, "fast becoming a tangled web and in some instances they have already become a confusing maze."

Truly this is so as regards the writer and the part borne in the bloody strife, by the Fifty-ninth Regiment of North Carolina Troops (the Fourth Cavalry) with reference to which he would write.

This regiment was organized at Garysburg, N. C., in the summer of 1862. Colonel Dennis D. Ferebee, of Camden county, whose commission as Colonel bore date 10 August, 1862, was its first commander. He was a gentleman of education and polish, having graduated at our State University in 1839. He read law under Judge Gaston at New Bern, but never entered actively in the practice, preferring the life of a planter. He frequently held civil office and several times represented his county in State legislation. Though not possessing military training, yet he was in many respects a good organizer of men. He was careful and neat in dress and had great respect for law and order. It is related that Governor Swain once said of him, when at college, that he was more regular than the college bell. As an officer he was faithful and brave. After the war he lived many years at his home in the county of Camden, and died greatly respected and admired by his friends and countrymen.

Lieutenant-Colonel Cantwell, of the city of Wilmington, was the second officer in command. He had seen service in the war with Mexico, and seldom has the flag of any army waved over a braver soldier. At Middleburg on 18 June, 1863, at the head of a detachment of his regiment, after fiercely contesting every inch of ground with a force several times larger than his own, he stood up urging his men not to yield, until surrounded and overpowered, his sword was snatched from his hand and he was made a prisoner.

J. M. Mayo, of Edgecombe county, who had been severely wounded and promoted for gallantry in the artillery service, was assigned to the regiment as its Major. He was a young officer of great bravery and dash, and while leading a charge of a squadron of his regiment through the streets of Upperville, on 21 June, 1863, was captured and never returned to his regiment, having been held a prisoner until the close of the war. The Adjutant of the regiment was T. J. Moore, of Mecklenburg. After the war he studied medicine and prac-

ticed his profession in Richmond, where he died a few years since highly respected and honored by his many friends.

The surgical department of the regiment at its organization was well and ably represented by Dr. John W Hutchins, of Hertford county, and Dr. J. W Sessoms, of the adjoining county of Bertie. Later Dr. James Mitchie was surgeon, with Drs. Eaves and Barnes assistants. Captain W D. Holloman, of Hertford county, was Assistant Quartermaster and but few regiments had a better officer in this department of the service, while Captain R. B. Gaddy, who was selected to write a sketch of the regiment, but who passed away and joined his comrades beyond the river without completing his work, was its efficient Commissary With this reference to the field and staff officers, it occurs to the writer that notice of the different companies composing the regiment will be next in order and he will name them in their regular alphabetical order:

COMPANY A—L. A. Johnson, Captain; G. D. Sibley, First Lieutenant; J M. Wall, J P Kincall, J. M. Wright, Second Lieutenants; all of Anson county.

COMPANY B—James T Mitchell, Captain; E. Brock Holden, First Lieutenant; Henry S. Thaxton, Robert T. Jones, Second Lieutenants; all of Caswell county

COMPANY C—R. M. McIntyre, Captain; J. H. Bloodworth, First Lieutenant; Jesse Wilder, R. B. Rhodes, Second Lieutenants; all of New Hanover county

COMPANY D—William Sharp, Captain, Hertford county; Thos. Ruffin, First Lieutenant, Bertie county; D. W Lewis, and W P Shaw, Second Lieutenants, Hertford county.

COMPANY E—John Y Bryce, Captain, Mecklenburg county; Robert Gadd, First Lieutenant, and William Bryce Second Lieutenant, both of Cabarrus county.

COMPANY F—Joseph B. Cherry, Captain; George O. Cherry, First Lieutenant; Louis B. Sutton and Charles W Speller, Junior Second Lieutenants; all of Bertie county.

COMPANY G—Demosthenes Bell, Captain; Stephen P. Wilson, First Lieutenant; Isaac N Tillett and J B. Lee, Second Lieutenants; all of Currituck county.

COMPANY H—Arthur Barnes, Captain; S. P Clark, Cap-

tain; M. M. Williams, First Lieutenant; Wm. C. Ferrell, Second Lieutenant, all of Wilson county.

COMPANY I—J O. Cherry, Captain; G. D. Ward, Captain, both of Bertie county; C. C Lovejoy, First Lieutenant, Wake county; M. Bond, Second Lieutenant, Cleveland county.

COMPANY K—James V Sauls, Captain; Wm. Vann, First Lieutenant; Dallas M. Beal, Second Lieutenant; all of Northampton county.

In the latter part of the war Company I was commanded by Captain G. D. Ward, a gallant officer, who was severely wounded near Petersburg, and who was in command of the regiment at Gettysburg.

Companies I and K were transferred to the regiment from the Twelfth Battalion of Cavalry which, under command of Major S. J Wheeler, had rendered service along the Chowan, and had met the enemy in their advance on Jackson, N C.

ON THE BLACKWATER.

Shortly after the organization of the regiment it was ordered to Franklin, Virginia, and saw its first actual service along the Blackwater and upper Chowan rivers, making frequent reconnoissance in the country beyond the river in the direction of Suffolk, then strongly garrisoned by Federal troops and almost daily picket firing and skirmish fighting with detachments of the enemy's cavalry were kept up with occasional losses in killed and wounded on either side. In the skirmishes Companies A and B took an active part. At this time, the Federal gunboats which had frequented our waters since the fall of Roanoke Island, had become bold and defiant and were making occasional trips up our smaller streams, throwing shot and shell on either side as they advanced. With a view of shelling our camps and driving away the troops located near Franklin, several boats made a trip up the Blackwater river, near the town, when Lieutenant Thomas Ruffin marched his company down to the edge of the narrow river and then stationing his men behind trees and bushes awaited the coming of the foremost steamer, which was soon abreast of them, when a sharp volley of rifle shot,

poured into the pilot house and other exposed parts of the steamer, quickly drove the pilot from the wheel and the men from the deck, rendering the steamer powerless to move, or her men to work the guns and her capture seemed to be assured until other steamers coming up near began to drop shot and shell by her side where Lieutenant Ruffin and his men were stationed, forcing them to retire with a loss of a few men wounded. The reported loss of killed and wounded on board the steamer was quite heavy. However this may have been, the gunboats from this time ceased to make their runs up our narrow rivers.

FOSTER'S RAID.

Early in the month of December, 1862, the regiment was ordered to make a forced march to Goldsboro to meet an expected attack of the Federal forces, under General Foster, on that town. The object of General Foster's advance being to cut the line of communication between Richmond and the States south of this point. Foster's forces consisted of five brigades of infantry with reinforcements of artillery and cavalry, and was much greater than any force which could have been readily placed in his front, yet after reaching the Neuse river and burning the bridge which crossed it, he at once retreated in the direction of Kinston, closely followed by our cavalry, which kept up the pursuit until the Federal troops finally fell back around New Bern.

About the first of March following the regiment was ordered to join D. H. Hill's forces, then operating against Washington and New Bern. On arriving at the former place our men were dismounted and for several days occupied positions under the shelling of the enemy's gunboats with constant skirmish fighting with detachments of troops from the town. Finally our troops were quietly withdrawn, the enterprise seemingly having failed to be characterized by any profitable results.

ORDERED TO VIRGINIA.

The Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments (Fourth and Fifth Cavalry), having been attached to General Robertson's Brigade, for some weeks following had a

rest in camp, and then received orders to take up a line of march for the Army of Northern Virginia and unite their future destiny with the brave heroes who rode with that true representative of Southern dash, chivalry and courage, General J. E. B. Stuart. "It is now 1 June, 1863, and the beginning of serious and perilous times. General Lee is looking northward and plans for the Gettysburg campaign have already been commenced."

The cavalry command under General Stuart, consisting of twenty-one regiments assigned to five brigades, commanded by Generals Hampton, Fitzhugh Lee, W H. F. Lee, Robertson and Jones, encamped upon a broad plain near Culpepper Court House. All that could be accomplished in arming, equipping and organizing this arm of the service had been effected in every possible detail and manner.

CAVALRY REVIEW

On 5 June General Stuart, surrounded by a coterie of officers, both civil and military, with a large number of ladies and other spectators, from a stand on a gentle elevation, had the cavalry brigades consisting of about 8,000 men, to pass in review before him and his attendants. Truly this was a grand pageant, such as modern times has but seldom witnessed in this or any other country The mounted troops at first moving in column of squadrons at a slow pace, passed before their gallant commander, then at a charge, while the guns of the horse artillery poured forth volley after volley of thunder and smoke, which together with the yelling of the men and rising clouds of dust gave every appearance of real battle, rather than a harmless military display, to be so very soon followed by a terrible encounter of blood and carnage on the same field. Three days later General Lee, whose long column of infantry were then pressing their way toward Maryland, reviewed the cavalry with much less of the pomp and display, however, than that which had so signally marked the previous review. The review being over, the troops went into camp, the Fifty-ninth taking up quarters near the farm of John Minor Botts, with pickets guarding the lower fords of the Rappahannock river.

BRANDY STATION.

On the same evening General Pleasanton, commanding the Federal cavalry, approached the opposite bank of the river and concentrated his forces preparatory to an early crossing the following morning to make a reconnoissance which, if possible, might disclose the movements of General Lee's army. With the advance of his forces our pickets were driven in and there on the broad plain near Brandy Station occurred the most extensive cavalry engagement of the Civil War. According to the report of General Pleasanton, the Federal troops engaged in this contest numbered 10,981 effective men, while on the Confederate side, including the horse artillery, the effective total numbered about 8,500 men. Though the fight continued nearly throughout this long day of 9 June, yet not all of the Confederate cavalry force was engaged. General Robertson's Brigade, to which our regiment belonged, though often under artillery fire, was held mostly in reserve and its casualties were small. But soon now the fortune of this command must change.

MIDDLEBURG AND UPPERVILLE.

Taking up its line of march as ordered in rear of General Lee's moving army eight days thereafter it reached the town of Middleburg, which had been previously occupied by the enemy's cavalry, and here a fierce contest ensued just outside of the town, resulting in the rout and capture of nearly the entire force in our front, which proved to be the First Rhode Island Cavalry.

Then commenced a series of cavalry battles, continuing through several days, in which the Fifty-ninth was an active participant, suffering great loss in killed, wounded and captured. On 21 June the Federal cavalry having been strongly reinforced, made a general advance, pressing our forces heavily and forcing us to retire in the direction of Upperville, "our artillery in the meantime doing good execution from every position of advantage and the cavalry meeting every charge and recharging whenever opportunity and conditions afforded." As we neared the town the fighting became desperate—often hand-to-hand with severe loss

on both sides; especially is this true of Robertson's Brigade. Here the brave Colonel Evans, of the Sixty-third fell fearfully wounded, and Major J M. Mayo charging in the town at the head of a squadron of the Fifty-ninth, met a severe fire from behind rock fences and barricades and a strong mounted force in front as well, and together with the men who followed him, not previously killed or wounded, was captured.

In this charge our loss was great and included a number of the best men of the regiment. Company D lost seventeen men, killed, wounded and captured, together with Captain William Sharp, captured, and the gallant Thomas Ruffin, who was wounded and died in the hands of his captors. In this engagement Captain J B. Cherry's company sustained heavy loss and other companies as well. Indeed all the companies of the regiment were engaged in this fight and sustained losses.

The next day the opposing forces fell back toward Middleburg. The moving column of General Lee's army at this time are mostly north of the Potomac. General Stuart, with three brigades of cavalry, had gone to the right of the army to make a crossing east of the Blue Ridge while Robertson's and Jones' brigades were ordered to cover the rear and left flank of the infantry.

TO GETTYSBURG AND BACK.

Our brigade entered Maryland, crossing the Potomac at Williamsport and thence made our way to Hagerstown, which we reached on the evening of the 30th, and went into camp at night near Green Castle. On the following day, 1 July, we marched to Chambersburg, reaching the town about six o'clock in the evening. Here we found the citizens quietly sitting about the public grounds or moving about their homes with anxious looks and wondering expectancy as to what might next occur.

An orderly march characterized the movement of our troops and no body of men could have been more observant of the orders previously given by the commanding general of the Army of Northern Virginia with regard to private prop-

erty and non-combatants. Remaining here until late at night we moved, at first in the direction of Carlisle, then turning to the right hurried on to Gettysburg, arriving there tired and hungry on the morning of 3 July. We had only a short pause for rest when Jones' Brigade suddenly became engaged with the enemy's cavalry near Fairfield, which was stubbornly resisting his advance until being reinforced by Robertson's Brigade, which charged and routed the opposing force.

The charge up the bloody heights of Cemetery Hill had now been made and the battles of Gettysburg practically ended. During the night of 3 July, 1863, the main army was withdrawn to a crest of hills westward of the town and plans for the withdrawal of the army were under consideration. Our men, careworn, tired and hungry, drenched by the rain storms, are anxiously awaiting orders.

On the following day Robertson's Brigade with Jones' Brigade, was directed to follow and guard the wagon trains then moving over a mountainous road in the direction of Williamsport. The route was crowded for miles with wagons, ambulances and thousands of wounded and disabled soldiers, and the narrow pass was not infrequently obstructed as they moved along this rough way in the heavy falling rains. On our reaching the Jack Mountain passes about nine o'clock at night, there ensued one of the most eventful night battles of the war.

JACK MOUNTAIN.

Kilpatrick's cavalry having come up by an unguarded road, made an attack on the train and the men in front. It was so very dark that it was impossible to locate our own or the enemy's troops except by the flash of the rifles. Here until late in the night we fought against heavy odds and our loss in this engagement in killed, wounded and prisoners was large. From this place Robertson's Brigade made its way onward towards Williamsport. As we approached Hagerstown, we encountered the enemy's skirmish line, which was driven in and, reinforcements coming up at this time, the enemy was driven through the town and a general pursuit

began with our command a part of the time in front and the enemy occasionally stopping to give battle and though forced to fall back, inflicting loss. As we approached Williamsport the Federal troops turned in the direction of Sharpsburg and we moved on to Williamsport and established our pickets on the extreme wing of the army where we remained from the 7th to the 13th of July. "Days which will ever be remembered by those present as days of unprecedented hardship and anxiety, as with scant rations amid a country swept bare of provisions, with the enemy hanging round in every direction and the swollen waters of the Potomac at our backs." On the night of the 13th the army commenced recrossing the river; the arduous and difficult task of protecting the rear, was assigned to the cavalry which followed next day.

It is worthy of note in this sketch that while these events were transpiring with the main army, Captain L. A. Johnson, of Company A, of our regiment, a gallant officer who, with Lieutenant D. W. Lewis, of Company D, was left with a strong picket force to guard the pass at Ashby's Gap, had handsomely repulsed a large body of the enemy's cavalry in an attempt to force a passage at this point.

NORTH CAROLINA CAVALRY BRIGADE.

In this campaign, lasting about fifty days, our regiment had lost about half of its officers and men, and even many of those now answering to the roll call being dismounted or disabled for duty. After this the infantry was withdrawn to the south side of the Rapidan and the cavalry to the line of the Rappahannock, and for some weeks the army enjoyed comparative rest, during which time a reorganization of the cavalry had been effected. The Fifty-ninth was assigned to General L. S. Baker's command which then comprised the Ninth, Nineteenth, Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments (First, Second, Fourth and Fifth Cavalry), and was known as the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade. The period of rest following the Gettysburg campaign was broken in September by an advance of the enemy's cavalry into Culpepper county, and on the 22d of the month we had an engagement near Jack's Shop in which the Fifty-ninth did

good service. Here the brave General L. S. Baker was severely wounded and permanently disabled for the field, and afterwards transferred to another branch of the service, and General James B. Gordon, having been promoted, was assigned to the command of the North Carolina Brigade.

THE BRISTOE CAMPAIGN.

On 9 October following, General Lee commenced a movement of his army around General Meade's right, which movement is known as the Bristoe Campaign and in which the cavalry bore a conspicuous part. On 11 October our regiment being rapidly advanced on the Sperryville Turnpike toward Culpepper Court House, encountered a detachment of Kilpatrick's cavalry which after a stubborn resistance, was driven back with considerable loss. In this fight our gallant Colonel Ferebee was wounded, and Lieutenant Benton, of Company A, with others of the Fifty-ninth, were killed and Adjutant Morehead, of the Sixty-third, was severely wounded in the face. There are many incidents connected with the campaign worthy of note in which the Fifty-ninth bore its due part, but which must needs be omitted in this short sketch.

With the opening of the spring campaign, the Fifty-ninth was assigned to the brigade commanded by General James Dearing, and bore an active part in the numerous cavalry engagements between Petersburg and Richmond. On 9 May General Kautz, with a large force of cavalry and some artillery, made an attack upon the city of Petersburg from the south side. At this time the city was defended by the home guard or militia, and the attack came so sudden that the enemy was near the corporate limits before his presence was manifest. At this time our regiment was on the opposite side of the river, and by a hurried running march reached the point of attack, which was being bravely defended by the citizen soldiery, in time to reinforce them and prevent further advance upon the town and save it from capture. The gallantry of the brave men of Petersburg as displayed

on this occasion is worthy of the highest commendation, several of them having been there killed or wounded.

On 4 May commenced the campaign of the Wilderness. Five days later General Stuart fell mortally wounded near Yellow Tavern, in his effort to save the Confederate capital from capture. He lived a short while thereafter and expired on 12 May in the city of Richmond. As the shadows of life's sunset were gathering about him, he said, "I am willing to die if God and my country think I have fulfilled my destiny and done my duty. God's will be done." With these last utterances the great Southern cavalier's light of life went out and his soul passed into the vast beyond.

PETERSBURG.

About this time we were ordered below Petersburg and experienced much hard service on that part of the line, the extreme right of the army, and during the entire summer as Grant extended his left we had almost daily picket firing with now and then a man picked off the outpost, or killed in brisk skirmish fights—losses which never found their way into the general report as did the casualties of great battles, and our command, being constantly diminished with no additional recruits, was almost daily growing smaller. On 27 October Grant threw a heavy infantry force from across Hatcher's Run near Burgess' Mill, where we had terrific fighting, and considering the number engaged the loss to our regiment was heavy. Here the brave Sergeant Vickers, of Company E, was killed, and a number of other true and tried men were slain or wounded.

There were frequent changes being made in the cavalry command. In the month of February, 1865, General Dearing was ordered to the command of Rosser's Brigade in the Valley, and General W P Roberts, who had already won marked reputation, not only for unswerving gallantry, but great organizing force as well, was promoted 21 February, 1865, from Colonel of the Nineteenth North Carolina and assigned to the command just vacated by General Dearing. On taking charge of the brigade General Roberts found its ranks not only depleted but in need of many things to make organi-

zation complete. Some of the commands were suffering for want of field officers. Especially was this true of the Fifty-ninth at this time.

Its gallant Colonel Ferebee, suffering from his wound and growing old, had retired. Lieutenant-Colonel Cantwell had long before this been assigned to other service and Major Mayo was a prisoner at Johnston's Island, but by vigorous work with active energy and untiring zeal, on the part of its young commander, the brigade was during the month which succeeded, advanced to a more efficient condition for the stirring events now at hand.

LAST DAYS OF MARCH, 1865.

Encamped on the White Oak road about six miles from Dinwiddie Court House, the brigade had enjoyed some weeks of comparative rest and quiet recuperation until 29 March, 1865, when commenced that series of movements which resulted in the fall of Petersburg, the evacuation of Richmond, and the events following which knew no cessation until the final end came and the dropping of the curtain closed the last scene of the bloody drama at Appomattox. On the morning just above referred to commenced the long expected advance on Petersburg. General Roberts' Brigade, with the Fifty-ninth in front supporting our pickets, first met the advance movement of the enemy. It was very soon made apparent that the force in our front was such as to render it impossible for so small a number to stop or even much impede the progress of the heavy columns opposing us. "Yet we did what we could and no troops ever offered a more stubborn resistance or fought better in the face of such apparent disadvantage and great odds than did General Roberts' Brigade on this day, and more than once we checked their advance."

Soon after meeting the enemy the greater part of the regiment had been dismounted and formed in line on either side of the road, while the writer, in charge of a squadron of mounted men, was directed by General Roberts, to remain in the road and watch closely any movement of the Federal cavalry in front and in case of a charge, to meet the charge, but with orders to retire before the fire of the advancing in-

fantry as we came in range of their guns. This squadron having been forced back to a place on the military road near where there had once been a saw mill and where our dismounted men were making a stand, General Roberts rode up and occupied a position on the right, while Captain Bell, the regimental commander, stopped on the left of the officer in charge.

About this time the enemy having reached a house in range of our position, fired upon us a terrible volley of rifle shot with great effect, emptying a number of saddles. Captain L. A. Johnson's company suffered severely Here Captain Bell was fearfully wounded in the face and taken to the rear. As we were slowly retiring from this point of attack there came a message from Captain J. B. Cherry, the next officer in command, to send him a horse to bear him from the field. This gallant young officer, who seemed to know no fear and who had an hour before to the writer, expressed a presentiment that this would be his last fight, had received a fatal shot. From the field he was taken to Petersburg where he expired just as the enemy were entering the town.

Closely following the fight to which reference has just been made, on a line only a short distance removed, there appeared in an open field in our front a heavy line of infantry skirmishers advancing at a steady march. General Roberts recognizing the importance of checking this advance and holding the ground until expected reinforcements could arrive, placing a mounted squadron of the Fifty-ninth (Fourth Cavalry) behind a slight hill, covered by small pines which concealed us from the view of the enemy, directed the officer in command that so soon as the skirmishers crossed a ditch in our front to charge them. A moment or two of waiting and the ditch is crossed. In another moment the mounted squadron, General Roberts in the lead, with drawn sabres and a fierce yell charge down upon them, and they being surprised and disconcerted by this sudden and unexpected attack, at once began to throw down their arms and surrender, but soon observing the smallness of our number and being encouraged by their own men on either side of them, who had not felt the force of this surprising shock, hurriedly picked up

their guns and fired on us at close range, forcing us to take shelter again behind the hill. In this charge the writer's horse was shot under him, leaving him on foot with the enemy together with others of this command who had been killed or wounded, but making his escape he soon made his way back behind the pines, where the squadron had reformed, and was ready for the second charge, which was executed with unsurpassed gallantry, and being supported by a detachment of infantry coming up at this time dislodged the skirmishers, driving them back on the main line.

On 30 and 31 March, our regiment was contiually in the immediate front of Sheridan's cavalry and had a number of sharp encounters with the enemy at Boisseau's and other points along the line of the White Oak road.

FIVE FORKS.

On the morning of 1 April, Sheridan, who had been held in check up to this time, having been heavily reinforced by the arrival of Warren's Corps, made a general advance. Our regiment now reduced to a handful of effective men, was dismounted and placed in the road near Five Forks, behind a barricade of rails and brush, with an open field in front, where soon appeared a large force of the enemy's cavalry, which in a broad column charged down upon our position which was gallantly held until the mounted troops in large numbers had leaped their horses over the rail piles and gotten in the rear of us. Fortunately for us on the opposite side of the road was a well timbered wood which offered protection to our men who had been run over and ordered to surrender, and most of them made their way back to their horses with comparatively small loss, the opposing cavalry having become too greatly demoralized and anxious for their own safety to care for prisoners. The gallantry displayed here by Lieutenant E. B. Holden, of Company B, is worthy of high commendation. The cavalry fighting on this day along other parts of our line was terrific and bloody, and at nightfall we fell back from the line of the White Oak road and Five Forks, and went into camp to be constantly awakened from our slumbers by the deafening roar of cannon

along the line to our left in front of the long-besieged city of Petersburg.

THE RETREAT TO APPOMATTOX.

Early on Sunday morning, 2 April, 1865, came the intelligence of the evacuation of Petersburg, with orders for us to take up our line of retreat by the Southside Railroad. The enemy not following us closely on this road, we moved along quietly until near night, when reaching a point near Namozine church we found a line of our cavalry skirmishers which had preceded us engaged with the enemy's cavalry, which after a brisk fire, retired and the shades of night ended what seemed to threaten a fierce conflict. Soon next morning the rear of the Confederate forces made a crossing of Namozine creek. Roberts' Brigade and a Virginia regiment were left to guard the ford and bring up the rear.

Not long thereafter it was ascertained that the enemy's cavalry had turned our position and made a crossing of the narrow stream at another point, causing great disorder and a threatened panic. It was then by marked gallantry and obstinate courage eminently displayed by General Roberts with other officers and men of this command, that the on-coming rush of Sheridan's troopers was averted, giving time to rally the disorganized men and stop what gave indication of a general stampede.

Following along in rear of our retreating army, on reaching Amelia Court House we found a detachment of some regiment of Virginia cavalry in a sharp skirmish battle with the enemy, and in this engagement the Fifty-ninth gave efficient aid in stopping Sheridan's advance until the coming up of Longstreet's Corps. From this place we move along from day to day passing High Bridge, Farmville and many other points marked by skirmish battles, frequently under artillery fire, and enduring the most severe fatigue and hardship. Captain Garnett, a gallant officer of the brigade staff, referring to this period, writes: "I will not now attempt to depict the severe toils and privations to which we had been exposed for ten days. Night brought no relief from the

fatigue of the day and the result was the sure wasting away of the energies of both men and horses."

On Saturday, 8 April, our march was almost unmolested and it was the most quiet day of this memorable retreat, and at nightfall we halted and went into camp about six miles from Appomattox Court House. From here the writer with a detachment of his regiment, was sent to the home of Hon. Thos. S. Bocock, who was then Speaker of the Confederate House of Representatives, to obtain corn for the regiment. Here we were most generously entertained. The barns were opened to us, and supper prepared for the tired and hungry men, and in his parlor Mr. Bocock stated to the writer that the great struggle was fast nearing the end, and that with our departure he would leave his home to escape capture. This was the first time that it had seriously dawned on us that our trusted leader would be forced to yield to the great weight of numbers confronting him and that he, together with his gallant followers, would fall captive in the hands of those with whom they had so bravely contended for four long years of blood and carnage.

The earliest dawn of the following morning, Sunday, 9 April, found us drawn up in battle line on the memorable and historic field of Appomattox, ready to take a part in the last contest to be made by the Army of Northern Virginia. In his last gage of battle the few surviving war-scarred veterans moved forward with the same steady step and undaunted purpose to win which had characterized the army in the day of its strength on fields of brilliant victory The Federals are driven back, but soon we reach a point where they no longer present the appearance of battle lines, but woods and fields were full as it were. The advance is stopped. Physical valor and human endurance can go no further. The last act in the tragic drama is closed. The rattle of musketry and the roar of artillery cease. The curtain drops. The Army of Northern Virginia has surrendered.

In the preparation of this sketch, the writer desires to acknowledge his indebtedness for aid rendered by Mr. M. A. Allen, of Richmond, Va., who was a faithful and gallant

soldier of the regiment, and at the same time to express his heartfelt regret at his inability to render to many officers and soldiers of the regiment the special reference due for faithful service and gallant deeds so valiantly displayed on scores of battlefields, for memory fails now to recite their many deeds of chivalric courage and invincible endurance.

Here in our home State the Fifty-ninth (Fourth Cavalry) took part in the fight at White Hall, near Kinston, and Washington, and after joining the Army of Northern Virginia, was an active participant in the battles of Culpepper Court House, Brandy Station, Upperville, Middleburg, Aldie, Gettysburg, South Mountain, Hagerstown, Jack's Shops, Burgess Mills, Boisseau's, Wilson's Farm and numerous other conflicts, including the engagements along the line of the White Oak road and Five Forks. Thence at the command of the head of the army, taking its place in the line of the memorable retreat, it reached Appomattox with its ranks thinned, yet in good morale and its organization complete, and well sustained its part in the last contests made on that historic retreat.

W P SHAW.

WINTON, N. C.,
9 April, 1901.

SIXTIETH REGIMENT.

1. James M. Ray, Lieut.-Colonel.
2. James T. Weaver, Lieut.-Colonel. (Killed at Columbia, Tenn., December 7, 1864.)
3. Thad Coleman, Lieut.-Colonel.
4. James T. Huff, Major.
5. M. C. Toms, Captain, Co. A.
6. Robert L. Coleman, Captain, A. C. S.
7. John G. Chambers, 1st Lieut., Co. C.

SIXTIETH REGIMENT.

By JAMES M. RAY, Lieutenant Colonel.

The Sixtieth Regiment, North Carolina Infantry, Confederate States Army, more largely representative of Asheville and Buncombe than any other regiment going out from this State, had its nucleus in a battalion of State troops. The organization of said battalion having been authorized by the Governor of North Carolina early in 1862, Dr. Joseph A. McDowell, of Warm Springs, Madison county, a member at that time of the Legislature, was invested with power to raise it. He called to his aid a number of well known gentlemen who raised the companies, and in May, 1862, the organization of said companies into a battalion was temporarily effected, with Dr. Joseph A. McDowell, Major commanding; Edward M. Clayton, Adjutant; Augustus W Patton, Quartermaster, and Robert L. Coleman, Commissary.

The battalion was designated as the Sixth, and was composed of six companies, as follows:

First Company—Hardy's Light Artillery, made up in Asheville and near vicinity; Wash M. Hardy, Captain; Harry Deaver, First Lieutenant; Pleas. Israel, Second Lieutenant; J Thomas Weaver, Junior Second Lieutenant.

Second Company—McDowell's Madison county company; Joseph A. McDowell, Captain; Belton Ducket, First Lieutenant; B. F Patton, Second Lieutenant; W P Cook, Junior Second Lieutenant.

Third Company—Reynold's company, made up in Asheville and vicinity; F S. H. Reynolds, Captain; Thomas W Patton, First Lieutenant; John Gregg Chambers, Second Lieutenant; Thomas H. Riddle, Junior Second Lieutenant.

Fourth Company—McDowell's Buncombe company; Wm. W McDowell, Captain; Thomas J. Candler, First Lieu-

tenant (taking the place of his brother, Wm. G., resigning on account of his father's death); Samuel C Wright, Second Lieutenant; J B. Hyatt, Junior Second Lieutenant.

FIFTH COMPANY—West's company, composed largely of Haw creek and Swannanoa river men; W. Riley West, Captain; Elic West, First Lieutenant; Dr. J. S. T. Baird, Second Lieutenant; John Sales, Junior Second Lieutenant.

SIXTH COMPANY—Stevens' company (this company was made up by James M. Ray and Goodson M. Roberts, but both declined the Captaincy and recommended Dr. Stevens, who was elected; it was composed principally of Turkey creek, Flat creek and Reems creek men); Dr. J M. Stevens, Captain; James M. Ray, First Lieutenant; Goodson M. Roberts, Second Lieutenant; John H. Reynolds, Junior Second Lieutenant.

The first movement of the battalion was a march down the French Broad river, making the first day ten miles, stopping at Alexander's, a noted country hotel and stock stand; thence to Marshall and Warm Springs, going into a camp of instruction, drill, etc., on a beautiful island in the French Broad, a few miles below Warm Springs. Here there were additions to the command of two more companies:

Fletcher's, of Henderson county—Charles M. Fletcher, Captain; Rufus Downing, First Lieutenant; Thomas Shipman, Second Lieutenant; James Brittain, Junior Second Lieutenant.

Huff's company, of East Tennessee, from vicinity of Big creek, Cocke county, Jas. T. Huff, Captain; James Nelson, First Lieutenant; M. M. Jones, Second Lieutenant; W R. Stokely, Junior Second Lieutenant. James Nelson died at Murfreesboro and Lieutenant Stokely resigned. They were succeeded by Leonard C Huff and Royal Brooks.

In the organization of battalion and the promotion of Captain McDowell to Major, First Lieutenant Belton Duckett became Captain, Second Lieutenant B. F Patton was made First Lieutenant, Riley Chambers Second Lieutenant, and Robert M. Clayton Junior Second Lieutenant. This addition of two companies, making eight, entitled the battalion

to two field officers, Lieutenant-Colonel and Major. Major McDowell was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel and First Lieutenant Harry Deaver, of Hardy's company, was chosen Major, the vacancy in his company being filled by the promotion of Junior Second Lieutenant J Thomas Weaver to the First Lieutenancy and the election of Marion C. Toms Junior Second Lieutenant.

Captain J M. Stevens being assigned to duty as Assistant Surgeon, First Lieutenant James M. Ray was elected to the Captaincy made vacant by his resignation; Second Lieutenant Goodson M. Roberts was made First Lieutenant; Junior Second Lieutenant John H. Reynolds was made Second, and Ervin West was elected Junior Second Lieutenant.

After a stay of two or three months on the island, the battalion was by the Governor, through General E. Kirby Smith, having headquarters then in Knoxville, Tenn., tendered to the Confederate Government, was accepted and ordered to Greenville, Tenn., to guard certain stores, railroads and railroad bridges while Bragg was on his Kentucky campaign.

Very soon after reaching Greenville it was decided to change the battalion, by the addition of two companies, to a regiment. Ward's Polk county (N C.) company, J L. Ward, Captain; Lawson B. Davis, First Lieutenant; Eli Jackson, Second Lieutenant; C S. Monroe, Junior Second Lieutenant—coming in, made one of the number, and the other was made by volunteers and details from companies unnecessarily large. This was officered by the election of Lieutenant G. M. Roberts as Captain; McGruder (W R.) Alexander, First Lieutenant; Josiah M. Jones, Second Lieutenant; S. P Luther, Junior Second Lieutenant.

These additions making ten companies, the complement for a regiment, another field officer became necessary. Lieutenant-Colonel McDowell was promoted to full Colonel; Major Deaver was made Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Wm. W McDowell was chosen Major. The vacancy made in his company by the promotion of the latter was filled by the advancement of First Lieutenant Thomas J Candler to Captain, Second Lieutenant Sam. C. Wright to First, Junior

Second Lieutenant J. B. Hyatt to Second, and the election of J M. Cole to the Junior Second Lieutenancy

By the promotion and transfer of First Lieutenant Roberts, of Ray's company, Second Lieutenant Reynolds advanced to First, Junior Second Lieutenant West to Second, and Robert White was elected to the vacancy of Junior Second Lieutenant.

The organization of the regiment was further perfected by lettering and giving place in line to the companies. Hardy's company was given first position on the right and lettered A; Duckett's company second position on the right and lettered B; Reynolds' company third position on the right and lettered C; Fletcher's company fourth position on the right and lettered D; Candler's company right centre and lettered E, and made the color company; Ray's company left centre and lettered F; Ward's company second from centre on left and lettered G; Huff's company third from center on left and lettered H; Robert's company second from left wing and lettered I; West's company extreme left wing and lettered K.*

Towards the last of September, or about the first of October, 1862, the regiment was ordered to Murfreesboro, Tenn., and on reaching there encamped to the left of the railroad and very near the city. Here the men were engaged in drilling and guard duties of one sort and another until late in December. For a time the regiment was assigned to Reynold's Brigade, then to Preston's and to John C. Breckinridge's Division. In the latter it continued until after the battle of Chickamauga.

MURFREESBORO.

In the last days of December the regiment broke camp at Murfreesboro and was advanced to meet the Federals under Rosecrans, coming out from Nashville, and meet them it did, on Stone river, a few miles west from Murfreesboro. On

*This was a departure from military regulations which placed the companies in the following order from right to left A, F. D I, C. H E, K, G. B, the object being that when the regiment was divided into 5 divisions, they would be commanded by the 5 senior captains. Besides in this way, A was on the right, B on the left and C in the centre.—ED.

Wednesday, 31 December, 1862, the battle was well on, and the Sixtieth, eager for the fray, having tired of long inactivity, was ordered across the river at a ford on the Nashville pike, the men crossing by wading and jumping from rock to rock, something of a ledge extending quite a distance into the water. On reaching the west side of the river the troops were immediately under fire, and yet they kept alignment and moved forward with the martial tread of veterans, notwithstanding the discouragements met with on every hand, for even while in the ford they were met by the litter corps, carrying to the rear the wounded, the blood running almost in streams from some of the litters. This, and the groans of the poor maimed men, and worse still the woeful tales of the demoralized retreating soldiers who had been engaged and repulsed just before this advance, were not calculated to steady the nerves of men under fire for the first time. Some were indiscreet enough to exclaim that it was "useless to go any further, for all hell couldn't dislodge the blue coats" from their strongly fortified position. The line, however, moved forward until it encountered obstacles which covered the entire front, these obstacles being the Cowan house, a large brick building, with stables, other out-buildings, gardens, lots, etc., all enclosed by cedar picket fences.

The regiment was necessarily thrown into considerable confusion and some of the companies fell back, while others pressed forward under the most terrific fire of musketry and artillery in their front and a most annoying enfilading musketry fire from a cedar grove to the front and left. The advancing companies got around the obstructions mentioned one way and another. Company F, commanded by Captain Ray, struck the obstacles at the garden and finding two or three pickets removed and a pathway through the garden, he threw his men in single file and, with three of the color guards belonging to Company E, J. L. Morgan, from Hominy creek, bearing the flag, marched through the garden and emerged into a cotten field to find themselves alone and under the most galling fire.

The men were ordered "down," the only command known in tactics appropriate to the occasion. Here they hugged the

ground for a few minutes, when away to the left it was seen a charge was being made upon the cedar grove that was then giving the most destructive fire, when the command "Up, left oblique, double-quick, charge!" was given and the company soon reached and formed on this attacking force, which proved a part of our own brigade, containing some of our companies that had passed around to the left of the obstacles, breaking the line and then had come forward. Of these were Company E, commanded by Lieutenant Hyatt; Company H, commanded by Captain Huff, and Company K, commanded by Captain West, other companies of the regiment being engaged further up the line.

The Federals were in strong force in the cedars and were well protected by uplifting ledges of limestone rock and the larger cedars, but the charging Confederates had reached a point that there was less danger, possibly, in going forward than remaining standing, or than in retreating. Having just crossed the open field and reached the edge of the cedars, to stop short was to be shot down, having no protection whatever, and to retreat over the open, exposed ground even worse, for in this they would receive the fire not only from the small arms, but make themselves targets for the heavily masked batteries on an eminence near the river.

To go forward seemed the only alternative and to this the Federals offered a stubborn resistance, encouraged by having repelled former charges to dislodge them. They fought with a heroism only excelled by the advancing Confederates. At a critical moment in the struggle, when the lines were seesawing and it seemed questionable which was to prove the victor, General Preston, with the gallantry of a true Kentuckian, seized the colors of one of his regiments and, sinking deep his spurs into the sides of his noble horse, cried out, in tones sounding above the roar and crash of the battle, "Follow me, my brave men!"

The act and the words were electrical, and, with a shout that will go down the ages as the "southern rebel yell," the men sprang forward as if but freshly reinforced, and the Federals were forced to fall back, though in justice to them it must be said, foot by foot, contending most stubbornly over

every inch of the ground. They were, however, finally forced to give up the stronghold, and the "boys in gray" slept that memorable night in the cedars, upon the bloody ground, in the midst of heaps upon heaps of dead men. It was actually "a sleep with the dead," for they were in arm's length that night of almost every man. The horror of it was not felt in its ghastly hideousness until the morning dawned, when the fatigue and excitement incident to the battle had worn away. Ever to be remembered will be that morning of 1 January, 1863, by the participants in that battle.

Just at the moment of General Preston's seizing the flag the Federal batteries, as if to counteract his move, sent crashing into the ranks a most terrific fire of grape and canister, taking off the head of one of the general's staff officers and killing and wounding many others of the brave band that surrounded him. Here Lieutenant-Colonel Harry Deaver, of the Sixtieth, was dashed to the ground by his frantic horse and so stunned that Captain Ray, in front of whose command the accident occurred, sent Merritt Stevens, a stalwart man, to carry him from the field. Colonel Deaver, brave, gallant fellow, was never after able to do a day's service, having been an invalid really for months before the battle.

At nightfall the tragic scene described had a respite, at least as to the small arms; the artillery never holding up during the night. At the order to "halt, cease firing, lie down," General Preston slowly rode down the line, having something commendatory to say to each command. On reaching the Sixtieth he asked: "What command?" On being answered, "A portion of the Sixtieth North Carolina," he said: "This is your first battle of any consequence, I believe. Indeed you Tar Heels have done well. I must say you advanced further than I intended you should, but I thought I would see how far you would go. Now, a little later, if any of you see fit to venture out and gather up abandoned guns, I will make honorable mention of it. It will be attended with some danger and I thus make it voluntary. Now, take your rest as best you can, but whatever you do, build no fires and make no noise which will indicate your posi-

tion to the enemy, for they have the range of all these points and will shell you out."

In response to the request to gather in abandoned guns, William Hutson, from the vicinity of Shufordsville, a member of Ray's company, brought off the field thirty-five, more than enough to arm his company, after its depletion by the killed and wounded in the battle through which it had just passed. This man Hutson was conspicuous for his cool bravery under fire. The daring fellow succumbed, however, to disease and died a few months later in the hospital at Tullahoma.

On New Year's day the regiment was comparatively inactive. The next day, 2 January, 1863, it, together with the balance of the division, was ordered to recross the river and at 4 o'clock in the afternoon went into that ever to be remembered "Breckinridge's Friday evening charge. Rosecrans had massed a heavy force in a skirt of timber on the east bank of the river, under the shadow of his "batteries of an hundred guns," and Bragg ordered Breckenridge with his division to dislodge them. To do so he was forced to cross an open field more than a quarter of a mile in width, with the enemy lying stretched upon the ground in the edge of the woods with deadly aim on the advancing line.

To say that the fire was terrific but mildly expresses it. How any escaped has ever been a matter of wonder. Nothing but a Divine Providence could carry men through such an ordeal. About half way into the field the Sergeant-Major of the Sixtieth, young Stanhope Erwin, from Burke county, was killed; an early martyr in his country's cause, a noble, gallant boy, not out of his teens.

Here, as on Wednesday, the contest was a stubborn one, the Federals seemingly determined at all hazards to hold their position under the protecting care of their heavy artillery, while the Confederates were equally as determined that they should not, and on they surged, little recking the thinning of their ranks, or the disadvantages that they fully recognized they were laboring under. Harder and harder they pressed, driving, at first it seemed, the opposing line inch by inch, finally moving it more easily at last to the river, into and

across it. Soon they rallied and came forward again to find Breckinridge's sturdy men as immovable, by any confronting demonstrations, as the great oaks about them.

An unexpected flank movement, however, accomplished by crossing a force up the river and climbing a precipitous bluff, made necessary by reason of inadequate numbers to meet both lines, a falling back. This, while not as orderly as might have been wished, was without panic and Patton Anderson's Brigade had no part in protecting Breckinridge's men from annihilation, as was falsely reported and strongly intimated, at least, in General Bragg's official report, his troops not coming up until darkness closed the action.

This Friday's battle has always seemed a most useless one, and one too showing most inefficient generalship on the part of General Bragg. Without a simultaneous move on the part of the army on the west side of the river against the enemy's strongly fortified position, the attempt to do more than Breckinridge did was one of the impossibilities, as any one at all versed in military affairs could readily have foreseen.

Saturday, following the grand work of a few men the day before, was spent in marching and countermarching, through an almost incessant rainstorm, the whole appearing to be purposeless. Later in the day, or rather at night, the retreat of the entire army commenced; indeed, it might be said both armies, for there can be no doubt that the Federals had determined to fall back and that both armies were retreating at the same time, a case several times repeated in subsequent battles by reason of our generals not following up their victories.

The losses of the Sixtieth in the two battles may be summed up as follows:

In Company A, Lieutenant Weaver commanding: Sergeant-Major Stanhope Erwin, killed; Sergeants M. C. Toms, D. H. Waggoner and D. W Owen, wounded; Captain J. T. Garison, wounded; Privates J E. James, Robert Paris, H. N Bridgers, wounded, and J L. Alexander missing.

Company B, Captain Duckett commanding: Sergeant J

A. Hipps, missing; Privates Wm. Shetley, killed; Charles Stokely, W R. Cook, seriously wounded; James Woody Elkanah Hicks, John Shetly, John E. Waddell, Wm. Plemmons and B. F Lawson, slightly wounded.

Company C, Captain Reynolds commanding: Wednesday, Lieutenant Alexander; Friday, Sergeant W A. McBrayer, wounded; Privates J. W Dillingham, A. W Searcy, W S. Penland, W G. Dillingham, Jackson Whitlock, wounded.

Company D, Lieutenant Shipman commanding: Privates Noah Hudson and F J. Israel wounded.

Company E, Lieutenant Hyatt commanding: Wednesday, Lieutenant Wright; Friday, Lieutenant Hyatt, wounded; Sergeants W W Slate and T. J Harkins, wounded; Corporal W P Green, wounded; Privates E. G. Howell, Thomas Brookshire and John Morgan, wounded.

Company F, Captain Ray commanding: Privates M. Foster, J. Foster, J Wilson, F. R. Wilson, N. Hudson, James H. Tweed, Wm. White, J. H. Penland, D. L. Mann, Solomon Frisby, wounded; F. M. Parham and Wm. Pritchett, missing.

Company G, Captain Ward commanding: Privates Leander Peck, Alexander Edwards, J. B. Swain, M. M. Edwards, Davidson Edwards, Wm. Pegg, wounded; George Ellison, W P Caruth and James Wilson, missing.

Company H, Captain Huff commanding: Lieutenant W M. Jones and Sergeant C. C. Jones, wounded; Privates W H. Headrick, Nicholas Ellison, George Marrow, W P Moore, G. W Manstook and Corporal Willie Chapman, wounded.

Company I, Captain Roberts commanding: Corporal Wilson and Privates R. Gray and Peter Gray, wounded; Privates Wm. S. Alexander and Alfred Fisher, missing.

Company K, Captain West commanding: J. G. Ledbetter, killed; Privates Moses Hall, R. W Alexander, M. A. Roberson, Ephraim Glass, J. W Clark, W R. Bartlett, A. L. Bird, S. P Young, Jonathan Allison, D. M. Wells, J. A. Clark, wounded, and M. C. Gossett and Thomas H. Wilson, missing.

Breckinridge's Division, of which the Sixtieth was a part,

fell back to Tullahoma and went into winter quarters. The weather following was of the meanest—raining, sleeting and snowing, and slush and mud seemed to be the normal condition of things in that dreary and desolate region. The suffering was great. The men sickened and many died, both of officers and privates, Quartermaster-Captain Augustus W Patton among the former, entailing a loss irreparable to the regiment, he being a most efficient officer and the highest type of a man in every way.

CHANGES IN OFFICERS.

Here, too, commenced an investigation of the conduct of certain officers and companies in the fights in front of Murfreesboro, and while most, if not all, were from the peculiar state of things not greatly censurable for any neglect of duty, a pressure was brought to bear on them and several resignations were tendered, and quite a revolution was wrought in the officials; an entire change in the field officers and many changes in company officers. Captain Hardy, of Company A, was made Colonel and Captain Ray, of Company F, Lieutenant-Colonel. The position of Major for some reason, was left vacant. The promotion of Captain Hardy making a vacancy in his company (A), First Lieutenant Weaver was promoted to Captain, the Second Lieutenant and Junior Second Lieutenants advancing respectively, and John W Lindsay was elected to the vacancy of Junior Second Lieutenant. The vacancy of Captain in Company F, caused by the promotion of Captain Ray, was not filled, but First Lieutenant Reynolds allowed to command. Captain Belton Duckett, of Company B, resigning, First Lieutenant B. F. Patton was advanced to the Captaincy; the Second and Junior Second Lieutenants advanced respectively, and the vacancy of Junior Second Lieutenant was not filled. Captain F. S. H. Reynolds, of Company C, resigning, First Lieutenant Thomas W Patton was promoted to Captain, and Second and Junior Second Lieutenants advanced respectively. Samuel W Davidson was elected Junior Second Lieutenant. After the death of Lieutenant Riddle, Lieutenant Davidson advanced to Second and Henry K. Rhea elected to the vacancy of

Junior Second Lieutenant. Captain Fletcher, of Company D, and his Lieutenants leaving the company, Lieutenant John Gregg Chambers, of Company C, was temporarily put in command. Later H. Clay Lorance was appointed First Lieutenant, James M. Ford Second, and Robert C. Evans Junior Second Lieutenants. Lieutenant Lorance taking command, relieved Lieutenant Chambers, who returned to his company on 17 November, 1863, Jesse R. Gilliland was appointed Captain and commanded the company until wounded in front of Atlanta, from which he never recovered, Lieutenant Lorance again taking command. Captain West of Company K, resigning, Adjutant E. M. Clayton was made Captain and William T. White elected Junior Second Lieutenant.

The vacancy of Adjutant by the promotion of E. M. Clayton, was filled by the appointment of Orville Ewing, Jr., of Nashville, Tenn. The position of Sergeant-Major made vacant by the killing of Stanhope Erwin, was filled by the appointment of Frank M. Miller. Captain G. M. Roberts, of company I resigning, First Lieutenant W R. Alexander was promoted to the Captaincy, the Second and Junior Second Lieutenants advanced respectively, and the Junior Second Lieutenancy was not filled.

Dr. J M. Stevens resigning as Surgeon, Dr. Griffin, of Louisville, Ky., was assigned to duty in his stead, assisted by Lieutenant Robert Cooper. Dr. Griffin was superseded by Dr. Mackay about the time the regiment left for Mississippi. The latter was a surgeon of considerable note, having served quite a time in the English army with the Scottish Highlanders before coming to America. Phifer Erwin was made Quartermaster in place of W Augustus Patton, deceased, B. J. Alexander being retained as Quartermaster-Sergeant.

In the early spring of 1863 the regiment, as also the division, broke camp at Tullahoma and moved to Wartrace. It was then in Preston's Brigade, Breckinridge's Division, Hardee's Corps. In early summer it went to Fairfield, and later was ordered to Jackson, Miss. On reaching there it went into camp upon the banks of Pearl river, here remaining until about 1 July, Joseph E. Johnston in the

meantime hurriedly getting together transportation for a movement on Vicksburg to relieve Pemberton, who was being besieged by General Grant. Four days' marching via Canton, under the broiling sun of that, then, almost tropical clime in dust shoemouth deep, drinking water from any place it could be found, and this, much of the time, being stagnant, muddy, stockponds and even from hog-wallows along the line of march, the command reached the waters of the Big Black on the night of 4 July, the commander of the Sixtieth, Lieutenant-Colonel Ray, being the general field officer of the day. About midnight the word passed from brigade to brigade and from regiment to regiment that Vicksburg had capitulated. A retrograde movement was at once ordered and the retreat commenced and continued until Jackson was reached. The troops fared better on the retreat than on the advance, so far as water was concerned, for the wells and cisterns along the route that had been stripped of buckets and drawing arrangements by the owners had been replaced after the passage of the troops and, of course, not anticipating so speedy a return, they were found in place and there was comparatively little suffering for water. The citizens of Canton, it must be said, however, did everything possible for the comfort of the soldiers, both advancing and retreating, lining the sidewalks with buckets and pitchers of water.

Johnston made a stand at Jackson and set himself in battle array Very soon he was confronted by the Federals in force and the contest commenced, first skirmishing along various parts of the line. Finally, on 16 July, a strong demonstration was made upon that part where the Sixtieth had position and for a time the battle was fierce, but the defense was stronger than the enemy seemed to have anticipated, the retreat was sounded and the attacking forces withdrew.

The Sixtieth's casualties were but slight, a few men only being wounded. Among that number was James Parker, of Company E, whose wound necessitated the amputation of one arm. This was done most skilfully by Dr. McKay, surgeon of the regiment.

General Johnston did not see fit to offer resistance for any considerable time to the occupancy of the city and withdrew

his forces, the Sixtieth going to Brandon and encamping on a ridge not a great way from the station, in the track of a cyclone that had passed through that section of the country some time before, and hence the name "Camp Hurricane," by which the rendezvous was known. Here Colonel Hardy, Lieutenant-Colonel Ray and several officers of the line passed their examinations for promotion, although they had been on duty in their respective assignments, most of them, from the time of leaving Fairfield, Tenn. Lieutenant-Colonel Ray commanding the regiment on the advance from Jackson to Big Black and on the retreat as well.

It was here, too, that Dr. McKay, by his extra rigid regular army discipline, incurred anew the anger of many of the regiment, who claimed that they were out to fight tyranny in every form, and while engaged fighting back an invading army, they would at the same time resist being domineered by, as they claimed, a military martinet in the person of the regimental surgeon. They commenced the exhibition of their determination to get rid of the doctor by a night attack upon him as he swung in his hammock in his marquee, cutting down the hammock and then casting some stones, more to frighten, possibly, than to hurt, for they were not really bad men. The doctor appealed to Lieutenant-Colonel Ray, again in command of the regiment, for redress and reported an entire company as being the offenders, but as he could name none, either as leaders or participants, no action could well be taken. Colonel Ray, esteeming him for his skill in surgery and his general learning, was anxious to save him any injury, or any repeated indignity and begged the doctor to allow him to effect his transfer, which was done and old Dr. Straight, a Mississippian, was put in his place, a most lovable character, who soon endeared himself to the men very greatly

In September Breckinridge was ordered to Georgia to reinforce General Bragg, who was again to join issue with General Rosecrans. It so happened that some of the higher officers being away on leave, and others desiring to go via Mobile, Ala., the command of the brigade devolved upon Lieutenant-Colonel Ray, who had it in charge until reaching the point of destination.

CHICKAMAUGA.

On reaching Chickamauga (the Indian name "Chickamauga" means river of death) the two armies were found in battle array and skirmishing more or less severe occurred from day to day, commencing on about the 10th. The Sixtieth had position on the left of the army and upon that part of the field in which vicinity were Glass' and Lee and Gordon's flouring mills.

The line of battle was constantly undergoing changes, not very considerable until the 18th and 19th. Then the changes were radical, the left, or a great part of it, embracing the Sixtieth, was moved to the extreme right wing. On the 18th everything indicated fighting and a regular engagement was unquestionably at hand. The ominous clouds of war hung like a pall over the army; the atmosphere was full of it; the warrior, as well as the war horse, could "smell it from afar." Curses were changed to prayers, cards in the pockets were replaced by Testaments and a quiet determination took the place of jests and ribaldry.

Sure enough on Saturday, the 19th, the struggle began in earnest. As the day waned the contest became hotter and hotter, and at dark it seemed only just begun, and raged furiously until way into the night. When the ranks could no longer see each other they would fire at the flash and report of their opponents' guns. The Sixtieth, up to this time, had not been hotly engaged. The night of the 19th it marched hour upon hour, crossing the river at Alexander's bridge, when it seemed almost time for cock crow, if one had dared to be so bold in hearing of men hungry enough to have eaten him, feathers and all! Tired and worn, a final halt was called and the men threw themselves upon the ground and in almost a twinkling were wrapped in sound slumber, such as is known only to soldiers. But O! of such short duration was that sleep. Not waiting until day dawn, the long roll sounded—a sound that like the rattlesnake's warning notes, never failed to put all hearers on the alert. Hastily every man, knowing intuitively what the call boded, was up in busy preparation, and at daybreak was in line ready for any fate.

Written unmistakably in almost every face was "we go to victory or death." Alas! all to victory, many to death.

Lieutenant-Colonel Ray was in command, and being called upon for a speech, the commanding officers of other regiments on the right and left, already haranguing their men, he said: "I hardly think it just the time for a speech. Later it may be necessary. We know full well what is before us. I am no more anxious for the conflict than the rest of you, but I mean to do my full duty and have confidence that you will do the same."

Up to near this time, probably within two days, Captain Candler, senior Captain, had been acting Lieutenant-Colonel, as has been stated, the regiment having no Major, but upon an order from General Breckinridge to Acting Colonel Ray to send a mounted officer to the rear to see what was the trouble that rations for three days had not been sent forward, he detailed Captain Candler for this work and had Captain J T. Weaver assigned to duty as second in command, and the regiment commenced the day's work so officered, young George Leavel, of Mississippi, acting as voluntary aid to Lieutenant-Colonel Ray. At this battle the Sixtieth was in Stovall's Brigade, Breckinridge's Division, D. H. Hill's Corps.

Notwithstanding the early preparations, it was near 9 o'clock before the troops were actually engaged. The skirmishers at once uncovered the Federal line of battle and the work began, the Confederates continually advancing, at many points, however, meeting strong resistance. The casualties for a time were inconsiderable. Lieutenant Wm. White and Sergeant J L. Cathey were among the first seriously wounded, both losing a leg, Lieutenant White's proving fatal. These were both men of distinguished bravery.

It was not infrequent that ludicrous and laughable scenes came up even during the battles. In the first charge made here, the men had been strongly admonished against throwing away shots and ordered to hold their fire until ordered by commanding officers. A Federal sharpshooter had from some cause fallen behind his comrades as they had been driven back and the fellow was running for dear life diagonally

across the front of the Sixtieth. When first seen he was probably 250 yards away. Redden James a Sergeant in Company F, asked permission to fire at him. It being given, he turned loose his carbine, whereupon the fleeing soldier tumbled, but in a moment was up and off again. Another shot was fired at him and again he fell, but as quickly as before he was up and on the run. Then the third man fired and another tumbling down. By this time the line had reached him and when ordered up, it was found the fellow had not been touched, but had adopted this ruse, as he said, to prevent a volley being fired at him, and hoping every little run to pass from the front of the charging line.

The direction of advancing columns up to about 11 o'clock had been a little west of south, but reaching the Lafayette pike, leading out from Chattanooga, near where stood Jones' and McDonald's houses, the direction was changed due south, at least as to Stoval's Brigade, of which the Sixtieth was a part. Soon after this charge came the tug of war. As the Federal line was driven back it seemed to be strengthened in numbers, probably by reinforcements or the falling back on reserves, and to grow in desperation, and the advance of the Confederates as the sun approached the meridian became more and more difficult. From 11 until 12 o'clock it was a life and death struggle.

The Federal line of battle was of an unheard of shape, running east and west through Kelley's field, then bending round to due north and extending probably 500 yards, bending around again in a westward direction, some distance parallel to the line through Kelley's field, but stopping short before reaching Lafayette pike, or touching the line west of said pike, thus leaving an opening or gap in their line. And it was here the Sixtieth got in its nice work; passing the right of this west line, it forced its way into this gap, receiving an enfilading fire for a short time in passing said line, and drove the opposing forces back into Kelley's field into their breastworks.

FARTHEST TO THE FRONT AT CHICKAMAUGA.

By forcing their way into this gap the gallant men of the Sixtieth enabled the State and United States commissoners, in reviewing the battlefield in order to locate the exact position of the various commands, to say:

"This point [marked by a tablet] reached by the Sixtieth North Carolina Regiment of Infantry, at noon, on Sunday 20 September, 1863, was *the farthest obtained by any Confederate troops in this famous charge.*"

The casualties in the last hour of this charge were heavy. Lieutenant-Colonel Ray was severely wounded and forced to leave the field, after calling Acting Lieutenant-Colonel Weaver, notifying him of his being disabled, and turning over to him the command of the regiment. The regiment in its last action here was confronted by the Second Minnesota, which reported a loss of 33 per cent. of its members, fighting, too, a part of the time, behind breastworks. Indicating somewhat further the severity of the struggle here, three generals were killed almost in a stone's throw of the position of the Sixtieth in Kelley's field—Generals Helm and Deshler, of the Confederates, and General King, of the Federals.

Soon after Acting Lieutenant-Colonel Weaver took command of the regiment the line was withdrawn and reformed north and somewhat west of Kelley's field and held inactive for a time, then advanced upon another part of the Federal line, and near sundown was drawn up in support of Forrest's cavalry. It was here held in reserve a short time, and then ordered into the charge being made on the enemy's breastworks, which were taken most gallantly, the Federals being driven pell-mell, the Confederates scarcely halting at the breastworks, but pursuing the panic-stricken, retreating forces in the direction of Chattanooga. And so ended the day's work, and with similar work on other parts of the battlefield, the great and bloody battle of Chickamauga.

The hurried and brief reports of commanding officers make it absolutely impossible to give the casualties of the Sixtieth in these different engagements, but they were great, some of the companies having only five or six men to answer to their

names at roll call on the night of the 20th. Among the officers wounded, not already mentioned, were Lieutenant John H. Reynolds, seriously, losing an arm; Lieutenants Leonard Huff and Sam W Davidson and Captain W R. Alexander, slightly Of the color guard, every man save one, George Lindsey, was killed or wounded. The bearer of the flag, Sergeant Bailey, though mortally wounded, called Sergeant Lindsey to him, told him he was shot, showed him the wound and said: "I turn over to your keeping the colors."

Here again is another instance of great victory, at an expense of almost a deluge of the best blood of the country and apparently nothing achieved. The failure to press Rosecrans while on the run and take Chattanooga, and thus reclaim a large part of Tennessee, was a blunder that could not be understood by the rank and file of the army and was never satisfactorily explained. Had this been done, and none doubted the possibility of it, the Federals could never have boasted of victories at Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge, for those battles would never have taken place.

General Breckinridge, through Lieutenant Clay, of his staff (grandson of Henry Clay) sent expressions of his sympathies to Colonel Ray at field hospital on the morning after the battle on the 20th and was unstinted in his praise of the conduct of the Sixtieth.

MISSIONARY RIDGE.

The following up the retreating Federals, after the hard fighting on the 20th, was very leisurely and in a half-hearted way, giving them time to rally, reorganize and offer battle again, on plans very advantageous to them. The Sixtieth was inactive for a day or two, and then by slow marches took position on Missionary Ridge, overlooking Chattanooga. Here on 25 November it was brought into action, but was so situated as to be able to do but little effective work, having the enemy too far away at the beginning of the conflict to reach them except by plunging shots from the artillery and the longest range guns, and when getting nearer they were almost completely sheltered by the natural curvature of the mountain. On the Federals reaching the top of the bluff, a

sharp engagement took place, but the disparity in numbers was so great the Confederates were forced to retreat, the Sixtieth falling back to Dalton, Ga., and there taking up winter quarters. Owing to the great depletion in the ranks of both the Sixtieth and Fifty-eighth Regiments, the two were consolidated while on Missionary Ridge, the field officers of the Sixtieth kept in command and those of the Fifty-eighth transferred.

The campaign of 1864 opened with a clash between the opposing forces in front of Dalton, the Sixtieth and Fifty-eighth participating in the battle. This resulted in a victory to the Confederates, the Federals again falling back in the direction of Chattanooga. The casualties as to the North Carolinians were slight in this action, save in the killing of Lieutenant Thomas H. Riddle, of Company C, an efficient and popular young officer. This battle was known as "Stoney Ridge." In the spring and summer of 1864, the Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina belonged to A. W Reynolds' Brigade, Stevenson's Division, Hood's Corps. In August, Colonel Wash. M. Hardy, of the Sixtieth, was in command, temporarily, of the Brigade.

FROM DALTON TO ATLANTA.

The Sixtieth returned to Dalton and went into their old quarters. Sergeant-Major Frank Miller was here made Second Lieutenant in Company A, Thomas F Davidson was made Junior Second Lieutenant to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Lieutenant Reynolds, and Calvin Shackelford to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Lieut. Wm. T. White. Here it remained until the beginning of what is known in history as the "Johnston-Sherman Atlanta campaign." This was a succession of battles and retreats upon the part of Johnston, inflicting heavy losses upon Sherman. By his peculiar tactics, of selecting his positions and drawing Sherman back on him, he was seriously crippling him and yet apparently giving him victories by his retreating and the other advancing. 'Twas said in this campaign that from first to last Johnston disabled and killed of Sherman's army in numbers aggregating nearly 50,000, a force almost equal to

that with which he fought him. The Sixtieth was frequently engaged in this campaign, a dozen or more times, the most important battles being at Resaca, Cassville, New Hope Church, Kennesaw Mountain, Jonesboro and Atlanta, and never to its discredit. Its losses were considerable, particularly in wounded, many of the very best officers and men being disabled. Specially deserving mention are Captains Ed. M. Clayton and Jesse R. Gilliland, Lieutenants Frank M. Miller and Robert Cooper.

CHANGE OF GENERALS.

The War Department at Richmond, under influences, not creditable to either side, assumed to dictate to Joseph E. Johnston as to the further conducting of this "Atlanta Campaign," and this greatest of strategists, declining to be so handicapped, allowed himself to be superseded and the Confederate Government committed the greatest blunder of its short life in bringing about such a condition of things. Some of the older generals who were asked to take command, saw the unwisdom of a change at that particular crisis, and declining to become a party to it, it was left to the dashing and daring Texan, General John B. Hood, to take charge of that gallant body of men that almost worshipped their great displaced leader. A sad day indeed was it, in and around Atlanta, when the change in commanders was made known. No half dozen defeats in battle could have had so depressing an effect upon the troops. In the Federal ranks the contrary feeling prevailed; the elation on one side was equal to the depression on the other. General Sherman said: "Now we'll have something to say when and where we fight. Up to this time it has been when and where Mr. Johnston said."

Of course General Hood had to carry out the behests of the war department, with, it was presumed, General Bragg as adviser, and an entire change in plans was brought about, he taking the offensive and making desperate onslaughts upon Sherman's lines, and while victorious in a way, and fully sustaining his well earned reputation as a daring, successful fighter, they were at such a sacrifice of his men, as to make suicidal a continuance of it and hence it was determined to

adopt other tactics. So the army swung around, recrossed the Chattahoochee river and opened the way to an almost uninterrupted march of Sherman to the sea; while, in the short-sighted policy of the powers at Richmond, the movement was supposed to cut their supplies from Nashville, little thinking of the communications Sherman was opening up ahead of him.

THE MARCH ON NASHVILLE.

Passing through North Georgia, North Alabama, crossing the Tennessee river at Florence, where a small force of Federals offered slight resistance, but were easily overcome by the troops of which the Sixtieth was a part, the march was continued into and through a section of the State very appropriately called "The Wilderness," where it might have been justly said, in the language of Sheridan, "that a crow in flying over it would have to carry his rations with him." The men subsisted principally upon scant supplies of "corn dodger" and "sorghum molasses."

The transition from this barren land into that fertile region known as the Blue Grass section of middle Tennessee, can hardly be imagined. Here, at Columbia, on Duck river, another body of Federals was encountered, and a sharp little engagement took place, the Sixtieth suffering somewhat, particularly in the loss of a brave young officer, Lieutenant Moreno, who had been assigned to duty with the regiment, having refugeed a short time before from Pensacola, Fla.

FRANKLIN.

Instead of pressing the retreating foe and forcing a battle upon the ground where each contestant would have been on an equal footing, or, what would have been better, outflanking him, a thing seeming altogether practicable, he was allowed, uninterruptedly it might be said, to fall back on Franklin and ample time given to strongly fortify. Then when the Federals, it might be presumed, said, "Now we are ready, you may advance!" the Confederates, never counting odds, or reckoning obstacles, did advance. But what a scene of blood and carnage. The forces were more nearly

equal as to numbers than in most battles of the war, the Confederates having 18,000 to 20,000, the Federals 22,000 to 24,000. But by reason of the one being so thoroughly entrenched and the other compelled to advance through broad, open fields, the odds actually might be said, not unreasonably either, to have been about five to one. The battle was a most terrific one, the Confederates fighting with a determination scarcely ever equalled, even by themselves. Privates and officers alike went down in the melee, like trees in the sweep of a tornado. The casualties were indeed appalling, especially so on the Confederate side. Six general officers were killed and six wounded. Major-General John Adams of Stewart's Corps, and that indomitable old war horse of the same rank, Pat. Cleburne, went down in death, with Brigadier-Generals Granberry, Carter, Gist and Strahl. Thirteen regimental commanders were killed and thirty-two wounded. Many other field and line officers were killed and wounded, while about 6,000 of the rank and file were left dead or disabled upon the field, on the banks of, and in, the ditches that they were so gallantly charging. The Federal losses were estimated at one-half or two-thirds less, and yet it was counted a Confederate victory, because the Federals were driven from their strongholds and retired upon Nashville. The fewer of such victories the better for the victors, and that the battle of Franklin should ever have been fought was a mistake and a misfortune that no one, at all conversant with the facts, will for a moment question.

THE RETREAT FROM NASHVILLE.

The advance was then upon Nashville, the Sixtieth having a position from which the capital city could be seen, but into which it was never permitted to enter. In the engagement in front of Nashville the Confederates were defeated and commenced a retreat that with slight interruptions ended only in the surrender of the army in North Carolina. The Sixtieth, with a certain part of the troops, fell back on Murfreesboro, and while in line of battle here, with no active engagement on hand, the daring and gallant Lieutenant-Colonel

Thomas Weaver, in command of the regiment, was the target of a sharpshooter and instantly killed.

The command then devolved upon James T. Huff, of Cocke county, Tenn., who had some time before been promoted to Major. While the loss of Colonel Weaver was irreparable to the regiment, it was still in good hands, Major Huff having proven himself an efficient officer. The line of retreat was again taken up and again that desolate land of "The Wilderness" was traversed, on through Alabama, Georgia and South Carolina into North Carolina, disembarking at Smithfield, and in time to take a hand in the Bentonville battle of 19, 20 and 21 April, 1865, practically the last battle of the most remarkable war in the annals of history. Many of the Sixtieth had the distinction of having taken part in the first and last battle of the war—Big Bethel and Bentonville.

Quartermaster Phifer Erwin taking sick, Captain M. J. Bearden, former Quartermaster of the Fifty-eighth, took his place; Commissary Sergeant King in charge of commissary stores.

BENTONVILLE.

The casualties in the Sixtieth at Bentonville were not great, fighting principally from rudely constructed breastworks. There were a few slightly wounded, among the number Ed. Reno and J. M. Alexander. The sixtieth was in the brigade commanded by General Joseph B. Palmer. This battle, aside from being the last, was somewhat remarkable in bringing into conspicuous notice the daring and fighting qualities of the boys of the dear southland, the Junior Reserves. They fought with a heroism creditable alike to themselves and their veteran sires. The Buncombe Juniors were in the first battalion, commanded by Major D. T Millard, of Asheville.

The battle of Bentonville was fought by Joseph E. Johnston, the idol of the western army, with less than 20,000 men, the Federals under Sherman numbering between 70,000 and 80,000, and that only a part of his army, yet victory perched upon the banners of the "cross in red." The Sixtieth retreated with the army through Raleigh, thence to Greensboro

and then to Jimtown. The Fifty-eighth and Sixtieth North Carolina on this retreat (which began 10 April) were consolidated and commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Thad. Coleman, and belonged to Brantley's Brigade, D. H. Hill's Division, S. D. Lee's Corps. *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies, Vol. 98, p. 1064.* It was doubtless surrendered as thus organized.

The news of the Army of Northern Virginia, under that grand old leader, Robert E. Lee, having surrendered reaching Joseph E. Johnston, he at once opened negotiations with General Sherman, looking to a closing of the contest between their respective armies, and on 26 April, 1865, the agreement was perfected and the scene sadly closed

The Sixtieth was very fortunate in having a number of the Buncombe Riflemen, known as the Bethel company, to join its ranks, their experience in drill making them efficient drill masters. Many of them were made officers, to-wit.: W W McDowell, Major; Robert L. Coleman, Captain Commissary; T W Patton, B. F. Patton and Marion Thomas, Captains of the line; Robert M. Clayton, John T. Sales, Thomas J. Shipman, H. Clay Lorance and Sam. W Davidson, Lieutenants, and Ed. M. Clayton, Adjutant and later Captain. Others to the number of twelve or fourteen were non-commissioned officers and privates.

Three Buncombe families furnished fifteen men to this regiment; six Stevenses, five Sales and four Davidsons, and, singular to state, while several of them were wounded, none were killed and but one of the number has since died.

Dock V Shope, of Swannanoa, was Orderly Sergeant from the beginning to the ending, and George Alexander, of the same section, Commissary Sergeant for the whole time, almost unparalleled instances, and, singularly enough, both were of the same company—Company I, G. M. Roberts', later W R. Alexander's company.

Color Sergeant George Lindsay, who was entrusted with the flag of the regiment by his wounded predecessor on the battlefield of Chickamauga, 20 September, 1863, carried it to the end of the conflict, and on or about 2 May, 1865, at Jim-

town, N. C., was paid his prorata of the silver remaining in the Confederate States treasury, $1.15, and paroled. Spending the 15 cents for luxuries of one sort or another, he retained the $1.00, and still holds, as a precious souvenir, that and his parole.

The records of this regiment, from the time of the moving from Dalton early in 1864, are necessarily imperfect, by reason of the rapid movements and the multiplicity of incidents and events. To bring in more than has been done would so lengthen the narrative as to deter many from reading it and to require quite a volume to hold it.

The writer has labored assiduously to give the history of the regiment as correctly as possible in brief form and submits it to the charitable criticisms of the survivors of the regiment. That there are some errors need not surprise any one. It could not be otherwise in writing without any substantial data, after the lapse of thirty-six years. The worst fault, he feels, is that of omission. He wishes it was practicable to note the heroic deeds of hundreds of the rank and file, some of which would bear no unfavorable comparison with that since famous act of Lieutenant Hobson; but to do this would take illimitable time and space. To mention some and not all would be an invidious distinction.

JAMES M. RAY.

ASHEVILLE, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.

ADDITIONAL SKETCH SIXTIETH REGIMENT

By THOMAS W PATTON, Captain Company C.

The above regiment was organized early in the summer of 1862, in the county of Madison, N. C. Of its ten companies, seven were composed of men from Buncombe, one from Madison, one from Polk, and one from Cocke county, Tennessee.

The Field Officers at organization were Joseph A. McDowell, Colonel; W H. Deaver, Lieutenant-Colonel; and W W McDowell, Major.

As soon as its organization was completed, the regiment was marched to Greenville, Tenn., and thence by rail transported to Murfreesboro, at which place it took part in the famous and hard-fought battles of 31 December to 3 January. With the Army of Tennessee, it retreated to Tullahoma, and there passed the balance of the winter of 1862-'63. At this place it suffered much from sickness, losing many good men.

About 1 May, 1863, it was in Stovall's Brigade, Breckinridge's Division, carried to Mississippi, and encamped near Jackson, on the banks of the Pearl river. Remaining there till 1 July, it marched in direction of Vicksburg, the intention of the General commanding being to attempt the relief of the garrison which had long been closely beleaguered there by General Grant, but on approaching the Federal lines, on 5 July, it was learned that the Confederates had capitulated the day previous, and the relieving forces were hastily marched back to Jackson.

In the fortifications around Jackson a rather severe engagement occurred on Sunday, 12 July. The Federals who had followed from Vicksburg concentrated on Stovall's Brigade and were repulsed with heavy loss, four flags were captured by our brigade. Subsequently, about 15 July, the Confederate forces were withdrawn, Jackson evacuated, and the Sixtieth Regiment for nearly six weeks was encamped at a point midway between Jackson and Meridian, Miss.

About 1 September, 1863, the troops there were carried by rail to Cave Spring, near Rome, Ga. Then began the marching towards Chattanooga, and the 19 September found this regiment on the field of Chicamauga. It took position late at night, and next day experienced its most severe battle, and that which was the most decided victory of any in which the Army of Tennessee ever took part. The loss in the Sixtieth was very great both in officers and men, among the former Lieutenant-Colonel J M. Ray was wounded so severely as to force him to leave the field and for the rest of the day the command devolved upon Captain J. T. Weaver, the ranking of the company officers. The following names were inscribed upon the roll of honor for gallantry in this battle: Second Lieutenant James H. Cole, Company G; Private H. Lowber, Company A; Private John Hinton, Company B; Private Marcellus S. Matthews, Company D; Private Henry Haman, Company H; Sergeant F. P Randle, Company I.

The regiment's next experience was severe skirmishing around the fortifications of Chattanooga, followed by the disastrous battle of Missionary Ridge, from which it retreated to Dalton, and went into quarters for the rest of the winter of 1863-'64.

The campaign of the next summer began early with an engagement some few miles west of Dalton and continued, almost uninterruptedly, a succession of hard fights almost every day, and of wearisome marches by night, until Atlanta was reached, about the end of July. During this period, the Sixtieth performed its full part, and mourned the death of many of its good men. At Atlanta the army was reviewed by President Davis, and shortly thereafter, much to the grief of his soldiers, the beloved General Joseph E. Johnston was relieved of the command, and his place filled by the appointment of General John B. Hood. This officer was distinguished for his bravery, but had not the affection of the army to the degree in which General Johnston enjoyed it.

Under General Hood the army (the Sixtieth being still commanded by Weaver, then Lieutenant-Colonel) marched through Georgia, Alabama, crossed the Tennessee river at

Florence, and penetrated Tennessee. This was done almost without opposition. The enemy not being met to any serious degree until the arrival at Columbia, on the Duck river. Here some resistance was made, but not to amount to very much. On 15 and 16 December, 1864, was the dreadful battle of Franklin. The battle which there occurred, while apparently a Southern victory, was at such terrible cost of life as to completely cripple the army, and to put a stop to further prosecution of the intended invasion of Tennessee. The advance was, however, pushed, till a sight was obtained of the capitol building, but no effort was made to enter Nashville.

There being a Federal force at Murfreesboro, then in rear of the Confederates, a part of the army were detached to meet it, and to destroy the railroad between the two cities; the Sixtieth was included in this detachment; the labor and suffering involved in tearing up the rails and crossties from the frozen ground, without proper tools or appliances, was very great. Arriving near Murfreesboro, the Confederates being then under command of General Forrest, the Federal Garrison brought on an engagement which, with other disastrous results, caused the greatest calamity that had ever befallen the Sixtieth, in the death of its gallant Lieutenant-Colonel, James Thomas Weaver.

From the nature of these sketches, notices of individuals must be restrained to those who formed a part of the very life of each regiment. Realizing the necessity of this restriction, and readily obeying it, I do not hesitate to record the name of

JAMES THOMAS WEAVER,

as not only the one who was indeed the very life of his regiment, but who was as gallant a soldier, as true a man, as devoted a citizen, as was ever produced in North Carolina, which is equivalent to saying that he had no superior in the world, in these qualities.

From Murfreesboro the fearful retreat began, re-crossing the northern portions of the States of Alabama and Georgia, and the Sixtieth was found again facing Sherman at Branchville, S. C., hoping to restrain his march of destruction from

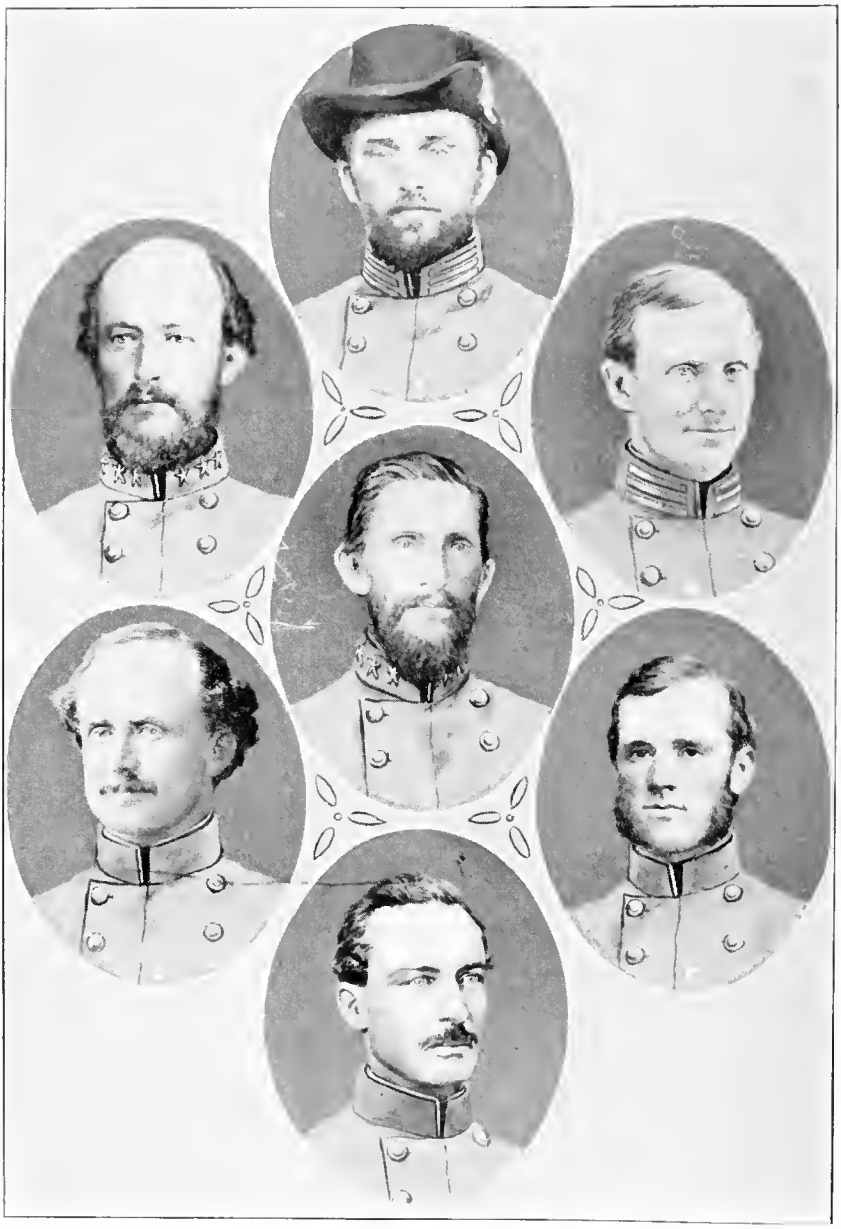
Savannah. With the feeble force at command of the Confederacy this hope, of course, was futile; the small army was easily flanked, and it followed to Columbia, just in time to grieve over its cinders. Thence through Charlotte, Salisbury, Raleigh and Smithfield, Bentonville is reached and the last battle of the war is fought, the Sixtieth participating, and some of its members having the distinction of having taken part in the first, and the last of the Confederacy's battles, that of Great Bethel on 10 June, 1861, and that of Bentonville, 19-21 March, 1865.

Falling back, we passed again through our State's capital 12 April. How sad did Raleigh look that day. Greensboro is reached and Johnston surrenders; with this ended the history of the Sixtieth North Carolina Regiment. While others perhaps may have gained more renown, and we have no intention of denying the right of any to all the honors which can be heaped on them, we insist that no regiment sustained more severe hardships, was more faithful to its recognized duty, to protect the honor of North Carolina than the Sixtieth. From its full ranks of 1,200 men, a bare handful, scarcely 75, remained to lay down their arms. The large majority of the others had given their lives to their State. Surely her citizens, now enjoying peace and prosperity, will not forget to honor the memories of those brave men.

With all ascription of praise and gratitude, as is their due, we will pray, "Let them rest in peace."

THOMAS W PATTON.

ASHEVILLE, N C.,
26 April, 1901.



SIXTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

1. W. S. Devane, Colonel.
2. James D. Radcliffe, Colonel.
3. N. A. Ramsey, Captain, Co. D.
4. John D. Biggs, Captain Co. H.
5. Noah Biggs, Private, Co. H.
6. Richard P. Paddison, Hospital Steward.
7. W. Stedman, Private, Co. D.
8. J. R. Paddison, Private, Co. A. (Private in Supplementary Group, Vol. IV.)

SIXTY-FIRST REGIMENT

By N. A. RAMSEY, Captain Company D.

The Sixty-first Regiment, North Carolina Troops, was organized in Wilmington early in August, 1862, with the following Field and Staff officers:

James D. Radcliffe, Colonel New Hanover county.
Wm. S. Devane, Lieutenant-Colonel, Sampson county.
Henry Harding, Major, Beaufort county.
Wm. S. Anderson, Assistant Quartermaster, New Hanover county.
Oliver P Meares, Commissary, New Hanover county.
Alexander Rives, Surgeon, ——— county.
William W Harris, Assistant Surgeon, New Hanover county.
David Stevens, Sergeant Major, Sampson county.
Jos. J. Lane, Ordnance Sergeant, Wilson county.
Chas. H. King, Quartermaster Sergeant, New Hanover county.
Wm. Blanks, Commissary Sergeant, New Hanover county.
Jno. H. Johnson, Chief Musician, New Hanover county.
Wm. H. Eberstein, Drum Major, New Hanover county.

The various companies had officers and men from first to last as follows:

Company A—Captains, Wm. S. Devane, Jos. B. Underwood, Geo. W Marsh, James H. Robinson, Sampson county. Lieutenants, Geo. W Marsh, Wm. F. Smith, Wm. A. Mathis, Julius M. Chestnut, Francis M. Carroll, Sampson county. Enlisted men, 104.

Company B—Captains, Henry Harding, Wm. M. Stevenson, Beaufort county. Lieutenants, T. H. Satterthwaite,

David F Redditt, Wm. M. Stevenson, D. W Jarvis, Thos. D. Wilkinson, Wm. H. Patrick, Beaufort county Enlisted men, 82.

COMPANY C—Captains, Edward Mallett, S. S. Biddle, Craven county. Lieutenants, S. S. Biddle, Jno. F Guthrie, Thos. O. Jones, Edward F Story, Craven county. Enlisted men, 122.

COMPANY D—Captain, Nathan A. Ramsey, Chatham county. Lieutenants, Wm. S. Ramsey, Jas. B. Ellington, Richard C Cotten, Chatham county Enlisted men, 184.

COMPANY E—Captains, Allen G. Croom, Greene county; Wm. S. Byrd, Lenoir county. Lieutenants, Wm. S. Byrd, S. W Nobles, J Q. Jackson, Chas. T. Croom, Alex. Fields, Jos. E. Kinsey, H. H. Rasberry, Lenoir county. Enlisted men, 119.

COMPANY F—Captains, Andrew J. Moore, New Hanover county; W A. Darden, Greene county. Lieutenants, J. H. Exum, Andrew J Darden, Greene county; John R. Belcher, Jesse D. Barnes, Wilson county Enlisted men, 63.

COMPANY G—Captains, J. F Moore, L. L. Keith, New Hanover county Lieutenants, Stacy VanAmringe, A. D. Lippitt, N. H. Fennell, Daniel Shackelford, John B. Fox, New Hanover county. Enlisted men, 94.

COMPANY H—Captains, John Lanier, William B. Lanier, John D. Biggs, Martin county. Lieutenants, John Manning, John D. Biggs, F A. Rhodes, Henry Williams, Richard W Rufus, H. H. Lanier, Abner Alexander, Martin county. Enlisted men, 133.

COMPANY I—Captains, Aras B. Cox, Ashe county; Wm. T. Choate, Alleghany county. Lieutenants, Isaac C. Higgins, Jno. W Joines, Lowery Grimsley, Cotten Sparks, W H. Joines, Geo. Grimsley, Joshua Cox, Calloway Joines, Alleghany county. Enlisted men, 127.

COMPANY K—Captains, F. D. Koonce, Thos. G. Henson, Onslow county; S. W Noble, Lenoir county Lieutenants, H. C Koonce, Jones county; J. A. Galloway, Onslow county; Samuel L. Gooch, Calhoun Hoskins, S. E. Koonce, Jones county. Enlisted men, 106.

Casualties of the foregoing:

Edward Mallett, killed at Bentonville 15 March, 1865; Wm. S. Devane, wounded at Bentonville 15 March, 1865; Jas. H. Robinson, prisoner 3 September, 1864; Julius M. Chesnut, missing at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; John F Guthries, wounded at Kinston (?) February, 1865; Nathan A. Ramsey, prisoner at Kinston 14 December, 1862; Wm. S. Ramsey, lost left hand at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Jas. B. Ellington, died at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Richard C. Cotten, prisoner at Morris Island 26 August, 1862; Jno. Q. Jackson, prisoner in 1864; L. L. Keith, wounded at Battery Wagner, August, 1863; Wm. T. Choate, killed at Cold Harbor; Isaac C. Higgins, died at Goldsboro 28 December, 1862; Cotton Sparks, killed at Petersburg 30 June, 1864.

Casualties among enlisted men approximately as follows:

Companies.	Died.	Discharged.	Killed.	Missing.	Prisoners.	Wound'd.	Total
A	14	9	3	2	6	21	55
B	6	12	4		11	6	39
C	13	5	19	6		14	57
D	26	10	17		44	14	111
E	6	8	3		19		36
F	?	?	?	?	4	8	12
G	18	4	9		18	10	59
H	11	17	2		11	1	42
I	18	7	9	1	8	26	69
K	24	6	1		18	15	64
Total	136	78	67	9	139	115	544

MARCHES IN EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA.

After the organization of the regiment as above stated, it was assigned to Clingman's Brigade, which was composed of the Eighth, Thirty-first, Fifty-first and Sixty-first North Carolina Regiments, and remained at Camp Lamb, near Wilmington, until 16 September, when it took a move on itself and went to Smithville and remained there till the 25th when, on account of yellow fever outbreak it moved to Camp Radcliff, three miles out, returning to Smithville on 4 October, en route to North East bridge, above Wilmington, which was reached on the 5th. We were really heading for the Kinston

battlefield (our maiden battle), but did not know it at the time. The zigzag route taken by us, I gather from my letter published in *The Standard* on 13 April, 1863. We moved as follows: From North East bridge we went to Camp Collier near Goldsboro on the 14th; to Tarboro on the 19th; left Tarboro for the country around Plymouth on the 24th, constantly marching and counter-marching day and night. The only incident occurring in this neighborhood was the capture of the then notorious Buffalo, Jay Bird Jones, afterwards during our reconstruction a judge of the Superior Court. We left our camp near Plymouth on 2 November, at 2:30 p. m. and made a forced march of thirty-nine miles, arriving at Spring Green at daybreak on the 3d. We next found ourselves at the Cross Roads on the 4th. A deep snow fell on the 6th, yet, with one hundred barefooted men in the regiment, we weathered the storm and marched to the terminus of the Tarboro railroad. The writer of this article felt very deep concern on this cold, bleak day for thirteen of his own loved boys, who were barefooted, and he begged them not to go on the march, that he would prefer their remaining behind and take the chances of being taken prisoners rather than to go with us and run the very great risk of sickness and death. But no, they must go along with the boys. Four days later, on the 10th, the first one of these noble heroes who gave up his splendid life was Thomas Cotten, dying of pneumonia in the beautiful town of Tarboro. Seven others of them in a few days were placed by his side to sleep till God calls them. Two others died in Greenville. It has ever been, and will ever be the case, to give all the glory to the commanding and subordinate officers for grand victories won and heroic deeds performed, with rare exceptions of individual mention of a private soldier. This world has never known, and never will know, of any soldier to equal the Confederate boys in gray. These thirteen men, barefooted and poorly clad, rather than remain behind, preferred to go forward, and ten of them paid the penalty in but a few days. They were brave and true and faithful to the end. God bless their memory! History shall record the names of these noble fellows. Those dying in Tarboro were: Thos.

Cotten, 10 November; J Carpenter and Monroe Thompson, 22 November; Terry Poe, 24 November; Wyatt Carpenter, 26 November; J. A. Pilkinton, 29 November; Wm. Gunter, 2 December; Jefferson Womack, 29 January. Dying in Greenville: N L. Covert, 9 December; Elias Fields, 25 December. They were all from Chatham county and members of Company D.

We left the terminus of the Tarboro Railroad on the 10th and bivouacked at Greenville on the 13th; at Craddock's X Roads on the 14th; at Black Jack meeting house on the 15th; at Taft's Store on the 16th; back to Greenville on the 23d, remaining there till 7 December, when we took up direct line of march from Kinston, arriving there on the 9th. We found ourselves on the 12th, after crossing the county bridge over the Neuse, at Southwest creek, near Kinston. The bridge crossing this creek had been completely destroyed by our troops. The Sixty-first Regiment was posted on the west side of the creek to check or delay the advance of General Foster on the march from New Bern with 10,000 infantry, six batteries with forty pieces of artillery and 640 cavalry. General N G. Evans, of South Carolina, was in command of our forces, which numbered 2,014.

BATTLES AROUND KINSTON 1862.

General Foster reached Southwest creek on the morning of the 13th. About 9 o'clock one company of the regiment had a little skirmish with the enemy at the bridge crossing, with trifling casualties. Lieutenant-Colonel Devane, with seven companies, repaired to Hines' mills, about four miles distant, in double quick, and on arrival promptly deployed the entire force as skirmishers. In a little while the ball opened. To us then the firing seemed to be rapid and terrific. Minie balls whistled through the air by front and cross fires from the enemy as if they had naught else to do. For some time we held our ground, but were forced to fall back by the enemy advancing upon us in overwhelming numbers. We retreated towards Kinston and halted about one mile to the rear. Here we formed a line of battle and a company of skirmishers moved forward to feel for the enemy. They advanced only

about a hundred yards when they met with what they were looking for, fired one round and had the compliment promptly acknowledged in a double dose by our line. They retired as best they could, bringing the intelligence that the woods were full of blue coats, and that several regiments were flanking us on our left. Just then we had orders from General Evans to retreat under fire in good order. We did our best. We fired and fell back, and fell back and fired.

The next big field not far away we made another stand, taking advantage of the woods on the Kinston side. Here we had a pretty lively artillery duel for about an hour, and an equally lively fusillade from the small arms of the enemy. We quietly laid mighty low and did not return the fire, because our guns were inferior and we could not reach them. The day's casualties were very slight. The first to give up his life in this our first battle was Elbert Carpenter, a private in Company D, and he was at once buried on the spot where he fell, royally wrapped in his soldier's blanket.

At about 8 o'clock that night we quietly stole away through swamp, mud and water to Harriet's Chapel. It was a bitter cold night and all the boys were wet, half-frozen, hungry and worn out, and yet no word of complaint was murmured through the lines of these splendid Tar Heel heroes. When we bivouacked we were in hearing of the enemy, and we had no camp fires till past midnight. About daybreak our most excellent Commissary, Captain O. P Meares, gladdened our hearts with an abundant supply of good, wholesome rations, just the thing we were longing for and most needed. We were then upon the battlefield of Kinston on 14 December, 1862--a bright, beautiful Sabbath morning.

General Evans with his South Carolina Brigade on the left, and the Sixty-first North Carolina on his right awaited Foster's attack. Foster sent in Wessell's Brigade and batteries; supporting Wessell by Amory's Brigade, supplemented by Stevenson's. The odds were overwhelmingly against us, and after two and a half hours of stubborn resistance on our part, we were forced back across the Neuse, and were so closely pressed that we unavoidably lost 400 prisoners, all of whom were paroled on the following morning.

At one time during the progress of the battle the Sixty-first was compelled to fall back on account of the ammunition being entirely exhausted, and on being ordered back by General Evans, all hands without a murmur promptly obeyed and returned to within 150 yards of the enemy without a solitary cartridge and half the men without bayonets. A small supply of ammunition soon reached us, which was speedily used to the best advantage, and being entirely out again and with no hopes of a second supply, and being in a forlorn and helpless condition and being crowded so unmercifully close by such a large force of the enemy, the better part of valor was to get away from there if we could, which we did in a quiet, orderly way, or as much so as pressing circumstances permitted. When we reached the bridge it was on fire, and in addition to the trying ordeal of passing over the blazing bridge, we were subjected to a terrible cross-fire from the enemy who were drawn up in line of battle 250 yards below. Here we lost several of our men and it is truly miraculous that half of them at least were not killed or burned to death. God was with us on this beautiful, lovely Sabbath day.

WILMINGTON.

After the battle of Kinston the regiment under General Evans was marched to Goldsboro, reaching there on 17 December. From Goldsboro we tramped every step of the way right down the railroad track to Wilmington, reaching that lovely city by the sea on 2 January, 1863, remaining there until 6 February, when we pitched our tents on Masonboro Sound—returning to Wilmington on 16 February.

CHARLESTON AND SAVANNAH.

From Wilmington we went to Charleston, S. C., landing there on 18 February, 1863. On 2 March we were ordered to Savannah, Ga., and it was with many regrets when the order came for us to return to Charleston on the 9th. Every recollection and association of our sojourn in Savannah is of the most pleasant and delightful character. We were welcomed most heartily by the noble men and women of that most beautiful of cities and royally entertained.

On our return to Charleston, 13 July, 1863, we went into camp on James' Island, about four miles from the city and only a few hundred yards from Fort Pemberton. Going from Savannah, Ga., to James' Island, S. C., was about what I would imagine with my limited knowledge of the two localities, very much the same as dropping out of Paradise into Hell! We found James' Island a little Sahara, having plenty of wind; rolling and twisting clouds of sand; millions of black gnats (much greater pests than mosquitoes), and a very scanty supply of devilish poor beef, that a respectable Charleston buzzard would not eat. We had to sink holes here and there and everywhere to get a supply of tadpole water—at the same time there being a well of good water at Fort Pemberton, which no Tar Heel was allowed to sample. In Savannah bacon sold for 35 cents per pound; at Charleston it was 62 cents, and North Carolina money couldn't buy it at any price. Our money was refused at the postoffice, in the market, in the stores and on the streets. We didn't like it. The Fayetteville *Observer* of 23 April, 1863, published a collection that had been made in that good old town for the suffering volunteers from Cumberland county, then doing duty on James Island, amounting to $3,408.55 in money and bacon. This ought not to have been, and would not, had the boys been quartered and doing duty at Savannah.

PRICES IN CHARLESTON.

Some of the little delicacies that the boys sometimes liked to indulge in were sold at prices that were rather high. For instance, a small raw turnip, 15 cents; a baked sweet potato, 25 cents, with ground peas at 40 cents a quart. On 23 March, 1863, Company D threw away two days' rations of beef, which was totally unfit for the stomach of a cannibal, much less that of a Confederate soldier. The life of a soldier was anything but easy and pleasant. They endured every hardship and suffered under almost every privation without a murmur and with apparent cheerfulness. In this way, as much as in any other, they showed their patriotism and devotion to the Common Cause.

From James' Island we went to Sullivan's Island, date not

remembered, but the change was gladly welcomed by all. We were willing to go anywhere to get away from James' Island. While quartered on Sullivan's Island our regiment did its full share of duty in the defence of Morris Island. During the four years of my experience in the army I found no place so uninviting as Battery Wagner on Morris Island. The bomb-proof, the only place of safety, cannot be well described, for all its dreary loathesomeness and horrors, and I will not attempt it. The following was published in the Wilmington *Journal* a few days after the occurrence:

BATTERY WAGNER.

"During the bombardment of Battery Wagner many little incidents have occurred which deserve a name in history. Among these is the following: On 29 July, 1863, the enemy got the range of a ten-inch Columbiad so completely as to render the place of extreme danger, and the South Carolina troops that manned the gun left it and ran into the bomb-proof for shelter. Their Captain ordered them back to their post, but they refused for a time to obey. While the men were wrangling with their officer, a soldier named Stedman from Company B, Sixty-first North Carolina Troops, *by himself, loaded, sighted and fired* the abandoned gun, hitting the Yankee boat at which he shot, while a hundred balls were whistling around him. Remember this was a North Carolina soldier. Let us be proud of him. I thank God it was my happy privilege and good fortune to witness the abandonment of this gun, and the magnificent heroic conduct of Robert Winship Stedman. There was no braver soldier among the hosts of the Confederate army than Winship Stedman. God bless his memory!

"In the summer and fall of 1863, the Sixty-first Regiment together with the balance of Clingman's Brigade, performed as arduous services as any Confederate troops at any period of the war. They were stationed on James, Morris and Sullivan's Islands defending the city of Charleston, and their endurance of fatigue, hardships and dangers during that period, week after week, for several months seems almost incredible. In December, 1863, shortly before Christmas, the regi-

ment with the balance of Clingman's Brigade, was relieved from the arduous service at the siege of Charleston, and returned to North Carolina and for several months was stationed near Wilmington.

PETERSBURG.

When Beast Butler in May, 1864, made his memorable movement against Petersburg, the Sixty-first was one of the regiments hurried forward to checkmate him. General Grant in his official report alluded to Butler's being "bottled up" by our troops. The Sixty-first participated actively in this campaign, and as it was wont to do, discharged its every duty faithfully and well, and suffered fully its share in all respects, especially in the battles of Drewry's Bluff, Chaffin's Farm, Bermuda Hundreds, Cold Harbor and Fort Harrison. On 3 June, 1864, at Cold Harbor, while the enemy was shelling our works, a shell fell in the trenches occupied by the Sixty-first North Carolina. While it was smoking and near ready to burst, Sergeant Thos. L. Graves, Company A, of our regiment, seized it and threw it out of the works, saving many lives at the risk of his own. Such a deed merits record here. At Cold Harbor another brigade gave way, and through this break the enemy passed and attacked Clingman's Brigade on the left flank. General Clingman was in the trenches with the Sixty-first Regiment and seeing the enemy in our rear, he rushed forward and was gallantly followed by the regiment, and the enemy was soon driven back from whence they came. The only weapon General Clingman had on this occasion was a piece of a fence rail.

In addition to the varied and wide scope of duties faithfully, cheerfully and gallantly performed by the Sixty-first Regiment in this and other States, Company D was petitioned for by the citizens of Chatham and Moore to be sent for protection to life and property against lawless deserters and conscripts. The petition was granted, and the company was promptly sent. The woods were scoured and cleared up of this lawless gang of marauders. Over one hundred captures were made, and they were sent back to their commands in the army. Besides, in a skirmish with them, the two leading

spirits of the gang were shot to death, and this restored peace to the entire community. Forever after all raiding and outrages from this source were unknown.

WILMINGTON.

The regiment was returned to Wilmington from Petersburg and remained in the vicinity till after the fall of Fort Fisher and the evacuation of the city. The war was speedily coming to a close, and the most hopeful of us had despaired of a possibility of success, yet we pressed forward and fought on with the same iron nerve that had already immortalized our soldiery. Attached to Hoke's Division, the Sixty-first as part of Clingman's Brigade, met Schofield's army from New Bern at South West Creek 8-10 March, 1865, and shared in the capture of several hundred prisoners.

BENTONVILLE.

Our last battle was fought at Bentonville on 15 March, 1864, and the writer of this article is still proud of the honor conferred upon him on that morning in being put in command of the skirmish line, with instructions to go forward. About this, our last battle, Benson J Lossing wrote as follows: "Soldiers in that command who have passed through this score of battles will tell you they never saw anything like the fighting at Bentonville. Sherman said the National forces received six distinct assaults by the combined forces of Hoke, Hardee and Cheatham, under the immediate supervision of General Johnston himself without giving one inch of ground, and doing good execution on the enemy's ranks, especially with our artillery, the enemy having little or none. With the coming of darkness ended the conflict known as the battle of Bentonville, which in brilliancy of personal achievements, and in lasting advantage to the cause of the Republic must ever be ranked among the most memorable and important contests of the war. Indeed, it seems proper to consider it the key battle of the Civil War. Had Johnston won there, the sad consequences would probably have been the loss of the whole of Sherman's army, and the quick and fatal dispersion

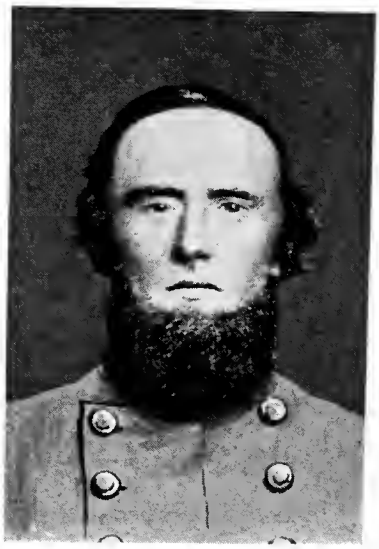
or capture of Grant's army before Petersburg and Richmond by the combined forces of Lee and Johnston attacking him in overwhelming numbers, in front and rear In this view the solid importance of the victory of Bentonville cannot be overestimated."

After Bentonville, Johnston's army was camped in the upper end of Johnston county, near Mitchener's Station, till 10 April, 1865, when we began our last retreat. The first surrender at the Burnett House near Durham, 14 April, proved abortive. On 26 April the final surrender was signed and the Sixty-first was paroled near High Point, 2 May, 1865.

After the lapse of so many long and weary years, it is a difficult task, with the historical data obtainable incomplete as they are, to do justice full and ample to this, or any other regiment of North Carolina troops who did service in the Confederate army. No better soldiers are known in the history of the world than the Confederates, and if any of them were better than the others our love for North Carolina and her common glory is my excuse for saying that the Tar Heels were the very best. God bless the memory of all of them who so freely offered up their lives upon the altar of their country for a cause that was just in the sight of God and our own conscience. And to the noble old veterans who still survive of the gallant old Sixty-first, may they yet live for many days to instill into the hearts and minds of their descendants the deepest love and veneration for the Confederate cause, which was crushed not by the peple of the North but by the hundreds of thousands of foreign trash, who fought for money and not for the love of the union.

N. A. RAMSEY.

DURHAM, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



SIXTY-SECOND REGIMENT.
R. G. A. Love, Colonel.

SIXTY-SECOND REGIMENT.

By B. G. McDOWELL, Lieutenant-Colonel.

The Sixty-second Regiment was composed almost entirely of Western North Carolinians, officers and men.

The companies composing the same met at Waynesville July 11, '62, and organized by electing the following:

R. G. A. Love, Colonel, Waynesville, N. C.

G. W. Clayton, Lieutenant-Colonel, Asheville, N. C.

B. G. McDowell, Major, Macon county, N. C.

STAFF AND COMPANY OFFICERS.

The staff and company officers were as follows:

R. B. Johnson, Captain and Quartermaster, of Asheville.

Patrick Thrash, Captain and Commissary of Subsistence, Buncombe county.

Dr. H. M. Rogers, Surgeon, Haywood county.

Dr. G. D. S. Allen, Assistant Surgeon, Haywood county.

Lieutenant James H. McAlister, Assistant Commissary of Subsistence.

Joseph E. Haynes, Adjutant, of Knoxville, Tennessee.

The commanding officers of all these companies were, as elected:

Company A—*Haywood County*—A. T. Rogers, Captain; W. H. Leatherwood, First Lieutenant; E. R. Furgerson and Geo. H. Nelson, Second Lieutenants.

Company B—*Clay County*—Captain, Benjamin Moore; C. M. Crawford, First Lieutenant; J. J. McClure and M. Passmore, Second Lieutenants.

Company C—*Haywood County*—Captain, John Turpin; J. M. Tate, First Lieutenant; Jere Ratcliff and Robert L. Owen, Second Lieutenants.

Company D—*Macon County*—Captain, R. M. Henry; M. L. Kelly, First Lieutenant; L. Enloe and W. P. Norton, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY E—*Haywood County*—Captain, R. A. Edmondson and J Ramsay Dills; W H. Bryson, First Lieutenant; R. M. Wilson and M. L. Allison, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY F—*Rutherford County*—Captain, A. B. Cowan; Jas. M. Taylor, First Lieutenant; Jno. Jones and D. D. Walker, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY G—*Jackson County*—Captain, A. D. Hooper; D. F. Brown, First Lieutenant; B. N Queen and P M. Parker, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY H—*Henderson County*—Captain, W G. B. Morris; J M. Owen, First Lieutenant; G. W Whitmore and I. F Galloway, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY I—*Haywood County*—Captain, William J. Wilson; I. P Long, First Lieutenant; J. A. Burnett and P. G. Murray, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY K—*Transylvania County*—Captain, L. C. Neil; S. C. Beck, First Lieutenant; Jas. M. Gash and V. C. Hamilton, Second Lieutenants.

The Field Officers were happily chosen. Colonel Love was a leading and influential citizen of Haywood county, a man of first-class ability and often held places of trust, honor and profit, as the gift of his people, until his health gave way under disease, which resulted in his death after the war. He was Lieutenant-Colonel of the Sixteenth North Carolina Regiment in the Army of Northern Virginia, and was transferred by promotion to the Sixty-second.

Lieutenant-Colonel Clayton was of Buncombe county, North Carolina, and a resident of the city of Asheville, a graduate of West Point, of a most excellent family, an elegant gentleman, a magnificent disciplinarian, and was loved by every member of his regiment. Colonel Clayton died recently greatly lamented by a large circle of friends and relatives and mourned by his comrades in arms who shared with him the privations and hardships of a soldier's life.

While stationed at Cumberland Gap, a point which figured conspicuously in the late war between the States, Colonel Clayton fell a victim to typhoid fever. He was removed to

a hospital at Greenville, Tennessee. Very soon after he left, the siege of Cumberland was on, and he could not return to his command at the Gap. Colonel Love was off on sick leave at the time, so the command of the regiment was left in the hands of the Major of the regiment. Lieutenant-Colonel Clayton was not, therefore, able to return to his regiment until after the surrender of Cumberland Gap (9 September, 1863), when that portion of the regiment which escaped from the Gap was assembled at Pigeon river, in Haywood county, to be again prepared to enter into active service.

Major, later Lieutenant-Colonel, B. G. McDowell, was a native of Macon county, N C Early in 1861, he enlisted in the 39th North Carolina under Colonel David Coleman and was transferred to the 62nd by promotion to Major of the Regiment 11 July, 1862.

All three of these officers were descendants of revolutionary soldiers, and appropriately commanded men, most of whom were also lineal descendants of the heroes of 1776 and as brave and patriotic as their ancestors.

Want of space precludes the possibility of the mention of even the names of this heroic band which are given, with some omissions and inaccuracies in Moore's Roster, Vol. 3, p. 716, *et seq.* Their descendants should remember and be proud of the membership of their parents in such a command.

EAST TENNESSEE.

Soon after the organization the regiment started for Haynesville (now called Johnson's City), in Washington county, Tennessee, arriving there about 1 August, 1862, when it was placed under rigid drill and prepared for active service. A braver or more courageous body of men did not belong to the Confederate army. They left their homes, a majority of them leaving families dependent upon them, and offered their lives a sacrifice upon the field of battle for a cause they thought to be right. The rank and file of this regiment were of the very best citizens of Western North Carolina. A finer or braver set of men, taken all together, I have never seen. This regiment when it went into camp

for drill, was without arms, except a few old muskets which were furnished them for drilling purposes.

The regiment had not been in camp at Haynesville but a few days, when it was separated, three companies going to Zollicoffer (now Bluff City). Three to Carter's Depot (now South Watauga), two to Limestone, in Washington county, the rest of the companies remaining at Haynesville (now Johnson's City)—all these points in Tennessee. The writer of this sketch was sent to Zollicoffer, to take charge of the three companies there, put them under rigid drill, and at the same time guard the bridge spanning the Holston river at that point and prevent railroad communication from being disturbed. The other two companies mentioned were put to like service. A very small amount of ammunition was furnished the forces placed in camp for drill and guard duties. This was true as to this regiment. We had a few old fashioned muskets, and a small amount of ammunition furnished for the purposes indicated. In this condition, this regiment was by no means in condition to meet an attack by the enemy, especially when in any sort of considerable force, being simply in a camp of instruction.

In the early fall of 1862, date not now remembered, one Battalion of the Regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel Clayton was ordered to Causby Creek, Cocke county, Tennessee, to help suppress an uprising of disloyal citizens there. It seems that some conscripts and deserters had been turned out of the Waynesville jail by their friends. Sheriff Noland while pursuing them, was killed on Noland or Utah Mountain, three miles north-east of town. The militia of the county was called out and followed the outlaws to the Tennessee line, via Cattaloochee and Big Creek, north forty miles.

Major W W Stringfield with 150 Cherokee Indians and whites of the Sixty-ninth North Carolina, also on a scout in Sevier county, Tenn., and Jackson county, N C., rapidly crossed the Balsam mountains at Soco Gap (fifteen miles northwest of Waynesville) and in company with several hundred militia—old men and boys—under Major Rhea and Colonel Rogers, Green Garrett, Arch Herren and others crossed

over the Tennessee line, killed several of the outlaws and soon reduced the others to submission.

The Sixty-second, badly armed and equipped as it was, presented a formidable and war-like appearance. The outlaws were killed, captured or scattered and restive citizens were quieted. Not a great while after this the Sixty-second was ordered to Greenville, Tenn., the home of President Johnson. It was there brigaded with the Sixty-ninth North Carolina and others and all were subjected to drill and discipline. Railroad bridges were now threatened both from external as well as internal forces. The raid of General Carter mentioned above and its success emboldened all the people, three-fourths of whom were "followers of Belial" and disloyal to the South. All the bridges and depots were threatened and some were burned. Hayden and others were hung and hundreds sent South to prison and thousands ran off North and joined the Union army.

I have noticed, in Brigadier-General Frazer's report, of his disgraceful surrender of Cumberland Gap, he refers to this regiment as at one time having been commanded by its Major (referring of course to the writer), and as having been surrendered by him to a gang of Yankee scouts, or raiders. A more unblushing falsehood was never penned by living man.

CAPTURE OF THREE COMPANIES.

I have stated the condition of the three companies under my immediate command at Zollicoffer, which eliminates the necessity of repeating it here. On the night of 30 December, 1862, General Samuel P Carter, with three regiments of Federal cavalry, made his (the first) raid into East Tennessee for the purpose of burning the bridges and destroying railroad communication. The East Tennessee & Virginia Railroad bridge at Zollicoffer was the first point struck by this "Yankee raid," of not less than 2,500 men. I was there with three companies of poorly armed men, with no means of defense and absolutely helpless. In this condition these three companies were surrendered. And yet, the gallant General Frazer has me surrendering this whole regiment to a Yan-

kee scouting party. His false and slanderous statement is found on page 611, *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* Vol. 51.

The men were paroled, and as soon as exchanged, which was but a short time, they were ordered to Cumberland Gap, and composed a part of the garrison of the Gap. In February, 1863, the balance of the regiment was stationed at Greenville, Tenn., and in March and April were in General A. E. Jackson's Brigade at Strawberry Plains. At the end of July the regiment was in Gracie's Brigade at Cumberland Gap.

General Gracie was in command at the Gap when the regiment reached that point, but did not remain but a short time, being ordered away, and was succeeded by General Frazer.

SURRENDER OF CUMBERLAND GAP.

General John W Frazer was in command at Cumberland Gap when the surrender of that stronghold occurred 9 September, 1863. The force we had at the Gap, was, of course, insignificant when compared with the Federal forces which approached the Gap on both sides, when the siege began, but the surrender of the Confederate forces there was a shame and disgrace, when the situation is fully understood. The approaches to the Gap were of such character that it would have been impossible for any number of men to have captured the post by force. The opportunity of General Frazer to have evacuated the Gap and saved his command from a long imprisonment and death (as was the case with many of them) was open, and nothing but treachery, or cowardice, or it may be both, could have led to the unconditional surrender of this, the strongest natural position in the Confederate States, and with it, 2,026 prisoners, 12 pieces of artillery, and the stores of ammunition and provision.

The writer has read, over and over again, the report of the surrender of Cumberland Gap, as given by General Frazer, and wondered if an opportunity would ever be offered for the vindication of our men at the Gap, from the miserable slanders hurled against them by Frazer in his attempt to shield himself from public censure. The report of this surrender

made by him in Volume 51, pages 604, *et seq,* is to my own personal knowledge false in every essential particular, and does the brave men who composed the garrison at the Gap the greatest wrong. It should be corrected and handed down in history, just as it occurred, and let the blame rest where it rightfully belongs. I think we have reached the point that when known facts are given to the public for consideration and approval, or rejection, public sentiment will invariably reach a just conclusion.

It would, even at this late day, be exceedingly difficult for General Frazer to convince the survivors of the Cumberland Gap disaster, that he did not surrender for a money consideration.

This regiment when it reached the Gap, had about 800 men for duty There were a few deserters from this regiment, but not more than was common from nearly all regiments. Desertions were by men who returned to their homes. They did not go to the enemy.

Shortly after we reached the Gap, Colonel Love left the regiment on account of extreme bad health, from which he never recovered, but ultimately died as has been stated. It was not long thereafter until Lieutenant-Colonel Clayton was taken sick of typhoid fever, and was removed to the hospital at Greenville, Tenn., and was away from the Gap when the siege began, and when the command was surrendered. The siege of Cumberland Gap began 7 September, 1863. General DeCourcy commanded the Federal forces on the Kentucky side and General Shackelford on the south or Tennessee side. It was in reality Burnside's army on the south side of the Gap. The writer was the only field officer of the Sixty-second Regiment there at the time. I was placed, with almost my entire regiment, out on the Harlan county road on picket duty. This road overlooked the valley leading down what was then, and is I think still, known as Yellow creek. Skirmishing and picket firing was continuous out on this road, after the siege began, and not unfrequently the enemy from the Kentucky side assaulted our position along this road in strong force, and made repeated determined efforts to drive us from our position. It affords me pleasure now

to say and will be a pleasure to me to know as long as I live, that men never behaved with more coolness and courage than did the men of the Sixty-second Regiment. Kain's Battery, commanded by Lieutenant O'Connor, was stationed on what was known as the East Mountain, only a short distance from where I was on duty with my regiment. We had been advised during the day of the 9th of the repeated demands that had been made for the surrender of the Gap, and of General Frazer's refusal, and felt entirely confident that we would not be surrendered, because it was utterly unnecessary owing to the fact that he could take the entire command out of the Gap at any time, against any odds. The situation was such that he could not have been prevented from doing so; and he well understood this if he understood anything. It was understood all along the line that the battle would open at noon on 9 September, 1863. Noon came, but no battle. The writer went up on top of the East Mountain and found Lieutenant Thomas O'Connor at his battery, from which point of vantage we had a splendid view of Burnside's army and all that was going on. We both observed that flags of truce were passing in and out of the Gap rather too frequently to make us feel comfortable, but we had no information, though we suspected that something was wrong in some way Just about sunset that day, a courier come to me from General Frazer with an order to report at the General's headquarters, with my regiment at once Then I began to realize that our suspicious were well founded. I returned to the Gap with my men, who had been on duty for nearly a week without intermission or relief, but not a man had flinched from duty for a moment. There I found General Frazer sitting in front of his tent surrounded by his staff officers. All the commanding officers of regiments and batteries arrived at General Frazer's headquarters about the same time. That was absolutely the only consultation called, and we were then informed by General Frazer that we were surrendered. Every officer bitterly opposed being surrendered, and some of them denounced it in the most vigorous terms as cowardly and unwarranted by the conditions surrounding us at the time.

A detachment of sixty men (not one hundred and twenty-

five as stated by General Frazer), had been detailed from the various regiments to guard a little mill which rested just at the foot of the mountain on the south side, and which served to grind meal for the army at the Gap. Immediately in front of this little mill was Burnside's whole army The Federal commander sent a force sufficient for the purpose, which under cover of heavy artillery firing, attacked the guard at this mill and dispersed it, the guard being utterly insufficient to meet the emergency. They could do nothing but fall back on the command in the Gap, or stand and be shot down like brutes, as they would have been, had they not fallen back on their commands. And yet the gallant General Frazer and his engineer, Rush VanLeer, would have according to their own statement, 125 men hold this mill against Burnside's whole army, numbering anywhere from 10,000 to 20,000 men.

ESCAPE.

When I was told by General Frazer that I had been surrendered, and that I and my regiment were prisoners of war, my indignation and that of my regiment knew no bounds. I informed him that I would not be made a prisoner of war; that it took two to make such a bargain as that under the circumstances, and that he could not force me to do so. Sharp words were exchanged, and I called up all of the Sixty-second Regiment who were willing to take their lives in their own hands and all of the other commands in the Gap who were willing to join us, and said to them, "If you will go with me, we will go out from here, and let consequences take care of themselves."

In all about 600 responded, and led by Colonel Slemp and a man from Abingdon, Va., whose name was Page, as I now remember, both of whom were perfectly familiar with the country, we moved out of the Gap, eastward, passing Kain's battery and pushing one rifle piece over the cliff as we went along. We made our way along the north side of the mountain, on the Kentucky side, until we reached a point opposite Jonesville, where we encountered a pursuing force of Federal cavalry. Our entire escaping force had kept their guns

and ammunition, expecting a collision as we went out, and being thus prepared, an immediate dash was made by our men. Having the decided advanage of position, we forced the Federal cavalry to retire and were permitted to pass on, the Federals returning to the Gap, after burning the little town of Jonesville, in Lee county, Va. We made our way to Bristol, Tennessee, and Zollicoffer, and I at once reported the surrender to Major C. S. Stringfellow, Adjutant-General, and awaited further orders from the General commanding.

CAMP ON PIGEON RIVER.

After the surrender of Cumberland Gap, the men of the Sixty-second Regiment who were at home on furlough, and all those who escaped capture went into camp at Pigeon river, in Haywood County, N. C. After remaining there for a few days, they entered again into active service and never for one moment flinched from any duty assigned them, nor from constant danger to which they were exposed, to the end of the war. In April, 1864, the fragment of the regiment was at Asheville under command of Captain Aug. B. Cowan and reported 178 men.

About this time Colonel Love resigned as Colonel of the regiment, and Lieutenant-Colonel Clayton was raised to the rank of Colonel, and the writer to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Rogers, of Company A, to the rank of Major.

This regiment (and by this I mean that portion which escaped capture) engaged in all the East Tennessee campaigns under General Breckinridge, General Vaughn and General Williams. The men of this regiment were the very last men to lay down their arms and very many of them never did take the oath of allegiance, which was required as every one knows, of all Confederate soldiers at the close of the war.

Immediately after the surrender of Cumberland Gap, General Frazer and the men who did not escape from the Gap, were removed to Federal prisons, where those who did not die from disease remained until the close of the war. On 30 December, 1863, there were 443 of the Sixty-second in person

at Camp Douglas, *119 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 797. What became of General Frazer the writer does not know. After the surrender of the Gap, so far as I am advised, he was never heard of again beyond his lying report above cited, which purports to have been written at Fort Warren, in Boston harbor, November, 1864.

General Frazer in his report of the surrender of the Gap, reflects severely and most unjustifiably upon the character of the troops and morale of the command. I was at my post of duty from the day the regiment arrived at the Gap till the surrender, and knew as much of the morale and character of the command as General Frazer, or any one else, and do most positively deny his charges.

On page 611, Vol. 51, *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* he says: "The Colonel was absent and soon after resigned and became an open advocate of reunion in his county." This, of course, refers to Colonel Love, who did later on resign on account of extreme bad health, from which he died, as stated herein. But the allegation of his entertaining Union sentiments as published by General Frazer, who was then in prison and who never saw or heard of Colonel Love after the surrender of Cumberland Gap, is unfounded in fact. It is due to the memory of Colonel Love, who was loyal to the cause of the south, to the very end, and even after all hope was lost, to denounce this statement as absolutely untrue.

There are now numerous living witnesses to attest the truth of the foregoing. It is astonishing to think how docile, loyal and obedient were the men to their superior officers. It was such a surprise however, that no one had time to think, ere we were in the hands of our enemies.

General Frazer was bitterly denounced by his brother officers after going to prison, and we are told by good men like Lieutenant J. M. Tate, Lieutenant R. A. Owen, W. H. Leatherwood of Haywood county, and others, that the indignation was so great against him that the Federals changed him to another prison and permitted him, doubtless gladly, to slander his own men. Indignities were offered to these brave men all along the way to prison. At Aurora,

Indiana, as our men passed under guard, a crowd of big rough toughs, crowded around our men and belabored them much as "miserable cowardly rebels," etc Captain Printer of 55th Georgia, a big strong noble fellow finally said to the guards, "Stop these *cowardly* curs, or we will." They stopped. Notwithstanding all these slanders about this Regiment it can receive no higher endorsement, no greater meed of praise, no more complete refutation of slanders, than the fact that though in prison, the dreadful prisons of the North, for 23 months, not a single man took the oath of allegiance to the North, although it was offered to them often. Many of the command were sick, starved, frozen to death. Shot down for any or no pretense, all kinds of insults and indignity were daily, monthly and yearly thrust into their faces. Disloyal indeed! Great Heaven!! Who will dare say so again!!!

The whole history of the surrender of Cumberland Gap, as given out by General Frazer and his staff, and one or two others who seem to have fallen under his influence, was a fabrication intended to mislead the authorities at Richmond, never dreaming, perhaps, that it would come to the eyes of the public, and of those who were on the ground and so unjustly slandered by his report.

We knew, or had been advised of the repeated demands for the surrender of the Gap, and also that these demands had been refused, and had not the most remote idea that we were to be surrendered until I was notified, as I have hereinbefore stated; and as I stated in my communication of 16 September, 1863, found on pages 636-37, *Official Records of Union and Confederate Armies,* Vol. 51.

There was no insubordination among the troops of the Sixty-second North Carolina Regiment, as far as I knew, and had there been, I certainly would have known it. Furthermore, there was no want of courage, discipline or determination among the men. We expected the battle to come on every moment, and at no time during the whole war did I ever see, or know, men more disappointed than these were when they found that they were surrendered without an exhibition of their courage. Stalwart men actually cried like children when they found that they were surrendered and

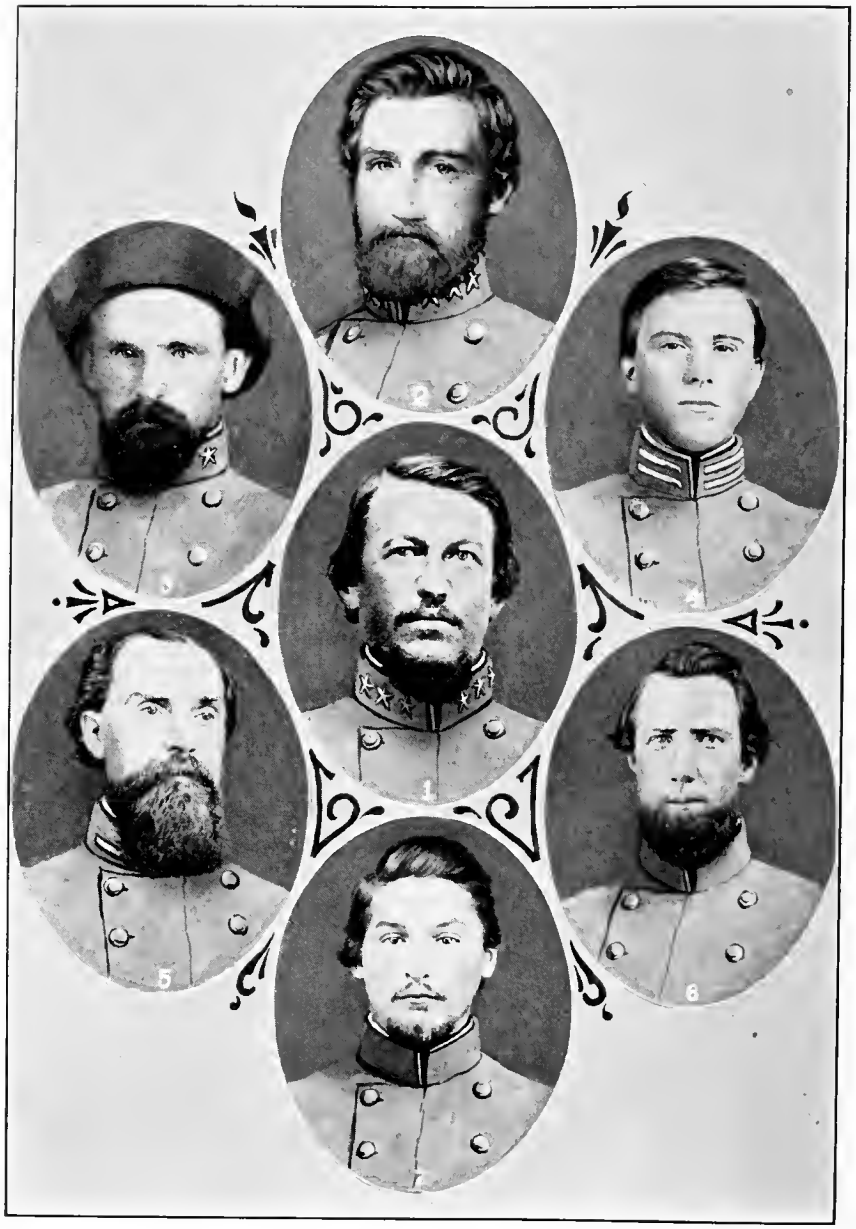
had to submit to being made prisoners without defending their right and reputation, that our commanding General never lost an opportunity to defame.

THE CLOSING SCENES.

The Sixty-second North Carolina Regiment were the very last men to surrender when the war closed. The fragment left of the regiment composed part of Palmer's Brigade at Asheville 10 March, 1865, and under General Martin aided to repulse Kirby's Brigade near that town 5 April, 1865. Many of them never did take the oath of allegiance. The remnant of this regiment, along with other brave and noble men of the old North State, after General Lee's surrender in Virginia, resisted a Federal force on the French Broad, near Asheville, and held them at bay for hours, until overcome by overwhelming forces and when forced to withdraw, under Colonel Clayton, did so and went to their homes and never did take the oath of allegiance as then required by the Federal authorities. No braver or more noble hearted men ever lived than those composing the Sixty-second North Carolina Regiment of Infantry.

B. G. McDOWELL.

BRISTOL, TENN.,
30 May, 1901.



SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. Peter G. Evans, Colonel.
2. James H. McNeill, Colonel.
3. John M. Gallaway, Major.
4. J. Turner Morehead, Adjt. and 1st Lt.
5. James D. Nott, 2d Lieut., Co. A.
6. James Kirkpatrick, Private, Co. A.
7. F. R. Rose, Private, Co. A.

SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

(FIFTH CAVALRY.)

By JOHN M. GALLOWAY, Major.

The Sixty-third Regiment, North Carolina Troops (Fifth Cavalry), was organized at Garysburg, N C., in the early fall of 1862. It was composed of companies enlisted under the Partisan Ranger Act of the Confederate Congress. The act promised many special rights and privileges to the Rangers not the least of which was the clause saying that all property captured from the enemy became at once the private property of the captor. Most of the officers of the Sixty-third and many of the men had previously been in the army; thinking that the Ranger service would afford greater scope for individual exploit and consequent glory they had managed by one means or another to get a transfer. The field and staff officers were:

Peter G. Evans, Colonel, Chatham county.
S. B. Evans, Lieutenant-Colonel, Goldsboro.
James H. McNeill, Major, Fayetteville, N C.
J. Turner Morehead, Adjutant, Greensboro, N. C.
George Haigh, Sergeant-Major.

The Captains of companies in order of seniority:

Company C—Captain E. F. Shaw.
Company D—Captain John M. Galloway.
Company E—Captain J. R. Erwin.
Company F—Captain Thos. W Harris.
Company G—Captain John B. McClennahan.

Note.—By the death of Col. McNeill and Lieut-Colonel Shaw on the ill-fated field of Five Forks 1 April, 1865, Maj. Jno. M. Galloway became entitled to promotion to Colonel and senior Captain Jno. R. Erwin to Lieut-Colonel both by reason of seniority and their splendid gallantry, but the stirring events quickly following gave no time for reading out promotions on dress parade (the usual way) or issuing commissions to them. —Ed.

COMPANY H—Captain William E. Booe.
COMPANY I—Captain Nathaniel Rankin.
COMPANY K—Captain J E. Wharton.
COMPANY B—Captain Roberts.
COMPANY A—Captain John McKellar.
Major McNeill had been Captain of Company A.

Moore's Roster makes several errors in regard to this regiment. Colonel Evans' old company is put down as Company B, of this regiment. It belonged to the Fifty-ninth North Carolina (Fourth Cavalry). Moore puts S. B. Evans, Colonel; he was only Lieutenant-Colonel. Peter G. Evans was Colonel. Moore puts Captain Harris as Major and Colonel, and killed at Five Forks. Captain Harris was never promoted and never wounded nor killed.

ATTACK ON PLYMOUTH.

The regiment was very strong, mustering over 1,000 men. We remained at Garysburg some months, drilled and instructed by Brigadier-General Beverly H. Robertson, of Virginia. General Robertson was a West Pointer, very strict, and sometimes irascible on military points. In social intercourse he was a pleasant, polished gentleman. Late in November we moved lower down the Roanoke, and picketed about Washington and Plymouth. In December an expedition was planned to capture Plymouth. A regiment of infantry, a battery of artillery, and four companies of our regiment were assigned to the enterprise, the whole under command of Colonel Jno. C. Lamb, of the Seventeenth North Carolina. Lieutenant-Colonel Stephen B. Evans commanded the cavalry. The plan was to capture the pickets, and take the place by surprise. We reached the picket station just before day 13 December, 1862, captured all but one, he escaped firing his musket as he ran. This gave notice of our approach, and when we reached Plymouth a body of Federals was seen formed across the main street ready to receive us. The cavalry was ordered to charge these men, which was done in good style, and with a full allowance of the famous rebel yell. The enemy fired one volley and broke in all directions. Some escaped to the gunboats in skiffs, some hid, some took to

the houses, and fired from the windows. Quite a lively cannonade ensued between the gunboats and our battery. We captured more provisions and clothing than we could move. Colonel Lamb finally decided to retire, fearing the gunboats would go up the river and cut off his retreat. We captured quite a number of prisoners. Our casualties were Captain Galloway, of the cavalry, severely wounded; three infantry privates wounded by the fire from the houses. Captain Galloway was wounded by that first volley, but did not retire until the affair was over.

ORDERED TO VIRGINIA.

The remainder of the winter passed without incident. We did picket duty, assisted in stopping the attempted Federal advance on Goldsboro, but had no casualties. Those were halcyon days for us. We were in a friendly country, supplies for man and horse comparatively abundant. The ladies delighted in us, and we had a good time. Early in May, 1863, we received orders to join Lee's army. We had been brigaded with the Fifty-ninth North Carolina (Fourth Cavalry), Colonel Dennis D. Ferrebee, and put under General Robertson. We halted some days near Richmond, Va., to have our horses shod, clothing and arms furnished the men, and then set out for the historic and desolate fields of Virginia. We reached Lee's army in time for General Stuart's grand cavalry review on the field of Brandy Station. Our regiments were in full strength, our men and horses fresh, and on the field of review we made a much better appearance than the rusty clad squadrons of Stuart and Hampton. The chaff and wheat were soon to be separated. The morning after this review the shrill bugle call "boots and saddles" resounded early. Mounting quickly we were moved down the Kelley's Ford road, and soon came in sight of the enemy. One squadron of the Sixty-third was dismounted, and thrown forward as skirmishers. The Yanks had been advancing, but halted when they saw us. We remained looking at each other for some time, when the dismounted squadron was recalled, remounted and the brigade went at the gallop towards Fleetwood, General Stuart's headquarters. The enemy had

brought up a battery and shelled our rear as we went off doing no damage however. When we came on the main field of Brandy Station, cannon were booming, dust and smoke obscured vision, and no one could tell what would happen next. One man was seen to throw up his arms and fall from his horse and all supposed him badly wounded; after developments proved that his distress was purely mental. The brigade drew up in line just in rear of Fleetwood house and in support of a battery. The smoke and dust having lifted, we had a full view of the entire field. Blue and gray horsemen were moving rapidly in many parts of the field and frequently coming in sharp collision. Just on the opposite side of the field, a battery was posted, which was firing on our battery. We could see the discharge of each piece, and a few seconds after could see when the shell struck. The apparent commander of the Federal battery and support was riding a magnificent white horse. One of our shells struck this horse and rider and made fragments of them. About 2 p. m. we heard very rapid carbine firing on our left, a few minutes after we were moved to that direction and found that the brigade to which the Nineteenth North Carolina (Second Cavalry) belonged had been severely engaged and the Nineteenth had lost heavily—Colonel Sol. Williams was killed here. We moved after the retiring Yanks, but did not overtake them. No one of our regiment or brigade was physically hurt that day.

MIDDLEBURG.

Our luck was different in the next collision. This collision occurred at Middleburg 17 June, 1863. The fifth squadron of the Sixty-third was in front and about dusk was ordered to charge on some Yanks in the road. These men were simply a decoy. A whole regiment was dismounted and behind a stone fence. As the squadron pursuing the decoys came abreast of the dismounted regiment it opened fire, killing one man, wounding and disabling about twenty men and horses. Only seventeen men of the squadron followed the Captain through the fire. Of the remainder some tried to turn back, some dismounted and took shelter behind the stone fence. Fortunately the rear of the regiment was close at

hand, dismounted, got over the fence and attacked the enemy in flank. Still more fortunately a Virginia regiment was passing on a road perpendicular to the road charged upon. This regiment heard the firing, halted and was ready to receive the enemy as they gave way before the flank. Nearly the entire regiment of Federals was captured, about 800 men. The Sixty-third lost two men killed, about twenty wounded, among whom were three Lieutenants. Our greatest loss was Major McNeill, severely wounded in the hip. He was handling his portion of the flank attack very skilfully. He was disabled for many months.

During 18, 19 and 20 June we fought over the ground between Middleburg and Upperville, alternately advancing and retreating. On the morning of the 21st the fighting assumed a fiercer form than heretofore and it was soon evident that the enemy were much stronger than usual. Swinton tells us that "Hooker reinforced his cavalry with a division of infantry, being determined to find out if any of Lee's infantry was east of the mountains." Stuart gradually retired, stubbornly contesting every available position. The fiercest fight was in the streets of Upperville where it became a hand-to-hand conflict. A flank attack by fresh Federal troops decided the conflict and the Confederates retired in more or less disorder. The Captain of the fifth squadron succeeded in getting his men out in fairly good order and was marching leisurely towards Paris when Colonel Evans rode up and said that as this was the only organized body of his regiment he could find, he wished us to get on the turnpike and stop a charge the Yanks were about to make. We were then about two hundred yards off the main turnpike. We moved over on the pike and took position on a gentle acclivity. Very soon General Stuart rode up. He examined the movements of the enemy with his field glass. There was a stone fence about two hundred yards in front of our position and perpendicular to the battle. The enemy had started some skirmishers out to get possession of this fence. General Stuart requested the Captain of the squadron to take about twenty men and get to the fence before them, which was done. The Federal cavalry beginning to advance, Colonel Evans wished

to charge; General Stuart thought best not to charge, but finally yielded to Colonel Evans' wishes and allowed him to make the charge. This charge stopped the Federal advance, but at quite a loss to us. Colonel Evans was mortally wounded and captured, two men and several horses killed and quite a number wounded. Adjutant Morehead had many holes in his clothing and several skin wounds, but nothing serious. Sergeant Henry Hobson, of Company H, a very gallant soldier, was wounded in many places and his clothes riddled. He was captured, but as exchanges were rapid in those days, he soon returned to us but little the worse for his hurts. The enemy made no further advance and the brigade rested that night at Ashby's Gap. For most of the men it was the first experience of the real hardships of war and it was somewhat demoralizing. More men went to Company Q than were wounded and killed. At Ashby's Gap Lieutenant-Colonel Gordon, of the Ninth North Carolina (First Cavalry) took command of the regiment by direction of General Stuart. Gordon gained our confidence and respect at once, and the longer he remained with us the more the feeling grew. Gordon was every inch a soldier and his previous experience in Virginia campaigns enabled him to give us many points about taking care of ourselves and horses which were of great value to us.

TO GETTYSBURG AND BACK.

We advanced next morning over the ground fought over and found no Yankees. Dead horses, head stones to graves and cavalry equipments alone remained to tell of the deadly struggles. It was a beautiful section of country and during the few days we remained in it the inhabitants were very kind to us. Major McClellan, of Stuart's staff, and Colonel John S. Mosby, of partisan fame, both agree that General Robertson was ordered by Stuart to cross the Potomac east of Lee's army and marching between him and the enemy keep Lee well advised of their movements. A squadron captain can not know his Brigadier's orders. He can and does know that we followed the main turnpike previously marched over by the infantry and saw no enemy, heard no hostile shots fired

and (which was far worse) we found no forage for man or beast. The infantry had cleaned up things as they went. We reached the vicinity of Gettysburg a short while before the last and fatal charge by Lee. We halted, dismounted and were resting when the cannonade began. It was very furious, but very brief. At its close we were mounted and moved towards the front. Many of us thought that the victory was ours and the cavalry ordered up to pursue. In a few moments the head of the column turned to the right and rear, and in less than an hour we were skirmishing for a position to protect the lines of retreat. The skirmish was a success, but the question of supper was not so easily solved. No rations had been issued since leaving Ashby's Gap. No foraging was possible in the track of the main army, so we were hungry, such a hunger as civilized man in times of peace never knows. Fortunately for the horses wheat was just ripe and was very fine. They could soon fill themselves. Cherries, raspberries and wheat were our only dependence. One night a squad was bivouacked at a mountain spring and spring house. In the spring house were jars of buttermilk, honey and apple marmalade. We ate more or less abundantly. Let any physician of good standing think of the mixture—cherries, raspberries, wheat, honey, milk, apple marmalade. Strange to say very few got on the sick list. Skirmishing went on more or less every day while we remained north of the Potomac with few casualties. We were the last of the Confederate army to cross the Potomac, doing so by a horse-path ford, on a narrow, winding ledge of rock. The river was flushed by the Gettysburg rains and very deep. Even on the ledge of rock a very slight variation put you at once in swimming water. Several men and horses got off the ledge and swam a little, but no one was drowned. For the next several months after our return to Virginia, no fighting took place. Gordon was recalled to the Ninth North Carolina, his ranking officer having been wounded and disabled. This left the regiment in charge of the ranking Captains, Shaw and Galloway. Soon after our return we learned of the death of Colonel Peter. G. Evans. The officers met and passed suitable resolutions of respect to his memory and Captain Galloway was

requested to communicate with his widow, which was done. A truer friend and a nobler hearted gentleman than Colonel Evans never walked the earth. In the Bristoe Station campaign the regiment did its full share of the fighting and bore its full share of the losses, the most severe loss being its Adjutant, J Turner Morehead. A bullet struck him full in the mouth, breaking nearly all his front teeth out and passing out at the back of his neck, narrowly missing the spinal column. The wound was first thought to be mortal, but youthful hope and a good constitution saved him. He was lost to us, however. A beautiful and accomplished woman consoled his sufferings and effectually cured him of any wish for further participation in the hardships and dangers of a soldier's life.

RETURN TO VIRGINIA.

Soon after the close of active operations for 1863, the regiment was sent home for the winter to recruit men and horses. We reassembled at Henderson, N C., in April, and took up our march for Virginia. We reached the main army 7 May, 1864, and went into battle that evening. In this encounter W A. Lash, since president of the Cape Fear & Yadkin Valley Railroad, an 18-year-old recruit of Company D, Sixty-third, received his "baptism of fire." A fragment of shell tore off the right shoulder lapel of his coat, inflicting bruises. most men would have laid up, some would have died. Lash ate his full share of what rations he could get that night, and was all right for hard and fatiguing duty in pursuit of Sheridan next day In the fall of 1863 the Ninth, Nineteenth, Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina (First, Second, Fourth and Fifth Cavalry), had been put into one brigade and Gordon, as Brigadier, put in command. Gordon was a favorite with Stuart, but no promotion was ever better deserved than this. On the 8th Gordon's Brigade was ordered to press Sheridan's rear while Stuart went on to head him off at Richmond. Gordon pressed vigorously and had several fierce little encounters; finally, at Ground Squirrel Church, a full fledged battle took place.

GROUND SQUIRREL CHURCH.

The force on each side numbered about 2,500. The Sixty-third was under command of Lieutenant-Colonel S. B. Evans, he having returned in the spring. The night before this battle the Captain of the fifth squadron had requested of Colonel Evans to be held in reserve, his squadron having already been more engaged and suffered more loss than any other. Colonel Evans had agreed. This squadron was a mounted reserve. Thick woods were between us and the battle, and as the firing grew faster and faster, we congratulated ourselves on our secure position. Soon a mounted orderly from General Gordon galloped up, requesting our presence on the field. We moved up at the trot and coming on the field saw two regiments of mounted Yankees on the far side. The Ninth North Carolina (First Cavalry) had charged one of these and was fighting hand-to-hand. Dismounted men of both sides were actively engaged as sharpshooters. The Captain of the Fifth squadron ordered a charge straight for the centre of the other mounted Yankee regiment. With the famous rebel yell the charge was made. It broke that regiment. The other Yanks seeing it break, gave way also, and the field was soon clear. General Gordon coming up told the Captain of the Fifth squadron that he had not intended him to charge, but only to show force, but it was all right gallantly done, and had decided the day. In this engagement Lieutenant Kerr Craige, Company I, Ninth Regiment (since Assistant Postmaster General of the United States), had his horse killed under him and a private of Company D, of our regiment, had the pleasure of furnishing him a captured mount for a short time. No other decided stand was made by the enemy until we reached Richmond. In reconnoitering their position at a bridge not far from Richmond, General Gordon received a wound which proved to be mortal. Stuart and he died in a few days of each other. *Par nobile fratrum.* Lieutenant-Colonel Clinton M. Andrews, of the Nineteenth, took charge of us for a few days, when Brigadier-General Pierce M. B. Young, of Georgia, came to us. He was the beau ideal of a cavalry leader and took our hearts by storm. His favorite motto going into action was, "Here goes for hell or

promotion." He certainly took big chances for the locality and got no more of the promotion than he deserved. He remained with us about two weeks when he, too, was wounded. A saying arose among the men that no one could lead us long without being hurt. After a short interval Lieutenant-Colonel Barringer, of the Ninth, was promoted Brigadier and put in charge of us. He was a very different man from Gordon or Young. Brave enough, but of a prudent, methodical, cautious temperament. At Hanover Town, at Todd's tavern, we fought with many casualties. Not a day passed without some hostile firing, no two nights did we sleep on the same ground. When the two armies finally settled into the lines around Petersburg, Kautz and Wilson were sent on the raid to destroy the railroads to Richmond. We were sent in pursuit.

BLACKS AND WHITES.

At "Blacks and Whites" a serious contest took place. The Sixty-third was that day marching in rear of the brigade. An orderly came back to hurry it up. Advancing at the trot we came to a clump of woods in which rapid firing was going on. The regiment was ordered to dismount and go in. Lieutenant-Colonel Evans turned over to Captain Galloway the command of the dismounted men, who then went forward. We soon came to the line of the Ninth and Nineteenth Regiments. Furious firing was going on, but as the men were behind trees, no damage was done. After a few minutes Captain Galloway called for volunteers to go to the front. Only one man offered, James Hand, of Company D. Advancing to the edge of the woods they came to a deep railroad cut, on the opposite side of which, in thick woods, the enemy were. As the dirt road crossed the railroad at right angles and with a deep cut they could not be attacked in front or right flank. The left flank, however, could be attacked by going up the railroad. The Captain and Hand retired, each receiving a bullet in the hat brim as they retired. Hunting Lieutenant-Colonel Cowles, of the Ninth, the ranking officer in the fight and a gallant soldier at all times and in all places, Galloway explained the situation. Cowles at once directed that a

squad of men be sent to cross the railroad and advance on the Federal left flank. No sooner did these men begin to cross the railroad than the enemy fired one or two big volleys and retired. Had the expedient been adopted sooner much valuable time and some ammunition might have been saved. Our greatest loss in this engagement was Colonel Andrews, of the Nineteenth. He was wounded and died under the surgeon's knife. The enemy made no further stand till Roanoke bridge. Here they had already been stopped by some boys and old men and furloughed soldiers. They delayed us by a long range cannonade until they could get away, which they did, leaving only a few broken down horses and unserviceable guns behind them. Our force had been much decreased, chiefly by breaking down. It was decided to pursue with a few choice men and horses and let the others, a very large majority, proceed leisurely to camp. We met no further opposition. Hampton had made his dispositions so well that finding all avenues of escape in a body effectually blocked, the raiders decided to break up and try to escape singly or in squads. In the general break up which followed Sergeant Ratcliff, of the Sixty-third, had the good luck to capture a Federal Colonel with a magnificent gray horse superbly caparisoned. By the Partisan Ranger act this horse and trappings became at once the absolute property of Sergeant Ratcliff. Unfortunately for him the horse attracted the attention of General Barringer. Partly by persuasion, partly by authority Ratcliff was induced to exchange with the General. Ratcliff got a serviceable black chunk of a horse. The General got a charger fit for Charles O'Malley in his best days. By a curious coincidence when General Barringer was captured in April, 1865, this Yankee Colonel was in the crowd which captured him. His first words were, "I'll be damned, if yonder ain't my horse." Hence we infer that Yankee Colonels do not have the benefits of Sunday School training, or soon forget it.

NORTH OF THE JAMES.

After this raid the cavalry had a few weeks comparative

rest, though there was daily picket firing. Grant's efforts to get a foothold on the Weldon Railroad generally began by a movement on the north bank of the James. The cavalry would be hurried over there and generally brought back more rapidly than we went. These movements, however, were always attended with more or less fighting. On or about 20 August, we were hurriedly moved across and came on the wreck of Chambliss' Cavalry brigade about 1 p. m. Chambliss had been killed doing his very best with his little force to stem the torrent. The North Carolina brigade went in, and the enemy began to retire, we followed them over all the ground they had advanced over, meeting but little resistance, losing only six men killed and wounded. Grant had accomplished his object, and was retiring anyhow. The Richmond papers of next morning did not mention the North Carolina cavalry brigade at all, but gave all the credit of resisting Grant and driving him back to Chambliss' Brigade.

Among the wounded was Lieutenant Grier, of Charlotte, N. C. The wound was slight, and Grier being a good soldier, would not have left the field but for the fact that his mess had left several choice watermelons with the wagons that morning. Grier could not resist the temptation of leading in the attack on the melons, and when his mess returned to the wagons, both Grier and the melons were gone. He soon returned, but never boasted of his exploit.

About sundown we stopped pursuit, and were marched all night back to the south side. In the morning we were put in, and after a sharp resistance, started the enemy. We pursued eagerly until met by the deadliest and heaviest single discharge we had ever known. It came from an infantry breastwork covering the Weldon Railroad, now in possession of the Federals. Captain Galloway and at least a dozen men of Company D, Sixty-third, fell under this volley. In a short time our line was withdrawn and the enemy remained master of the Weldon road.

In Hampton's famous cattle raid the Sixty-third did its part, but sustained no loss. Towards the latter part of September, Lieutenant-Colonel S. B. Evans having retired, the question of promotion in the regiment came up. Captain

Harris raised the point of superiority with Captain Galloway. It was based on a technical question of what constituted a "muster in." It was referred to the Adjutant-General's office Richmond, and decided in favor of Captain Galloway.

In October, 1864, the promotions took place. Major McNeill became Colonel, Captain Shaw Lieutenant-Colonel, Captain Galloway Major. They were "read out" at dress parade. In the latter days of the Confederacy this was the only commission given to any one below the grade of Brigadier-General.

Some very severe fighting took place in October, one fact of which will always remain indelibly impressed on the writer's mind. One day the Federals advanced, the Confederates retired contesting all the ground, the next day the Confederates advanced, driving the enemy over the same ground. There lay the dead of the previous day entirely naked and most of them partially eaten up by hogs. It was calculated to unnerve the stoutest heart.

During the winter of 1865 we suffered unspeakably, the ration was not enough to keep a man in vigor, even if regularly issued. It frequently was not so issued, and we of the cavalry would parch corn and eat it.

FIVE FORKS.

Five Forks 1 April, 1865, ended the fighting for us. It was the most ill-advised and murderous battle in which we ever engaged. The Sixty-third lost Colonel McNeill, Lieutenant-Colonel Shaw, Lieutenant Lindsay, and a host of gallant soldiers of the line. Lieutenant Lindsay told his comrades to turn him on his face and go ahead, a speech worthy of Bayard or Lawrence. Lieutenant-Colonel Shaw was exempt on three points, age, practicing physician, twenty negroes. He was in delicate health, but with a patriotism and self-sacrifice worthy of an ancient Roman, he stuck to us to the last. Of Colonel McNeill, I have already spoken. One squadron, the fifth, was not in this fight; in charge of Acting Major Erwin, it was on vidette.

Major Galloway was in Petersburg having a wound attended to. He came up with the remnant of the regiment at

Clover depot, took command of it and with the remnant of the brigade headed for Farmville, he was met by a staff officer bringing news of Lee's surrender and directing us to report at Danville, Va. Here we were met by instructions from the Secretary of War to go to our homes and await instructions, the commanding officer of each regiment to report to General Johnston at Greensboro. This was done and when General Johnston surrendered most of the regiment took paroles—some never did.

CAVALRY *v.* INFANTRY.

During the first and second years of the war the cavalry did very little hard fighting. The infantry taunted them more or less. In the third and fourth years the cavalry service was the hardest, while no one battle approximated Gettysburg, the many skirmishes made an aggregate loss fully equal. Company D, of the Sixty-third, went into action 7 May, 1864, with 68 men in the saddle. 21 August Captain Galloway was wounded. All the other officers had been wounded and 44 of the 68 privates had been hit; six killed on the field.

CONFEDERATE CAVALRY *v.* FEDERAL CAVALRY.

All military men agree that the fighting capacity of men depends greatly on physical vigor and efficient equipment. Physical vigor depends greatly on healthy food and protection from weather. The Confederates had one-fourth pound Nassau bacon and one-half pound corn meal. The Federals had the full United States army rations—meat, bread, vegetables, coffee, sugar. The Confederates had no tent, no fly cloths, and very little clothes except what they got from home. The Federals had tents for their camps and on the march every man had the half of a rubber fly tent. In bivouac two men joined flies, stretched it over a pole and were protected from the hardest rain or severest frost.

MILITARY EQUIPMENT.

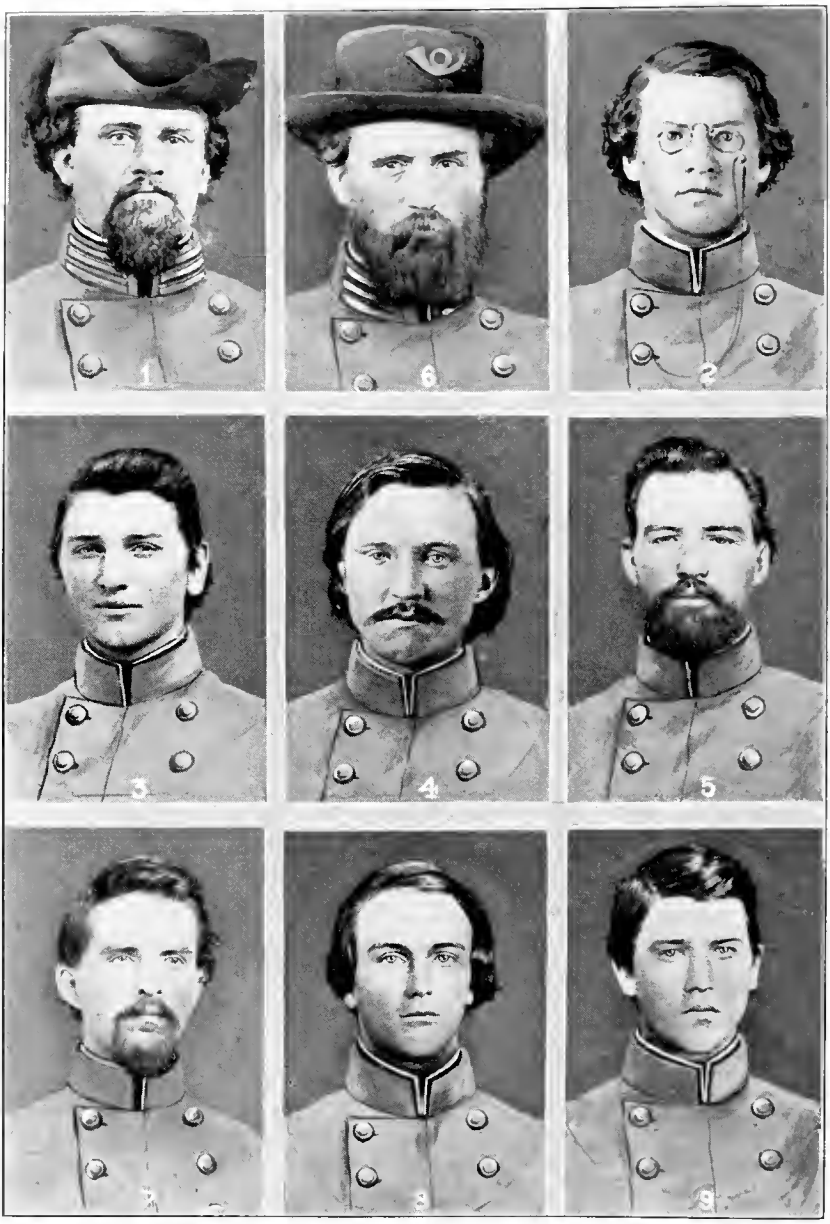
The Confederate trooper had issued to him a saddle, a haversack, a canteen, a part of a bridle, an English carbine, a

nondescript sabre. A new recruit was always advised to throw away or not draw any of these things, but wait till a battle gave him a chance to get "something worth totin'" The saddle ruined a horse's back, the canteen leaked, the haversack of cotton cloth was no protection, the English carbine was muzzle-loading and would not carry a ball fifty yards accurately. The Yankee McClellan saddle was and is the best army saddle ever invented by the wit of man. The canteen would hold a quart and was covered with woolen cloth, cork stopper chained to the canteen, complete in every way. The haversack was capacious and waterproof. Each trooper had a Spencer rifle which would shoot eight times without reloading and then could be reloaded at the breech for eight shots more, more quickly than the English carbine for one shot. These rifles would shoot accurately 1,000 yards, and would carry much farther. Each trooper also had a Colt's army revolver, shooting six shots without reloading, carrying farther and with more accuracy then the English carbine. Each Yankee thus had fourteen shots to the Confederate's one, each one of the fourteen more capable of doing harm than the Confederate's one.

The only wonder is that the Confederate ever stood before him at all. He only did it by capturing his armament. It was a certain sign of a new recruit to see him with any article of Confederate equipment about him.

JOHN M. GALLOWAY.

MADISON, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. John R. Erwin, Captain, Co. F.
2. Paul B. Means, Private, Co. F.
3. J. S. Harris, Private, Co. F. Hampton's Scout.
4. R. B. Caldwell, Private, Co. F.
5. Denson A. Caldwell, Private, Co. F.
6. N. P. Rankin, Captain, Co. I.
7. D. B. Coltrane, Sergeant, Co. I.
8. Christopher C. Waller, Private, Co. I.
9. Columbus C. Wheeler, Private, Co. I

ADDITIONAL SKETCH SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

(FIFTH CAVALRY.)

By PAUL B. MEANS, Private, Company F.

The Fifth North Carolina Cavalry was a superb regiment in every respect. It was composed of representative men, mostly active, intelligent young men, from the counties of Cumberland, Lenoir, Greene, Sampson, Rockingham, Chatham, Mecklenburg, Davie, Guilford, Randolph, Lincoln, Catawba, Cabarrus and a few other counties.

The moral character of this great body of men was remarkable. After diligent enquiry, there was not a grave offense of any sort, done in camp or elsewhere by any man of the regiment during the entire war, which survivors of the regiment now remember. Of course minor offenses were doubtless done, but none grave enough to be remembered today. And this is stated and emphasized because there can be no true courage without moral character as its basis. Such courage is of the soul. It is a purely psychological phenomenon. The soul is of God and cannot assert itself fully in an immoral person. And when the soul is not on guard, not supreme, we are all cowards at heart in the face of any great and recognized danger. And then, like any other simple animal, under this trying test, we will run, unless somebody else's soul restrains us or our own rallies us. In camp, on the march and on picket every duty was well done. In battle, whether fighting on foot, as infantry, or in the mounted charge, there never was any better troops. The First North Carolina Cavalry had a greater reputation than the Second, Third and the Fifth Cavalry, which, with it, constituted the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade, in the last years of the war.* But

*Colloquially so styled but by orders of the Adjutant-General's Department the First, Second, Third, Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, Seventh and Eighth Cavalry Regiments were styled respectively Ninth, Nineteenth, Forty-First, Fifty-Ninth, Sixty-Third, Seventy-Fifth and Seventy-Sixth North Carolina Regiments.—Ed.

this was because of the longer service of the First in Virginia and because of some peculiar advantages from its earliest, dashing, Murat-like field and other officers and especially because of its opportunities for fame ahead of the other regiments. But the Fifth was actually just as good as the First in every way and either regiment of the brigade was worthy to ride in the front rank of "The Old Guard" in a charge or fight, dismounted, side by side with the best British infantry of to-day. The First, fortunately for itself, simply won its great fame earlier and most worthily maintained it to the end. And the officers of the First have most beautifully and harmoniously vied with each other in perpetuating that fame, as can readily be seen by reading its splendid history in the first of these volumes. I wish that in North Carolina's "Temple of Fame" there were such glorious paintings, deservedly glorious paintings, of each regiment of our great cavalry brigade as the officers of the First, have in unison, made for it; where, Aeneas-like, the children of the immortal men of that brigade, regardless of regiments, together could stand and say: Of all these glories our fathers were "a great part." And it painfully hurts me that I cannot make such a painting for the Fifth North Carolina Cavalry.

THE AUTHENTICITY OF THIS PAPER.

1. It is based largely on the printed reports of Confederate and Federal cavalry officers in that great work published by the United States Government and entitled *Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies.* To the volumes of which I will refer by their *serial number* as Vol. —, p. —. The serial number is in figures on back of all the books after and including No. 36.

Every Confederate soldier and their children for all time should ever be grateful to the United States for the publication of those records. They make complete and eternal the fame of our dead Confederacy as nothing else could. And when, in the distant future, far from the sound of the guns and untouched by any of the feelings of our war, the great, cool, philosophical historian, whom God shall give this beloved republic, under the guidance of the "spirit of truth"

and seeking the truth and the truth alone for the love of truth, shall have given his entire life to a careful examination and study of those great volumes and shall have fully and faithfully done his work, as he will, it will reflect the splendors and glories of the South for the admiration of the ages, the stigma of "rebellion" all forever gone under the light of truth.

2. I have recently visited and talked with every member of the regiment I could reach and taken down, in their presence, their memories. I have written to many others whom I could not see and asked their recollections. Some have most kindly and generously helped me and some have not. And where any deserved mention of the regiment or any member of it is not made I am not responsible. I did not see it all and could not remember it if I had. But I did my best to get personal incidents especially.

3. As a courier at headquarters of the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade, I had a large scope of observation and I used it. In this capacity I had the very best opportunities to compare and judge the regiments of this brigade in their camps, and on their marches and especially as I rode, with orders, along their lines of battle. My judgment of the regiments of the brigade is, therefore, the result of careful comparison, without which no judgment is good.

4. And it is also based on printed "Sketches of the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade," which I published in the Concord *Sun* in April, 1881, from "full notes and official reports," made contemporaneously with the events. Of these sketches General Barringer and Colonel Cheek, Colonel of the First North Carolina Cavalry, wrote as follows to the editor of the *Sun*, at the time of their publication.

General Barringer wrote thus:

CHARLOTTE, N. C., May 3, 1881.

Mr. Wade H. Harris, Editor of The Sun, Concord, N C.:

DEAR SIR: I have read with very great interest "Sketches of the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade," by Colonel P B. Means, and I have often been asked if these articles give authentic reports of the operations of my old command. I am

able to state unhesitatingly that they do. I happen to know that Colonel Means has in his possession full notes and official reports of nearly all the actions and incidents alluded to, and I think he has used his material wisely and impartially. Of course in mere "sketches" there must be many omissions; and yet Colonel Means has so grouped his facts as to give a very vivid picture of the achievements of the North Carolina Cavalry. People wonder that the cavalry accomplished so much. And it surely afforded me great pleasure to see my comrades in arms so fully and ably vindicated. Colonel Means, though a mere boy when he volunteered, was allotted to my headquarters after some service as a private in the Fifth Cavalry Regiment and bore a gallant and conspicuous part in most of the movements recounted and he does but justice to the North Carolina troops when he claims for the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade a heroic place in the glorious record of the Army of Northern Virginia.

Respectfully and truly yours,

RUFUS BARRINGER,

Brigadier-General North Carolina Cavalry.

After acknowledging to the editor "copies of the Concord *Sun* containing sketches of the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade," Colonel W. H. Cheek, in part, wrote thus:

"These articles I have read with much interest, and I am glad to see that some of the daring deeds of that brave command are being put in print and transmitted to posterity. If thorough discipline, cool courage, dash and reckless daring are qualities that adorn and beautify the name of soldier, then this North Carolina Cavalry Brigade and especially the First North Carolina Regiment has a rich legacy of fame to bequeath to coming generations.

"Of the correctness of your correspondent as to the part taken by the several regiments composing the brigade in the different engagements he describes, I suppose and believe that in the main he is generally correct."

Of course you could not get any officer or man of the First to praise the brigade without his giving a special tribute of his love to the First. No more than you could get an officer

or man of the "Tenth Legion" to praise the then conquering forces of the world without his saying just a little more for that wonderful legion than he could for all the armies of Rome. But it is a beautiful and pardonable pride which every officer and man of the other three regiments salutes as the "Old First" passes in review.

It is presumed that the readers of these volumes, entitled "North Carolina Regiments, 1861-'65," will be intelligent investigators of history. All such will want to know each writer's authority for his statements. I have, therefore, given mine, and in preparing this paper on the foregoing bases, my highest aim has been to follow the direction of Judge Walter Clark, the editor of this work, as to accuracy. On 8 August, 1901, he wrote me about this paper: "Be sure your history is accurate and reads well afterwards." By which, of course, he meant sacrifice style and everything to truth. I answered him 9 August: "You struck the keynote of my whole purpose in your words about accuracy. I prove all things."

I am especially indebted and gratified to General F C. Ainsworth, Chief of Record and Pension Bureau, War Department, Washington, D. C., for invaluable aid in finding some records I refer to.

THE REGIMENT ORGANIZED AS REGULAR CAVALRY.

All the companies of the regiment and the names of their officers and men are given with some accuracy in Moore's "Roster of North Carolina Troops," Volume IV, beginning at page 21 under the title of the "Sixty-third Regiment." A perfect roster of all North Carolina regiments is being prepared by the United Confederate Veterans of North Carolina through Dr. B. F Dixon, now State Auditor. To these rosters I refer the reader for information about companies, without attempting it here from imperfect data.

There was an act of the Confederate Congress, approved 21 April, 1862, "to organize bands of Partisan Rangers." Under this act some of the companies of the Sixty-third (Fifth Cavalry) enlisted. Captain N P Rankin, of Company I, in a sketch of this regiment, published in the Frank-

lin *Press*, Macon county, N. C., 29 August, and 12 September, 1900, says this about its organization:

"Major White, a Virginian, connected with the ordnance department at Greensboro, received authority from the Secretary of War to raise a battalion of mounted men to be known as 'Partisan Rangers,' to operate under 'Stonewall' Jackson in the Valley of Virginia. Four companies were thus enlisted—three in the county of Guilford, to-wit: Wharton's, Faucett's and Rankin's, and one in Davie county, Captain Booe's. In August, I think, these companies were mustered into service, and soon afterward orders to report to General Robertson at Garysburg, near Weldon, N. C., were received. My own and Captain Booe's companies moved promptly and reported to General Robertson as ordered, the other two companies following a few days later. On our arrival it was learned that a regiment was to be formed by uniting our battalion and that of Major Evans, who had a similar organization in the eastern part of the State. In fact, other detachments were ordered to this point sufficient to form two regiments, afterwards commanded respectively by Colonels Evans and Ferrebee, composing Robertson's Brigade and thus instead of a body of Partisan Rangers, we became parts of regiments of regular troops. The companies of Wharton, Booe and Rankin were assigned to Colonel Evans' Regiment, and Faucett to Colonel Ferrebee's."

*Volume 69, page 1252, *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies*, General R. E. Lee, writing General Cooper, Adjutant and Inspector General, 1 April, 1864, says:

"Your circular of 23 March with reference to Partisan Rangers has been received. The organizations of Partisan Rangers with this army are the Fourth and Fifth North Carolina Cavalry," etc. "Of these, the Fourth and Fifth North Carolina Regiments have been serving as regular cavalry, and will come under Act No. 19, published in General Orders No. 29, Adjutant and Inspector General's Office, current series, being continued in their present organization as

*It will be remembered that all through this sketch the citations are to the *Serial* Volume, or No.—ED.

regular cavalry." And in the same paper General Lee thus expresses his opinion of Partisan Rangers:

"Experience has convinced me that it is almost impossible, under the best officers even, to have discipline in these bands of Partisan Rangers, or to prevent them from becoming an injury instead of a benefit to the service."

On page 194, Vol. 129, is found that part of "General Orders No. 29," referred to by General Lee. It thereby appears that the Partisan Rangers act of 21 April, 1862, was repealed 17 February, 1864, and that all so-called Partisan Rangers "acting as regular cavalry shall be continued in their present organizations and shall hereafter be considered as regular cavalry and not as Partisan Rangers."

Thus, while the name of their enlistment seems to have attached for some time to the Sixty-third (Fifth Cavalry) as Partisan Rangers, according to Captain Rankin and the record, they were in fact always "regular cavalry," and thus freed from the ill repute given Partisan Rangers by General Lee.

The organization of the regiment occurred at Garysburg in August, 1862, with Peter G. Evans as Colonel; Stephen B. Evans, Lieutenant-Colonel; James M. McNeill, Major; J. Turner Morehead, Adjutant, and Charles Haigh, Sergeant Major, and, shortly after on 10 October, 1862, this regiment became a part of General Beverly H. Robertson's Cavalry Brigade at Garysburg, in accordance with orders in Volume 40, page 823.

SERVICES IN NORTH CAROLINA.

The regiment did duty in Eastern North Carolina until May, 1863, when it joined the Army of Northern Virginia. General Robertson was "a good organizer and instructor," as General R. E. Lee, himself, terms him in Vol. 26, page 1088. And under his instruction and West Point discipline the regiment was well drilled in cavalry tactics, perfected in picket duty on outposts and trained in other elements of its future greatness and was also in action in North Carolina.

THE FIGHT AT PLYMOUTH.

This was a very successful and in some respects peculiar

and amusing affair. The attack, well premeditated, occurred between 4 and 5 o'clock on the morning of 10 December, 1862. Lieutenant-Colonel John C. Lamb, of the Seventeenth North Carolina Infantry, was in command of all the forces, and Lieutenant-Colonel S. B. Evans, of that part of the Sixty-third (Fifth Cavalry) which was present. Most of the enemy's pickets were captured and our cavalry went upon the town with a rush in the face of volleys from the Federal infantry who quickly broke in all directions and took refuge in and behind the custom house. The gunboat Southfield was in the river in rear of the town and before and after she was disabled kept up a brisk firing with her guns. She was shot "through the boiler" at the third fire of our artillery and then drifted. Captain Galloway, of the Sixty-third, was wounded and six men. The demoralization of the enemy was complete and their official reports of the affair, Vol. 26, pages 45-49, are ridiculous and pitiful. They all bear evidence of terrible fright. The commandant of the port, Captain Ewer, at 7 p. m., 11 December, says: "All this day they have been stationed outside of the town." But he could not attack, the health of his men being seriously affected by guard and picket duty. And Lieutenant Mizell on 16 December, six days after the fight, says that "he resumed his seat for the purpose of reporting the attack," and that he "heard they had four wagon loads of killed and wounded." "The best and most principal parts of the town are burned up. The families of our men are left without a change of clothing. We have lost all our books, pay and muster rolls, a quantity of clothing belonging to the men and some ammunition. I believe I have given all the particulars that I can think of." Lieutenant Flusser, a brave man of the United States gunboat Perry, to whom all the reports were referred for information, says that he found Ewer on the Southfield a mile and a half down the river; did not know where his men were, but "hoped most of them were in the swamp," that is, those not captured; that as "soon as the Southfield fell back (which she ought maybe not to have done) Ewer got frightened, left his men and went on board. The whole affair was disgraceful."

Fighting gunboats with cavalry took place several times in our war. For instance, the attack by Lieutenant A. B. Andrews, Ninth North Carolina, upon this same Lieutenant Flusser 9 July, 1862, Vol. 1, p. 446, of this work, the capture of a gunboat in New River by Company A, Forty-first North Carolina, and attack on Washington, N. C., by cavalry, *see* Vol. 2 (of this work), pp. 774-775, and Lieutenant Thomas Ruffin's capture of a gunboat on the Chowan with a part of his company of the Fifty-ninth North Carolina, present volume, p. 459, and there are other instances recorded in these volumes. General Fitzhugh Lee fought gunboats with his cavalry command at Kinnon's Landing on the James 25 May, 1864, and General Bedford Forrest did the same feat repeatedly, and in fact captured and disabled several boats.

THE BATTLE OF WHITE HALL.

On the morning of 11 December, 1862, the Federal General Foster left New Bern, N. C., on his expedition against Goldsboro, with 10,000 infantry, 40 pieces of artillery and 640 cavalry. Vol. 26, page 54. On the 14th the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina (Fourth and Fifth Cavalry) were moved from Garysburg by train, via Goldsboro, to Moseley Hall, now LaGrange, on the railroad between Goldsboro and Kinston, the horses being sent through the country. On 16 December a fierce fight raged for several hours at White Hall bridge, over the Neuse, and while the Sixty-third (Fifth Cavalry) was held in reserve dismounted and not actively engaged in this battle they were under heavy artillery fire sufficiently to show their mettle. The explosion of an 18-pounder near their colors, as the regiment marched as on dress parade to the front, gave the men an idea of what war meant. In his report of this battle General Robertson says:

"The Fifty-ninth (Fourth Cavalry) and the Sixty-third (Fifth Cavalry) Regiments, although in reserve, were nevertheless exposed to a galling fire from the enemy's artillery. A few were killed and a number wounded. Both officers and men behaved admirably." Vol. 26, p. 122.

To show the discipline of the officers and men at this time,

by a small matter full of meaning, as the line of the Sixty-third marched to the front, in almost perfect alignment and order, with Colonel Evans in the centre and lead he struck the middle of the edge of a long lake of water about one-third of the regiment's length in width and about three feet deep. Colonel Evans marched right through the lake straight to the front and every man on that part of the line did the same. Older soldiers, with more experience, not in the immediate face of the enemy, would have opened ranks and gone around that water on that cold December day. But the Sixty-third was on dress parade in its first great fight and it kept "right dress."

COMPANIES C, I, AND G.

After the affair at White Hall, Companies C and I went on detached duty, of which Captain Rankin wrote in the *Franklin Press* as follows:

"Our horses were soon after ordered around to Goldsboro, and the regiment was divided up into detachments for picket duty, hence I can speak only of my squadron. At first it consisted of Companies C and I, Captain Shaw commanding. Shaw's company was soon relieved by Company G, Captain McLenahan. The squadron was thereafter commanded by the writer until it rejoined the regiment in the spring.

"With headquarters at Wise's Fork, we did picket duty on all the roads leading into the city of New Bern. Some skirmishing occurred on the picket lines, and two or three times the enemy made demonstrations in force, and was met by a counter move by our infantry encamped around Kinston. At such times the squadron had hard times. Of course the enemy showed us no favor, and our own footmen did not appreciate very greatly a man on horseback, as was shown when one of my Lieutenants, who had a spat with the enemy on the picket line reported the fact to General D. H. Hill, the general carelessly asked if any one got hurt, and expressed a desire to see a 'dead man with spurs on.' In the spring of 1863 orders were received for the squadron to rejoin the regiment at Richmond, Va. This was accomplished by march-

ing from Kinston through the country to the latter point, the squadron being several days behind the regiment.

"There we drew fresh clothing, saddles, bridles and other equipments, preparatory to going to the front. Passing through Richmond to Culpepper Court House, we arrived in time to join in the grand review of all the cavalry by General Lee, just before the noted cavalry fight at Brandy Station."

COMPLIMENT FROM THE ENEMY.

In their operations in Eastern Carolina the Sixty-third occasionally met the Fifty-eighth Pennsylvania Infantry and their commander, Colonel J. Richter Jones, 8 March, 1863, on page 161, Vol. 26, says of this regiment: "They are a different class of troops from those we have hitherto met, contesting successively every strong position and giving way only to very superior numbers."

LIEUTENANT W J. WILEY, COMPANY F.

On page 197 Vol. 26, General Robertson reports: "With a view to carrying out the instruction of the Major-General commanding, D. H. Hill, I detached a party under Lieutenant W J Wiley, Company F, Sixty-third Regiment, with directions to move rapidly and cut the railroad between Sheppardsville and New Bern. * * * Some time before day Lieutenant Wiley's party returned and reported they had torn up the railroad track at a point three miles above Sheppardsville. From the proximity of the enemy's forces they were compelled to wait till after night to commence operations. I was highly gratified with the promptness and efficiency displayed by Lieutenant Wiley and party." This was done 13 March, 1863. The party with Wiley consisted of Denson A. Caldwell, R. Baxter Caldwell, two as good soldiers as ever rode in the ranks, and others. And even General D. H. Hill, with his well known dislike to cavalry, says this: "Robertson sent me out a Lieutenant who partly cut the railroad." Vol. 26, p. 189. His feeling about cavalry was amusing. Writing to Secretary of War Seddon, 5 May, 1863, General Hill says: "In the whole brigade of cavalry there has been but one man killed in the war. I propose to have a magnificent monument

erected to his memory." Vol. 26, p. 1048. General R. E. Lee spoke of the cavalry as "My eyes and ears," and after Jackson and A. P Hill were wounded at Chancellorsville General Lee put our cavalry leader, General J E. B. Stuart, in their place to command, and on page 803, Vol. 39, in his official report of Chancellorsville, General Lee speaks most exaltedly of this cavalryman and his action and ability in that great battle.

THE SIXTY-THIRD SELECTED BY GENERAL R. E. LEE.

General Lee's accurate knowledge, even to minute details of every regiment in the Southern armies is astounding to any one carefully studying the *"Official Records Union and Confederate Armies."* He knew how each was mounted and armed and he knew any petty jealousies and differences among the officers of a regiment that might weaken its efficiency. His choice of a regiment, therefore, was a great credit to that regiment.

21 April, 1863, S. Cooper, the Adjutant and Inspector General of the Confederacy, wrote General R. E. Lee:

"The President has shown me your letter of the 20th instant on the subject of an increase of cavalry for your command." He then offered General Lee a list of six regiments to choose from, and continues: "The President suggests that you make your selection of three regiments and give the necessary orders in the case." Vol. 40, p. 741. He selected the Nineteenth, Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments (Second, Fourth and Fifth Cavalry). Thus the Sixty-third North Carolina went to Virginia, in May, 1863, by General R. E. Lee's own selection.

The Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina (Fourth and Fifth Cavalry), constituted Robertson's Brigade in Virginia and jointly numbered 1,068 "effective mounted men" and 67 officers, and was one of the six brigades constituting Stuart's Division of Cavalry The Fifty-ninth had 568 men and 36 officers, and the Sixty-third 500 men and 31 officers, and were the two largest regiments in the division, except the Ninth North Carolina (First Cavalry) and the Ninth Virginia, which had, respectively, 534 officers and men

and 616 officers and men. Vol 40, p. 823. Thus, at the opening of the great campaign of 1863, we stood about the best of all General Lee's cavalry. Great and startling events now occur fast—fatally for many of the Sixty-third, famously for all of it.

BRANDY STATION OR FLEETWOOD.

Without incident worthy of note after arriving in Virginia, the Sixty-third Regiment was in the grand review General R. E. Lee made of all Stuart's Cavalry near Brandy Station, 8 June, 1863. It was the greatest gathering of Southern cavalry ever seen. And no regiment there made a better appearance than the Sixty-third North Carolina. That review was a grand pageant and a glorious sight. But another sight and other sounds greeted us the next morning.

On 7 June the Federal cavalry general, Pleasanton, was ordered by General Hooker, commanding the Northern army, to "cross the Rappahannock at Beverly and Kelly's Fords and march directly on Culpepper," with "the object in view to disperse and destroy the rebel force assembled in the vicinity of Culpepper, and to destroy his trains and supplies of all description to the utmost of your ability. It is believed that the enemy has no infantry." Vol. 45, p. 27-28. That "rebel force" was Stuart's Cavalry, in all, 9,536. Pleasanton had 10,980 horsemen, with a large force of infantry and artillery The same order, just cited, also said to General Pleasanton: "If you should succeed in routing the enemy, the general desires that you will follow him vigorously as far as it may be to our advantage to do so." Vol. 45, p. 28. Under this order, at dawn of 9 June, there was a mighty crossing by Federal cavalry at Beverly Ford, above the railroad and at Kelly's, south of it. Part of the Sixty-third Regiment was on picket at and near Kelly's Ford, among them a detachment from Company F, under Lieutenant Wiley All the pickets at both fords were soon driven in, and the greatest purely cavalry battle of the war ensued. It was a fight with the saber and pistol by charging squadrons and horse artillery and "the cannoneers were for a time engaged hand-to-hand with the enemy." Stuart's report, Vol. 44, p. 681.

Such a fight could not be described here. Besides the Sixty-third North Carolina did not participate in the glories of these charges because of its distant position at Kelly's Ford. But it played an important part in checking the enemy's "infantry, artillery and cavalry, marching directly upon the right flank of our troops engaged in front of Rappahannock Station." General Robertson's report, Vol. 45, p. 734.

At the great crisis of the battle a courier from General Stuart directed General Robertson to advance rapidly with one regiment and report to him, as the enemy had possession of Stuart's headquarters on Fleetwood Hill. General Robertson selected the Sixty-third Regiment and pushed rapidly forward, but Hampton and Young with their commands, and Baker, with the Ninth North Carolina, by "a series of charges, most successful and brilliant," drove them off and captured their artillery and cannoneers just in front of the Sixty-third Regiment, without its striking a blow. Vol. 45, p. 736 and 682. On page 683 General Stuart says: "General Robertson's command, though not engaged, was exposed to the enemy's artillery fire, and behaved well." The battle lasted from early in the morning till late in the afternoon.

In the evening of 9 June, General Pleasanton, from the same side of the Rappahannock, where he received his orders of 7 July, sent "the following important dispatches" to General Stahl: "The enemy has his whole cavalry force here and I have had a severe fight. Please send some cars down this side of Bealton for our wounded. Have crossed. Enemy in some force of cavalry." Vol. 45, p. 38. And to General Stuart on the 10th he wrote: "I am anxious to obtain information as to the condition of a number of officers of my command who were left in your hands yesterday, to obtain the bodies of the dead and the privilege of sending medical supplies and comfort to those who are wounded." Vol. 45, p. 46. And thus ended the orders "to disperse and destroy the rebel force assembled in the vicinity of Culpepper." All was done by our cavalry alone. Of it General Robert E. Lee wrote to General Stuart: "The result of the action calls for our grateful thanks to Almighty God, and is honorable alike to the officers and men engaged. Vol. 44, p. 687.

MIDDLEBURG AND UPPERVILLE.

All cavalrymen of the Army of Northern Virginia stop to listen when you say "Middleburg and Upperville." Those names are full of great and also sad memories to them. Great for their glorious charges and conflicts; sad for the comrades who fell there. Our cavalry fought fiercely for a great purpose those days at Middleburg and Upperville. The greatest crisis of the war was approaching. Mighty movements were going on. Ewell was pressing up the Valley on his march to Pennsylvania, which purpose was positively known only to a very few but frightfully feared by the North. Winchester and Martinsburg had fallen and Milroy had been "wiped out." Mr. Lincoln had issued, 15 June, his proclamation calling for 100,000 additional men to meet the fearful invasion. Vol. 45, p. 136. Longstreet's great corps was stealthily moving near the base of the mountains "east of the Blue Ridge," making for Ashby Gap to follow Ewell, A. P Hill was to follow Longstreet closely for Chester Gap, and Stuart's Cavalry had crossed the Rappahannock, 16 June, (the Sixty-third Regiment at Hinson's Mills), and were in the Northern part of Fauquier county the night of 16 June, all bivouacked near Salem. Vol. 44, pp. 295, 687, 688, and Vol. 45, p. 896. Now to understand and appreciate what immediately follows and the consequent magnitude of the part therein of the Sixty-third, three things must be borne in mind:

1. General Lee was making his mightiest moves of the war and he was anxious above all things to keep them secret.

2. Stuart knew the great secret fully and was guarding it with his cavalry alone.

3. The enemy were in absolute ignorance as to Lee's position and purpose. Their suspense was supreme and they were determined to locate him at any cost. It must be remembered also that this great move began long before any of it was seen. At its start, McLaws' Division was withdrawn from Fredericksburg 3 June, 1863. Vol. 44, p. 293.

"Longstreet and Ewell were put in motion and encamped around Culpepper Court House 7 June." Vol. 44, p. 313. The very day of the battle of Brandy Station, while it was on General Lee sent Stuart word that he wished "our force and

position concealed as much as possible, and the infantry not to be seen, if it be possible to avoid it." Vol. 45, p. 876.

16 June General Lee wrote A. P Hill directions for movement "to deceive the enemy as to our ultimate destination, at least for a time." Vol. 45, p. 896.

22 June, after Middleburg and Upperville, General Lee wrote Stuart: "I judge the efforts of the enemy yesterday were to arrest our progress and ascertain our whereabouts. I fear he will steal a march on us, and get across the Potomac before we are aware." Vol. 45, p. 913.

Same day, from Millwoood, Longstreet wrote Stuart suggesting precautions not "to disclose our plans." Vol. 45, p. 915.

10 June, Mr. Stanton, Secretary of War, telegraphed: "Pittsburg will certainly be the point aimed at by Stuart's raid, which may daily be expected." Vol. 45, p. 54.

At General Hooker's headquarters, 12 June, it was thought that Lee only intended "to commence a raid with his cavalry." Vol. 45, p. 73.

At Hooker's headquarters, 13 June, they telegraphed General Reynolds that they had heard of a "probable movement to turn our right or go into Maryland," but "we cannot abandon this line on any uncertainty." Vol. 45, p. 81.

17 June, General Pleasanton, commanding Federal cavalry, received from Hooker's headquarters this: "The commanding general relies upon you with your cavalry force to give him information of where the enemy is, his force, and his movements. You have a sufficient cavalry force to do this. Drive in the pickets, if necessary, and get us information. It is better that we should lose men than to be without knowledge of the enemy, as we now seem to be." Vol. 45, p. 172. June 17, General Meade telegraphed General Butterfield, Hooker's Chief of Staff, "I have informed Pleasanton he can have any support from me to the extent of my command," and that "command" was the Fifth Army Corps. 17 June, 8:20 p. m., General Butterfield telegraphed General Ingalls in Washington: "Try and hunt up somebody from Pennsylvania who knows something, and has a cool enough head to judge what is the actual state of affairs there with re-

gard to the enemy. Enemy reported to have appeared at Poolesville, and everywhere else in Maryland, Pennsylvania and Western Virginia. Cavalry enough is reported to have appeared to fill up the whole of Pennsylvania and leave no room for the inhabitants. My impression now is that Lee is in as much uncertainty as to our whereabouts and what we are doing as we are as to his; that his movement on the Upper Potomac is a cover for a cavalry raid on the north side of the river, and a movement of his troops farther west." Vol. 45, pp. 174-175.

Same day, at 10:30 p. m., General Butterfield, having heard of the fight at Aldie, telegraphed General Pleasanton: "If Lee's army is in rear of his cavalry we shall move up by forced marches. Give us any indications of it as soon as possible." Vol. 45, p. 177

17 June, General Hooker himself telegraphed General Tyler, at Sandy Hook: "If Longstreet's and Ewell's Corps have been at Winchester at all, they are now somewhere in that vicinity I hope you will keep out all of your cavalry until we find out his whereabouts. I have directed mine to feel up to him and they are now hard at work." Vol. 45, p. 180.

Again, in the apparent despair of ignorance, General Hooker, himself, at 1:05 p. m. 17 June, telegraphed General Tyler, at Sandy Hook: "Can you give me positive and correct information of any force of any kind and number of the enemy at any particular spot? From all reports here, we might conclude that he covered all western Pennsylvania and Maryland, or that he was not there at all. Can you give me anything correct?" Vol. 45, p. 181.

Now we see what the opposing forces were fighting for at Aldie, Middleburg and Upperville. Ashby's Gap is at the top of the Blue Ridge, northwestern corner of Fauquier county, Va., a great crossing to the Valley; just at the foot of the mountain is Paris, four miles east of Paris is Upperville, ten miles east of Upperville is Middleburg and five miles east of Middleburg is Aldie.

Wednesday morning, 17 June, Fitz Lee's Brigade was

directed toward Aldie, W H. F. Lee's Brigade was put at "The Plains," about eight miles south of Middleburg, and Robertson's Brigade, the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments, at Rectortown, about eight miles southwest from Middleburg. These three brigades, with Breathed's Battery, constituted Stuart's entire force. Pleasanton had his entire corps of cavalry and artillery with him and two brigades of infantry. Vol. 45, pp. 178 and 246. General Stuart went with Fitz Lee's Brigade to Middleburg and there stopped to keep in easy communication with W H. F. Lee and Robertson. Fitz Lee's Brigade opened the ball at Aldie late in the afternoon. General Stuart says that it was "One of the most sanguinary cavalry battles of the war." While this fight was going on Stuart heard that a large force of the enemy's cavalry was advancing on Middleburg from towards Hopewell, near and to the right of Thoroughfare Gap, in Bull Run mountains. He at once ordered up to Middleburg Robertson's Brigade from Rectortown and Chambliss with W H. F Lee's Brigade, from "The Plains." This last force of Federal cavalry got to Middleburg about 4 p. m., ahead of Robertson and Chambliss. It had a sharp fight with some of Fitz Lee's forces while we were coming up and drove them off. Vol. 44, p. 688. It marched through the town and barricaded it and held it till about 7 p. m. Vol. 43, p. 963. In the meantime, Robertson and Chambliss were coming and coming fast. The Sixty-third rode at a gallop the last few miles. This Federal force now at Middleburg was, in part the First Rhode Island Cavalry, commanded by Colonel Duffie in person. He soon heard of what was coming. He threw out pickets, manned his barricades and dismounted his regiment about a half mile from Middleburg toward Hopewell, in a wood and behind stone walls on the Hopewell road preparatory to what the Sixty-third North Carolina was about to do. The head of Robertson's Brigade reached Middleburg "just at dark." Under Stuart's own orders the Sixty-third North Carolina immediately charged through the main street of Middleburg and a short distance beyond up the road towards Aldie and having easily driven the pickets and the force on that road out of sight, it hastily

came back and took the Hopewell road after Colonel Duffie's main force. Colonel Duffie says of our action: "They surrounded the town and stormed the barricades." And when the Sixty-third charged down upon that stone wall with a terrific yell, there was blaze after blaze of fire, out on the darkness and into those charging Carolinians. They recoiled and rallied. Three times they charged that line of fire and then went into that wood and around those walls and the First Rhode Island Cavalry was defeated and destroyed in dead, wounded and prisoners. We captured their standard and a large body of prisoners that night and Chambliss' command, on to whom we had driven them, captured the rest of them next morning. Colonel Duffie, from "near Centreville, Va., 18 June, 1863." reported: "I returned here exhausted at 1:30 p. m. to-day with the gallant debris of my much loved regiment—four officers and twenty-seven men." Vol. 43, pp. 963--964 and 1056.

General Stuart reports that Robertson "drove him handsomely out of Middleburg and pursued him miles on the Hopewell road." Vol. 44, p. 683.

Major McNeill was badly wounded in this charge on Duffie and among our killed was Winfield Smith and Robert Flanigan, of Company F, and D. M. Gibson, of Company F, wounded. Lieutenant Wiley and part of Company F brought in twenty-six prisoners.

We occupied Middleburg that night and the Sixty-third camped near there on the road to Upperville. The country is rough and rises and falls in alternate ridge and depression all along the turnpike to Ashby's Gap, which was hard on the horses and absolutely crippled the unshod.

Morning of the 18th we took position around Middleburg with W H. F Lee's Brigade, under Chambliss, and, because of encroachments on our left, at Union, where Fitz Lee was, Stuart "deemed it requisite to leave Middleburg out of his line of battle," upon which place Colonel J. I. Gregg advanced with the Third Brigade of the Second Division of Federal cavalry and with this force we skirmished all day and they fell back that evening "to a point midway between Middleburg and Aldie." And the town was again ours and

our pickets posted east of the town. Vol. 43, p. 953, and Vol. 44, p. 689.

On the morning of 19 June General Pleasanton "directed three brigades under Gregg to move on Middleburg, drive out the enemy and send a force on to Upperville and Ashby's Gap." Vol. 43, p. 909.

About a mile west of the town, in a strong position on wooded heights, were posted W H. F. Lee's Brigade on the left and Robertson's Brigade on the right of the Upperville turnpike. Colonel Gregg's Brigade advanced as skirmishers and the firing was fierce. So that General Gregg, there in person, reported that the fire of the enemy's artillery "and his skirmishers concealed in wheat fields and woods made any advance of our line apparently impracticable." And now came the fight, says General Gregg: "Determined to drive the enemy from his position, I directed all available force upon his centre. An increased force of dismounted skirmishers was placed to the right and left of the turnpike, and regiments held in readiness to charge upon the road. The enemy made strong resistance, but at last yielded and abandoned his position." Vol. 43, p. 953. General Stuart says: "This attack was met in the most determined manner by those two brigades, which rough roads had already decimated for want of adequate shoeing facilities." And, "appreciating the difficulty of the situation I withdrew my command to a more commanding position half a mile to the rear." Vol. 44, p. 689. And that day they did not "send a force on to Upperville and Ashby's Gap." The Sixty-third North Carolina camped again that night east of Upperville. General Pleasanton says: "General Gregg sent in about fifty prisoners * * * all from North Carolina," which shows that the Sixty-third Regiment was in the front of the fight and stayed there longest. Vol. 43, p. 910.

On the 20th it rained all day and Stuart was waiting for Hampton, who had been left with his brigade on the Rappahannock and who arrived on the 20th too late to attack the enemy, still in possession of Middleburg. Vol. 44, pp. 687 and 690.

General Pleasanton in his report, 20 June, says: "I am

just in from General Gregg's battlefield of yesterday. He had a very hard fight. Our cavalry is really fighting infantry behind stone walls. This is the reason of our heavy losses." Vol. 43, p. 911. What a tribute is that sentence about "infantry" to the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment! There was no infantry with Stuart.

Sunday, 21 June, was to witness the fiercest fighting of all and to end the contest. Fitz Lee was away off to our left at Snicker's Gap and not in the action at all. Jones' and W H. F Lee's Brigades under Chambliss were from four to six miles off to our left on Goose creek and thus Hampton and Robertson were to bear the brunt of the battle, as it must be noted that the North Carolinians had been doing since the evening of the 17th. Vol. 44, pp. 688-690.

Pleasanton had five fresh brigades engaged against our four and three of these were against the brigade of Hampton and the worn out, decimated two regiments of Robertson and one of these brigades against Hampton and Robertson was Vincent's Infantry Brigade, which brigade Pleasanton says "was kept busy by their dismounted infantry." Vol 43, pp. 913 and 614; Vol. 44, p. 690.

Our little force was between Middleburg and Upperville, in a position of great strength previously and carefully selected by General Stuart who was commanding in person. And we would have held it against a force even double ours in strength. Part of our cavalry was, at the beginning of the battle, mounted for charging and guarding flanks while the rest were dismounted behind a series of stone walls on the south side of the turnpike, and running at right angles with it, the cavalry in the road and fields, and Hart's battery of horse artillery of six guns was near the road on the left. A long belt of woods marked our position.

In front of us was Fuller's Artillery, a great line of Kilpatrick's Cavalry, with General Buford's Division moving to our left flank and behind and immediately with Kilpatrick's force came a great brigade of the Fifth Corps of infantry under command of Colonel Vincent, who sent the Eighty-third Pennsylvania to flank us on our right. About 8 a. m. the battle began and soon it was on most furiously. One regi-

ment of infantry and their dismounted cavalry was hurled on our front. According to Colonel Vincent's own report and under the urgent orders of General Pleasanton himself, Vincent rushed three different infantry lines on us one after the other. Fuller's Battery roared and poured death into our ranks and utterly disabled one of Hart's Blakely guns. General Gregg commanding their cavalry says we "stubbornly contested." Long and superbly they were beaten back until our right flank and rear were attacked by the Eighty-third Pennsylvania Infantry, when we retired under Stuart's orders, having to leave the Blakely gun with its broken axle, the first gun Stuart ever lost, and he says "its full value was paid in the slaughter it there made." We took position, similar to the first, behind "stone walls immediately in the rear" and met them again and again were driven back in the same irresistible way for long weary miles along which brilliant and dashing mounted charges on each side were made and met. "Thus the fight continued, with the same tactics on the part of the enemy and the same orders from General Pleasanton to dislodge them," says Colonel Vincent. Our last stand east of Upperville was on the west bank of Goose creek. "Whence," Stuart says, "after receiving the enemy's attack, and after repulsing him with slaughter, I again withdrew *en echelon* of regiments in plain view, and under fire of the enemy's guns. Nothing could exceed the coolness and self-possession of officers and men in these movements, performing evolutions with a precision under fire that must have won the tribute of admiration from the enemy even, who dared not trust his cavalry unsupported to the sabers of such men. The enemy attacked Brigadier-General Robertson, bringing up the rear in this movement, and was handsomely repulsed." Vol. 44, pp. 690–691.

COLONEL PETER G. EVANS MORTALLY WOUNDED.

The Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment won this tribute for our brigade from Stuart while filling the post of honor there, as rear guard and Colonel Peter G. Evans was mortally wounded and captured then and there. Just prior to the charge, in which Colonel Evans was shot,

the Sixty-third, then mounted, was subjected, on its left, to a most terrific artillery fire which slew men and horses. Companies A and F were ordered to support the charge dismounted behind some rock walls along the pike a few hundred yards west of Upperville. When Colonel Evans gave the order to charge, General Robertson about the same moment gave an order not to charge just then and, by the consequent confusion of orders, only part of the Sixty-third Regiment followed Colonel Evans, Company H leading. The first Maine Cavalry was coming magnificently in column up the pike and the yelling men of the Sixty-third North Carolina went at them with a rush. "The First Maine, after firing a few shots, scattered to the right and left," and this charging part of the Sixty-third rode headlong into a hot carbine fire from the Fourth Pennsylvania Cavalry, suffered fearfully and was driven back. Vol. 43, pp. 983–984. But the Sixty-third still rode and charged and fought as rear guard back to Paris, near which we camped, in Ashby's Gap, that Sunday night. In these actions it had twice as many men killed and wounded as any other Confederate regiment engaged. Vol. 44, p. 712. At 5:30 p. m. 21 June, General Pleasanton reported: "I have not been able to send to the top of the Blue Ridge. Stuart has the gap covered with heavy Blakeleys and 10-pounder Parrots. I shall return to Aldie to-morrow." General Meade, commanding the Fifth Army Corps, reported 22 June, of Pleasanton: "He was yesterday opposed only by a brigade of cavalry and one battery, but the character of the country was so favorable for defense that it took him all day with his large force to drive them back some twelve miles." "Character of the country" was a pitiable excuse. 21 June, 5 p. m., General Hooker, commanding Army of the Potomac, telegraphed President Lincoln: "This cavalry force has hitherto prevented me from obtaining satisfactory information as to the whereabouts of the enemy They have masked all their movements." Thus our actions were of sufficient importance to attract the attention of General Hooker and the President of the United States and the former shows that we sacredly guarded General Lee's great secret and that our

duty was "well done." Vol. 43, pp. 54, 614, 912, 954; Vol. 44, p. 690, and Vol. 45, p. 255.

In his official report to General Lee of these actions General Stuart wrote: "I was extremely anxious now to attack the enemy as early as possible, having, since Hampton's arrival, received sufficient reinforcement to attack the enemy's cavalry, but the next morning (21st) being the Sabbath, I recognized my obligation to do no other duty than what was absolutely necessary, and determined, so far as was in my power, to devote it to rest." Vol. 44, p. 690. But, as we have seen, he was forced to fight. And this extract is quoted here that all young North Carolinians, in studying Confederate soldiery, may see that this great, ideal cavalry general of the South, with Jackson and Lee, recognized and obeyed God, as the "Lord of hosts."

Jackson prayed as hard as he fought. He always prayed fervently first and then fought. And his battles and victories were the answered inspirations of his prayers. When a great crisis was upon him, the flaps of his tent hung closed for hours and no one dared approach, for all knew that "Jackson was holding a council of war with God." And the South's sublimest and truest title of Lee was—"Our Christian Leader." The Commander-in-Chief of a Christian people, whose hearts, together with those of their three greatest generals, were continually and earnestly asking their God to give victory to their Confederacy. They were the great typical sons of the Southern men and mothers around them; testifying, as the presence of such men always does, by their individual greatness, the greatness of those about them. Not exceptions to but only exalted emblems of the South's men and women. Just as our own Mitchell and other great mountains are elevated expressions of the earth's surface around them, without which respective surroundings neither these "giants among men" nor the mountains could exist. And these "Princes in Israel" and these mountains and their environments are not, in any way, the result of the so-called evolution of certain scientists nor of their "law of the survival of the fittest," but each and all are the result of the immediate word and work of God. The South's God did not answer those patriot

pray-ers for their Confederacy, as they prayed, for, "He doeth all things well" and not always as we ask. He saw that, for us and our posterity and all the world beside, it was best that the Confederacy should die, after writing its glories of men and women with letters of eternal stars in the everlasting firmament of history. And thus, by Him and by His love, ours became "The Lost Cause," that as a magnificent part of this great republic, magnified through Him by our glories of war and our "white robes of great tribulation," we may majestically move along the mighty marches which He has mapped out for us even to "the uttermost parts of the earth for our possession," utterly regardless of all small men and measures and political parties intervening between His "chosen people" and His great predestined plans and purposes for us, "who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises."

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL JAMES B. GORDON.

Under special instructions from General Stuart, dated 24 June, 1863, Vol. 45, p. 927, General Robertson's cavalry covered the front of Ashby's and Snicker's Gap for some days and then moved to Gettysburg, via Williamsport and Chambersburg, arrived near Cashtown 3 July, and was put on our army's right flank. After the fall of Colonel Evans that great cavalry leader, Lieutenant-Colonel James B. Gordon, of the Ninth North Carolina Regiment, and of Wilkes county, N. C., was put temporarily in command of the Sixty-third Regiment and commanded it all during the Gettysburg campaign and some time after. The night of 4 July, when the retreat began, the Sixty-third Regiment was again assigned the post of honor as picket and rear guard. At the instance of General R. E. Lee, General Stuart instructed General Robertson, now on the right near Fairfield, Pa., "that it was essentially necessary for him to hold the Jack Mountain passes," including two prominent roads. Vol. 44, p. 699. As Company F, of the Sixty-third Regiment, rode to the top of one of the passes to picket, it met the head of a Federal cavalry regiment coming to take possession of the

pass. Company F, under Lieutenant Wiley, attacked at once and Baxter Caldwell, a young, daring trooper of Company F, was sent at a rush down the mountain to Colonel Gordon for help, who dashed to the top with the Sixty-third whooping and yelling, drove off the enemy and camped on the mountain that night. 6 July, the regiment, via Leitersburg, was with Stuart at Hagerstown on his urgent mission to Williamsport to save the Confederate wagon trains all "congregated in a narrow space at the foot of the hill, near the river, too much swollen to admit their passage to the south bank" of the Potomac.

WAGON TRAIN SAVED AT HAGERSTOWN.

At Hagerstown General J. E. B. Stuart rode along the line and said joyously, "We've got 'em now, boys," which was answered with a wild yell all along the line of the Sixty-third. In a moment Chambliss was pushing down the main road after the enemy and Robertson, with the decimated Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third Regiments, was moving parallel. Chambliss put them on the run and the column that the Sixty-third Regiment was in hurried up to attack their flank, but post and rail fences delayed this column and it was raked with artillery. Jenkins dismounted and dislodged them. And Stuart says: "The enemy, thus dislodged, was closely pressed by the mounted cavalry, but made one effort at a counter-charge, which was gallantly met and repulsed by Colonel James B. Gordon, commanding a fragment of the Sixty-third North Carolina, that officer exhibiting under my eye individual prowess deserving special commendation." Vol. 44, p. 702. Of the action that day General Stuart says: "Without this attack, it is certain that our trains would have fallen into the hands of the enemy." 7 July the regiment spent on the north front of Hagerstown, on the Cavetown road. Daily the regiment moved here and there to aid other cavalry in covering "the retreat of the grand army." 11 July, at 8:30 p. m., "Robertson was two and a half miles in front of Ewell." Vol. 45, p. 994. The night of the 13th was chosen to cross the Potomac from in front of Meade who "instead of attacking was intrenching in our front," and "the

arduous and difficult task of bringing up the rear was, as usual, assigned to the cavalry" under this order, dated 13 July, 1863, 4:15 p. m., from General Robert E. Lee to General Stuart: "General: As arranged this afternoon, I wish you to place your cavalry in position before night, so as to relieve the infantry along the whole extent of their lines when they retire, and take the place of their sharpshooters when withdrawn. They will be withdrawn about 12 o'clock tonight. Direct your men to be very vigilant and bold, and not let the enemy discover that our lines have been vacated. At daylight withdraw your skirmishers, and retire with all your force to cross the river. * * I know it to be a difficult, as well as delicate operation to cover this army and then withdraw your command with safety, but I rely upon your good judgment, energy and boldness to accomplish it, and trust you may be as successful as you have been on former occasions. After crossing, continue to cover the rear of the army with part of your force, and with the rest move forward to our front, where you will receive further orders." Vol. 45, p. 1001.

ACROSS THE POTOMAC

This order was as perfectly executed as anything human could be. "Just before night (which was unusually rainy), the cavalry was disposed from right to left, to occupy dismounted, the trenches of the infantry at dark," the Sixty-third taking their part of Ewell's line. "The operation was successfully performed by the cavalry" and on the 14th at Williamsport the Sixty-third Regiment crossed as the very last of Lee's army. It then picketed a few days the fords of the Shenandoah near Ashby's Gap. Soon the enemy was sending a heavy column east of the Blue Ridge to interpose between our army and Richmond. Longstreet's Corps moved to counteract this and again the Sixty-third was in the post of honor, being sent, with Robertson, as Longstreet's "advance guard through Front Royal and Chester Gap." On the 23d, with other cavalry, it reached Chester Gap and, "with great difficulty and a forced march, bivouacked that night below Gaines' Cross Roads, holding the Rock-

ford road and Warrenton turnpike, on which, near Amisville, the enemy had accumulated a large force of cavalry On the 25th the march was continued and the line of the Rappahannock resumed." Vol. 44, pp. 699-707.

NORTH CAROLINA CAVALRY BRIGADE FORMED.

4 August, at his own request, General Robertson was relieved from duty with the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third Regiments. Vol. 45, p. 1075. On 9 Sept., 1863, under Special Orders, No. 226, Headquarters Army of Northern Virginia, there was a reorganization of the cavalry, the Sixty-third North Carolina becoming a part of General L. S. Baker's Brigade, Hampton's Division and Stuart's Corps of Cavalry. This was the First division of the corps. The brigade consisted of the Ninth, Nineteenth, Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments, the Sixty-third commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel S. B. Evans. Vol. 49, p. 707.

In consequence of a wound General Baker was soon assigned to special duty and about 1 October this brigade became General James B. Gordon's North Carolina Cavalry Brigade. Vol. 48, p. 820. The Confederate army at this time was south of the Rapidan and our cavalry was picketing the Rapidan and Robertson rivers.

JACK'S SHOP.

On 21 September, 1863, General Buford started on a great reconnoitering expedition to cross the Rapidan, via Madison Court House, with a heavy force of cavalry and artillery. They reached Madison Court House about sundown that day and attacked the picket force there, which fell back to Jack's Shop, on the Madison and Orange turnpike about six miles south of Madison. General Stuart with the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade and other cavalry was at Jack's Shop early next morning, 22 September, to beat back the reconnoissance.

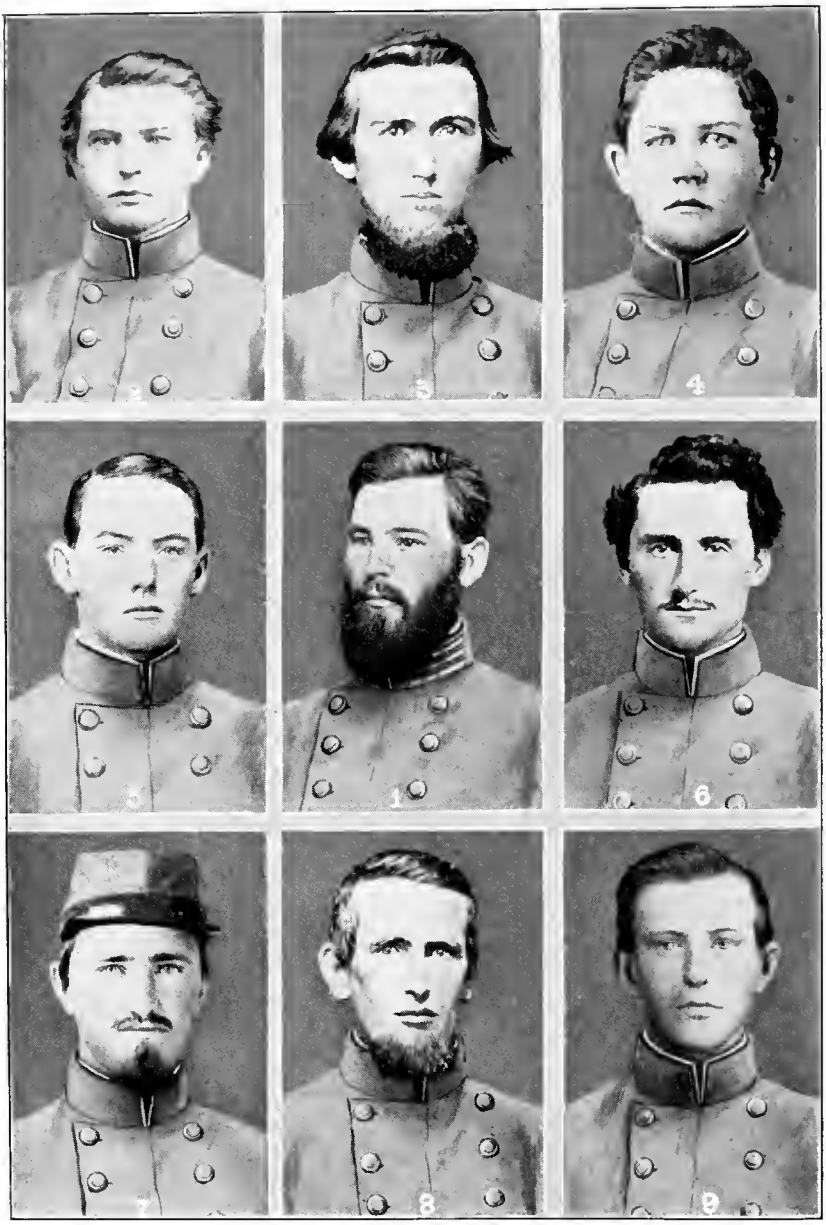
General Buford moved his first division down the pike to our front. Kilpatrick went by Wolftown to our left and another column marched towards Barnett's Ford to our right. We did not then see or know of these forces on our flanks, but

we did ere long. The battle opened by a splendid mounted charge of the Ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina after the advance guard had located the enemy north of Jack's Shop. They drove everything before them back and on to the dismounted men of the enemy, where they were met by a galling fire from behind fences, trees cut across the pike and other protection. Both regiments dismounted to "fight on foot." Under this fire, right in the presence of the enemy and in splendid style, they formed their line of skirmishers and charging drove them back on their great line of advancing forces, which could be seen and was terrible to behold. We then fell back slowly before them to our main line of dismounted men, Buford not forcing us as he could and would have done with his great hosts had he not been waiting Kilpatrick's move. And here we fought one of the very fiercest fights of the war. Buford got his signal from Kilpatrick that he was full in our rear on the pike, and then he opened furiously on our lines with small arms and artillery. Stuart knew quickly that he was surrounded. He knew, too, the mettle of the men with him. There was no attempt at concealment from the men in the ranks. He trusted them and took them openly into his council. He was always greatest in a desperate emergency, as all great men always are. One of his own staff rode along the lines and told the men that we were surrounded and, said he, "Boys it's a fight to captivity, death or victory." A man in the Sixty-third answered him, "We'll go out of here if there isn't but one of us left." And a great cheer greeted the words, which told what the Sixty-third would do. When he knew exactly where Kilpatrick was, Buford came on our front with all his power of rattling rifles and roaring artillery. We were pressed back by sheer brute force and deadly fire, General Devin's column on our right and Kilpatrick on the left and rear, and as we fell back and got into the open there, on a small hill, was a wondrous sight, probably never seen before nor since. There stood McGregor's Battery, Stuart, on horseback, commanding in person and pointing here and there with his great right arm, and under these orders the six guns of that glorious battery were firing fast and furiously in three direction at once; two on Buford,

two to our immediate left and two on Kilpatrick. The sight was thrilling. The men were never going to pass Stuart and those guns. They yelled and fired and stood. That was enough. Stuart was satisfied as to what they would do. He dashed off with his staff down the pike towards Kilpatrick's coming columns and in a few moments a mighty cheer, that only Southern soldiers could give, came louder than the guns from our rear. Colonel Ferrebee with the Fifty-ninth North Carolina and a part of Jones' and Butler's Brigades, after desperate charges and counter-charges, had beaten Kilpatrick back. Kilpatrick went back faster than he came, and the whole Federal force retreated to the Robertson river and crossed it next morning in haste after Buford wrote General Pleasanton: "I am proud to say that Stuart was whipped and his forces dispersed." Vol. 48, p. 141. Among our killed at Jack's Shop, from Company A, were Charles Murphy, son of Mr. David Murphy, and Alexander Bethune, son of Congressman Bethune, all of Fayetteville, N C.

THE BRISTOE CAMPAIGN.

On 9 October, 1863, General Lee began his great movement, with Ewell's and Hill's Corps on Meade's right flank, known as the Bristoe campaign. The advance was by way of Madison Court House on the enemy then in Culpepper. Hampton's Division, he being absent from Gettysburg wounds, was under the immediate personal command of Stuart and acted on Ewell's and Hill's left flank to favor their movement. Gordon's Brigade, including the Sixty-third, bivouacked near Madison Court House the night of the 9th and crossed Robertson river at Russell's Ford about daylight on the 10th. The Fifty-ninth North Carolina beat off the Federal pickets and drove them back on their supports, the One Hundred and Twentieth New York Infantry and some cavalry, at Bethsaida church. Gordon attacked in front with the Sixty-third and others, dismounted, and the First South Carolina Cavalry assailed their right and rear. They broke and fled in utter rout and nearly every man of that infantry regiment was killed or captured. We then moved on to the village of James City, driving Kilpatrick's cavalry before us,



SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. Charles W. Pearson, Captain, Co. H.
2. Frank Brown, Private, Co. H.
3. S. F. Fleming, Corporal, Co. H.
4. Lemuel J. Bailey, Private, Co. H.
5. Jno. B. Foard, Private, Co. H.
6. J. D. Hodges, Private, Co. H.
7. G. E. Barnhart, Private, Co. H.
8. Nathaniel Greene Rich, Private, Co. H.
9. Scott Smoot, Private, Co. H.

through the village, on to their supports, consisting of the Second Division of Infantry of the Third Corps and artillery and cavalry under command of General Henry Prince. It being impossible to dislodge them, only sufficient demonstration was made to engage their full attention. The Sixty-third was on their right flank with Gordon's Brigade and Young's Brigade on their front and two pieces of Griffin's Horse Artillery. Heavy skirmishing and artillery firing was kept up on both sides until nightfall, when the "brigade bivouacked for the night on line of battle." Before daylight the enemy fell back on Culpepper, Kilpatrick covering the rear of the Third and Fifth Army Corps. Vol. 48, pp. 328, 439 and 460. On the morning of the 11th we marched, with Gordon's Brigade, along the flank of our infantry column, toward Griffinsburg, and struck the Sperryville and Culpepper pike at Stone-House Mountain. Here Gordon was ordered to move down the pike and push the enemy back to Culpepper. This he did with the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third Regiments—the Fifty-ninth bearing off the honors of the charge. The Sixty-third lost for the war the services of its brave, gallant and efficient Adjutant, Lieutenant J. Turner Morehead, son of Governor Morehead, severely shot in the mouth, the ball passing out through the back of his neck, and among its other wounded was that ever faithful soldier and valiant young officer, Lieutenant W J Wiley, of Company F, also shot in the mouth and his front teeth knocked out.

The whole Federal army was now falling back across the Rappahannock on the roads to Brandy Station, rear guarded by all their cavalry, except Buford's Division, and Fitz Lee who had been left on the Rapidan, was fast driving back Buford's Division of cavalry and artillery towards Brandy Station from Stevensburg. The position of the enemy's artillery and his strength near Culpepper, across Mountain Run, was such that General Stuart would not attack; but left some artillery on his front to attack him and a squadron of the Ninth in Culpepper and moved to the left with the Seventh and Twelfth Virginia Regiments and Gordon's Brigade to get in his rear near Brandy. As we approached John Minor Botts' house there could be seen from the front of our column

the dense columns of Federal cavalry moving along the railroad towards Brandy. They had perceived our purpose to get in their rear and were in full retreat, and across the plain to our right, towards Stevensburg, could be seen the smoke and heard the boom of Fitz Lee's guns after Buford's column, the fire of which reached our line over the columns moving between us and General Lee, who could not distinguish us from the enemy. The two columns from Robertson and Rapidan rivers were both now making for Fleetwood Heights, on Brandy Plains. The Ninth North Carolina was sent to capture what seemed to be a detached body on our right. The Ninth, as always, did its work well and captured or killed sixty of them, but found itself in front of Custer's Brigade. Colonel Massie, of the Twelfth Virginia, charged down on General Davies' Brigade, then retreating just in Custer's rear and the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third were moved up to Massie's support. And here occurred a bad break in the glorious record, past and future, of the Sixty-third. At this moment the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third in column of fours, were in a partly sunken road intently watching Colonel Massie's charge and waiting orders from Stuart and Gordon, both then and there in person. The Sixty-third's attention was all to the front on Massie. Close to their immediate right there was an elevation of some length through an open field, which rising ground absolutely cut off from their view Custer's and Davies' Brigades, now confronted by the Ninth and charged by Massie. This presence of the Ninth in their front and Massie's charge and Fitz Lee's coming columns filled these Federal officers with desperation, and they acted well in the face of the Ninth and Massie's men, which each thought and officially reported to be "a brigade" on their front and flank. Custer charged to the front with two regiments, formed by squadrons, and Davies by regiments to his right and left. The Sixty-third and Fifty-ninth's right flank was most unwisely and totally unprotected, when suddenly the Eighteenth Pennsylvania, in regiment front, led by General Davies, fell like a tornado on the Sixty-third and Fifty-ninth, over the open elevation which had concealed them, and both the Fifty-ninth and Sixty-third broke in confusion to

their left until the Seventh Virginia, most opportunely coming up, charged the Eighteenth Pennsylvania on their left flank, and they fled. Our regimental bugler, F R. Rose, and Sergeant-Major Charles Haigh, both of Company A, Sixty-third Regiment, two as intelligent and brave boys as ever wore the gray, were off some distance to the right of the Sixty-third and saw the impending danger and, with that quickness to see and act which fitted them and so many of our Southern men in the ranks to command, they both hastened to prepare the Sixty-third for the terrible onslaught, but they were too late. They are both now living in Fayetteville, N. C. They both saw better than any one else the whole affair and they, together with others now alive and there present, claim that it was impossible for the Sixty-third to have resisted the impetuous rush of the Eighteenth Pennsylvania down that slope, placed as the Sixty-third was in that road. Privates G. A. Thompson and J. B. Hollingsworth, of Company A, were wounded and W L. Jennings, of Company A, was captured, but his captor did not take his saber from him, and when the Seventh Virginia came to the rescue, Jennings used it freely upon his captor and took him prisoner. Private Ham. S. Alexander, of Company F, Sixty-third Regiment, brother of the Hon. S. B. Alexander, when wheeling suddenly to make that retreat, had his horse to fall on his leg and was unable to extricate himself. He thus lay until the Pennsylvanians rushed back in retreat, when Alexender leveled his rifle on a Federal private who had been dismounted in the melee, and actually took him prisoner and made him pull the fallen horse off his leg. All this shows that the mettle of the men of the Sixty-third was not broken, if its ranks had been. If ever a break in face of the enemy was excusable, this one was. But it was quickly all over and the regiment reformed and ready for action. The second great cavalry fight at Brandy Station then occurred and the Federal cavalry had all retreated across the Rappahannock by 9 p. m. and we bivouacked the night of 11 October near Brandy Station. Vol. 48, pp. 440, 460, 386 and 390.

On the morning of the 12th in accordance with General

R. E. Lee's instructions, General Stuart proceeded with Gordon's brigade and other cavalry to protect the right flank of our infantry column moving by Rixeyville toward Warrenton. Gordon's Brigade crossed the river at Warrenton Sulphur Springs about sunset and moved to Warrenton that night and occupied the town and bivouacked near there. At this crossing of the river the Sixty-third was in a glorious charge of which General Stuart, innocently and inadvertently, of course, gives all the praise to the Twelfth Virginia. But the Sixty-third was certainly in that charge as men now living well know. With the Twelfth Virginia, the Sixty-third North Carolina "charged first up to the piers of the bridge. It was discovered that it had been taken up thus exposing them to a dangerous fire from the enemy on the opposite side. Nothing daunted in purpose, however, they turned about and took the road to the ford below, which they plunged into in the face of the enemy's fire without halt or hesitation," and thus, with the Twelfth Virginia, the Sixty-third North Carolina forced that crossing most valiantly.

General Gordon strangely reports this "sunset" crossing as of the Hazel river. His statement about moving on "to Warrenton that night" shows his error. It was the Hedgeman river of upper Rappahannock. Vol. 48, pp. 444--445 and 460.

AUBURN.

On the morning of the 13th, our army was concentrated about Warrenton, holding the roads from the east, the enemy being in that direction and as far south as Fayetteville. About 10 a. m., General Stuart was directed by General Lee to make a reconnoisance eastward to Catlett's Station. He proceeded with Lomax's, Funston's (Jones'), and Gordon's Brigades, via Auburn, where he crossed the Fayetteville and Greenwich road, Greenwich being about five miles northeast of Auburn. At Auburn he left Lomax to guard his rear and, advancing towards Catlett, soon discovered an immense park of Federal wagons extending for miles south of Catlett's, and great columns of the enemy moving toward Bristol

up the railroad and also via the Weaverville and Greenwich road, which latter road, converging north west from Catlett's, met at Greenwich the road we crossed at Auburn and thus made a triangle with its apex at Greenwich and its base at Cedar Run, flowing from west of Auburn east towards Weaverville, just north of which run, near Stuart's left, as he retired from Catlett's, was the road from Auburn to Catlett's, and along this road for several miles a mill race. As soon as Stuart made his discovery of the situation at Catlett's he quickly sent Major Venable of his staff to inform General Lee, so that a night attack might be made in great force at Catlett's, and retired towards Auburn. When he neared Auburn, about dark, he found that Lomax had been driven off and that the enemy's Third Army Corps and two brigades of Kilpatrick's Cavalry, with wagons and artillery were on the road we had crossed in the morning. Stuart had two brigades of cavalry and seven pieces of artillery and there was but one place to cross the Run, and that at Auburn, which was now in full possession and immediate use of the enemy We were absolutely cut off from General Lee, whom Stuart, at once, informed of his perilous condition, by disguised volunteers sent through the lines of the Third Army Corps, in hope that relief would come by daylight, at least. As at Jack's Shop, every man in the ranks was taken into Stuart's confidence at once and told of the situation. It was soon evident that the enemy had no knowledge in the world of our presence. Stuart massed his men for an attack, the Sixty-third North Carolina being dismounted and placed in line of battle. Night favored us and we "went into silent, sleepless, cheerless bivouac." All night long we could clearly hear the tramp and the talk and the rumble of the wagons and artillery of the enemy along the road in our front. But everybody had faith that Stuart would come out all right. A contemporaneous correspondent wrote of our situation thus: "Not a word was allowed except in whispers, not a spark of fire could be struck, while through the long night we stood there listening to the sounds of that mighty column of armed foes passing near by us. Anxiously we waited the morrow, wondering and whispering conjectures of

the result of our strange situation. The horses and mules seemed to feel the necessity for quiet and, though they had not been fed since morning, refrained from their usual demonstrative cries. All waited for the morning; and, oh, the wild waking of that morning!"

Just before day General Warren's Federal Corps and Gregg's Division of cavalry came to Auburn with orders to cross the run behind the Third Corps, turn to the right and move on the road to Catlett's immediately on our left, thus adding to the difficulties of the mill race and run, his column along the base of the triangle. He first crossed over General Caldwell's Division, with the batteries of Captains Ricketts, Arnold and Ames, and placed all just in our front, facing Warrenton and rear to us, on a hill top which was soon blazing and lighted up with their camp fires around which they were plainly seen, cheerfully preparing their breakfasts, and then General Hays' Division crossed and took position immediately on our left. The cordon was closing. The heavy mists and fog of the morning still concealed us in the gray dawn while by their big camp fires we could see the enemy below us as plainly as at high noon. After the bright breakfast scene had progressed some time, volleys of musketry were heard on the road towards Warrenton and Stuart thought that General Lee, on his night messages, had attacked. Feeling that the hour had come as well as the man, still totally unobserved and absolutely unexpected, Stuart opened his seven guns, all at the same moment, upon Caldwell's Division of infantry and artillery and, as Stuart himself reports, "rained a storm of cannister and shell upon the masses of men, muskets and coffee pots." It was an awful sight, a fearful sound of shrieking shell and screaming soldiers. One shell killed seven men at the first fire, General Warren himself reports. But, bad for us, what was thought to be, and in fact were, Lee's guns entirely ceased their firing as soon as Stuart opened. For some cause Lee's advance was not hastened. Caldwell's veterans soon splendidly recovered from their consternation and his lines moved out on our front and each of our flanks, while Rickett's Battery fired furiously on our seven small guns, which thunderingly answered back.

Hays attacked on our left and we beat his skirmishers back badly with the Sixty-third's dismounted men, who fought desperately. Among our killed was George Andrews, of Company F Hays then moved forward the Twenty-sixth New York and the Twelfth New Jersey Infantry. Our position was clearly untenable; but for us to escape, that advancing infantry must be stopped. Gordon ordered the old Ninth to charge and, as General Hays reports: "The rebel cavalry, led by Colonel Thomas Ruffin, charged furiously." That was a famous but a fatal charge. The gallant Ruffin was mortally wounded and about fifty men were killed and wounded, but its purpose, to allow our escape, was effected. The seven guns were limbered up and, at the head of our two little brigades of cavalry, were galloped to the rear and then to the right of Hay's Division before he could attack again; the mill race was bridged by us, the Run crossed as best we could and turning up it to our right again, we crossed the Fayetteville and Greenwich road where Warren's Corps had lately marched and captured a number of his stragglers. We brought out safely all our artillery, every ordnance wagon and ambulance and, if the infantry lines from Warrenton had advanced, as Stuart expected, we would have captured that whole corps or its annihilation would have been complete. Of this affair General Stuart wrote General Lee: "My extrication from this embarrassing situation with the comparatively small loss which I sustained is due, under Providence, to the gallant officers and men of my command, who, upon this trying occasion, which thoroughly tested their soldierly character, exhibited nerve and coolness which entitled them to the highest praise from their commander."

General Warren reports to General Meade: "Its result was alike complimentary to my own command and the force I encountered." Vol. 48, pp. 238, 239, 289, 357, 447, 461.

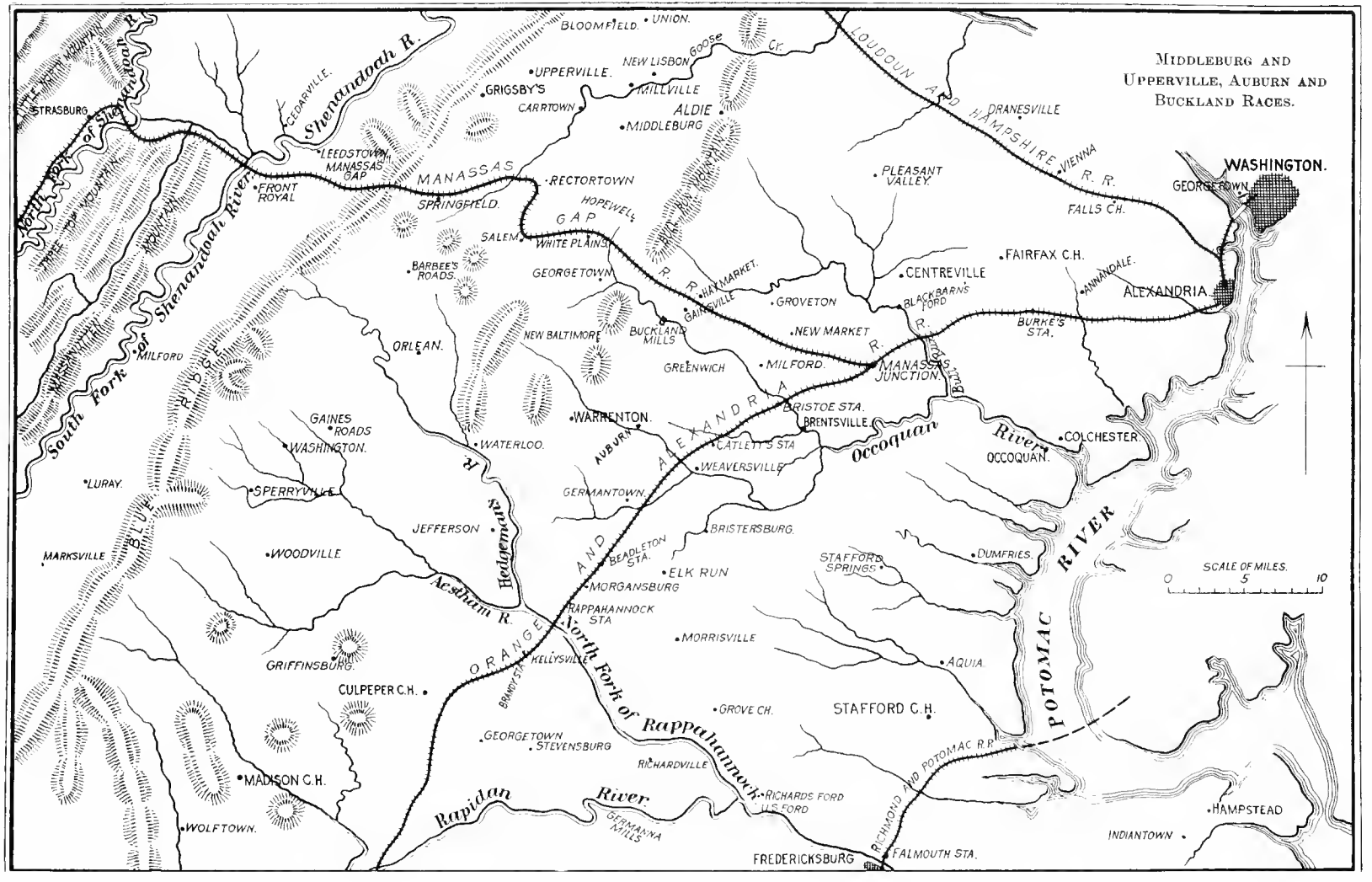
On the morning of the 15th, Stuart's entire cavalry command, except Young's Brigade, pursued the retreating enemy to Manassas Junction. Near the junction the Sixty-third, dismounted, with other regiments, made a fierce attack on them, which lasted till late in the afternoon, and drove them across Bull Run, their dead and wounded being

left on the field. About this time Stuart learned of a large train of the enemy's wagons which had not yet crossed Bull Run. They were protected by a large force of cavalry and some artillery. We were soon up with them and Gordon attacked their front with the Sixty-third, and other dismounted men and Beckham's artillery. Stuart charged them in flank with the Twelfth Virginia and they were driven in precipitate flight across Bull Run, and we bivouacked that night near Manassas. Vol. 48, pp. 449-450.

Next morning Stuart took Hampton's Division on a long detour of reconnoissance by Groveton, crossed Bull Run and bivouacked near Stone Castle; continued this march on the 17th by Gum Springs to Frying Pan church, where the Sixty-third and other dismounted men for two hours or more briskly fought General Sedgwick's infantry, whom Stuart found intrenching Little River turnpike. The purpose of the trip being acquired in this information we returned. It was afterwards learned that this attack in their rear greatly disconcerted the enemy and caused the whole Federal force at Centreville to fall back towards Alexandria. That night we bivouacked near Little River turnpike and on the 18th moved back to Gainesville and learned of the retrograde movement of our army after the affair at Bristoe, General Lee, finding further northward movement useless in the attempt to turn Meade's right flank. The night of the 18th we camped near Hay Market and Stuart learned of Kilpatrick's advance toward Warrenton with his division of cavalry and six pieces of artillery and a column of infantry. Vol. 48, pp. 450--451.

"BUCKLAND RACES."

Stuart at once notified General Fitz Lee, now near Auburn, of the enemy's advance and to come to his support. To delay Kilpatrick for Lee's arrival, Hampton's Division, dismounted, fought him fiercely along Broad Run, the Sixty-third doing its part manfully. Lee soon answered that he was coming and suggested that Stuart fall back, as if in moderate retreat, toward Warrenton, to draw Kilpatrick on so that he could get full in Kilpatrick's rear and, when that was effected, he would fire signal guns of artillery. Stuart


MIDDLEBURG AND UPPERVILLE, AUBURN AND BUCKLAND RACES.
WASHINGTON.
GEORGETOWN
ALEXANDRIA
FAIRFAX C.H.
CENTREVILLE
FALLS CH.
VIENNA
DRANESVILLE
LOUDOUN AND HAMPSHIRE R. R.
PLEASANT VALLEY
BLACKBARNS FORD
ANNANDALE
BURKE'S STA.
MANASSAS JUNCTION
Bull Run
MILFORD
NEW MARKET
GROVETON
HAYMARKET
GAINESVILLE
BUCKLAND MILLS
GREENWICH
NEW BALTIMORE
ORLEAN
WARRENTON
AUBURN
BRISTOE STA.
BRENTSVILLE
CATLETT'S STA
WEAVERSVILLE
GERMANTOWN
BRISTERSBURG
BEADLETON STA.
ELK RUN
MORGANSBURG
RAPPAHANNOCK STA
MORRISVILLE
KELLYSVILLE
BRANDY STA
GROVE CH.
STAFFORD C.H.
STAFFORD SPRINGS
DUMFRIES
AQUIA
RICHARDVILLE
RICHARDS FORD
U.S. FORD
GERMANNA MILLS
FREDERICKSBURG
FALMOUTH STA.
RICHMOND AND POTOMAC R.R.
HAMPSTEAD
INDIANTOWN
POTOMAC RIVER
Occoquan River
COLCHESTER
OCCOQUAN
BLUE RIDGE
South Fork of Shenandoah River
North Fork of Shenandoah R.
Shenandoah R.
Hedgeman's R.
Aestham R.
ORANGE AND ALEXANDRIA R. R.
North Fork of Rappahannock
Rapidan River
MANASSAS GAP R. R.
BLOOMFIELD
UNION
NEW LISBON
Goose Cr.
UPPERVILLE
GRIGSBY'S
MILLVILLE
CARRTOWN
ALDIE
MIDDLEBURG
CEDARVILLE
STRASBURG
LEEDSTOWN
MANASSAS GAP
FRONT ROYAL
SPRINGFIELD
RECTORTOWN
HOPEWELL
SALEM
WHITE PLAINS
BARBEE'S ROADS
GEORGETOWN
MILFORD
GAINES ROADS
WASHINGTON
WATERLOO
LURAY
SPERRYVILLE
JEFFERSON
MARKSVILLE
WOODVILLE
GRIFFINSBURG
CULPEPER C.H.
MADISON C.H.
WOLFTOWN
GEORGETOWN
STEVENSBURG
SCALE OF MILES.
0
5
10

readily and quickly assented. And we slowly began that memorable retreat, so puzzling to our men, along the turnpike via New Baltimore towards Warrenton. We kept on going backwards, just enough resistance being made to keep Kilpatrick from suspecting Stuart's purpose. Kilpatrick grew bolder and actually boasted to citizens, on the road, that he would "catch Stuart before he got to Warrenton." We fell back faster and the men along our lines asked wonderingly what General Stuart could mean by retreating so and almost no fighting. But Stuart knew and that was enough. He must keep his own secret now. He was listening intently as we neared Chester Hill, only two and a half miles from Warrenton, and only a small line of our skirmishers fighting and falling back behind our retreating column. Suddenly there is one loud "boom" after another of artillery toward Buckland, which told Stuart that Lee was in their rear. Immediately we wheeled, under Stuart's own orders, and astonished the enemy with a ferocious attack, Gordon's Brigade, including the Sixty-third, anxious for the fray, was in the centre, on the pike, and Young and Rosser on their flanks. They fought stubbornly at first but nothing could resist the impetuous charges of the Sixty-third and other North Carolinians and those boasting columns broke in confusion. They soon learned that Lee was in their rear and their rout became complete. For miles and miles, back through New Baltimore and on to Buckland and across Broad Run to Hay Market, we pursued them relentlessly and almost resistlessly, "the horses at full speed the whole distance." We captured hundreds of prisoners and eight wagons, including General Custer's headquarters wagon with all his personal effects and official papers, and one of their writers at the time described it as "the deplorable spectacle of 7,000 cavalry dashing riderless, haltless and panic-stricken" through the ranks of their infantry. The Eighteenth Pennsylvania, too, was in that panic and rout. The Sixty-third rode and cut and slashed into their ranks furiously, and they sadly learned as the Sixty-third joyously found that "there is retribution in history." Stuart wrote General Lee: "I am justified in declaring the rout of the enemy at Buckland the most signal and complete

that any cavalry has suffered during the war." He laughingly spoke of the run as the "Buckland Races," and his troopers, with a smile, always so think and talk of it. On 20 October we leisurely followed the retrograde movement of our army and established our pickets on the south bank of the Rappahannock and on the Hazel river. Vol. 48, pp. 451, 452, 461 and 411.

Everything was quiet until 7 November, when dire disaster came to Hays' and Hoke's Brigades at Rappahannock Station that fateful Saturday night. Sunday and Sunday night General Lee withdrew, via Stevensburg, south of the Rapidan, Hampton's Cavalry, as usual, acting as rear guard. Near Stevensburg, on Sunday, the 8th, Hampton's Division had a fight with the enemy's advance guard and held them in check for the protection of our retreating army The fight was on when Hampton rode along our lines for the first time since he was wounded at Gettysburg. The men cheered him gladly and wildly. The Sixty-third did its part splendidly at Stevensburg and on to the river as mounted skirmishers. Lee's infantry crossed south of the Rapidan that day never to recross it and again the Sixty-third acted well its part as "rear guard of the grand army" of Northern Virginia.

THE EIGHTEENTH PENNSYLVANIA PAID OFF IN FULL.

At early dawn of 18 November, Hampton with a small detachment of picked men from the Ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina crossed the Rapidan at Ely's Ford on a little prospecting tour of his own. The Eighteenth Pennsylvania, by some strange fatality of war, under that inexorable law of retribution, was on picket at the forks of the roads leading to Ely's and Germanna fords, a short distance northwest of Ely. They were at their breakfast; sixty of them had just gone down the Germanna road with Lieutenant Whitaker on an "important" mission for General Custer, "when," suddenly, as that same Federal General Davies reports, "their whole outpost was driven in upon them, mixed and struggling with a dense column of rebel cavalry." Nearly the entire regiment was captured and among them a Federal paymaster who had come down there to "pay them off." The Sixty-third took him and his pay-roll and his funds, which green-

backs the captors equally divided among themselves; and thus the Eighteenth Pennsylvania was "paid off" and driven off in dismay and our old score and sore, made near Botts' house, was forever settled and healed. Our force then went down the Germanna road and disposed of Lieutenant Whitaker and his sixty men by capture and dispersion. A squadron of the Fifth New York was down at Germanna Ford on picket. They at once had very and more important business elsewhere and all escaped down the river. With "83 horses, 10 mules, 1 ambulance, 1 hospital wagon, 1 army wagon, 1 forge" and a host of prisoners, all of the Eighteenth Pennsylvania, Hampton recrossed the Rapidan at Germanna Ford about 10:30 a. m. And the Sixty-third North Carolina and the Eighteenth Pennsylvania then and there agreed never again to refer to the affair between us at John Minor Botts' It was a final settlement between gentlemen and both sides prefer to hear no more talk about our matters by outsiders. The Sixty-third and the Eighteenth are satisfied and all others must be. Vol. 48, p. 656.

PARKER'S STORE.

On 26 November General Meade made a great display of force and movement south of the Rapidan, by fords from Ely's to Jacob's. General Lee moved to meet him. "Hampton's Division, with General Stuart present, preceded the advance of the main body." About 9 o'clock next morning General Stuart pushed forward with Gordon's Brigade, met the enemy's advance near New Hope church and, in an unequal contest, fighting on foot, kept the enemy back some distance from Mine Run till the arrival of Heth's Division, and Hampton having come up with Young's Brigade, the greater portion of which also deployed as skirmishers, the enemy was dislodged, the Sixty-third having done its part of the fighting fully and well. On the 29th General Stuart attacked the enemy near Parker's store with Rosser's Brigade most successfully, but reinforcements coming up against him, General Gordon, who was fast marching to the firing on a road intersecting the Orange and Fredericksburg plank road, about one mile east of Parker's store, was ordered by Stuart's couriers to

"move up rapidly; that the enemy was pressing back Rosser." We went forward at a gallop. The Nineteenth North Carolina and a portion of the Sixty-third were dismounted. A charge was immediately ordered "which was done in handsome style by the dismounted men, driving the enemy from the railroad cut, across the plank road, out of their camps and scattering them through the woods, capturing a number of prisoners, some horses, overcoats, blankets, guns and their camp equipage." We were then soon relieved and ordered to camp. "In the meantime the Sixty-third had been ordered back with the prisoners and most of the artillery." Vol. 48, pp. 827, 898 and 902–903.

Meade retired across the Rapidan by the same fords he crossed and we went into winter quarters near Milford Station, on the Fredericksburg Railroad, and picketed the Rapidan at Jacob's and other fords near it, thirty miles from Milford. Long, weary, winter work well done.

In the latter part of December General Stuart, in person, inspected our camp and condition. He wrote to General Hampton: "I desire to express my high gratification at the good order and military discipline in Gordon's and Young's Brigades during my recent visit to them." In February, 1864, the Sixty-third was sent to their homes in North Carolina for fresh horses for the coming campaign. Vol. 60, pp. 1100 and 1143.

Many North Carolina homes had been saddened never to be brightened, but the children of the men of the Sixty-third Regiment were given a high heritage by its great campaigns of 1863.

PERSONAL INCIDENTS.

At Middleburg Lieutenant Ward, of Company H, was wounded and disabled for the war, and Corporal Flemming was wounded in the foot and Sam Howard in the face, but they continued on duty three days.

That night, 17 June, at Middleburg, W H. Hobson, of Company H, a nephew of Governor Morehead and cousin of our Santiago Hobson, while acting as vidette, was cut off. All thought him captured. But about 10 o'clock he came in

with two prisoners. He found them up in a tree, trying to make observations of our camps by our fires, got between them and their guns leaning against a rock wall, made them come down to him in sullen surrender and brought them out and delivered them to our provost guard.

Under that terrible artillery fire at Upperville many men and horses were killed and wounded. Among them Captain Booe, of Company H, was disabled by wounds for the war. The same shell that hurt Captain Booe also wounded Henry Miller, of that splendid company, and killed his horse.

In that fateful charge at Upperville, Company H was in front, at Colonel Evans' side when he was mortally wounded and his horse killed, and it suffered fearfully, as this list shows: Lieutenant Pearson's horse was severely wounded; W H. Hobson wounded three times, captured and horse killed; J. B. Foard, horse wounded; G. W Fry, wounded and captured and horse killed; Thos. Bracken, wounded and captured and horse killed; Cope Wynn, wounded and captured and horse killed; John Kerr, Henry Jones, Henry Wood, Henry Minor and David Todd, all killed and horses killed or captured; Ellis Lakey and F A. Beaty, wounded and captured and horses killed; F. A. Arnold, Joseph Brandon and J D. Hodges had horses wounded. This is taken from a written record made at the time and if any one thinks it is merely fun to ride at the head of a charging cavalry column let him read this list and think over it.

Company H was a famous company, and all its survivors now lovingly testify that to Lieutenant, afterwards Captain, C. W Pearson, the company owed more for its fame than to any one else. He was as brave as the bravest. Always faithful and true and ready for any duty he was foremost in as many splendid scenes of the Sixty-third as any man in the regiment. But when written to by his old company comrades recently, for a sketch of the company and some special acts of his own for this history, with his own hand he wrote out and sent to his men thirty-two pages of accurate, instructive and interesting history and incidents of the company, but never mentions his own name once. And in his letter to them, accompanying the paper, he writes: "For your sake as well as that of the

old company, I regret that I can recall no act of special merit or bravery of my own; on all occasions Company H was never called for in vain." But true history loves such men too much to let them be concealed behind their own modesty and his men specially request that the foregoing mention of him be made. Company H and its officers were just representative men of the Sixty-third in making its great history, but I am truly sorry that all other companies and officers have not done as well as H in helping to record that history.

Lieutenant Moore, of Company C, was captured on the Antietam. Lieutenant Gibson and Green Bingham, of Company F, were both severely wounded in the fight at Jack Mountain; and John Cahill, of Company F, shot through and through with his carbine while both were mounted, a large, grand looking, gallant Federal officer, leading their charge on Jack Mountain who tried to ride down and saber Cahill. This officer died in our regimental surgeon's chair that night. John Cahill was a plain, big, fat country boy, but it was the unanimous opinion of all officers and men of Company F that "John Cahill was the very best soldier in Company F," and Company F was just as good as any company in the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment. But when I urged him yesterday, in a meeting of some members of Company F to tell me some special act of his to record here, he laughed that big, jovial laugh we had heard so often in camp and even along the line of battle, and then said, seriously and thoughtfully and sadly to me: "Well, I declare, I don't know a thing in the world to tell you." I say "sadly," because such heroes, who immortalized the Army of Northern Virginia, are fast passing away and we just can't get them to tell their deeds for history. Others present knew and told about his shooting the Federal officer on Jack Mountain. Cahill then concurred in their statement and, with evident satisfaction, added: "But he is the only man, I am glad to say, that I ever knew I killed during the war." There are too many others in Company F almost as good soldiers as Cahill for me to name them all here. I am sorry I can not.

On the retreat from Gettysburg, J. D. Hodges, of Company H, was a picket on the Antietam and was cut off by

Kilpatrick's cavalry. He made every effort to join his regiment and, in his movements, rode up on two Federal cavalrymen coming out of a farm house. He knew that Kilpatrick's forces were all around him, but he leveled his carbine on them and ordered them to surrender. They did so and he was doing his best to take them out, they protested all the while that their men would see him and fire on him and kill them all. And finally he was seen and surrounded by a squad of Kilpatrick's men and one "boy in gray" was made very sad and two "boys in blue" very happy.

Company I lost fourteen men captured and several killed while on the picket line on Antietam.

Captain N. P Rankin, of Company I, had command of the Sixty-third's dismounted skirmishers that terrible night at Auburn. Then, as always, he was efficient, capable and brave. After the regiment had mounted, from that fierce firing line, for our withdrawal, among the foremost and most helpful men in the dangerous and difficult task of bringing out from that triangle the heavy ordnance wagons of Gordon's Brigade was a first-class fighting private of Company I, D. B. Coltrane. All night and till we withdrew he was on the Sixty-third's line of battle. He is now the gentlemanly, courteous cashier of the Concord National Bank, Concord, N. C., to which position he has risen, from the war's poverty on all Southerners, by the same courage and character that succeeded, in the face of adversity, in bringing out our brigade's ammunition at Auburn. Sergeant E. D. Hines, of Company I, was conspicuous for gallantry on the Sixty-third's line of battle at Auburn and was always brave and faithful. Sergeant Robt. A. Davidson, son of A. Brevard Davidson, of Charlotte, N C., was captured at Jack's Shop and, in our mounted pursuit of Kilpatrick, after he was beaten back at Jack's Shop, John Cahill was severely shot in the hip, and, except for this wound, he never missed a single duty during the war.

Lieutenant J. C. Hines, a brave and efficient officer of Company G, was captured at Jack's Shop and was a prisoner during the entire war. For one year he was one of the 500 Confederate officers placed under the fire of our guns of Fort

Sumpter, on Morris Island near Battery Wagner. For month and months he and his fellow prisoners were almost starved to death, his only rations being one pint of spoiled meal and one pickle per day by orders of one Col. Holiday. And thus, by his imprisonment, he suffered for the South far more than many in our ranks.

At Jack's Shop, Lemuel Johnston Bailey, of Company H, was also captured and died of typhoid fever at Point Lookout, 7 January, 1864. He was a school boy soldier, bright and beautiful, brother of Thos. B. Bailey, of Mocksville. Of all the young lives willingly laid as sacrifices of love on the altar of the South, none was better, or braver, or purer than Lem. Bailey's.

One long night and the following day in December, 1863, a boy picket stood out in the bitter cold watching Jacob's ford on the Rapidan. There was near to his right a house on the overlooking hill, evidently once a prosperous, happy home, but now a very "bleak house," all desolate and shorn by war of every comfort, only the bare necessaries of life left. In the afternoon of that day, a woman, most plainly dressed in deep mourning, with all the tenderness and refinement of the best Southern womanhood about her, came from that house to that picket, and, after being halted and readily allowed to approach, she took from its cover a plate on which was only a small bit of corn bread, a little piece of fat bacon, just about the size of the first two fingers together of a man's hand, and some parsnips, all beautifully neat and perfectly cooked, and then said: "I have been noticing you down here all day; you made me think of my boy, who is in our army, and to whom some other mother will be kind, as we all love to be to our soldiers, and I came to bring you a part of our little dinner." With a royal sense of true propriety and politeness, she uttered not a word of apology for the "little dinner," not a word of explanation about the war's ravages, but all was said and done with the sublime grace of a Southern mother courageously confronting cruel calamity. This little incident is recorded here that it may be known that, way off on the outposts, in the enemy's pitiless presence, the Southern woman never abated her

love and loyalty to the South and the Southern soldier, which fact, all through the war, was the truest and strongest inspiration of that soldier's valor and virtue.

"God bless the Women of the South."

CAMPAIGN OF 1864.—REASSEMBLING AND RETURN TO RICHMOND.

The regiment temporarily disbanded at Henderson, N. C., in March, 1864, that each man might go to his home for a new horse, or the recuperation of the one he had and himself. This was a wise and economical act on the part of our poverty-stricken and staggering Confederate Government. It was a great and helpful blessing to our war-wearied men and animals. It must be borne in mind and always remembered that the Confederate cavalryman furnished his own horse and never received nor expected pay for his loss, unless he was "actually killed in battle or died of wounds" received in battle. It was so written in the bond of our agreement of love.

After a stay, all too short, at our respective homes until about 15 April, each man of the regiment reported in person with his horse to his own Captain at some place designated, when we parted at Henderson, and from that place we marched, by companies, to Richmond, Va., and reunited as a regiment in splendid condition and numbering over 500 effective mounted men and officers.

ORDERS TO REPORT.

At Richmond we received the following "orders," and immediately acted thereon:

"ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
Richmond, 2 May, 1864.

Special Orders No. 102.

The Fifth Regiment, North Carolina Cavalry, now in temporary service near this city, will immediately proceed to the headquarters Army of Northern Virginia and report to General R. E. Lee, commanding, etc., for assignment to duty with Brigadier-General Gordon's Brigade." Vol. 68, p. 940.

General Lee's headquarters, when we reported, were near

New Verdierville, on the plank road a short distance northwest from Spottsylvania Court House; and General Gordon's headquarters, under Hampton then, 2 May, were near Milford, Va. Vol. 68, p. 941 and 948. Gordon's Brigade, then in Hampton's Division, consisted of the Ninth, Nineteenth and Sixty-third North Carolina (First, Second and Fifth Cavalry), as it did immediately afterwards in W H. F Lee's Division. Vol. 67, p. 1027

TRANSFER FROM HAMPTON'S TO W. H. F. LEE'S DIVISION.

On 30 April, 1864, were issued "Special Orders No. 118, Department of Northern Virginia." The part of these orders applicable to Gordon's Brigade was as follows:

"In accordance with instructions from the War Department, the brigades of Brigadier-Generals Gordon and Chambliss are detached respectively from Hampton's and Fitz. Lee's Divisions of cavalry, and will constitute a new division under the command of Major-General W H. F. Lee."

These "special orders," being considered "unimportant," are not published in "Official Records," but this extract was kindly furnished me, as it is given, by General F. C. Ainsworth, U. S. A., Chief of Record and Pension Office, War Department.

The Sixty-third North Carolina afterwards became very much attached to General W H. F. Lee and found him a fine cavalry commander; but not such a man or commander as Hampton, whom we loved personally and officially. There was sad regret on our part as there was with General Hampton at this transfer. Hampton's order in executing this transfer is on page 945, Vol. 68, and is now quoted in full to show his estimate of the Sixty-third and his attachment on that account to this regiment:

"HEADQUARTERS HAMPTON'S DIVISION CAVALRY,
"CAVALRY CAMP, ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
"Milford, 5 May, 1864.

"*Brigadier-General J B. Gordon, Commanding Cavalry Brigade*:

"GENERAL:—In pursuance of Special Orders No. 118, Department of Northern Virginia, of 30 April, and of instruc-

tions from Major-General J E. B. Stuart, commanding cavalry, you are directed to proceed without delay with your command to the vicinity of Shady Grove, where you will concentrate your brigade and report for further orders to Major-General Stuart. I am directed by Major-General Hampton, in communicating the above orders, to express to you, and through you to your whole brigade, the surprise with which he has received the orders and the pain it causes him to execute them. He indulges the hope that his wishes may be consulted, and that a new assignment may be made as soon as the present emergency shall have passed, which will return your brigade to his division and give him back the troops to whom he has become so attached and whom he has learned to trust in times of danger and trial.

"Indulging this hope, he refrains from saying farewell, but will watch the performance of officers and men in the approaching contest with the same anxious interest as if they were under his own command, confident that if your regiments should be eventually returned to him they will bring back unsullied banners and a record of glory increased and illustrated by new achievements in the coming campaign.

"I am, General, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

"THEO. G. BARKER,

"Major and Assistant Adjutant-General."

Thus we see that the illustrious Hampton had become "attached" to and had "learned to *trust in times of danger and trial,*" the Sixty-third North Carolina which, by this order, he places side by side with the Ninth and Nineteenth in his attachment and estimate of merit, without the slightest difference as to either. A great tribute of love and confidence to our regiment from a *very great* source.

BATTLE OF THE WILDERNESS.

The foregoing orders and our execution of them placed the Sixty-third right on the ground for the great battle of the Wilderness. General Grant crossed the Rapidan 4 May with the intention of an immediate forward movement by his front,

to Richmond. His instructions to General Meade were: "Lee's Army will be your objective point. Wherever Lee goes, there you will go also." Vol. 60, p. 828.

The battle began early on 5 May and raged furiously all day, and was renewed at 5 o'clock on the morning of the 6th, and continued with unabated fury until darkness set in, each army holding substantially the same position they had on the evening of the 5th. General Grant, Vol. 67, p. 18. Notwithstanding his statement as to "holding substantially the same position," the world now knows that the South won a great victory at the Wilderness. And that instead of going "wherever Lee goes," as ordered, Meade, under General Grant, began his famous movement via Spottsylvania by Lee's right flank, on night of 7 May, after a loss of 17,666 men in two days. Vol. 67, p. 188. If he intended to go by Lee's right flank, at first, why this awful sacrifice? In this great battle the Sixty-third fought most of the 6th near White Hall, close to the Catharpin road.

This action on our part was under the immediate supervision of General Gordon, who was continually riding and walking along the dismounted lines of the Nineteenth and Sixty-third, the only two regiments of his engaged. He thought "from the number and manner of firing and reports of officers" that we were fighting infantry. Vol. 68, p. 961. The firing on our regiment was terrific. Willis L. Miller, of Company F, of Davidson County, was killed here and many others of our regiment were killed and wounded. He was a splendid boy soldier. And one of the most touching scenes I ever witnessed was Captain John R. Erwin writing next morning to the boy's father of his death.

GENERAL LEE'S RELIANCE ON HIS CAVALRY.

May 7, 1864, Colonel Taylor, General R. E. Lee's Assistant Adjutant-General, wrote General Stuart: "General Lee directs me to say that he wishes you would make an examination and thoroughly inform yourself about the roads on our right, which it would be advisable or necessary for us to follow, should the enemy continue his movement toward Spottsylvania Court House, or should we desire to move on his flank in that direction. Find out about the roads which

the infantry would take, and upon which our artillery, etc., could be thrown around. * * * *He relies upon you to keep him accurately informed of the enemy's movements, should they be in the direction above indicated."* Vol. 68, p. 969. The italics are mine and the letter is quoted to show the importance of our cavalry, in the face of much disparagement by the uninformed. And in this view this letter is a part of the history of the Sixty-third North Carolina. And now see the result of Stuart's Cavalry work along the lines of that letter. In his report of the terrible battle of Spottsylvania, General Grant says: "On the night of the 7th the march was commenced toward Spottsylvania Court House, the Fifth Corps moving by the most direct road. But the enemy *having become apprised of our movement,* and having the shorter line, *was enabled to reach there first."* Vol. 67, p. 19. To same effect are General Sheridan's words at top of page 789, Vol. 67. Italics in last quotation mine. We all know the result. General Grant lost 18,399 men at Spottsylvania. Vol. 67, p. 188. How much the cavalry under Stuart, in conforming to General Lee's letter, aided in this no one knows. I merely give the facts. We were not in the battle of Spottsylvania at all, but we aided in this antecedent work.

Near White Hall, on 8 May, General Gordon received the "orders" of transfer to Major-General W H. F Lee's Division and reported to him that day. This division now consisted of Chambliss' Virginia and Gordon's North Carolina Brigades. Gordon's Brigade now consisted of only the Ninth, Nineteenth and Sixty-third North Carolina (First, Second and Fifth Cavalry), the Fifty-ninth North Carolina (Fourth Cavalry) having been assigned to Dearing's Brigade. The Sixty-third was commanded by Colonel S. B. Evans. Vol. 67, p. 1027.

SHERIDAN'S RAID.

On the morning of 9 May General Sheridan, from the vicinity of Alrich's, on the plank road to Fredericksburg, began his raid on Richmond, around the right of Lee's Army. He had with him his whole corps, three divisions of cavalry, at

least 12,000 effective mounted men and one brigade, six batteries, of artillery under command of Captain James M. Robertson, of the regular United States Army. He moved via Chilesburg and Beaver Dam, at which latter place he destroyed large and valuable Confederate ration and medical supplies. Vol. 67, pp. 787-790 and 285.

It was absolutely necessary for some cavalry to be present with General Lee's Army and Hampton's Division and Chambliss' Brigade were left there for duty. So to contend with this great invading force and direct attack upon the capital of the Confederacy, for that was the ultimate purpose of the raid, *its highest hope and aim*, Stuart could command only three brigades, Lomax's and Wickham's, Fitz. Lee's Division, and Gordon's imperfect brigade, and of artillery only Johnston's Battery and a section of Hart's. All told not over four thousand. Vol. 1 North Carolina Regiments, p. 429. Vol. 67, p. 1045. Sheridan reported his cavalry force at 10,000, but it was much more, according to their organization returns. Sheridan had three entire divisions, Stuart had three incomplete brigades. General Stuart harrassed him in rear and on his flank with Fitz. Lee's forces, until Gordon could come up, which we did promptly. By forced marches, Stuart put Fitz. Lee's two brigades in Sheridan's front at Yellow Tavern on the Brook Turnpike at an early hour on the morning of the 11th, and at once began the battle of Yellow Tavern. About the same time Gordon attacked his rear ferociously at Goodall's Tavern, near Ground Squirrel Church. Devin's Federal brigade burned the Ground Squirrel bridge over the South Anna river in the early morning of the 11th, Vol. 67, p. 834 and p. 846, to impede our progress, and it would have direfully delayed almost any other man than Gordon. He knew or quickly found an old, steep-banked, almost impassable ford. As I remember it, it seems to me that the tops of the banks were at least fifteen feet from the water. Of course they were not. Gordon knew that Stuart wanted him and that Richmond needed him over that river fast. He galloped to this ford with the Sixty-third in front, pointed to it and told us that it was our only place of crossing, gave the order "Forward!" and with a mighty plunge he led the way, and

over that old ford every man of his brigade followed him. Some were seriously hurt, but we were out there expecting to get hurt. We were not "squirrel" hunting just then, even there. In a few minutes we were all up the high hill on the south side of the river, where the enemy had camped and in full sight now of their rear guard, whose skirmishers were firing on us as we crossed that ford and were driven off by our charge up that hill. Vol. 67, p. 846. Our regiment was all quickly dismounted, except one squadron. Company F was in the lead of the regiment, and as we walked up the road in column of fours the fire was fierce from their skirmishers and Lieutenant Gibson, at the head of the company, was badly wounded. In splendid style we swung out into line on the right of that road and went at their dismounted men with a steady step and fire, and drove them back in disorder and "confusion." On page 864, Vol. 67, we read: "May 11—Started from Goodall's Tavern, First Maine as rear guard. It became necessary to dismount the whole regiment to hold back a strong force of the enemy while the column moved on. On withdrawing these dismounted men, the enemy charged, both mounted and dismounted, and caused the regiment to fall back with some confusion and considerable loss." That "strong force" was just four-fifths of our regiment "fighting on foot," for one squadron was then mounted and no mounted charge was made until the dismounted men drove them back. That First Maine was a superb regiment. There was no better in the Army of the Potomac. But a part of the Sixty-third North Carolina beat them "back with some confusion and considerable loss" at Goodall's 11 May, 1864. They quickly had another force in front of our dismounted line and while we were driving them also with a rattling fire from their men and ours that grand old First Maine was in the saddle for coming events on horseback. Gordon then charged past our left with the Ninth North Carolina and that squadron of the Sixty-third. It was hand-to-hand, saber to saber, in deadly close conflict between the Ninth North Carolina and that squadron of the Sixty-third on our side, and the First Maine, now remounted, and the Tenth New York, Vol. 67, p. 870, on their side; and

in a few moments the First Maine and the Tenth New York "fell back with some more confusion and considerable loss" before our sabers also. Men will not stand long the cold steel and clash of the saber. One side or the other gives way quickly as did Sheridan's splendid soldiers before these two North Carolina regiments in those glorious charges and counter-charges at Ground Squirrel Church.

We kept up the fight on their rear, pressing them hard continuously. General Gregg, commanding their Second Division, says: "On the 11th, near Ground Squirrel Church, this division, marching in rear, was attacked by Gordon's Brigade of rebel cavalry. The attacks of the enemy were repeated during the entire day, thus forming a part of the general engagement with the enemy at Yellow Tavern." Vol. 67, p. 853. "This *division,*" mark you. And our attacks, on their rear, were as victorious as they were "repeated."

At Yellow Tavern, in their front, Stuart made for hours a terrible fight and his last, while the North Carolina Brigade fought them fiercely in their rear. But the odds and every hope, could we have realized it, were all against us from the start in that fatal fighting of 11 May at Yellow Tavern, and Wickham and Lomax had to give way before the overwhelming hosts and their defeat, gloriously resisted by them and lessened by Gordon, was made most direful by General Stuart's death-wound.

It seems to me that every reader of this history will be interested in the story of Stuart's fall and, therefore, I give it and General R. E. Lee's general order on his death.

Colonel Russell A. Alger, Colonel of the Fifth Michigan Cavalry, on 8 July, 1864, reports it thus: "Arriving at a point commanding a hill in rear of rebel battery, my attention was called by Captain Judson, of this regiment, to an officer, accompanied by a large staff and escort, carrying a battle flag, who was just coming on to the hill from the rear. This officer was shot from his horse by Private John A. Huff, Company E, formerly of Berdan's Sharpshooters. He was immediately carried to the rear by his staff. About thirty minutes later the hill was carried, and a woman and a negro informed me that General Stuart had been shot on the hill

mentioned, and first brought to their house and afterward carried away in an ambulance." And Colonel Alger further says: "I regret to report that Private John A. Huff, Company E, the man mentioned who wounded General Stuart, has recently died of wounds received at Haw's Shop on 28 May." Vol. 67, pp. 828 and 829.

"HEADQUARTERS ARMY NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
20 May, 1864.

General Orders No. 44.

The commanding general announces to the army with heartfelt sorrow the death of Major-General J. E. B. Stuart, late commander of the Cavalry Corps of the Army of Northern Virginia. Among the gallant soldiers who have fallen in this war, General Stuart was second to none in valor, in zeal and in unfaltering devotion to his country. His achievements form a conspicuous part of the history of this army, with which his name and services will be forever associated. To military capacity of a high order and all the noble virtues of the soldier, he added the brighter graces of a pure life, guided and sustained by the Christian's faith and hope. The mysterious hand of an Allwise God has removed him from the scene of his usefulness and fame. His grateful countrymen will mourn his loss and cherish his memory. To his comrades in arms he has left the proud recollection of his deeds, and the inspiring influence of his example.

R. E. LEE, General."

"His achievements," as we have well seen, were in part the work of the Sixty-third North Carolina. This "General Order" is on page 800, Vol. 69.

But Yellow Tavern was to Sheridan what Guilford Court House was to Cornwallis. One more like it would have ruined him and his hosts. He knew it and began his midnight retreat with the spires of Richmond in sight and her church "bells heard ringing." Vol. 67, p. 834. And it was this regiment and other *North Carolinians* who were blasting the highest hope and aim of Sheridan and his raid and *saving Richmond.* Our regiment never think or speak of it vainglo-

riously, but always with sorrow for the dead and the defeat in front at Yellow Tavern, but history must record that it was another case of "Pickett or Pettigrew." If Gordon and his *North Carolinians* had not pressed him as they did, *Sheridan would surely have gone into Richmond 11 May, 1864.*

Among our mortally wounded at Ground Squirrel Church were Lieutenant Samuel Hanner, of Company I, and Private R. Davis Kerr, of Company F, and of course, many others whose names I cannot recall.

The following appeared in the Richmond *Enquirer* of 12 May, and was copied in a North Carolina paper of May, 1864, from which I now copy:

"Individual instances of daring are numerous and we hope not to be invidious in mentioning an instance. In the charge the Yankee colors at one time being almost in reach, Lieutenant Lindsay, of the Fifth North Carolina, dashes at them and grapples with the color-bearer. As he reaches for them, an expert shift from one hand to the other by the color-bearer, saves them from his grasp, but, with well-plied stroke of the sabre, he almost unhorses the bearer, who, bleeding, reels, but gathers his equilibrium, and by means of the fleetness of his horse, saves himself with his devoted Yankee bunting.

"Another instance is, also, worthy of publicity. Private Frank Brown, of Company H, Fifth North Carolina Cavalry, a mere stripling, dashes into the heavy ranks of the First Maine Regiment and encounters an athletic Yankee Captain, who, with a stunning blow with his broad sabre, knocks the lad from his horse; at the same instant the Yankee Captain's horse was shot from under him. Just as this brave lad was rising from the ground, his eye caught the situation of his antagonist, and, raising the butt of his gun, he commenced clubbing the Yankee, who lustily cried out for quarter."

Frank Brown accepted his surrender and went with him, 12 May, as a "special guard" by reason of his own wound, to Libby Prison, in Richmond, and there in person, turned him over to our authorities.

I am assured that Frank Brown dismounted and with carbine leveled on them, also captured four privates of the First Maine that same day and three horses, one of which was given,

there in the fight, to Lieutenant Kerr Craige, of Gordon's staff, and another to Captain C. W Pearson, of Company H, both of whom had their horses killed there.

This same captain of the First Maine, seeing one of his own company privates surrender to Private J B. Foard, of Company H, Sixty-third North Carolina, and, in the zeal and intensity of his own valorous fighting, being unconscious of the exact situation, called out to his man, naming him: "What in the thunder does *that* mean?" Just then Frank Brown and the Captain met. Brown, in marching the Captain to the rear, overtook Foard and his prisoner, when the latter politely said: "Captain, what in the thunder does *this* mean?"

And there seems then to have been a mutual understanding between them as to what it did mean.

A member of the First Maine, in this same conflict, was in the very act of shooting Sergeant A. N. Campbell, of Company H, when the latter, with a tremendous "right cut against cavalry," knocked the gun out of his hand and took him prisoner. Captain Pearson writes of Campbell: "No braver man ever drew the breath of life."

S. F. Flemming, of Company H, got in this fight, a terrible saber cut on his head and forehead, the scar of which plainly shows to-day We captured that day an entire wagon load of Spencer rifles and their special ammunition. It was a splendid, long-range, breech-loader and shot seven times without reloading. I carried one of them during the remainder of my service in the ranks, and was very much attached to it.

BROOK CHURCH.

General Sheridan calls this "Meadow Bridge." In gratitude, I guess, to the bridge that "carried him over" his imminent danger and disaster at Brook Church.

The Brook Turnpike above Richmond runs almost due north and south. The Military road at Brook, or Emanuel Church, strikes it at right angles from the east, in which direction this road crosses the upper Chickahominy at Meadow Bridge. In his midnight retreat of 11 May, from Yellow

Tavern, General Sheridan took this Military road at Brook Church to escape, intending to cross the Chickahominy and move to his right from there to the James. And this he did, but he surely had an awful time of it and a narrow escape at Brook Church.

Early on the morning of the 12th, Gordon was on his rear at Brook Church. Sheridan was met by our forces, of cavalry and infantry, at Meadow Bridge, which we had destroyed and the river there was otherwise impassable. Sheridan says some fords were discovered by scouts, but if so, why on earth did he have such a desperate and deadly time repairing that bridge, as my references will show he did? Sheridan's rear occupied a strong position of his own selection on the Military road which he swept with canister constantly. Gordon dismounted the Ninth and Nineteenth North Carolina and attacked him fiercely, and sent his Aide, Lieutenant Kerr Craige, into Richmond for some artillery and to propose to the officer in charge of that portion of the city defences a combined attack on Sheridan's flanks. The Sixty-third was held in reserve in mounted column, under fire, just off to the right of the Military road, going east. With our regiment, as we all knew, Gordon intended to charge those batteries up the Military road after he got some supports from Richmond. And that charge, which he would have led in person, would have been about the last of our regiment. In a few minutes some artillery came. And oh! such artillery! It was the most beautiful in all its appearances that we ever beheld. The smoke of battle had never been about it. He placed it to the slight oblique right and front of our regiment on the elevation of some old entrenchments. It fired one time. Immediately one or more of Sheridan's guns were turned on it—canister for the first time in its history rattled around those beautiful guns and among its wheels and every man about the battery flew into the ditches of those old entrenchments. Gordon was furious. He raved and begged. He called it "Band Box Artillery," which would have occurred only to him, possibly, under such a fire. But those artillerists "held the trenches faithfully" against Richmond's invaders. Some few of them could not even stand that and

came through the woods by us. We laughed at them, ridiculed them and asked them to go back and man their guns. But they looked at us as if they thought we were surely crazy. Gordon became utterly disgusted and went back at a gallop right into the fire down that Military road and there he received the wound which ended his life and brilliant career six days later. The battle was raging furiously at Meadow Bridge on Sheridan's front and right flank. The command of the brigade now devolved on Colonel Andrews, of the Nineteenth, as ranking officer. The Sixty-third was dismounted to join in the attack on foot. Company F was in front of that column. The order was to cross the road, still swept by canister, and form on its left. Captain Erwin looked calmly around at us and said: "Come on boys." He led, and over the road the regiment went and formed in line of battle. We advanced fast to a horizontal, wide board fence, which looked literally perforated, and after short firing, on our part, the enemy disappeared. Sheridan had broken over at Meadow Bridge and escaped. Sheridan himself says, on page 791, Vol. 67 "The enemy considered us completely cornered, but such was not the case." Well, of course, none of us knew for certain, but those of us who were there will never cease to believe that if he had not broken over at Meadow Bridge, just when he did, that he and his men would have been given quarters in Richmond for the rest of the war.

He also says, page 801, of his raid: "The result was constant success and the almost total annihilation of the rebel cavalry." This shows, I regret to say, how unreliable his statements are, as he soon had full proof of by that same "rebel cavalry."

That the reader may see what a desperate state they were in at Meadow Bridge, I refer to Vol. 67, pp. 791, 813-814, 819, 835, 879 and 880. He lost 625 men on his raid and 1,003 horses. Vol. 67, p. 185, and Vol. 68, p. 851. We had no sufficient force to follow Sheridan, and it was useless as, after his passage of the Chickahominy, he could easily connect with Butler on the James, as he did, near Haxall's Landing on 14 May.

Our great loss at Brook Church was the gallant and glori-

our James B. Gordon. The Fifth loved him as its commander during the Gettysburg campaign and, as his entire brigade did, for his splendid courage and merit in all respects. He was the Murat of the Army of Northern Virginia, and had he lived he would have added increased lustre to our North Carolina Cavalry. I want to identify him with his home and people so that we can hold him in closer relation in this way and, therefore, I state that his sister was the mother of Messrs. R. N. and James Gordon Hackett, of Wilkes. That county was rather famous for such cavalrymen—Colonel W H. H. Cowles was born and now lives there.

KENNON'S LANDING, OR WILSON'S WHARF.

The attack on Kennon's Landing was the most useless sacrifice of time and men and horses made during the war.

The brigade was camped 23 May near Hanover Junction, recuperating a little from the terrible ride and fighting of the Sheridan raid. Late that afternoon an order came to each Captain for a "detail of picked men for specially dangerous work." The Sixty-third furnished about 225 men and officers, under command of Major McNeill. There surely were not over 1,000 men on the expedition. from our brigade. Wilson's Wharf was a fortified post of great natural and artificial strength on the James river, below City Point, and consequently fully in the enemy's lines. It was forty-seven miles in a *straight* line, by best military maps, from Hanover Junction. It consisted of a fort built in semi-circle form on a bluff of the river with each end resting on the James, with heavy parapets and a canal of water the entire front of the half circle. There was open ground for several hundred yards all around the fort covered with abattis and large fallen pine trees to impede assailants. If we could ever have taken it we never could have held it. The expedition was under the immediate command of General Fitzhugh Lee, and originated with him, it was said at the time, to drive some negro soldiers off Virginia soil.

We left Hanover Junction about 6 p. m. on the 23d and rode all night and much of the time at a gallop. Early on the morning of the 24th we were near the fort, but for some

inexplicable reason the attack was delayed. A note, by flag of truce, was sent in to General Wild, commanding the post, demanding immediate surrender, and saying if not complied with, that General Lee would not be responsible for action of his men when the fort was taken. Wild answered: "We will try that." Vol. 68, p. 269. It was 11 o'clock before we began to get into position; in the meantime the gunboats *Dawn, Pequot* and the *Atlanta* (ironclad) were shelling us fiercely and the fort was filling with reinforcements. The enemy also had a small vessel named the *Mayflower*. Some of our forces wounded the captain and pilot of this boat. I never heard of any injury that we inflicted on the ironclad. We had no artillery; but with or without artillery, "no regiment of our cavalry was afraid of those things."

The shells were chiefly 100-pounders. We could see them plainly coming at and over us; great black masses, as big as nail kegs, hurtling in the air and making the earth tremble under us and the atmosphere jar and quake around us when they burst. They certainly were terrifying. And under their effect I compared the "details" from the Ninth and Sixty-third. The former was dismounted and ours mounted, each in column of fours near together under those awful missiles. As one came towards us and burst over us, I saw those old veterans of the Ninth looking up at it with horror, lean back slightly and out of line. Just such a look and backward incline of their bodies as I imagine the immortal sentinel at Pompeii made, momentarily, when that dark, ashen death fixed him erect at his post for the admiration of future ages. Captain N P Foard saw their momevent and, under the bursting, crashing sound and mass, he said. "Steady men, steady!" Possibly before the words were uttered they were erect as statues. At the same second I glanced along the Sixty-third, in the same line of my vision, and *every man* sat in his saddle absolutely motionless. It was no discredit to the Ninth, but the contrast was glorious for the Sixty-third.

We were soon put in line of battle around that fort, our regiment on the extreme left, the enemy's right. We were to charge, at the firing of a signal gun on our left. We lay there for an hour or more waiting that signal, eating straw-

berries in the fence corners and quietly talking of the scene in front of us; and all the while we could plainly see platoon after platoon of reinforcements coming over the bluff into the fort on the decline next to us. The shells from the 100-pounders, 20-pounders and 12-pounders were still bursting over us and other parts of the line. Our regiment and some others on our immediate right in the line were to make the charge, while those in front and on left of the fort were to fire incessantly on the fort when the charge began. About 2:30 or 3 p. m., the signal gun fired and the Sixty-third arose with a mighty yell for that terrible charge. We mounted the high rail fence in our front and went straight and fast, as the obstructions would permit, for that fort—yelling and firing as we went and receiving fierce front and cross fires into our ranks from rifles and artillery in the fort and the gun boats; we were within thirty feet of the fort when we saw the utter hopelessness of the attack. The line halted a moment; the order to retreat was given and we retired under that awful fire from the most useless and unwise attack and the most signal failure we were ever engaged in.

General Wild reports: "They massed troops on our extreme right, concealed by wooded ravines and made a determined charge, at same time keeping up a steady attack all along our front and left flank. This charge approached our parapet, but failed under our severe cross fires." Vol. 68, p. 270. For naval reports, giving names of vessels engaged and calibre of guns, see *"Official Records Union and Confederate Navies,"* Series 1, Vol. 10, pp. 87-91.

Out of the detail of ten or twelve men from Company F, W S. Prather and Green L. Bingham were killed outright; Worth McDonald and I were wounded. I was shot through the left shoulder within thirty feet of the fort, firing, at the moment, I am sure at the very identical white man who shot me. Worth McDonald was wounded by one of those 100-pounders. It passed at least ten feet from him and paralyzed his right arm by concussion of the air. There was no visible flesh injury to the arm, but it fell useless to his side, quickly turned black its entire length, and he never recovered the use of it during his life time. He got an honorable dis-

charge for the war and I got a furlough, 5 June, from Chimborazo Hospital in Richmond, for three months, with great joy at the thought of going home.

Some Virginians charged immediately on the right of our regiment. As we retreated we came to a long, wide lagoon in a ravine, back of where we began the charge. The water was three to four feet deep. In some way, unknown to me, I attracted the attention of one of those Virginians, a giant of a fellow. I knew he was a Virginian by his regimental designation on his coat sleeve. Of his own motion, he kindly and tenderly offered to carry me over that water. I thankfully declined and said to him: "I think that I can make it all right." He looked down at me and said: "Oh! boy get on my shoulders." And suiting his action to his words, he stooped down in front of me. I put my arms around his neck, he put his right hand under my right knee, his left holding his own gun, and thus, like we used to play when children, he carried me over that water and almost to the top of the steep slope beyond. It has always hurt me that I never knew his name. He stands in memory for Virginia. And this is stated *solely* to show and commemorate the courageous, absolutely unselfish, generous kindness of the private soldiers of the Army of Northern Virginia in the face of danger to themselves, too, when showing it. There were millions of such acts that will never be known.

After he let me down, I walked a short distance and, from loss of blood, lay down in some young corn. I heard some one tell Major McNeill of my condition. The Major came to me and asked me to ride out on his horse, which had just been brought to him after he had led our charge, and from which he dismounted. I refused, he insisted. I refused positively, and he sent a man on his horse for mine and stood by me until the horse came, put me on it and sent the man with me to the surgeon, while he directed the men of the regiment how to move out ready for the expected attack from our rear. And it was acts like this, of gentleness and love for *all* his men, which he was continually doing, that caused the men of the Sixty-third all to *love* him.

NORTH AND SOUTH OF THE JAMES.

For some time now, I did not see any of the events that occurred and must utilize, in a running way, my "Sketches of North Carolina Cavalry Brigade."

About 26 May, 1864, the Forty-first North Carolina (Third Cavalry), arrived from Eastern North Carolina and in splendid condition, joined the brigade and our brigade commander was now Colonel John A. Baker, of the Third, he being the senior Colonel in rank. And now, for the first time during the campaign, the Sixty-third was associated with three other regiments in the brigade which was now composed of the Ninth, Nineteenth, Forty-first and Sixty-third, and remained so to the end of the war.

About this time General Grant crossed the Pamunkey near Hanovertown. Colonel Baker moved out promptly to meet the Federal advance and on 27 May a short action ensued. The enemy was strongly resisted until the Maryland line sent as a support gave way and we were forced to withdraw.

Here W H. F. Lee rejoined us and we reported again to him as our division commander.

28 May, the Sixty-third took part in the bloody action at Haw's Shop, but did not get heavily engaged. Vol. 67, pp. 829-830, 854 and 1031. Vol. 69, p. 362.

On 30 May, Brigadier-General Young was temporarily assigned to command of the brigade.

On the 31st we attacked the enemy at Hanover Court House and drove them back in handsome style, but they received large reinforcements and drove us back. Next morning, 1 June, the Sixty-third and other cavalry attacked them furiously at Ashland and swept the enemy's lines and works for more than a mile, capturing many prisoners and horses. General Young was wounded and the command fell a second time on Colonel Baker. Their Colonel, Chapman, says: "The line was advanced cautiously and with some difficulty, but had proceeded only a short distance when the enemy attacked us in large force in front and flank. The line soon gave back, retreating with considerable loss and closely pressed." Vol. 67, p. 900. General R. E. Lee says: "Rosser

fell upon their rear, charged down the road toward Ashland bearing everything before him. His progress was arrested at Ashland by the entrenchments of the enemy. General William H. F Lee came up at this time with a part of his division and a joint attack was made. The enemy was quickly driven from the place and pursued toward Hanover Court House until dark." Vol. 67, p. 1031. On 3 June General Hampton fought the second battle of Haws' Shop. The Nineteenth and Sixty-third Regiments by their charges elicited high praise from Generals Hampton and W H. F. Lee. And General R. E. Lee says: "A part of General W H. F Lee's Division drove them from their entrenchments." Vol. 67, p. 1032 and p. 901 gives Federal account.

4 June, 1864, Brigadier-General Rufus Barringer was assigned to command of the brigade. Vol. 69, p. 873. On 6 June he received his commission and took command.

7 June, brigade was detached to picket lower crossings of Chickahominy, near Bottom's and Long Bridges.

On 13 June General Grant, in his move to the south of the James, forced in Barringer's pickets at Long Bridge, on the Chickahominy, and effected a crossing. Vol. 67, pp. 1035 and 1051. The Sixty-third Regiment and rest of the brigade was hastened to support the pickets; but the advance was with cavalry and infantry and we were driven back to White Oak Swamp, near Riddle's Shop, where General W H. F Lee joined us and the Sixty-third joined in a rattling fight with the entire division and held the enemy in check till our infantry came up and relieved us late in the day and the enemy "were driven back nearly two miles." Vol. 67, p. 1035. Vol. 67, pp. 1052 at top, 902, 1035 and Vol. 80, p. 643. The Sixty-third was then moved rapidly to the right and front to watch the enemy's movements. With the brigade we followed the enemy to Wilcox's Landing, fighting daily at different points, especially at Point of Rocks, Malvern Hill, Crenshaw's and Herring Creek. Vol. 67, p. 1035.

18 June we crossed the James, with the entire division and took position two miles south of Petersburg.

On 21 June, early in the day, the enemy advanced rapidly

and most unexpectedly, with infantry and artillery to seize the Weldon Railroad. General Barringer barely had time to form his line of the Ninth, Nineteenth and Forty-first Regiments in front of the Davis Farm. McGregor's battery was put in position at the Davis House on the railroad; the Sixty-third, dismounted, supported the battery. To the left and front of the farm lay a body of woods easily reached by McGregor's guns and through which the enemy would likely pass in their route for the railroad. The whole front line was ordered to fall back rapidly to the rear and narrowest part of the wood, as soon as the action should begin, and there make a stand, out of the line of McGregor's fire. McGregor was directed not to fire until the enemy reached this wood. The orders were all executed well and had the desired effect. The enemy mistook the movement of our line for a flight. They poured into the woods by thousands. Suddenly McGregor's guns opened; for a moment the heavy lines of the enemy faltered and then fell back under the shock of this splendid battery, but rallying quickly they again rushed forward when all at once a furious, deadly fire from the dismounted men, at short range, cut them down by scores. The Federal officers dashed bravely forward and called upon their men to follow. But volley after volley thinned their ranks and they broke and fled. They left forty dead on the field there and twenty odd prisoners, including a Lieutenant-Colonel and two Captains. At one time the opposing lines were so close together that prisoners were taken on both sides near each other, and thus Colonel Baker and Lieutenant Fred. Foard, Aide to General Barringer, were captured. Lieutenant Foard made a daring and miraculous escape by jumping from a car window of a fast running train between Washington and Baltimore. They were so sure he was dead that they never slackened speed; and when he soon returned he reported that the enemy's dead and wounded carried off reached several hundred. It was Barlow's infantry division into which the dismounted Sixty-third fired those awful and deadly volleys.

General W H. F Lee came to our support just at the close of the action with the other brigade and shortly our in-

fantry arrived and pursuit was made, but the Federals had effected their escape.

WILSON'S RAID.—BLACKS AND WHITES.

That name was terribly typical of the mingled, motley mass that Wilson's invading "army with banners" became in its final, frightful fall and rout. The negroes flocked to him by thousands and mingled their black faces with his whites to his utter discomfiture and ruin—as such God-forbidden commingling of races always will, and his troopers' faces were often black and white with fear as the sequel will show. The name of that place now is Blackstone.

General Wilson, on page 620, Vol. 80, says that he was "ordered to strike the railroad and destroy it in the direction of Burkville and Roanoke (Staunton) river. High Bridge on the South Side & Roanoke bridge (Staunton river bridge) on the Danville road were especially to be aimed at. Having broken up these roads as far as possible, I was authorized to cross into North Carolina and make my way either to the coast or to General Sherman in North Georgia. If I could not cross the Roanoke (Staunton) river I was left to my own judgment what route to pursue in returning to the Army of the Potomac or the James river." "Foreseeing," he says, in substance, that these grand purposes might possibly fail, he "wrote to General Meade the evening before starting that he anticipated no serious difficulty in executing his orders," but that Sheridan must keep Hampton off of him and the Confederate infantry kept so engaged as "to prevent Lee from making detachments." He was assured "that the Army of the Potomac should cover the Weldon road the next day, the South Side road the day after, and that Hampton having followed Sheridan toward Gordonsville, he need not fear any trouble from him." How hard it was to teach them, at General Meade's headquarters, anything about Hampton and that the "rebel cavalry was" *not* "almost totally annihilated."

Where not otherwise stated the references about Blacks and Whites will be only to pages of Vol. 80, without naming "Vol. 80."

At 3 a. m. of the 22d the expedition consisting of about 5,500 cavalry and twelve guns, began the march by way of Reams Station, p. 621. "The expedition," by commands and columns, consisted of the Third Division, Wilson's own command, and General "Kautz's Division" of cavalry. W H. F Lee made instant pursuit, taking with him Dearing's Brigade and the Ninth, Nineteenth and Sixty-third Regiments of the North Carolina Brigade, and McGregor's Battery. They tore up and destroyed the railroad awfully, there is no doubt about that. We struck their rear guard at Reams Station, drove them off and pressed them rapidly until long after night. 645, 650. On page, 645, their Colonel Chapman says: "From this point, W H. F Lee's Division of cavalry followed the rear of the column closely, keeping up a continual skirmish until a couple of hours after night-fall."

The next day, 23 June, we had gotten ahead of them and also between their two columns. General Lee was now on the north side of the railroad at a point where the railroad and public road cross each other, almost at right angles and in a cut about four feet deep and eight hundred feet long. On page 645, Federal Colonel Chapman says: "On the morning of the 23d I moved my command about an hour before daylight and proceeding by the Cox road, we reached Blacks and Whites, and upon reaching a point near Nottoway Court House where the road crosses the railroad the head of the column came upon the enemy. Soon ascertaining that it was the same force that had followed the rear the day previous I made dispositions to meet the enemy, who advanced to the attack, checked his advance, and subsequently drove him back a considerable distance. The enemy bringing up strong reinforcements my line retired to its original position along the railroad, from which repeated attempts of the enemy failed to dislodge them. This engagement lasted from 1 p. m. until dark and at times was quite severe. My command remained in line of battle until near daylight, when, in accordance with instructions, I quietly withdrew."

To the same effect is General Wilson's report on page 621, and, on page 626, General Wilson says: "The enemy's cavalry had succeeded in interposing themselves between the two

divisions of my command and that in the fight Chapman got 'possession' of our battery." And further: "This was one of the most determined cavalry engagements in which this division has participated," where he says: "I determined not to renew the engagement until I could hear from General Kautz."

Now for our view of the fight. General Dearing was in front, and with the Nineteenth North Carolina Regiment and McGregor's Battery made the first attack on Chapman. This battery was in position on the left of the public road, as General Lee approached the railroad. The fighting was furious. The Ninth and Sixty-third were back some distance in the road by which Lee moved, the former in front of our short train of wagons and the latter just behind the wagons. Dearing's Brigade began to break and finally fled. General Lee seeing the day going against him, rushed one of his couriers to the Ninth and Sixty-third with an order "to come to the front fast." The Ninth got its order and, as always, moved off as ordered; the same courier dashed by our short wagon train and gave the same order to the Sixty-third, marching by twos. The order for the Sixty-third rang out—"Open ranks; forward, gallop, march." And past those wagons the Sixty-third went in a *rushing race* right after the Ninth. We dashed up to the fight and as the Ninth gloriously rushed in on the extreme left of our line, the Sixty-third was dismounted, under the fastest orders ever given, and rushed in on the right of the Ninth. Dearing's men were fleeing in dismay before Chapman's victorious lines. McGregor's guns were just about to be captured. Captain S. A. Grier, commanding the fifth squadron, on the left of the Sixty-third's line and closest to the Ninth, says *"the guns were abandoned."* Near the extreme right of what had been our first line there was somebody firing into the foe and falling slowly back, and who had not fled with Dearing. As the Ninth and Sixty-third, wildly yelling, and firing furiously, went by our guns and beat back Chapman, it was seen that the somebody on the Sixty-third's right was Major W P Roberts, commanding the Nineteenth Regiment. Roberts' courage never failed. He saw everything in battle just as light-

ning reads a landscape, absolutely imperturbed. He took in the situation at a glance. His orders rang out clear and strong. His regiment faced and wheeled to the left, the personification of his orders. And in a moment the fire of the Nineteenth and the fire of the extreme right of the Sixty-third was pouring into Chapman's left flank and rear. The tide of battle was turned and McGregor's guns and the day were saved. Chapman flew in disorder into the railroad cut and formed behind its banks and the battle raged on till darkness ended it. And during the night he "quietly withdrew," leaving his dead and wounded in our hands so entirely that he marks their number with a —— on page 645.

Next morning Wilson, veered off to the right, entirely out of his intended course, driven from the South Side Railroad and, by Hungarytown, tried to reach Staunton river bridge. He did not touch the South Side any more.

General R. E. Lee 25 June, says: "He withdrew from General Lee's front at daylight on the 24th, leaving his dead and wounded on the field, taking the road to Hungarytown. General Lee is still following them." 751.

And at Blacks and Whites we broke the backbone of Wilson's raid. But he had high orders and he was doing a soldier's best to obey them. I am quite certain that, on the night of 23 June, 1864, he totally abandoned all thought of crossing into North Carolina and joining and strengthening General Sherman in North Georgia.

On the 24th and 25th we were "*still* following them." The artillery was sent back. The North Carolina Cavalry Brigade alone pressed the pursuit, General W H. F. Lee accompanying. They did do some tearing up of the Danville Railroad and burned also two private mills. 734.

We were "following them" when they reached Staunton river bridge "at 6 p. m. on the 25th." 626.

The south side of the river was defended by the "Home Guard" with some artillery, who made a gallant defence of the bridge. General Wilson terms them "the militia of eight counties." 627 General Kautz had rejoined him. Now let General Wilson tell the tale: "Our forces were unable to get closer than seventy or eighty yards to the bridge. After

a determined effort, lasting till after dark, the attack was terminated and the troops directed to hold an advanced position, covering the road crossing at Roanoke Station. Simultaneously with Kautz's attack of the bridge, Lee's cavalry attacked our rear, under Chapman, but as usual, was held in check without any serious difficulty or loss. Finding that the bridge could not be carried without severe loss, if at all, the enemy being again close upon our rear, the Staunton too deep for fording and unprovided with bridges or steam ferries I determined to push no farther south, but to endeavor to reach the army by returning toward Petersburg. Our position, from the peculiar topography of the site, was rather dangerous, and in order to extricate the command it became necessary to move it by night. The march was therefore begun about midnight." 627. The presence of Lee's cavalry "close upon his rear" *possibly*, to some slight extent, caused him to see "the peculiar topography of the site;" *certain* it is that he did not here exercise his own *unaffected* "judgment as to what route to pursue in returning to the Army of the Potomac or the James river." And oh! how much worse that "judgment" was all shattered later on by Hampton and our infantry at Stony Creek, Sappony Church and Reams Station, after the horrible heat, dust, smoke and fights of this raid and pursuit. Sketches 631, 632 and 633.

General R. E. Lee, 26 June, says: "This afternoon General W. H. F. Lee reports that he attacked the enemy near Staunton river bridge yesterday afternoon and drove him until dark. He also states that the enemy was signally repulsed at the bridge the same evening and retreated this morning, leaving about thirty of his dead on the field." 751.

The North Carolina Cavalry Brigade was much diminished in its effective force by the awful heat, dust and marches of the last few days. Turning back the disabled men and horses Lee renewed the chase with Dearing's Brigade and the remnant of our brigade. Most of this force moved on Wilson's flank to drive him into the snare set for him by Hampton at Stony Creek and Sappony Church. But Wilson was hurt and hastened and horrified most by a select detail of men and horses *solely* from our brigade, who fol-

lowed in his immediate track and rear and harrassed him *continually.* They could not strike hard, but it was like the blows of enraged birds on the hawk. They were *demoralizing* and *driving.* And driving the enemy right into the ruin prepared for them, when they expected peace and rest.

And now let General Wilson talk again. He says, on page 627, that on the afternoon of 28 June, near Stony Creek Depot, "we learned that the advance of Hampton's Cavalry had just arrived from Richmond. Although it was then night, a fierce fight ensued lasting to nearly 10 o'clock. It was at once apparent that the prospect of penetrating their line at this place was by no means flattering and that a new route must be chosen." He prepared "for an attempt to break through the enemy's line between Reams and the Six Mile House. For the first time I then learned that, contrary to my expectations, no part of the Weldon Railroad was in possession of the infantry investing Petersburg, and that instead of my command being in the immediate vicinity of our lines the enemy held the road and interposed a strong force to prevent our junction." * * * He tried another "route," when "a large force of infantry in line of battle was reported advancing with a heavy line of skirmishers deployed across the fields through which I proposed passing. I found not less than a brigade of infantry with guns in position. My scouts soon reported the movement of troops toward our extreme left flank. Seeing no possible chance of getting through to our lines by this route and fearing the loss of my entire command, I ordered the immediate destruction of the wagons and caissons and that the whole force should move by the stage road. At Stony Creek the bridge being bad and the creek unfordable, at one time the situation was critical in the extreme. The negroes who had joined our columns in large numbers on all parts of the route added greatly to the embarrassment. * * * During the night the flankers of Chapman's Brigade met the enemy's scouting parties and brought in prisoners who said that Chambliss' Brigade had left Stony Creek that morning to intercept us. This caused my column to expedite its movements. Its advance reached the Blackwater to find the bridge gone and the

stream utterly unfordable. I immediately began the repair of the bridge and soon had it fit for crossing by file, but the materials, having been partly burned, gave way. It was promptly repaired, but after crossing a few more men again failed. New string pieces were cut from the woods and by 3 a. m. it was again covered with rails and ready for use. The whole command was over by 6:15 a. m., and the bridge destroyed." Now was not that an awful time in the darkness of the night to have his bridge breaking under him twice and precipitating into the Blackwater his now terrified, blanched-faced troopers, who had started out "to cross into North Carolina and make their way either to the coast or to General Sherman in North Georgia?" Why it was worse than "Buckland Races." But that is the picture that General Wilson himself draws, by my scattering quotations of his own words on pages 627, 628, 629 and 630.

Wilson left Kautz to his own fate and of that fate, in part, Kautz says: "As we pursued no road, but marched by compass, passing most of the way through timber and heavy undergrowth, the artillery could not be brought through. It was hauled off the field and finally abandoned in a swamp, where the carriages mired, and could not be extricated. 732.

He lost all of his guns. "Not a wheel was saved; mountain howitzers and all fell into the hands of the enemy." 735. "As we pursued no road, but marched by compass, passing most of the way through timber and heavy undergrowth, the artillery could not be brought through. It was hauled off the field and finally abandoned in a swamp, where the carriages mired, and could not be extricated. 732.

Now was not this, marching *by a compass,* through dense timber and heavy undergrowth and swamps, on *"no road at all," a peculiar* exercise of one's "own judgment as to what route to pursue in returning to the Army of the Potomac?" It was almost as much so as "the peculiar topography of the sight" at Staunton river bridge.

And from the remnant of our brigade at Staunton river, who followed in that final pursuit in Wilson's immediate track and rear, the Sixty-third North Carolina furnished *more* men than all the other regiments put together. So says

Lieutenant Wiley, of Company F, Captain S. A. Grier, of Company D, and others now living. And Lieutenant Wiley says, that by his own personal knowledge of all that transpired when the selection of men and horses for that pursuit was made, Company F, of the Sixty-third, furnished more men and horses than any other company in the brigade; and that this fact was generally spoken of then.

And Lieutenant Wiley writes: "I led a detachment of Company F in the immediate rear of Wilson from Staunton river until they were driven into our infantry. This detachment, at one time charged Wilson's rear and captured several men and horses. John Jamison, still living, was in that detachment."

George E. Barnhardt, of Company H, writes: "Captain McKellar and some other officer, I do not remember, were appointed, at Staunton river, to select men and horses for the immediate pursuit on Wilson's rear. It was more a selection of horses than men. Horses able to make rapid and continuous pursuit. Company H, and I suppose all other companies of the regiment, passed single file before these officers and they selected the horses." Sergeant Ratcliff, of Company D, Sixty-third, captured in that rear pursuit of Wilson a That night the Sixty-third camped on the Darbytown road. Federal Colonel on a magnificent gray horse, which he swapped to General Barringer and the General rode it till he was captured. My recollection is that the Colonel's name was Crook, as I heard afterwards. At Blacks and Whites, T. O. Serves was mortally wounded and "Joe" Blackwelder badly shot, both of Company F, with others I do not know.

BACK AND FORTH OVER THE JAMES.

On 28 July the Sixty-third marched north of the James to help meet a move of Federal cavalry against Richmond, joined in the affairs at Fuzzle's Mills and Riddle's Shop and then returned to our old position eight miles south of Petersburg.

On 14 August we were again summoned north of the James. Marching day and night the Sixty-third reached the Charles City road early on the 15th and met the Federal cavalry, ad-

vanced to White's Farm within six miles of Richmond and took part in the action there. We found a strong party near Fisher's Farm. General Barringer was ordered by Major-General Lee to drive them off. He put in the Sixty-third Regiment which ran the enemy clear across White Oak Swamp back to their infantry supports near Wilcox's house. Early next morning a Virginia regiment guarding the swamp was routed and General Chambliss killed trying to rally them and the enemy rushed forward victorious to White's Tavern. General Lee came up with our brigade and by his great personal courage rallied the Virginians and the Sixty-third with the bridage attacked the enemy who, after an obstinate and bloody struggle, now broke in rout and confusion and were driven back thus for several miles, many being killed and wounded and about 200 prisoners captured. At last, securing a strong, safe position for their artillery, they made a desperate stand. But just in the nick of time Gregg's Texas infantry brigade and Gary's South Carolina Cavalry Brigade came up fast from the direction of Fuzzle's Mill and struck the Federal left. Their rout was now complete, the enemy was driven violently into and across White Oak Swamp, a number of men and horses perished in the mire and water, and a great many prisoners and animals were captured. Here Charlie Brem, a brave and gallant boy soldier of Company F, Sixty-third Regiment, actually lost his boots in the mire by the eagerness of his individual pursuit of the fleeing foe. But they say that he borrowed a pair from a stranger right there. Vol. 87, pp. 217-220, 241-244 and 248.

These were two bloody days for the brigade which lost about 125 in killed and wounded.

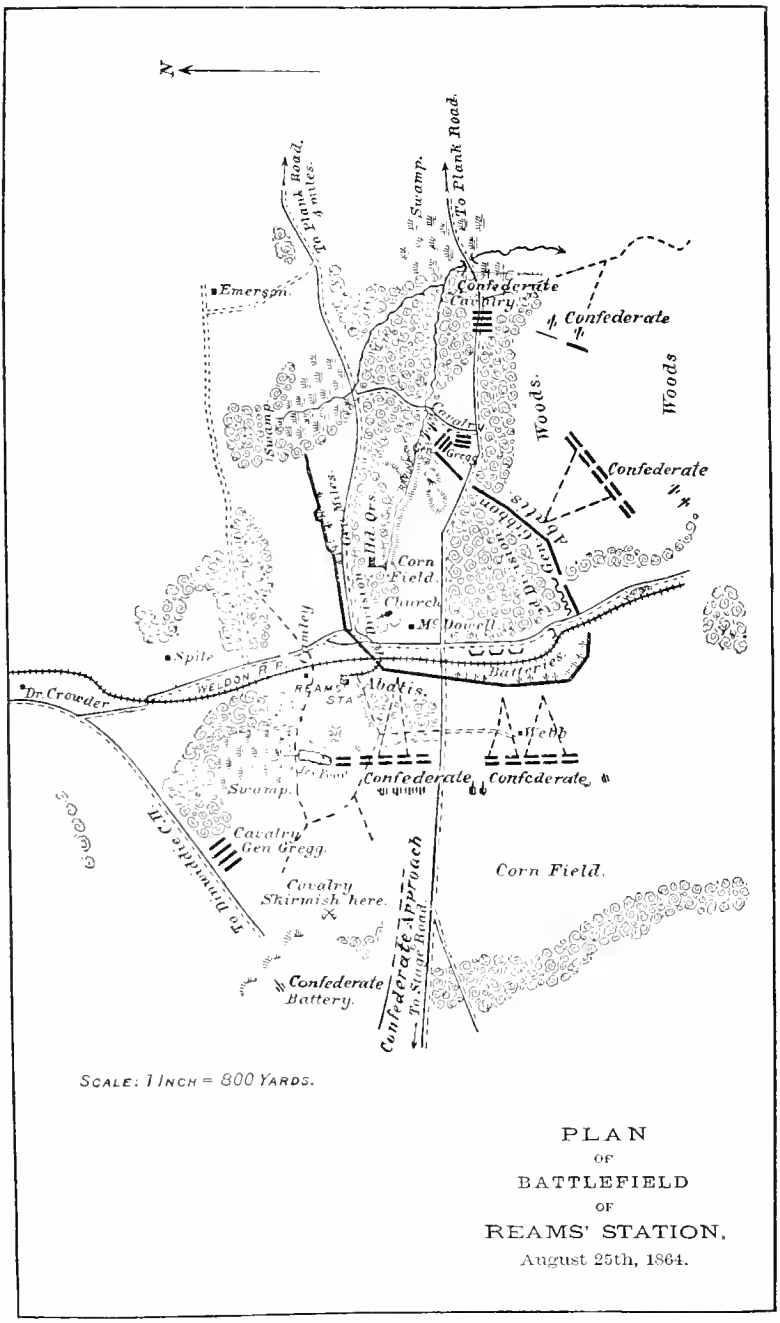
POPLAR SPRING CHURCH.—FIRST REAMS STATION.

We found, on the 17th, that the main body of Federal cavalry had returned south of the James and we hastened there. The enemy had taken the Weldon railroad and there was an attempt by infantry and cavalry to retake it, 21 August. Our brigade was on the extreme right and moved along the path leading from Poplar Spring Church to the railroad.

The Forty-first and Sixty-third regiments were put in to charge. They carried the works in their front in the most gallant and heroic manner—sweeping everything before them. Major McNeill went within a few yards of the railroad, when he found that the attack had failed on the part of the infantry on the left and that his position was untenable. Both regiments then fell back in order under a heavy fire. The enemy took the offensive; but the Ninth and Nineteenth formed on each flank of the retiring regiments and the enemy were checked. At dark the whole force withdrew. The loss of the brigade was sixty-eight in killed, wounded and missing, of which fully one-half were from the Sixty-third Regiment. Vol. 88, pp. 353-360, etc.

REAMS STATION.

On 25 August there was a combined attack by our infantry and cavalry. Hampton moved with all the cavalry, except the North Carolina Brigade, against the advance of the enemy at Malone's Bridge. Barringer, with his own brigade, advanced up the Halifax road toward Malone's Crossing. The attack by Hampton at Malone's Bridge forced the Federal cavalry in flight across the railroad. Barringer was ordered to cut them off, but he failed to strike them. His line of march, after this cavalry, brought him square against the enemy's rear near Reams Station. A. P Hill was then advancing on our right flank and Hampton attacking in front. General Barringer seeing his advantage here, placed the Forty-first Regiment to protect the rear and attacked quickly at Tucker's Farm with the Ninth dismounted, closely supported by the Nineteenth and Sixty-third. The enemy were driven in consternation, some prisoners captured and their forces thrown into confusion. The position, of course, was critical and he withdrew and rejoined Hampton at Malone's Crossing, with all his brigade, except Company H, of the Sixty-third, which he left alone on picket under Hampton's order "to picket the road strongly," a most complimentary, but fully deserved assignment to duty, *under the order,* and the danger of the duty. Now, it is best to let General Hampton tell the rest: "At 5 p. m. the artillery of General A. P



SCALE: 1 INCH = 800 YARDS.

PLAN
OF
BATTLEFIELD
OF
REAMS' STATION,
August 25th, 1864.

Hill opened fire and I at once ordered an advance of my whole line, which was then formed across the railroad at Malone's Crossing. This order was promptly obeyed, and the enemy gave way. They were driven to their works near Reams Station, giving up several positions which they had fortified. * * * In the meantime, seeing that General Hill was forcing the enemy back from the west side of the railroad into their works around the Station, I withdrew all my force from that side of the road and formed a line, with Chambliss' Brigade on the left, the North Carolina Brigade in the centre, and Young's Brigade on the right. * * * The line being formed, the commanding officers were directed to keep the left flank on the railroad, advancing slowly, while the right swung round to strike the rear of the enemy, who were in position behind the railroad bank, and in a work which ran east perpendicularly to the railroad for some distance; then turning north kept parallel with the railroad, enveloping Oak Grove Church. The ground over which my troops advanced was very difficult, and it had been rendered more so by the enemy, who had cut down the timber. In spite of this, and under a heavy fire of artillery and musketry the line advanced steadily, driving the enemy into his works. Here he made a stubborn stand, and for a few moments checked our advance, but the spirit of the men was so fine that they charged the breastworks with the utmost gallantry, carried them and captured the force holding them. This ended the fighting of the day, my men having been engaged for twelve hours. After the fight, General Hill directed me to put my command in the trenches to cover the withdrawal of the infantry. This was done * * until 6:30 the next morning when, * * I left General Butler to remove our wounded and to collect arms." Vol. 78, p. 942; pp. 223-229 and 245.

Our charge was witnessed by our infantry and they greeted the cavalry with cheer after cheer as we gave this crowning triumph to that ever memorable day.

General R. E. Lee wrote to Governor Vance the letter so appropriately quoted by Colonel Cheek on page 471 of Vol. 1, of these histories. The words "the 23d ultimo," in Colo-

nel Cheek's copy, is correctly "the 25th ultimo" in *"Official Records,"* Vol. 88, p. 1206. And the Sixty-third respectfully claims her "part in the operations of the cavalry," mentioned in that letter by General Lee.

HAMPTON'S "BEEF RAID."

This was the greatest and most successful achievement of the cavalry of the Army of Northern Virginia during the entire war and in it the Sixty-third, as always, bore a gallant and prominent part. To the wearied reader, may be a mere short outline would be sufficient with a reference to Hampton's report but most of our people can never see "Hampton's Report" and I could not do justice to the Sixty-third by such a mere outline alone. And again it is best just to let Hampton tell it by *extracts,* made here and there, from his report on page 944, Vol. 87 His report is dated 27 September, 1864, and, in part, is as follows:

"On the morning of the 14th instant I moved with the division of W H. F Lee and brigades of Rosser and Dearing and Colonel Miller, of South Carolina, with 100 men, down the west side of Rowanty Creek to Wilkinson's Bridge and bivouacked that night. The object was to capture a large herd of cattle near Coggins' Point, on the James river. It was necessary to pass to the rear of the enemy and force his lines at some point. I selected Sycamore Church, in Prince George County, as the point to attack, as being the most central, the nearest to the cattle, and the one where the largest force of the enemy was camped. By dispersing them here I made it impossible for them to concentrate any force in time to interfere with the main object of the expedition. Left Wilkinson's Bridge at an early hour on the 15th and by a rapid march reached the Blackwater at Cooke's Bridge. The bridge had been destroyed, as I was aware, and I chose that route on that account, as the enemy would not look for an approach from that quarter. The command halted here to rest and feed, while the engineer party constructed a new bridge. The command moved at 12 midnight. General Lee was directed to move by the Lawyer's road to the Stage road, at which point he would encounter the first pickets of the en-

emy. These he was to drive in, and to move, then, to occupy the roads leading from the direction of the enemy to Sycamore Church. With Rosser's Brigade I moved on by-roads direct toward Sycamore Church. Rosser was charged with the duty of carrying the position of the enemy here and was directed after accomplishing this to push forward at once to secure the cattle. At 5 a. m., on the 16th, Rosser made the attack. The enemy had a strong position, and the approaches to it being barricaded he had time to rally in the roads around his camp, when for some time he fought as stubbornly as I have ever seen him do. But he was completely routed, leaving his dead and wounded on the field and his camp in our hands. As soon as the attack was made at the church, General Lee on the left and General Dearing on the right attacked the enemy most successfully, and established themselves rapidly and firmly at the points they were ordered to secure. Having captured the whole herd of cattle, I withdrew everything before 8 a. m. The different columns were united before reaching the Blackwater, and all dispositions made to protect our captured property. General Lee brought up the rear. After seeing everything across the Blackwater I moved toward the plank road, but before reaching it was notified by General Rosser of the approach of a heavy force of the enemy down that road. I ordered him to hold the road at Ebenezer Church and I at once sent the cattle by Hawkinsville, crossing the plank road two miles in rear of my line of battle and placed them quickly across the Nottoway river at Freeman's Ford. The enemy attacked Rosser, I sent Miller and Dearing to him. I determined to pass to the rear of the enemy with General Lee's division, in order to attack him there. But it became too dark to make the movement advantageously, and I directed General Lee to reinforce Rosser and to protect our right. These orders were promptly carried out in the midst of an attack from the enemy, who were repulsed along the whole line. Several assaults were made on me, but always with a like result. I moved the command to their former bivouac, on the Rowanty, halting for the night.

"The next day the command returned to their old quarters, after an absence of three days, during which they had

marched upwards of one hundred miles, defeating the enemy in two fights, and bringing from his lines in safety a large amount of captured property, together with 304 prisoners.

"Of the 2,486 cattle captured, 2,468 have been brought in and I hope to get the few remaining ones. My loss was ten killed, forty-seven wounded and four missing.

"I beg to express my entire satisfaction at the conduct of officers and men. Major-General Lee and Brigadier-General Dearing carried out my orders and wishes most skilfully, protecting the flanks and covering the main attack, thus contributing greatly to the successful issue of the expedition. * *

"I cannot close my report without notice of the conduct of the scouts who were with me. Sergeant Shadburne, who gave me the information about the cattle, acted as guide to General Rosser, accompanied the leading regiment in its charge, kept his party always in the front, and acted with conspicuous gallantry."

Coggins' Point is just seven miles below City Point, the base of operations of General Grant's army. At City Point Grant got all his supplies. And City Point was General Grant's headquarters.

Coggins' Point is just twelve and a half miles a little south of northeast from Petersburg. It was, therefore, right in the rear centre of the enemy's lines. This magnifies the achievement. There was nothing *rash* in it. It was effected by great, cool courage and daring after long, *careful consummate consideration.* And every young North Carolinian in studying such acts and their heroes should learn a great lesson for life from this way Hampton had of doing *everything.* Nothing in his line of duty was too small to study and master. "Genius is the capacity for taking infinite pains," said one of the world's greatest geniuses, the poet, Goethe. Every great result, *whatever it may be,* is simply careful, intense *thought* in concrete, visible form. This act burst upon the world like a meteor. But it had all been *thought* out and its wonderful success *prepared* for. And the boy or girl who expects success in any thing without first learning to think well, will be a failure sure.

Before 5 September, 1864, the plans were all *accurately,*

exactly laid by Hampton's great scout "Shadburne." The whole Army of Northern Virginia and most all in the Army of the Potomac knew that name Shadburne. It meant terror to the enemy as much as Mosby's did.

On page 1235, Vol. 88, dated 5 September, 1864, begins a long report from Shadburne to Hampton giving in almost *infinitesimal* detail, an accurate picture in works of everything an eagle would see poised over Coggins' Point. Hampton knew, by that report, everything he wanted to know. He saw the situation just like the eagle would and he knew exactly how to swoop down on his prey

Hampton had been in conference, as he was in duty required, with General R. E. Lee about it. On page 1242, Vol. 88, under date of 9 September, 1864, General R. E. Lee wrote Hampton: "I am not sufficiently acquainted with the country to say how you can return if embarrassed with cattle. * * * Let your movement depend upon the report of your scouts. Should time permit, a personal conference would be more satisfactory." And I feel sure, from my would be more satisfactory" The affair was guarded with perfect secrecy, until Hampton *struck*. I affiirm as a fact, corroborated to-day by the evidence of D. B. Coltrane and Denson A. Caldwell, that *no one* but Hampton, R. E. Lee and Hampton's scouts, unless it was Hampton's own generals, *knew* anything about Hampton's purpose till Rosser made the attack at 5 a. m. on the 16th. Great men don't talk of their great purposes till as *acts* they speak for themselves. All this shows the importance and magnitude of the grand result. In it the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment acted a splendid part in fighting and as solitary picket at one time, at Sycamore Church on "the roads leading from the direction of the enemy." This was one of the Sixty-third's high trusts alone, the whole affair depending on its faithful performance and then, afterwards, as often before, the Sixty-third with "General Lee brought up the rear." And right here comes in an illustration of the beautiful necessity of these histories to unfold the glories hidden in general words. Please re-read the last sentence quoted

from Hampton's report—"Sergeant Shadburne acted as guide to General Rosser; accompanied the *leading* regiment *in its charge. Kept his party always in the front and acted with conspicuous gallantry.*" Well now pray what has that got to do with the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment? somebody will ask. Well, just lift that splendid picture of Shadburne, standing modestly behind it; and there right beside Shadburne, as he has been for years till he is as great as Shadburne, stands, as one of "his party," a young boy, Julian Shakespeare Harris, of Cabarrus County, and of Company F, Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment. For weeks, every night and often in the day in Federal uniform with his life in his hand, Shakespeare Harris walked with Shadburne in the enemy's camps as one of "his party" and they *together* made that word-map by which Hampton captured 2,486 splendid beef cattle, which fed the Army of Northern Virginia for months with fresh beef which it hardly knew the taste of and added another glory to the fame of the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment.

As a private of Company F, and as "one of Hampton's scouts, *in every duty,* there was not *anywhere* a better soldier nor one who did more daring, desperate deeds than "Shake" Harris.

Nothing ever so startled and shocked the Army of the Potomac as the capture of their beeves. As can be readily seen by their telegrams and reports of officers to each other from General Grant down to the humblest officer connected with the affair. I wish I could take space to copy some of them, which are full of fright and consternation and ignorance. These telegrams and reports begin early on 16 September and run for days. All through them appear "Barringer's Brigade" and the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment is mentioned. They run from p. 852 to p. 935 of Vol. 88. On which latter page, 20 September, four days after he heard of our "rich haul," as he calls it, on page 853, General Grant, with evident, uncooled irritation, writes to General Meade: "The ease with which our men of late fall into the hands of the enemy would indicate that they are rather willing prisoners."

About this affair General R. E. Lee wrote General Hampton as follows: "You will please convey to the officers and men of your command my thanks for the courage and energy with which they executed your orders, by which they have added another to the list of important services rendered by the cavalry during the present campaign." Vol. 87, p. 952.

M'DOWELL'S FARM.

On the morning of 29 September the enemy advanced on the Vaughn road and drove back our pickets and forces there to Hatcher's Run. Here he was driven back to McDowell's farm, where the fight becoming "a serious one," General Lee, under Hampton's orders, moved to the fight Barringer's Brigade, then *en route,* to the north side of the James. The Nineteenth and Sixty-third alone were put into the action, with our small forces then engaged, and drove back the Federal Cavalry for more than a mile to Wyatt's, capturing a Major and twenty other prisoners.

General Hampton says: "General Lee brough up Barringer's Brigade and at once ordered an attack. This was made promptly and most successfully. The troops behaved as well as possible and they were well led by their officers. The picket line was re-established." Vol. 87, p. 947 The following day the enemy captured Fort McRae, which was retaken by General Heth and two Virginia Regiments of Lee's Division and to the results here the enemy "attributed the failure of their whole movement on this side of the James river." Vol. 87, p. 948. The Sixty-third and our brigade took an unimportant part. Not being in action at all, but moved here and there as needed and kept in the trenches day and night.

BOYDTON PLANK ROAD.

On 27 October, 1864, on the Boydton Plank Road, near Wilson's house, occurred one of the most important actions and greatest victories that the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment was ever engaged in.

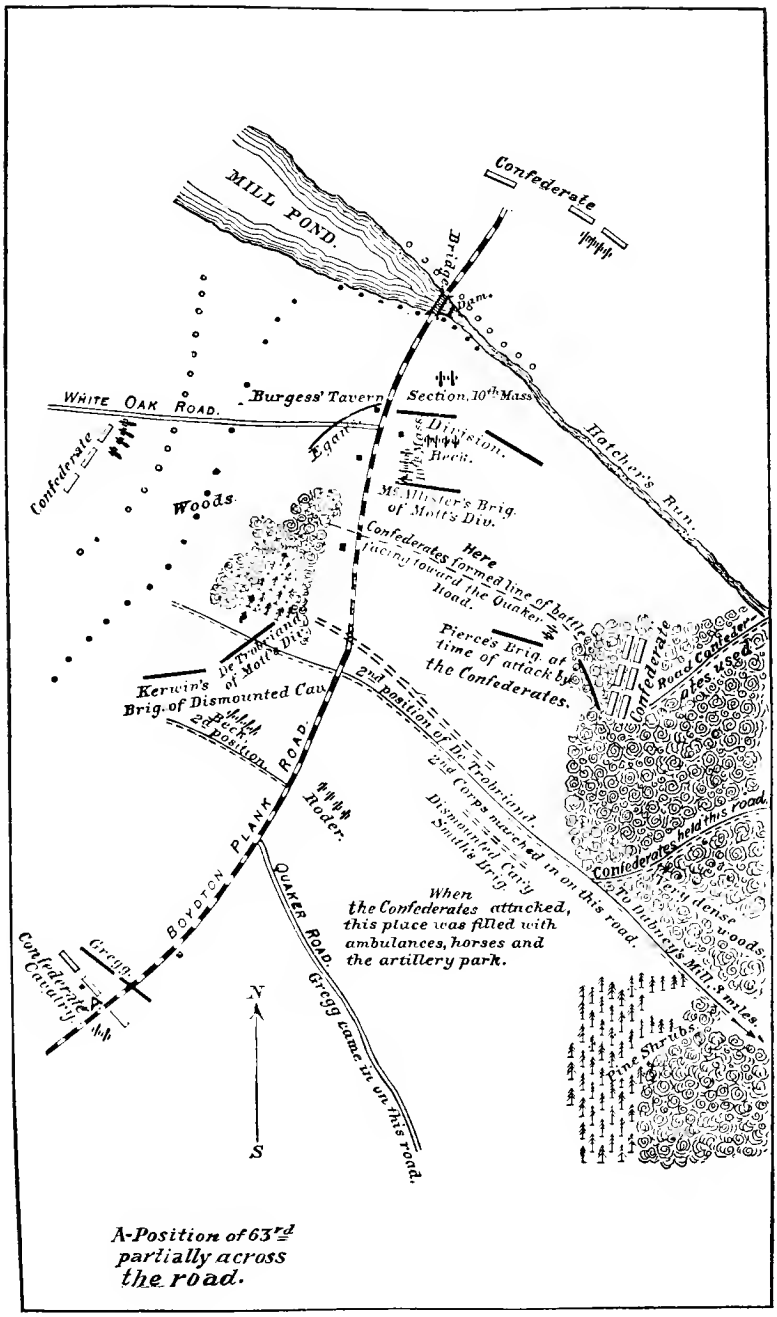
Burgess Mill is seven miles from Petersburg, almost exactly southwest on Hatcher's Run. This stream flows almost ex-

actly southeast from above Burgess' Mill to and beyond Monk's Neck Bridge, past Armstrong's Mill, which is about half way between Burgess' Mill and Monk's Neck Bridge, which is five miles from Burgess' Mill and eight and a half miles from Petersburg. White Oak Road runs exactly west from Boydton Plank Road, which it strikes about half a mile south from Burgess' Mill. The South Side Railroad runs almost parallel to White Oak Road and three miles north of it. And Wilson's House was about two miles from Burgess' Mill right on the Plank Road, and east side of it. These are the points of interest connected with this great battle, which was fought chiefly on the Plank Road or near it, in territory the form of an elliptical loop, with one end of "our left resting on Burgess' mill-pond," thence running around the Wilson House and the other end near Armstrong's Mill and above it. From this, any one, with an ordinary map locating Petersburg, can make a sketch of the scene. Fine sketches are on pp. 233 and 435 of Vol. 87. And the reader will also find a map with this history of the Sixty-third. All references under this heading are in Vol. 87, so that page *alone* will be given.

The enemy crossed Hatcher's Run early in the morning of 27 October, at Armstrong's Mill and Monk's Neck Bridge. p. 949. Hampton. His forces consisted of two and a half army corps of infantry, including half of Hancock's great veteran corps, which held the heights at Gettysburg, pp. 230 and 434; Gregg's Division of cavalry, pp. 231 and 608, and twenty entire batteries, pp. 154-159. This force signifies great importance. Generals Grant and Meade were there in person on the Boydton Plank Road, near the Wilson House with General Hancock about 2 p. m., pp. 231 and 232. This signified very great importance. And the movement's ultimate object across White Oak Road to destroy the South Side Railroad and make a tremendous advance on our right flank, was the supreme importance. Pages 230-231.

The principal forces engaged on the enemy's side were Hancock's infantry and Gregg's division of cavalry and Crawford's Division of the Fifth Corps, pp. 231, 497 and 608, and also much artillery, p. 408?

Hampton had Butler's and Lee's Divisions and Young's



A-Position of 63rd partially across the road.

Brigade of cavalry, pages 953 and 954. Butler's left rested "on Burgess' mill-pond," 949, along the upper and northern line of the ellipse and joined on Lee's left at the curve of the loop, which crossed the Boydton Plank Road, next came Young, along the lower line of the loop to a point about one-fourth of its length from the Run, where this imaginary line reached the Quaker Road and thus Hampton's "line then enveloped the enemy from a point on the Quaker Road to Burgess' Mill-pond," as he says on page 953. The space, along the line of the elliptical loop from the Quaker Road to Armstrong's Mill was covered by some of General Heth's infantry, and our lower lines of envelopment being *above* the crossing at Armstrong's Mill and the Run between there and Burgess' Mill not being fordable and there being no bridge between these mills, Hampton and Heth had them completely surrounded. They had them in exactly the same situation that Stuart was in at Auburn, only they were entirely surrounded. And Heth had also a force of infantry on their right flank, across the Run, at Burgess' Mill. They were badly surrounded. Developments during the night, as well as the statement of prisoners, showed that the enemy had his line on three sides of our position." 507 Lee had only the Ninth and Sixty-third Regiments of our brigade on the line with Beale's Brigade on the right of the Ninth. The sixty-third was on the Plank Road at the curve, most of it on the left or west of the road a small part on the east side where it joined its right to the left of the Ninth. I was sent with these regiments to place them and know exactly where they were. McGregor's Battery was in the Plank Road between the two parts of the Sixty-third. Fighting had been going on before these dispositions were made, but the fury of it arose about the time they were consummated.

Before the "battle was on" fully Lee had attacked Gregg's rear as Gregg was marching up the Quaker Road to the Plank Road and Hampton had attacked him furiously in front with Butler. While engaged thus, Hampton, on pp. 949 and 953 says: "I saw his cavalry cross the Plank Road into the White Oak Road, and, fearing an advance on the South Side Railroad, I rapidly transferred Butler to the White Oak

Road and at once forming line across it, repulsed the enemy. The skirmish line of the enemy was advancing up this road when we reached it. When Butler was withdrawn I ordered Lee to move promptly to the Plank Road to attack them." Gregg's cavalry, with our old friends of the First Maine, were advancing down that road now on their great move. The Ninth and Sixty-third North Carolina Regiments stopped them right there at Wilson's House. And quickly then the battle was on in all its fury. Again, on pages 949 and 953, Hampton says: "Being soon after this informed that our infantry would attack the enemy, I prepared to join in this attack and as soon as musketry told that our troops were engaged Butler was ordered to charge with his whole line. Butler's men charged gallantly across an open field and drove the enemy rapidly towards the Plank Road. In this charge, while leading the men and cheering them by his words and example, Lieutenant Thomas Preston Hampton, Aide-de-Camp, fell mortally wounded and Lieutenant Wade Hampton, who was acting on my staff, received a severe wound. Lee attacked with great spirit, driving the enemy rapidly and handsomely to Bevill's House."

All along the line everywhere the fighting was terrific and furious. The enemy fought with the courage of the best veterans in the Northern Army and that was as fine courage as the world ever saw, and they fought with that courage urged on to fury by the recognized desperation of their situation. The Sixty-third North Carolina and others fought as that Northern courage had assisted in teaching their inborn valor how to fight. And that meant the *best* fighting the world ever saw. It meant *ruin* to the "early morning's" defiant foe. All along their lines they were trying to reinforce each other when driven in at one point and another. On page 609, General Gregg says: "The attack of the enemy on the right of the Second Corps toward Hatcher's Run, caused me to dismount all the available regiments of the Second and Third Brigades and push them rapidly to that point of attack." But he needed them back mighty quick. On same page, referring to what was going on where the Sixty-third was, he says: "Repairing to this point I found the enemy's cavalry

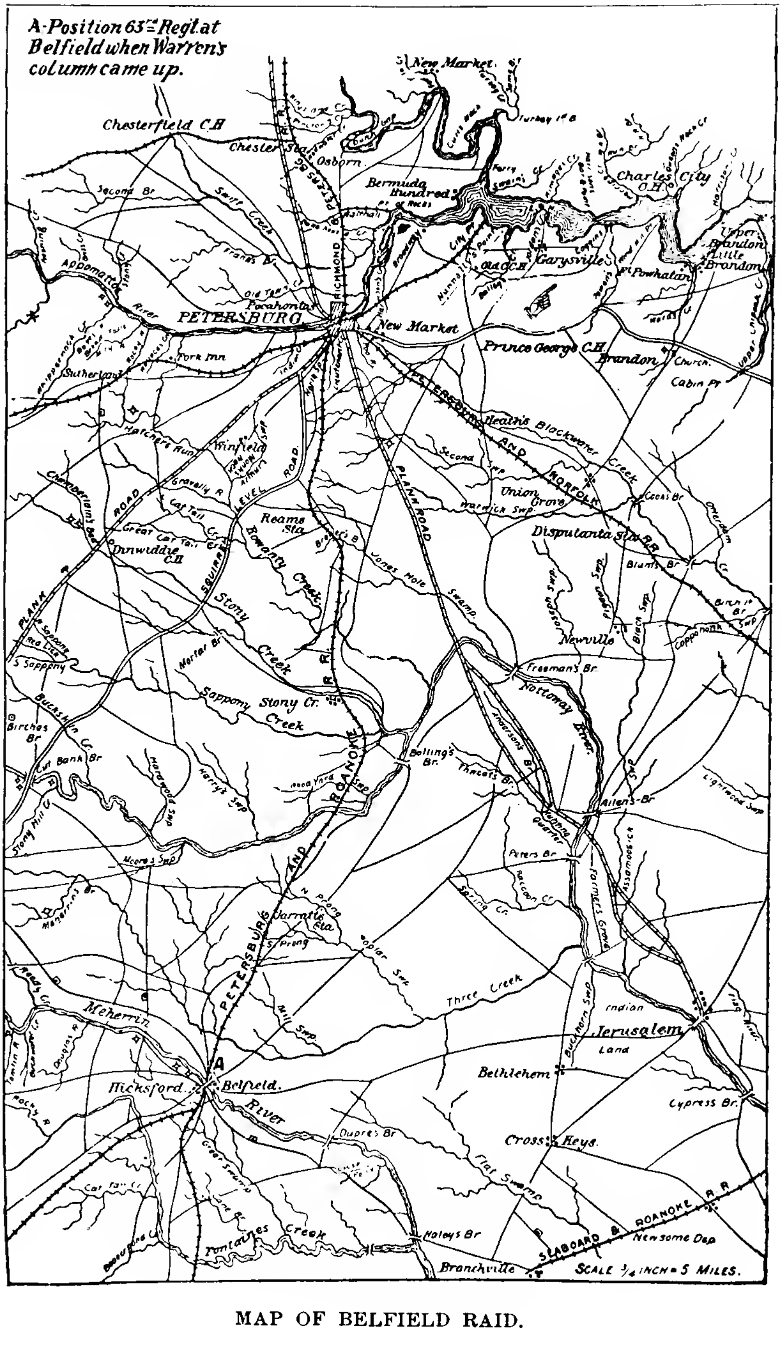
dismounted, attacking strongly aided by the fire of four rifled guns. I sent for all of my available regiments. The First Maine came at a run, and at once became heavily engaged. The attack of the enemy was very determined and made in large force but the troops engaged in resisting it, although much inferior in numbers (of course), could not be beaten back, save inch by inch. In response to my request for such other of my regiments as could be spared, Major-General Hancock sent them to me rapidly. These regiments coming up successively as fast as their legs could carry them, entered the fight and at dark the enemy retired." And this is the first time we ever heard that "we retired." McGregor's guns rushed right along up the Plank Road, in line with the Sixty-third Regiment in that work, firing as they, *the guns,* charged with us. It was actually a charge by artillery. But in face of "the enemy retired," on same page, General Gregg says: "At 10:30 p. m., the division began moving (back) by the road upon which it had advanced in the morning." And thus he "retired" at midnight. On page 235, General Hancock says: "I desired to send infantry to Gregg's assistance, seeing that he was being pressed very vigorously, but I feared a renewal of the attack in my front. * * * About 5 o'clock p. m. I sent to communicate to General Warren or Crawford what had occurred and that unless the Fifth Corps moved up and connected with me, I could not answer for the result. * * * My command had been moving and fighting till after dark, and as a consequence was in considerable disorder." Nevertheless when he got to writing his report he thought he had gained a "victory" For, on page 236, he says: "Reluctant as I was to leave the field, and by doing so lose some of the fruits of my victory, I felt compelled to order a withdrawal rather than risk disaster by awaiting an attack in the morning, only partly prepared." And that is the first time that the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment ever heard that Hancock and Gregg and Crawford gained a "victory" on the Boydton Plank Road 27 October, 1864. On page 457, Major Bingham, of General Hancock's staff, said: "The attack had not succeeded" and General Mott said: "The rebels had turned and doubled

up his right flank." On page 647, Lieutenant Garvin, in reporting *cause* of a loss of a caisson, says: "Toward evening I could neither find division nor brigade headquarters. The dismounted cavalry and the infantry, men and officers, were running through my section. I put on a guard and turned them aside. The led horses of the Second Brigade were in the same field with me, and the shelling of the enemy was so severe as to force the led horses of the cavalry into another field. I followed the led horses. * * * Finding nothing but turmoil and frightened infantry, and no brigade headquarters, I went to Captain Harper, who told me to stay in the field. He was not on duty, but had the general's escort with him." I guess that Lieutenant Garvin did not think that his folks had won a "victory."

Now why did not we ruin them, encompassed with it as they were?

Let General Hampton tell it. On page 950, he says: "We had driven the enemy in on all the roads and he was massed on the field around the houses of Bond and Burgess. The night having grown very dark and a heavy rain coming on I was forced to pause in my attack, but I ordered the line held all night, so that we might attack at daylight the next morning." And on page 953, he says: "It was not until 12:30 a. m. that I knew of the withdrawal of our infantry, and I then allowed a portion of my command to leave the line." The enemy had flown. Permitted to do so by "the withdrawal of our infantry." Intelligent soldiers take in a situation very quickly and there were few men of the Sixty-third who did not feel sure that night that we would "bag them all in the morning." Hampton pursued in the morning and until the victorious enemy "fell back behind his infantry lines." Page 950. On 31 October, 1864, General R. E. Lee wrote Hampton about this great battle: "In a letter to General Hill to-day I expressed my gratification at the conduct of the troops in general and of the cavalry in particular, desiring him to communicate my thanks to you and your command. I am much pleased to learn from your letter of their admirable behavior." p. 954.

So, on what General Robert E. Lee said, the Sixty-third



MAP OF BELFIELD RAID.

North Carolina Regiment will continue to keep on our old tattered and "furled" battle flag "Boydton Plank Road—*Victory.*"

WARREN'S RAID TO BELFIELD.

On page 24, Vol. 87, under date 7 December, 1864, General Grant writes: "General Warren, with a force of about 22,000 infantry, six batteries, and 4,000 cavalry, started this morning with the view of cutting the Weldon Railroad as far south as Hicksford." All references under this heading will be to Vol. 87, so page alone is given.

Hampton started immediately, the same day, with only Butler's and Lee's Divisions of cavalry to thwart this "view." Page 950. I shall now quote in its entirety what is said in my "Sketches," about this concluding event of 1864, interspersing it with quotations from General Hampton's official report. So that the Sixty-third North Carolina may end the year in generous "charity" with the brigade.

"We struck this rear guard on the Halifax Road, just beyond the Nottaway river. After skirmishing General Hampton withdrew and moved on the enemy's right, making a forced march via Wyatt's bridge to Belfield, and we thus got ahead of the enemy at the latter place."

On page 951, Hampton says: "At 2 a. m. on the 9th, my command was in motion and the head of my column very near Belfield at daylight. I at once made dispositions to defend Hicksford and the railroad bridge over Meherrin, in conjunction with Colonel Garnett, who commanded the post at that point. The enemy moved on slowly and captiously, and he did not make his appearance before Belfield until 3 p. m. The troops of Colonel Garnett assisted by the batteries of Hart and McGregor, opened fire rapidly and with effect on him, driving him back promptly." He ought to have added that the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment, occupying a position between "the troops of Coloned Garnett" in their breastworks on each side of the road, in advance of the works, *across the road* leading into Hicksford and north of the river, aided "in driving him back promptly." That is the truth of history, as D. B. Coltrane and others, who were in that fight, well know.

It was one of the most terrible nights of cold and rain and sleet our regiment ever saw. The ground and trees next morning were all covered with ice, under whose weight great limbs broke and crashed to the earth along our route. And all that night Colonel W P Roberts, with the Nineteenth North Carolina Regiment, picketed and guarded the Meherrin above Hicksford, while others slept, as well as they could.

And those "troops of Colonel Garnett," who were they? Principally "Junior Reserves"—17-year-old boys from North Carolina and Virginia. Prominent among them, the Seventieth and Seventy-first North Carolina Regiments. And oh! how those boys did fire. They seemed to be taking *their* "Christmas" then, in fire works at least. They made their lines lurid in the darkness. And a courier had to be sent down to them "to stop their firing."

The next morning I saw those same boys following in the pursuit, some of them almost absolutely barefooted. A scene pitiable I saw among them, too. As I rode past their marching line, I noticed that every other boy had a tin cup in his little hand, holding it as if he feared to spill something. I said: "What have you in that cup?" "Sorghum for two." I could not realize it and again further on I repeated: "What have you in that cup?" "Sorghum for two." The time will come when readers of these pages will not know what "sorghum" was. It was North Carolina made molasses. And I know that this is not the history of the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment. But the Sixty-third North Carolina saw it and its sight was *inspiration* to us veterans, old and young, to higher heroism. And it is told to show what the homes and the hearts of the South endured in our civil war.

Now to a renewal of the "Sketches." "General Hampton repulsed the Federal troops and saved the railroad bridge at that place. Next morning we found that the enemy had left and were beating a hasty retreat. General Hampton made a detour by way of Three Creeks to strike their flank. We barely struck, on its right flank, their rear guard."

Hampton, page 951, says: "General Lee charged with one regiment, throwing a part of the regiment down and a part up the road. The cavalry of the enemy which was met

was driven on rapidly, with loss and in confusion and the infantry of the rear guard was gallantly charged."

And herein will follow other illustrations of the *need* of *these* histories. The "Sketches" say: "General Barringer, in person, then charged their rear guard with two squadrons of the First Cavalry, Captain Dewey and Lieutenant Todd, and effectually routed them. Captain Dewey followed and rushed them pell-mell on to their infantry supports and then the infantry were charged and dispersed; but the gallant Dewey finding his force too weak for the heavy odds now against him, was compelled to retire. These two squadrons acted in the most daring manner. They killed and wounded several of the enemy and took a number of prisoners."

Again on page 951, Hampton says: "The pursuit on our part continued during the remainder of the day. At Morris' Mill we drove him from the bridge and pushing on soon met some cavalry, charging and dispersing them. The leading squadron of the Third Cavalry (Forty-first North Carolina) dashed into the main body of the enemy, who were found preparing to go into camp. Finding their whole force there I withdrew to Morris' Mill, two miles back to bivouac."

The "Sketches" say: "The Third Cavalry (Forty-first North Carolina) was now passed to the front and the pursuit vigorously pressed. About 9 o'clock at night, Captain Harding, of Company K, got the enemy's rear guard fairly started and charging them over two miles, forced them back precipitately into their camps. His zeal led him too far and into a furious fire from the enemy's interior guards. But the grave and skillful Captain still pressed forward and, after some hair-breadth escapes, succeeded in extricating his command with a loss of only about a dozen men." Our comrade, Julian S. Carr, was in this charge, to my personal knowledge. That "interior guard" formed an ambuscade for Captain Harding's troopers. They fired from each side of the road into each flank of those charging Carolinians. I know that Julian S. Carr was in that charge and went as far

in it as any man, because I saw and spoke to him then and there and congratulated him on his safety.

On page 952, Hampton says: "I sent one regiment at daylight the next morning to follow to the Nottaway river" * * * and "withdrew my force to Stony Creek."

The "Sketches" say: "Next day, 11 December, our cavalry all returned to camp, except the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment, with which General Barringer followed the enemy until they crossed the Nottaway, when he gave up the pursuit. Thus ended the memorable campaign of 1864."

And, *according to the written records,* it "ended" with this remarkable coincidence: At White Hall, 6 May, 1864, the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment, with the Nineteenth, was the *first regiment,* or part of a regiment, of our brigade *in battle* and 11 December, 1864, it was, *alone,* the *last regiment* of that great brigade to leave the field and the foe on the banks of the Nottaway. And, according to my "Sketches," approved by General Barringer and Colonel Cheek, as has been shown, at White Hall "our loss was severe, especially in the Sixty-third, which bore the brunt of the action and had eighteen men killed and wounded." And in saying this nor in *anything* that I have said, the Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment would not take one laurel from the glory-crowned brows of the Ninth and the Nineteenth and the Forty-first. Their glory is ours and ours is theirs in jointly glorifying the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade.

On page 437, Vol. 1, of these histories, General Barringer has summed up the losses of the brigade for the campaign of 1864. A child's calculation will show that the "losses" of the Sixty-third were just fifty-five *more* than *any other* regiment of the brigade.

And in this connection I quote from a letter of Dr. Paul B. Barringer, Chairman of the Faculty of the University of Virginia, and a son of General Barringer, written to the widow of General Barringer from the University of Virginia, Charlottesville, Va., 1 June, 1900. Dr. Barringer writes: "It is strange, but a fact, that of all the men of father's brigade buried at this place, the old Sixty-third furnished more than the other three regiments put together."

And here is another remarkable coincidence from the records of the grave and of written history. And these were the dead of the regiments of our brigade in the campaigns prior to 1863. They were the dead of Middleburg, Upperville, Culpepper, etc., killed in 1863.

THE CAMPAIGN OF 1865.

The hard winter of 1864-'5 bore heavily and sorely on the Army of Northern Virginia, but with especial severity on our cavalry. We had to march over thirty miles to picket from our winter quarters near Belfield. Frequent movements of the enemy forced us to make long and hard marches; the country was almost entirely exhausted of both long and short forage, and raids of the enemy kept our communications cut fully a third of the winter. But such was the heroic spirit of the men and such their devotion to duty that they overcame all difficulties and, when the campaign of 1865 opened, the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade numbered 1,788 officers and effective mounted men in camp present for duty." My Sketches and Vol. 95, p. 390.

The general reader can never see the *"Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies,"* to which I have referred so often by citation of volume and page, and instead of making such references now in order that such reader may see for himself the truth from another source than my "Sketches," about the hardships of the winter of 1864-'5, even at the peril of being considered painfully prolix and of being criticised for "not sticking to my text," I quote from pages 1209-1210, Vol. 96, the following:

"HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,
"February, 8, 1865.

"Hon. James A. Seddon, Secretary of War, Richmond, Va.:

SIR:—All the disposable force of the right wing of the army has been operating against the enemy beyond Hatcher's Run since Sunday. Yesterday, the most inclement day of the winter, they had to be retained in line of battle, having been in the same condition the two previous days and nights.

I regret to be obliged to state that under these circumstances, heightened by assaults and fire of the enemy, some of the men had been without meat for three days and all were suffering from reduced rations and scant clothing, exposed to battle, cold, hail and sleet. I have directed Colonel Cole, Chief Commissary, who reports that he has not a pound of meat at his disposal, to visit Richmond and see if nothing can be done. If some change is not made and the Commissary Department reorganized, I apprehend dire results. The physical strength of the men, if their courage survives, must fail under this treatment. Our cavalry has to be dispersed for want of forage. Fitz. Lee's and Lomax's Divisions are scattered because supplies cannot be transported where their services are required. I had to bring W H. F. Lee's Division forty miles Sunday night to get him in position. * * *

"With great respect, your obedient servant,

"R. E. LEE,
"General."

The Sixty-third North Carolina Regiment was on that march of "forty miles" that cold "Sunday night," which was 5 February, 1865.

CHAMBERLAIN RUN.

This was the most fearful and fiercest battle we were ever in. In order to intelligently understand it, other regiments must be referred to, of course. And so it has been all through these writings of mine about the regiment. I could not tell "the whole truth" without, often, mentioning other regiments, men and matters. No one regrets more than I do this expansion of my imperfect picture of the Sixty-third. But it would not do to paint one regiment alone, however great, in front of Sheridan's Corps and call it a battle; others must be there, or the one becomes ridiculous. Such a situation of the Sixty-third would also have been awfully unfortunate for it. And, therefore, I pray pardon for what seems irrelevant to this history.

As to the part of the Ninth in the morning fight, Colonel Cheek has so well told what it did that I simply refer to pages

472 and 473 of Vol. 1 of these histories. The word "afternoon" near the top of page 473 should read "forenoon." That is self evident from these two pages as a whole. Now why was "Colonel McNeill repulsed at the ford," in the morning, and what part did Colonel McNeill and his grand regiment do in that awful tragedy where he died?

At the same time that Colonel Cheek received his orders for the action, Colonel Gaines, of the Nineteenth, and Colonel McNeill received theirs, I heard them given and so did Frank Brown, now living. Colonel Cheek executed his magnificently and so did Gaines and McNeill, as far as it was possible for mortal men to execute them. The Sixty-third was in front. A small detail from the Sixty-third was sent, mounted, to our right as videttes, under Captain S. A. Grier. McNeill and Gaines were told "to dismount their regiments, go to the ford, cross in column of fours, the Sixty-third to deploy in line of battle to the right of and below the ford; the Nineteenth to follow and deploy fast in line of battle to the left and above the ford, completing and connecting the line between Cheek and McNeill and drive the enemy." Those were the orders.

The road crossed that ford at right angles. The water there, "one hundred and fifty yards" below Cheek, was much above "the men's waists," its depth, according to Colonel Cheek, where he was. Of course it was much deeper with us than where the Ninth was, even if it was the ford. So deep, so "impassable by reason of briars and swamp undergrowth" and a bluff to the immediate right of the ford, and on our side of it, and other obstructions of fallen timber on both sides of the stream, that it could not be crossed, for battle, except at the ford. It would swim a horse twenty feet below the ford. Men were shot down in the ford, swept off by the current and actually drowned before their comrades could pull them out. That was the sort of a place the Sixty-third and Nineteenth had to cross under their orders.

Across the stream, from the road up to Cheek's right, was a body of small and large timber extending forward almost to the enemy's entrenchments; immediately to the right of the road was open ground, sparsely wooded, thirty-five or fifty

yards wide up to the enemy's works and then far down the stream was a body of good sized timber. From the stream the ground rose rapidly to the enemy's lines and works, which were about two hundred yards from the stream with their extreme left point being almost opposite to what was to be McNeill's right. McNeill's intended right, across the creek, would overlap their left slightly. From the place where they dismounted, the Sixty-third and Nineteenth moved rapidly towards the ford, a large body of Sheridan's cavalry was on our side of the stream, a fierce fight ensued and they were driven pell-mell across the ford back to their works. In this affair Colonel Gaines lost his right arm. Grandly and gloriously, with Colonel McNeill in the lead, our regiment crossed that ford under a galling, withering fire from Henry rifles, that shot sixteen times each without loading, fired by an entrenched enemy. Every man held his cartridge box high above that seething water with his left hand and his rifle in his right. They crossed, as ordered, "by fours," as regularly as ever a regiment moved on a parade ground. They had learned to parade in battle. As they crossed, McNeill gave the proper orders loud and clear; each company captain, as his company landed, repeated the order and quickly the regiment was in line of battle to the right of the road waiting for the Nineteenth to cross. And just here, as at Balaklava, "somebody blundered." "Blundered" awfully, but with the best intention. To distract the fire from our two regiments, W H. F Lee ordered a Virginia regiment to charge across the ford mounted, just when the Nineteenth was steadily, as always, stepping forward to cross. Misunderstanding their orders, only a squadron of the Virginians rushed over and up the incline of the road. The Nineteenth closed right in behind them. Frank Brown, one of Barringer's couriers, with his hat in his right hand, as he almost always rode in battle, till he got within saber distance of the foe, rushed, under Barringer's orders, to McNeill to learn his situation. McNeill was advancing slowly for the Nineteenth to form on his left and the fire was so furious that it was better to advance than to stand. To Brown's enquiry, Colonel McNeill coolly said: "Please tell General Barringer that I am all right and ad-

vancing slowly for the Nineteenth to form on my left that we may charge and carry those works. Ask him, please, to hasten the Nineteenth over." About two companies of the Nineteenth crossed behind that squadron, just as grandly as the Sixty-third had. And then that squadron broke and fled back to the narrow ford. Our brigade color-bearer, Churchill, waving his battle flag in his hand, Lieutenant Fred. Foard, General Barringer's Aide, and I rushed at them on the enemy's side of the stream and tried to rally them, and especially to keep them off the Nineteenth. But they were panic-stricken; not even appeals to *"look at those North Carolinians crossing here,"* could halt those horsemen, breaking the line of the Nineteenth and pushing them down into the deep water at the lower side of the ford. The enemy were so exultant over their sight of the fleeing squadron that they advanced and redoubled their already furious fire on McNeill and the ford, where the column of the Nineteenth was now helplessly cut in twain by that mingled mass of mounted men, while McNeill's ammunition was almost exhausted. D. B. Coletrane, standing near him, said: "Colonel, I have only two cartridges; shall I use them or hold them?" "Keep them; you may need them more in a moment," coolly and calmly answered McNeill, in the face of a well recognized and terrifying danger. And there he and his regiment were; fighting, and firing their last shot. And now let Captain C. W Pearson speak. In his sketch of Company H, now before me, he says: "The writer was talking to Colonel McNeill, when he saw a man a little to the right, run from a large pine to another pine, very soon a puff of smoke came from the tree. I think this shot killed the Colonel, as just at that time he fell, apparently instantly killed, some of the men picked him up and started back, but got only a short distance, when the entire line gave way. In recrossing the creek we had to swim under a heavy fire." And this is why "Colonel McNeill was repulsed at the ford." He was being carried off dead in the arms of his loving men who had fired their last shots into the swarming ranks of an overwhelming, advancing foe.

General Barringer, mounted on his horse, right at the ford,

watching and directing all the movements of his men, sent a courier to form the Sixty-third along the top of the bluff down the stream as they came up from the water and to check the advancing foe. They were supplied with ammunition as quickly as possible; to aid in which, the cartridge boxes of our dead were emptied from *their dead bodies;* some of which I thus emptied myself for this purpose. And under the fire of the Sixty-third, the enemy went back to their works on the ridge, except a few who threw up a V-shaped entrenchment, immediately in front of the ridge works, right across the road—the point of the V being towards Chamberlain Run, as an additional defense.

General Barringer, on pages 439-440, Vol. 1, of these histories, well tells how every generous, humane effort was made to save his men in the afternoon. He ought to have told, I think, that this effort was so long tried with W H. F Lee that Fitzhugh Lee came in person, on his horse all covered with foam, and peremptorily ordered this afternoon attack, delayed only for humanity's sake. The battle in the afternoon was, in all its movements, like that of the morning, except that the Nineteenth crossed the ford first and that Captain John R. Erwin, of Company F, with sword in hand, now led the Sixty-third across and deployed it to the right of the road and to the right of the Nineteenth as magnificently as McNeill had done in the morning. Lockhart, of the Nineteenth, and Erwin, of the Sixty-third, gave their orders to charge at the same moment and grandly, gloriously, with a wild rush and yell they went forward over those works and drove Sheridan's splendid soldiers miles back to Dinwiddie Court House. And as General Barringer says, on page 442, Vol. 1, this "was the last marked victory won by our armies." And in winning it the Sixty-third "was a great part."

General Barringer, in his account of this battle, published in the Concord *Sun,* 18 March, 1881, now before me, says: "Frank Brown, a courier, bore a message to Major Lockhart, just as the latter gave his order to charge. The noble youth, entirely unbidden, dashed to the head of the column and led the charge, the only man on horseback! For a miracle he escaped unhurt and, returning promptly to his post, he

shouted, 'We've whipped them! We've whipped them!' "

And there he further writes: "When the brave and generous Lieutenant Lindsey fell, his brother sprang for a moment, to his side. The hero said, 'Turn me on my face; then hurry to the front.' When the Virginia squadron met its fatal repulse and came rushing back, Lieutenant Fred. Foard and Paul Means, with my headquarters color-bearer, Churchill, dashed gallantly to the front, under a tremendous fire and single-handed, received the shock of the advancing host. Means and Churchill were both wounded and Means' horse was severely shot and Foard's nearly killed."

Lieutenant-Colonel Shaw was killed at the same time Colonel McNeill was. Lieutenant Lindsey was killed. Captain Harris and Lieutenants Nott, Sockwell and Wharton were all severely wounded, and others were killed and wounded whose names I could not get. A great number of privates were killed and wounded and "every man in Company H, except the Captain, was struck by a ball during the day," Captain Pearson writes.

The battle gave immortal lustre to the Sixty-third, but it was at an awful sacrifice and saddened forever many a home.

Colonel McNeill fell with his face to the foe as the hero, who has to die, loves to fall. He was the son of George McNeill and Minerva Ruffin, sister of Chief Justice Ruffin; was born 23 May, 1825; was educated at Harvard and Princeton; was ordained a Presbyterian minister in 1847, just 22 years of age. He was not 40 when he fell. The faith and the fight and the loyalty to his God of the old Covenanter was all in him fully. Many a Sunday, in our winter camps, I have seen him standing under the fluttering folds of the Confederate battle flag, with its blood-red field and starry cross, a great crowd of soldiers in slouch hats and gray uniforms sitting on the bare ground in front of him, and heard him preaching to them, as their only salvation, the blood and the cross of Jesus Christ. He was as true to the cross of Christ as he was to the Southern cross. Like Jackson, he led his regiment in prayer and in battle. He was right at the front of the fight, advancing against an advancing foe and "ready" when God's bugle called him. All along war's weary way he had "fought

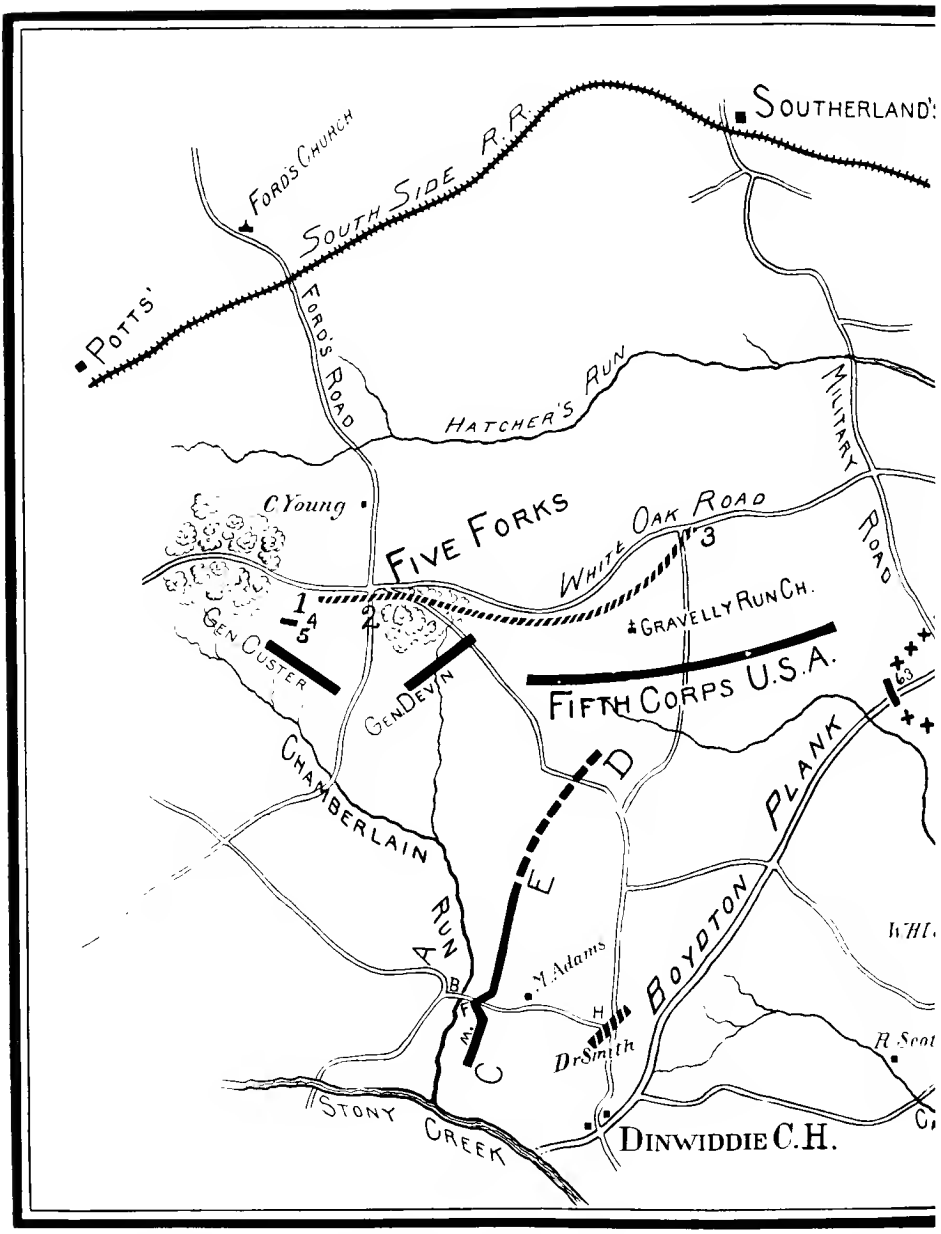
a good fight," he had "kept the faith," and that awful glorious day, *near* the hill *top* at Chamberlain Run, to add heaven's lustre to the splendor of his Colonel's stars, he received "a crown of righteousness."

That night Sheridan wrote General Grant: "The enemy's cavalry attacked me about 10 o'clock to-day. This attack was very handsomely repulsed by General Smith's brigade and the enemy driven across Chamberlain's creek. * * * The enemy again attacked at Chamberlain creek, and forced Smith's position. At this time Capehart's and Pennington's Brigades, of Custer's Division, came up, and a very handsome fight occurred. The enemy have gained some ground, but we still hold in front of Dinwiddie, and Davies and Devin are coming down the Boydton road to join us." Among the opposing force he names "W H. F Lee's Cavalry commands" and then continues: "The men have behaved splendidly. * * * This force is too strong for us. I will hold out to Dinwiddie Court House until I am compelled to leave." And this was the "rebel cavalry" that Sheridan had reported "the almost total annihilation of" just after Brook Church.

That night, 31 March, General Grant wrote General Sheridan: "The Fifth Corps has been ordered to your support" and "MacKenzie's Cavalry." Vol. 95, pp. 1110 and 1111; 1117 and 1122-1123 and 1299. See also page 628.

We camped on the battlefield that night, right at that awful ford on the side where McNeill fell, until about 3 a. m. 1 April, 1865, when, after learning of the Fifth Corps' movement on our left flank, we recrossed Chamberlain Run and marched to Five Forks, without seeing the enemy.

Mention must be made here of Colonel James L. Gaines, whose splendid career shed lustre on North Carolina. He was a son of Matthew M. and Margaret L. Gaines, of Asheville, N. C He went to the war as a young private of Company G, Ninth Regiment (First North Carolina Cavalry). 9 June, 1863, we find him Adjutant of that great regiment and, on page 726 of Vol. 44, Colonel Baker, of the Ninth, "thanks Adjutant (Lieutenant J L.) Gaines for his great coolness and assistance rendered me in reforming my regiment and keep-



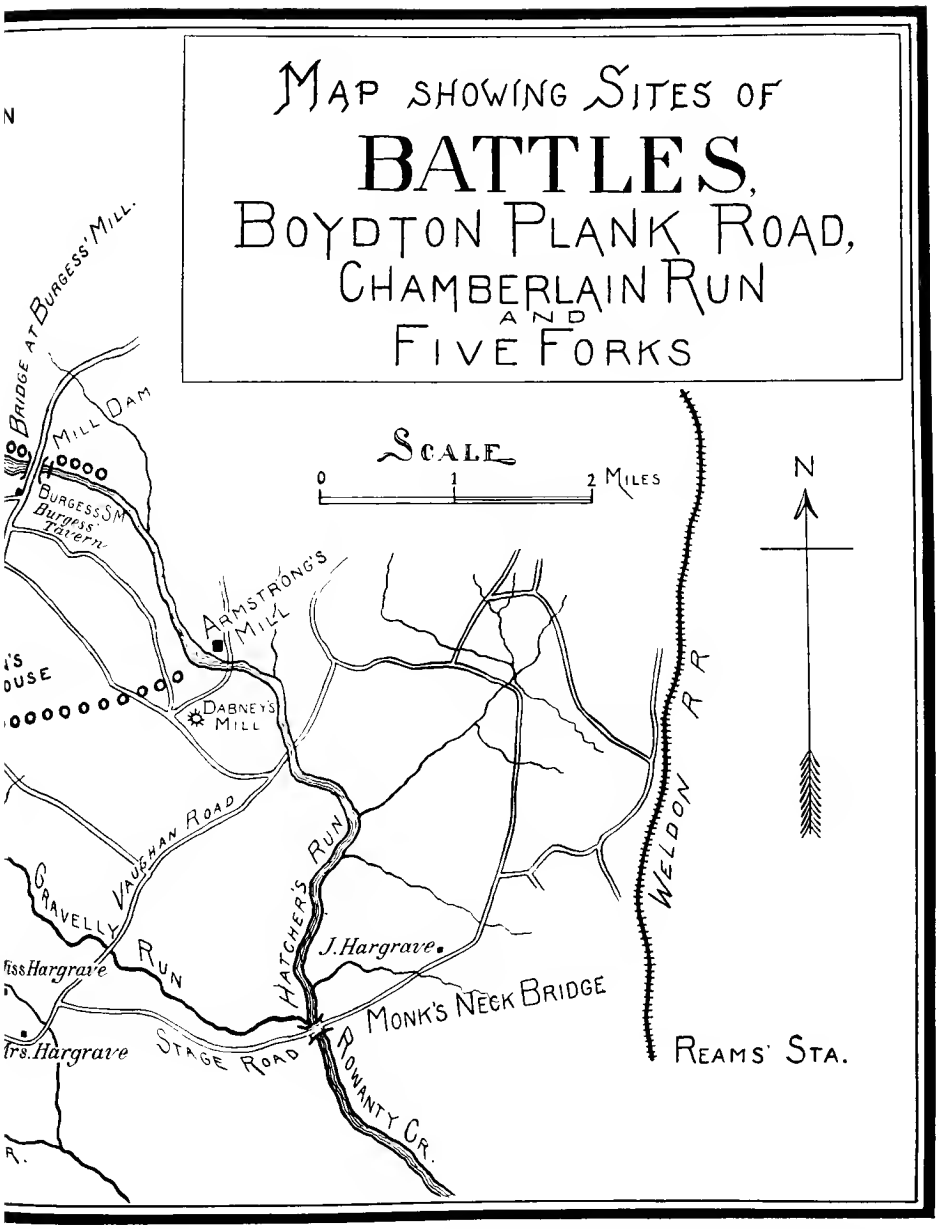
INDICATIONS FOR BOYDTON PLANK ROAD.

o o o o o o—Confederate Infantry east of Hatcher's Run and from Quaker Road to Armstrong's Mill.

x x x x x x—Hampton's Cavalry, from Burgess' Mill-pond to Quaker Road. 63—Point where the Sixty-third Regiment went into action.

INDICATIONS

A—Point where Sixty-third mounted morning of March tending much beyond D nort Regiment. E F—Part of Fe teenth Regiments. M—Point lina Cavalry at dark, March widdie C. H.



MBERLAIN RUN.

r North Carolina Cavalry dis-
ford. C-D—Federal works, ex-
?—Part attacked by Sixty-third
s attacked by Ninth and Nine-
McNeill fell. H.—North Caro-
driving Sheridan back to Din-

INDICATIONS FOR FIVE FORKS.

1-3—Confederate works continuous eastward to Petersburg. 1-2—Line of Sixty-third Regiment in open field. The Nineteenth and Forty-first were immediately in the rear of the Sixty-third. 4—Nineteenth and Forty-first engaged in sabre fight. 5—Position of Nineteenth when Custer charged.

ing them in proper order to resist the enemy," at the great battle of Brandy Station. And on page 775 of the same volume, he is by "General Orders," on the "Roll of Honor" for Gettysburg; then "Captain Gaines, Assistant Adjutant-General of Baker's North Carolina Brigade." In this capacity, he remained on the staff of the North Carolina Cavalry Brigade until, for great gallantry in battle, he was made Colonel of the Second North Carolina Cavalry, when W P Roberts was made General of Dearing's Brigade. Every man at our brigade headquarters loved him and he was an inspiration to the entire brigade in battle. Gaines' appointment was no disparagement of any officer of the Nineteenth. They all approved it, as far as I know.

FIVE FORKS.

April 1, in a small open field, right on the White Oak road, slight scattering woods on the left and heavier woods on the right, with a great open expanse in front of this little field, far to its right and left, the Sixty-third North Carolina was in some little, low improvised breastworks, *the very last* on that long, attenuated line of defences, of the Army of Northern Virginia, from Richmond to Petersburg and westward. General Grant had been ever since the night of 7 May, 1864, "turning Lee's right flank." That night near White Hall, Virginia, the Sixty-third North Carolina was on *Lee's right flank*. 1 April, 1865, was to see that right flank finally turned and the Sixty-third was there, *in the post of honor* as it ever had been, to receive the last shivering shock of that long, mighty move. The Forty-first and Nineteenth mounted were in that little field to see us do our part and to do theirs. Pickett's Division joined immediately on to the left of the Sixty-third, also behind their own far longer and stronger breastworks. Just about sundown, sitting on my horse near the left end of the regiment, I saw the mightiest mass of men I ever looked at in battle, in the most perfect lines I ever witnessed, come forward with loud cheers, waving the beautiful Stars and Stripes, and sweep like a storm over Pickett's works about two hundred yards to our left. All Pickett's veterans between us and these storming lines fled in

utter rout and confusion down the White Oak road right back of that little field and in full sight of us all. Fred. Foard dismounted one-half of the holders of our led horses and with them, by rallying shouts and threats to shoot Pickett's men, attempted to check the rout, but all in vain. Those great Federal lines in order to envelop our forces to their right and front wheeled grandly to the right as they victoriously stormed Pickett's works and did not come down on us at once. In front of that little field, all over that great open expanse came Custer's great division, like Mamalukes converging down on the Sixty-third, the Nineteenth and the Forty-first North Carolina. The voices of Custer and his officers rang out in clear, clarion tones, orders that every old cavalryman in that little field distinctly heard and knew to mean our utter destruction if executed. Every man in that little field knew that Pickett was routed and that it could be but a short time till that "army with banners" to our left would also come down upon us. But not a man moved in those little, low works. To all appearances they were kneeling dead. A few moments before a courier had ridden up to Captain Erwin, now commanding the regiment, and, in low tones, given him an order. He rose and repeated it so that his entire little line heard it: "Hold your fire till that coming cavalry reaches the edge of the field and till I order it." Those kneeling men were not dead; they were just obeying orders, under the most trying test to a soldier. The Nineteenth and Forty-first had their orders. They sat still in their saddles, every man with his sword or his pistol in his hand. That splendid cavalry under the Stars and Stripes came on grandly; they reached the edge of the field, a great, loud, bass voice, like a speaking trumpet, said "Fire!" An awful volley answered from the rifles of the Sixty-third and then they rattled with one continuous fire. The magnificent riders "in blue" in front of that fire fell from their saddles and recoiled just to come again. As that "order to fire" was given the Nineteenth and Forty-first rode forward into Custer's "serried ranks" as if they really expected to "annihilate" them. The shock of the collision was terrible. Orders rang out on both sides clear-cut and loud. Sabers rang on each other with

a cold steel ring that only the bravest veterans can stand. Pistol shots here and there and everywhere emptied saddles and burnt, with powder flashes, faces with death's pallor on them. Each side knew what was at stake, and this saber slashing lasted longer than I ever saw one. A short, stout general in gray, on a big gray horse, was riding here and there in the midst of that frightful fray, with Lieutenant Fred. Foard, two couriers, Brown and Means, and Color-Bearer Churchill, around him, all that were left of his staff; one courier had just gone to the rear with a hand nearly shot off. He was eagerly watching to the front, the right and left. It was nearly dark, he could not see far. Custer's line had not advanced a yard on that little field. The general in gray sent a courier into the woods to the right who quickly told him that he was being flanked there. Just then W H. F. Lee, alone, rode rapidly into the fray to General Barringer's side. They talked a second. Two couriers were sent up the White Oak Road to see who was that mass of men coming down on our left. They rode within thirty yards of the coming platoons. One courier whispered to the other: "Look at their colors; turn your horse slow and ride off in a walk." They quickly reported: "It is a great body of Federal troops." Lieutenant Foard and the two couriers rode off from Generals Lee and Barringer with orders. The Nineteenth and Forty-first began to retire slowly The dismounted Sixty-third withdrew with their faces to the foe, firing as they fell back. And as General Barringer writes, on page 442 of Vol. 1, "At Five Forks on 1 April the last hope of the Confederacy went down in darkness and despair." Under Captain Erwin's slow, cool, steady orders the men of the Sixty-third withdrew and lighted up that "darkness" with the flashes of their rifles when the curtain fell there on war's greatest tragedy. Vol. 95, pp. 1264, 1299 and 1300; 1117, 1118, 1105, sketch 830 and 1130—1131.

In my "Sketches" of 1881, fully approved by General Barringer, appear these words: "Only the Second, Third and Fifth Regiments were present in the open field." He, in his sketch of the Ninth, in Vol. 1, indicates that the Third was not in the "open field." He wrote that sketch on his death

bed as his last love-work for the Ninth, and necessarily not with his usual great care.

NIGHT OF 1 APRIL.

God's blessing of night and the valor with which He had endowed us to fight, alone saved the regiment from utter destruction after we left that little field. As it was, we went into camp that night, in good order, near Potts' Station, on the South Side Railroad, just about two miles north of where we had fought and "midway between Ford's and Southerland's Depots."

"THE RETREAT."

To a veteran soldier, who loves his "cause" and his battle flag fluttering "Forward" in the breeze, nothing is so painful as to hear his own drums or his own bugles on the firing line, beating or blowing "The Retreat." He has not heard it often; he does not know that call like he does the other "calls." He and his comrades all along the line throw up their heads and listen eagerly. "What call is that?" That's "The Retreat." Something hits his heart hard; harder than a shot. He looks sternly to the front, sadly to the rear, thinks of somebody way off, and obeys. Sunday morning, 2 April, as two of Barringer's couriers were, under orders, moving forward through wide, open fields placing a dismounted skirmish line from the Sixty-third to meet the coming foe, a courier rode up to them and said: "Petersburg has fallen, bring back this line slowly and join in the retreat." We all retired and moved on "the retreat" in *perfect order* and *not at all* "with precipitation," as General Deven reports on page 1124, Vol. 95.

And, as General Barringer says, "that night we camped near Namozine Church, covering the extreme rear on that line," and that church is less than seven miles from Potts', so there *could not* have been much "precipitation" on our part in retiring nor on *their* part in attacking us.

Now let Captain Charles W. Pearson, Company H, of our regiment, tell what occurred that day in his own attractive words: "The brigade had been dismounted and was throw-

ing up defences. The road and fields soon became filled with retreating men, wagons, ambulances and every description of army hangers-on. We were ordered to remount. The day's formation put the Sixty-third in the rear; so that we were the last to get mounted, in column of squadrons, Harris' squadron, Companies E and H, being in front. Charging and counter-charging was now going on. About the time the regiment was ready to move, a heavy fire was opened on our right flank; the order was given, 'Squadron right wheel, *charge!*' The movement was well and steadily executed, the charge made by Companies E and H, driving off the enemy. A general retreat now began, the enemy's cavalry making several charges, which were easily repulsed, and ceasing entirely as night came on. We soon came into a large body of old field pines, where the darkness was intense, nobody could be distinguished. The movement forward stopped. Company H was called for and nobly responded, promptly taking a position to cover the rear. The way being opened, we soon found the cause of the delay In a boggy branch, some fellow had cut the mules loose from his ambulance and left it in the mud. Captain McGregor was getting his last gun out of the mud, raving like a mad man, swearing that everybody had left him at the mercy of the enemy. As we rode up he was told to be easy, that there was still one command who would stay between him and the enemy. He asked what command. When told the Sixty-third North Carolina, he exclaimed: '*Thank God for that.* So long as there are any Tar Heels with me, I am not uneasy. Just give me a little notice and I will melt these guns before they shall have them.' His was the battery attached to W H. F Lee's Cavalry Division. This being a favorable position, arrangements were immediately begun to strengthen the position, by building a fence across the road and cutting such timber as was convenient. Early next morning "To Horse" was sounded and we were moved out near Namozine Church, which stood at the cross roads. We could hear the enemy's advance as our pickets were driven in." Vol. 95, pp. 1118, 1124 and 1131.

NAMOZINE CHURCH.

That is the most painful of all the names in the long history of the Sixty-third. Immediately after we reached that church, just about 9 o'clock Monday morning, 3 April, 1865, Generals Fitzhugh Lee, W H. F. Lee and Barringer, with all their staffs, were sitting on their horses where the Green road and the Cousins road cross each other. General Fitzhugh Lee, commanding all the cavalry, said to General W H. F. Lee, commanding Beale's Virginia and Barringer's Brigades: "General Lee, you must leave our *best* brigade here and hold this position to the last. The safety of our army depends upon it, and I will move on in rear of the retreat with the rest of the cavalry." I heard those words. All there heard them and we all knew what they signified—the destruction of the brigade chosen. General W H. F Lee instantly turned to General Barringer and said: "General Barringer, you have heard the orders; you must do that duty here." All the other generals and staffs moved off at once. The head of the enemy's column was then in full view. General Barringer immediately began placing the Ninth, Nineteenth and all of the Sixty-third there present for the last battle of the brigade. The Forty-first was not up from its picket duty of the night before, having marched by a different road from the Sixty-third. Captain Rankin, of our regiment, was "back with a detail of forty men from our regiment to get a supply of corn at a farm house near our camp of the night before" and they were all captured except Captain Rankin and very few others.

The Nineteenth North Carolina, mounted by fours, was placed on Cousins' road in the centre, its front slightly to the rear of the Sixty-third's left. The Ninth, mounted in close single line, was placed in the woods to the left of the Nineteenth and slightly to its front. The Sixty-third was dismounted in line on the right, immediately on the Green's road, which here was on a ridge, with left of the regiment right at or almost to the crossing of the two roads. The Sixty-third's led horses, every fourth man holding three horses as he sat on his own, were sent down the road in rear

of the Nineteenth, where also was one of McGregor's guns in position to the left of the road, the last left him. It was probably 400 yards in the Sixty-third's front across an open field to the woods, where the enemy was. The brunt of the fight and the tide of the battle was to be on our regiment. That is what that disposition meant. Custer's whole division of cavalry was in that body of woods to our front. Wells' Brigade in the advance. In a moment the enemy's mounted line came into the open field and magnificently charged. But they could not stand the fire of our regiment. Again and again they attacked, firing as they came and were driven back. A great flanking column was seen going to the left of the Ninth, firing into it with carbines and pistols. I was sent to Colonel Cheek to ask him how goes the battle and to urge him to stand. His men were firing furiously into the flankers and they getting nearer, as they moved and under the excitement of the battle, were firing right into the faces of the Ninth. Colonel Cheek said: "Present my compliments to General Barringer and tell him that we will hold to the last. But this can not last much longer. Look yonder!" pointing to his left. I reported. General Barringer, Foard and Brown and Churchill were in ten feet of the firing line of the Sixty-third. Cahill, Company F, rose about the centre of the line and said: "Please get me some ammunition. I have fired my last cartridge." He was told: "No ammunition can be brought in here now; borrow some, borrow some, John." He smiled, kneeled down and "borrowed" two cartridges. "The last" had come. General Barringer turned to Brown: "Order that Nineteenth Regiment to charge and *you lead it.*" The charge was hopeless. The "Old First" was breaking. That meant what the falling back of "The Old Guard" meant. The Nineteenth was driven back in confusion as we all knew it *must* be. General Barringer, in meantime, seeing the inevitable, told me to ride to the left of the Sixty-third and order it to retire. I did so, and ordered Captain S. A. Grier now living, commanding the Fifth Squadron on the extreme left, to withdraw his squadron with the regiment, which was then rising up under General Barringer's orders along the centre and right of the line. As I rode up to Grier he was rap-

idly walking up and down his squadron, with his pistol in his hand and saying something in a very commanding tone, that he ought not to have said: "Give 'em hell, boys; give 'em *hell.*" He then gave his squadron another command and in a moment the fifth squadron and the other four, all in a straight line, with grand old Captain John R. Erwin at their head were majestically marching "by twos" off their last battlefield, some men firing to their left as they retired. As I rode to the regiment's head Captain Erwin, my beloved old company commander, said: "Paul, where are my led horses?" I said: "They are down this road here." He said: "They have been sent for, but you get them to me as quick as you can." General Barringer, Foard, Churchill and Brown veered off to the left with our regiment and I never got back to them out of the mass of maddened, moving men down that road. Our led horses were taken out safely through that lane; but no man or horse that ever got into it could return. There was a compact, irresistible movement, like a glacier's, only one way. And, besides, to the right of the lane, as we moved, in full, plain view, and not far off came that great flanking column we had seen go to our left as the battle was on. It was the only stampede of Southern soldiers I had ever seen. And it was *"the last."*

"At the end of the lane, by which the First and Second Regiments with the wounded men and led horses of the Fifth escaped a gallant effort was made to rally the fleeing men and fight the victorious, pursuing cavalry of Custer. This effort was simply an act of desperation and, as was announced, to 'aid the escape of General Barringer and the dismounted men of the Fifth.' The brave men who had fought through the war recognized it as such, and only a few heroic spirits, *principally, almost solely from the mounted men of the Fifth Regiment,* heeded the efforts to rally. These formed, faced about and poured their last shots of the war into the head of the column of the pursuing hosts." This I copy from my "Sketches" of 1881.

Just after I started for those led horses, General W. H. F. Lee rode up. How on earth he got there past that left flanking column I have never been able to conceive. He asked

me: "Where is General Barringer?" I answered: "He has just gone right in there," pointing. Close to us was McGregor with his last gun, which he had run across the lane on the side next to that left flanking column, pouring his last shots into that column and "raving like a mad man." All of the Sixty-third who passed out that lane went, that day, to Burkeville and Clover Station. I was shot twice at Namozine Church, last time severely, as I went for the led horses and, with other wounded, was sent to hospital at Danville and furloughed for thirty days, which has mercifully been extended to more than thirty years.

General Barringer and Foard and Brown were captured that same day and thus ended Courier Frank Brown's brilliant career as a private soldier of Company H, Sixty-third North Carolina. There never was a braver boy in battle. He had five personal hand-to-hand conflicts after that one at Goodall's Tavern and in each came out hero and victor, as there. I have said much of him because the *truth* entitled him to it, but also to present him as a *fair representative* of the men of the Sixty-third North Carolina. There were hundreds of men in the regiment just like Frank Brown. Nobody knew that better than Brown and that aided him to do his own glorious deeds. As to what the ranks from which he came would do in a furious fight around him, he never had any concern to mar the supremacy of his own great soul and courage in battle and this thought immensely aided the glorious grandeur of his own courage and career. As it always does. Vol. 95, pp. 1119, 1131, 1139, and 1301. On which last page General Fitzhugh Lee speaks of our brigade as "that very excellent North Carolina brigade."

The Sixty-third made its way out and escaped under the guidance of Captain Erwin, without the loss of a man after marching off the fatal field of Namozine. Captain Pearson says: "We got into a large body of timber which shielded us. By walking all day, all night and all the next day, almost without stopping, we got out, but never rejoined the army." The above narration will explain why Barringer's Brigade had only twenty-three officers and men in the surrender at Appomattox.

Captain Erwin died 19 March, 1901. I have a letter before me now written by him to me 28 April, 1900. In it he says: "I took command at Chamberlain Run, after the death of McNeil and Shaw (Harris being wounded in the same fight), and held commmand to the finish. * * * The regiment was at Pannell's bridge on Staunton river, when the news of the surrender reached us. We went to Danville, but without orders, and after we reached there each Captain took command of his company and inquired the nearest way to their respective homes." And this is the quiet, modest conclusion of the history of the Fifth North Carolina Cavalry.

FAREWELL.

Comrades of the Fifth North Carolina Cavalry:

At the request of many of you, I undertook this "love's labor" for our great regiment. As you, who asked it, well know, I shrank from it till the last, too long, in fact, with hope that some other would do the work of this "additional sketch." It is finished as best I could, under the circumstances. I would now be false, utterly false to my own heart if, before leaving it and *giving it to you,* I did not *here* express some feelings overwhelming me. Feelings of thanks. In what I have done, I have been greatly aided by Lieutenant Wiley, Baxter Caldwell, John Cahill and others of Company F, who met me in Charlotte, N. C., several times for *entire days.* My thanks to them are sincere and everlasting.

To my old friend and company-comrade, Denson A. Caldwell, of Concord, always true and faithful and brave, I owe a debt of gratitude that can never end and that words can never tell.

Henry Hobson and Foard and Hodges, of Company H, though in another county, have helped me greatly; and all along, as I have labored, I could feel the touch and contagion of their exalted *enthusiasm,* and every old soldier knows what that means in time of trial. *With all my soul I thank them.*

I do not know how I could have gotten along without the Sketch of Company H, written by Captain Pearson. I cer-

tainly never could have told of the death of our much loved Colonel McNeill as I have without Captain Pearson's manuscript to his company-comrades. As he measured out his help to me, I now mete out my gratitude to him. He is the son of Giles William Pearson, whose brother was Chief Justice Pearson, and his mother was a daughter of Anderson Ellis, a sister of Governor Ellis; the true blood in his veins produces good, gracious deeds "when he is old" as it *always* will when properly "trained up." I ask every *heart* of yours, comrades, to salute Captain Charles W Pearson, as mine does.

Captain Rankin's sketch of our regiment, unfortunately, never given in for publication in these histories, was used freely and most helpfully, and so was Major Galloway's. I thank both most sincerely. Mr. Coltrane, here in Concord, aided me often and well. As he knows, I am greatly grateful.

Thos. B. Bailey, in arranging a meeting between me and members of Company H, in Mocksville, helped me, as he, with his Christian modesty, can never realize, and I thank him most cordially. "Charlie Haigh" and "Bugler Rose," by long, personal interviews and courtesies in Fayetteville, and by much writing most intelligently and cheeringly aided me; and my truest tribute of thanks is always theirs. And a great pile of letters, here too numerous to name, signify the unselfish aid to me and love for our "cause" of many men and women, when "the world" says that such love and aid do not exist. With many, many millions such qualities do not exist. With millions, who "are the salt of the earth," they do. We should try to increase the latter millions.

Senator James D. McNeill, nephew of Colonel McNeill, and his lovely wife, a daughter of Captain James William Strange, of the "Old Nineteenth," by their generous, beautiful hospitality at their home in Fayetteville and the presence there of Colonel McNeill's daughter, Mrs. Kate Roulhac Utley, and the intense interest of all of them in our regiment was a high and helpful inspiration to me in my efforts for you and their valuable information, which I could not have obtained elsewhere, aided me beyond all measure and I thank

them as gratefully as they graciously inspired and helped me. The hospitality for some days extended to me by my old college-mate, Hon. George M. Rose, nephew of Colonel McNeill, and his charming wife, at their home in Fayetteville, was a most beneficial blessing and assistance in our work and my heart's best benediction is theirs.

Hon. Walter Clark, the self-sacrificing, patriotic editor of these histories, cheered me "forward" by kind words, "when I was sick," and aided me when whole "battalions of trouble" came upon me by getting the publishers of these histories to kindly extend my *expired* time. And but for him this sketch could not have appeared in this volume, but out of place later on. I will not attempt to write of gratitude to him. I will try to show it by acts hereafter.

And my little wife encouraged and aided me in sickness and depression as only a loving wife can. No words can tell my thanks to her. *God bless her always.*

But above and over and more than all, there was Another Helper. When, at times, "amid the encircling gloom," difficulties appeared, which are *absolutely insurmountable* by me alone, "Our Heavenly Father in Heaven" banished them all and a "Kindly Light" led me on and the "spirit of truth guided me in all truth" that I have tried to tell. Every defect of what is told, and there are many, is all mine alone and the result of my imperfect vision to see aright the guidance of my Guide. I am now "a soldier of the cross and shall I *fear* to own His name? As such soldier I have a command with a glorious promise attached—"*In all* thy ways acknowledge him and he shall direct thy paths." In *love* and in illimitable gratitude I *obey*. The truest test of every soldier and Christ's only measure and standard of love for Him is obedience.

And now, as my farewell: By my work I have tried to show my *love;* please pardon all faults of that work with the forgiveness due our common frailty. The picture I have tried to paint of our great regiment is done and it is yours. Would that it were better done. Its many glaring defects, especially of omission, nobody will ever see as I do. Deploringly right now and most sorrowfully I realize, in heart and soul, what Lessing makes "Conti," his great painter, say in

"Emilia Galotti," when that painter was presenting his last glorious picture of Emilia Galotti to the prince who loves her. Conti says: "Oh! how unfortunate that we do not paint with our eyes. On the long road from the eye through the arm to the brush how much is lost."

Comrades of the Sixty-third, *Good-bye.*

PAUL B. MEANS.

CONCORD, N. C.,
3 OCTOBER, 1901.

SIXTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.
B. T. Morris, Captain, Co. E.

SIXTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

By B. T. MORRIS, Captain, Company A.

In presenting to the public the Sixty-fourth North Carolina Regiment, we are forced to admit that, in all probability, there is not another regiment in the Confederate service with just such a history, owing to the fact that it was never in a pitched battle as a regiment and was so soon taken prisoners.

On 20 July, 1862, Lawrence M. Allen was commissioned as Colonel to raise, as was first anticipated, a Legion, and at one time had thirteen companies of infantry and some companies of cavalry. But for some cause, his command was cut down to a regiment of ten companies and numbered the Sixty-fourth North Carolina Regiment.

Six companies were raised principally in Madison county, one in Henderson, one in Polk and two in Tennessee.

The ten companies, including the commissioned officers, numbering in all 1,110, probably presented one of the finest looking regiments in the Confederate army. Having been raised in the mountains of Western North Carolina and East Tennessee, they were strong and sturdy, full of courage and ready to do and do valiantly for their country.

FIELD AND STAFF.

When the regiment was first organized the officers were:

L. M. Allen, Colonel, Marshall, N. C.
J. A. Keith, Lieutenant-Colonel, Marshall, N. C.
W N. Garrett, Major, Hot Springs, N. C.

Colonel Allen was not at the surrender at Cumberland Gap, having resigned and the other field officers having been promoted, Thos. P Jones, of Company B, became Major. The commissioned officers who served in the different companies, so far as we know, were as follows:

COMPANY A—Captains, Jas. A. Keith and M. E. Carter. Lieutenants: M. E. Carter, B. W Woodward, O. H. Ramsey, J M. Ray, G. D. Ray, N. W Woodward and William Pendley

COMPANY B—Captains, Thos. P Jones, W G. B. Morris, Lieutenants, W G. B. Morris, W N Luther, Richard Howard, Daniel Pace, Richard Howard and W A. Batson.

COMPANY C—Captains, John Peek, C N Candler. Lieutenants, C. Alexander, Alfred Peek and Levi Peek.

COMPANY D—Captains, A. A. Duees, L. W Peek. Lieutenants, L. W Peek, Wm. C. Harrison, Thos. Hunter, T. W. Allen and Job B. Peek.

COMPANY E—Captain, B. T. Morris, Lieutenants W K. Tabor, B. F. Hampton, H. H. Collins, W L. Morris and J W Morris.

COMPANY F—Captain, D. W Anderson. Lieutenants, John J Duych, J. A. Jarvis, A. J. Brown and Miles Frapps.

COMPANY G—Captains, Wm. M. Keith and R. M. Deaver. Lieutenants, R. M. Deaver, A. E. Davis, J. B. Peek, W A. Patterson and Thos. Keith.

COMPANY H—Captain, J. T. Reynolds. Lieutenants, Jas. H. Davis, Wm. S. Davis, John Moore and Edwin Reynolds.

COMPANY I—Captains, John S. Love and J. V Baird. Lieutenants, J. Debush, C. W Wells, Thos. W Keith, A. M. Sheffey and Frederick Devalt.

COMPANY K—Captains, Wm. E. Tilson and S. E. Erwin. Lieutenants, S. E. Erwin, J. E. Tilson, J. B. Erwin and A. G. Bailey.

Companies A, C, D, F, G and I were from Madison County, Company B from Henderson County, Company E from Polk County.

The regiment was first stationed at Greenville, Tenn., for a short time, and was moved to Knoxville, where they were drilled and used on guard duty for the city and as scouts for the surrounding country for about three months. About two hundred of the regiment were then sent to Shelton Laurel, in Madison county, N C., under the command of J. A. Keith, Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, and were kept there

until the spring of 1863, when they joined the regiment at Clinton, Tenn.

This regiment, like several others from North Carolina, was moved about from "pillar to post"—rather from post to post: In these tramps, marches and scouts very few comforts were furnished. As we are endeavoring to arrive at the truth of history, it is but fair and just to say that this regiment did not have a fair pull with some from other States. Strangers always commanded the Department of East Tennessee, and while high-toned and fearless to a fault, they could not, or did not, understand the character and genuine merits of our rough mountain boys. Consequently, there was friction, jealousy, dictation and some tyranny.

Colonel Allen, of this regiment, was not an attractive man—rather otherwise—but was chosen leader because he was known to be brave and fearless. Fighting was expected, and his men had the utmost confidence in him.

Lieutenant-Colonel Keith was intrepid and fearless. He had bitter enemies among the enemies of his country. He did severely punish some of the enemies of his country—some say far too severely, and his resignation was demanded in the spring of 1863 by the authorities. It is well known that the "Shelton Laurel" section of Madison County, bordering on East Tennessee, was infested with bushwhackers of such fierce audacity and viciousness that only severe and caustic measures would suppress them. In addition to the native disloyal element, scores and hundreds fled from conscription in Tennessee, and when hunted in those mountain fastnesses they fought back, retaliated and did many outrageous things. Colonel Keith caught some of these and punished them severely—perhaps cruelly. His resignation was called for at the instance of Governor Vance for shooting certain parties accused of having looted the town of Marshall.

When an officer finds himself and men bushwhacked from behind every shrub, tree or projection on all sides of the road, only severe measures will stop it.

Keith and Allen were fighters—soldiers. Their first duty was self protection, protection of their people from midnight marauders.

Major W N. Garrett, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel later on, was also a good soldier and of good family, which for many years had lived near Hot Springs. His father was brutally murdered, shot down on his own door step in the very arms of wife and daughters.

This was only three or four miles from Paint Rock, at the Tennessee State line, along the borders of which up and down for near two hundred miles were constantly ranging bands of outlaws, murdering such men as Colonel Walker, of the Eightieth North Carolina Regiment; Wm. Walker, Cherokee County; Sheriff Noland, of Haywood County; Colonel Edney, of ———— Regiment, Henderson County; Privates Rice Hyatt, —. —. Hopkins, of the Sixty-ninth Regiment; and Woody and Askew, of Madison County, and many others.

Of the company officers, such men as Captain Melvin E. Carter, Jones, Peek, Candler and others were peers of the best men of the State.

The regiment was never attached to any body larger than a brigade, except on one or two occasions: but was all the time kept on scouting service, sometimes in one section of the country, then in another. In East Tennessee about 1 February, 1863, the regiment was attached to Colonel Palmer's Brigade and was at Big Creek Gap till about 1 April, when it went to Clinton and thence it was soon ordered to move and for one month was kept on a continuous march and went within four miles of Monticello, Ky. This part of Kentucky was a hot-bed of unionists and little was accomplished by these hard marches.

While in camp on Wolf river, or creek, a detail was made of 300 men to make a raid on what was known as Poplar Cove where it was said was a regiment of bushwhackers. The detail was started out and marched all night. At a late hour in the night a special detail was made to go across the field to a house, the rest waiting their return. Arriving at the house they found a man in cavalry equipage and the woman of the house cooking rations for quite a company. Some of the men secured pine torches, but making no further discoveries, started back. When within about one hundred yards of the camp they were fired into by a company of bushwhack-

ers who had taken in the situation, and taken position on the path they would return. Immediately our men extinguished their lights and made good their escape through the darkness, only one man being wounded, and that slightly.

The regiment returned to Clinton about 1 May and from that time until August was kept constantly on the march. They were ordered to Murfreesboro, but arriving at Chattanooga were ordered back to Knoxville.

CUMBERLAND GAP.

Twice again were they sent to Chattanooga. On 3 August 1863, the regiment then commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Garrett, was surrendered with the other troops by General J. W Frazer, who commanded that post, and remained prisoners during the rest of the war. The Sixty-fourth was at that time much reduced in numbers. The officers were sent to Johnson's Island and the privates to Camp Douglass on 26 December, 1863. The number of non-commissioned officers and privates belonging to the Sixty-fourth Regiment in prison at Camp Douglas were 288, *119 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 797. So, while the Sixty-fourth North Carolina Regiment can not boast of battles fought, or deeds of daring, yet its career was one of hardship and endurance, always ready to act promptly at every command. A number of good men were lost, killed by bushwhackers and concealed enemies.

There were, however, several officers and some privates who would not surrender and made good their escape at Cumberland Gap with Major B. G. McDowell, of the Sixty-second North Carolina, through the mountains and again went into active service. The total surrendered so shamefully by General Frazer at Cumberland Gap was 2,026 prisoners, 12 pieces of artillery, and great stores of provisions and ammunition and quartermaster supplies.

In the fall of 1863 General R. B. Vance was sent to Asheville to take command of the forces on duty in Western North Carolina and in response to a general order from General Vance the men of the different companies of the regiment were brought together and again went into camp, but

no new service for the fate of the Sixty-fourth seemed to be "guard and march," and "march and guard." On — of November the command was ordered to Hot Springs, N. C., and was on a forced march the whole day, but did not arrive in time for the battle in which the noble Major Jno. W Woodfin was killed; yet they marched more than forty miles that day and part of the night, camping for the remainder of the night at Marshall, fifteen miles up the river towards Asheville.

After the killing of Major John W Woodfin, of the Fourteenth Battalion, and the capture of General R. B. Vance, our people were much depressed. Our army, under the peerless Lee in Virginia, had fallen back from Maryland and Pennsylvania and Vicksburg with all our water line along the Mississippi had surrendered.

The clouds were lowering around us. Our noble comrades, now languishing on Johnson's Island and Camp Chase, were rapidly dying, heroically refusing to take the oath of allegiance to the United States.

The heroic band of the Sixty-second, Sixty-fourth, with parts of the Sixty-ninth and Eightieth North Carolina, were practically always on the march, and only those familiar with the mountains of East Tennessee and Western North Carolina can have an idea of the hardships endured.

Our enemies were at home—knew all the roads, by-ways and trails, and were much in heart over the success of their arms elsewhere. There in East Tennessee we slashed them every time we had a chance at them. They never gave us a fair fight, square-up, face-to-face, man-to-man, horse-to-horse. If they did, it was another Bull's Gap (Bull Run in miniature) as at Strawberry Plains, Morristown, Greenville, Blountville or Rogersville, and the Dandridge stampede.

Some times the boot was on the other leg—we had to "hit the grit," as the boys say, but never when we had half, or one-third of a chance.

FIGHTING BUSHWHACKERS.

Soon after the enemy had taken Knoxville, in East Tennessee, and Major Kirk had gotten some recruits in Western

North Carolina, the disloyal sentiment began to spread in several counties and it required heavy scouting to keep the enemy down. So after the surrender of the Sixty-fourth Regiment those who were fortunate enough to make their escape from the enemy and recruited the service in Western North Carolina, were not all in a body but in different squads. One commanded by Captain Candler, of Company C, one by Captain Anderson, of Company F, one by Lieutenant-Colonel J. A. Keith, who later resigned. He was stationed most of the time at Marshall, in Madison County, and did good service in a hard place. The writer of this sketch was the senior Captain and the field officers being prisoners of war, in the absence of Lieutenant-Colonel Keith and after his resignation, had command of the regiment, or so much of it as was together at any time and was stationed at different places in Madison, Buncombe and Henderson Counties. From these headquarters we made many hard scouts in different parts of the country. No one except those who have tried it can realize what those who do this kind of service have to undergo. In some respects it is easier than being in the regular army, but in some others it is not.

During the months of December, 1863, and January and February, 1864, we made many scouts down into East Tennessee. One of these I will endeavor to describe, which might well be called a "bluff." Colonel Palmer took about two hundred men and one little mountain howitzer and made a raid down as far as Russelville, five miles above Morristown. While there our cavalry began passing him and he marched on up to Bull's Gap, fifteen miles above Morristown, when it was discovered that all our cavalry had passed us going back, and that the enemy's cavalry were in pursuit, so Colonel Palmer selected his battle ground, placed his little howitzer, put a small protection before it, put out a line of skirmishers and a picket which included all the men he had. As the enemy advanced, our pickets fired and fell back. Then our line of skirmishers gave them a few shots and fell back. The howitzer then opened. That was more than they could stand, they no doubt thought it was a trap set for them and expected the Confederate cavalry would cut them off, so they

about faced and made a straight line for Knoxville, and Colonel Palmer took his little band, including the Sixty-fourth, back to North Carolina. We did not exactly run, but were like the Indian said when asked if he had ever run from a white man. He said, "No, but I walked mighty fast down a branch one time." So Colonel Palmer made good his escape that time from about three thousand cavalrymen.

Our headquarters were at Marshall when the word came that Kirk was on Shelton Laurel with his men. Colonel Palmer, always ready, took the most of the command and made a raid for Shelton Laurel in the eastern part of Madison County, leaving Lieutenant-Colonel McDowell in command of the rest at Marshall, but telling him if he desired to do so, he could take what troops were left in camp and go over on Big Laurel and probably capture some that might attempt to escape that way from Kirk's command. Lieutenant-Colonel McDowell gathered up about sixty men, including the citizens who were always ready for any emergency. We made ready for a two day's scout. I had only about twenty men of the Sixty-fourth for this raid. We made a forced march and about 3:30 p. m., the enemy began to bushwhack us and had several shots that evening. We camped that night in a little valley between three hills. In the meantime we had learned that Kirk's whole command was there, so we naturally expected a fight next morning and we got it. I was acting as officer of the day, pickets were put on the tops of the three hills and I was instructed to go around before day and move the pickets just under the brow of the hills so they would be able to get the first shot. At the proper time the pickets were properly placed and just as day began to dawn the firing commenced. In a short time we were on top of one of the hills which was the most available point. Kirk's command was not in a body, but were in every direction and had good long range rifles. We were not as well armed as they were, but the boys put in good time. Just at the foot of the hill there was a little group gathered that was pouring shot into us and we were over-shooting them. Lieutenant-Colonel McDowell came to me and wanted me to move them, so we of the Sixty-fourth, with a down-hill start, made a charge and

when about half way, and when we got in one hundred and fifty yards of the enemy they took to the woods, which were about fifty yards further. We had but little time, but gave them a few shots while they were falling back. When we reached the foot of the hill we found a good place to stay for a while, having good protection behind some large stumps which had protected them from our fire. The enemy had all the advantage, having the woods on all sides. While in that place they began to cross fire, so neither side of our works gave us protection. We lost there one man killed, Hyram Gilbert, a young man and a good soldier. He was shot in the breast and died almost instantly. Sergeant Robert Lee, of the Sixty-second Regiment, who fell in with the Sixty-fourth in the charge, was slightly wounded, struck with a spent ball which would have proved fatal if it had been in full force. We then had to climb the hill back to the command under heavy fire from all directions except in our lines. When we had gotten back we found Lieutenant-Colonel McDowell shot through the arm and the men out of ammunition. The next thing was to get out, which we did very nicely by making a charge both ways. When they ran we marched out, having a long trip up a mountain. The enemy fired many shots, but we being out of ammunition, had to take it quietly. However, we lost only two killed and four wounded, and returned to Marshall. In April, 1864, the fragment of the regiment left was at Marshall, N. C., and commanded by Captain B. T. Morris.

Soon after this the Sixty-fourth was ordered to Flat Rock, in Henderson County, to break up the bands of robbers and those who were plundering the county. It was no uncommon thing for them to rob a house and sometimes kill the owner. There were living in and around Flat Rock many Southerners who spent the summer in this delightful climate. These bands seemed to have a desire specially to rob those Southern people, so that when we arrived and made our headquarters at the "Farmer" hotel, a great many families brought their furniture and other valuables and put them in the hotel for safety. We remained at this place about six months, and during that time made many scouts in the coun-

ties of Henderson, Polk and Transylvania, and suffered many hardships. At one time when Captain Deaver was in trouble in Transylvania County, I was ordered to send him ten good men. At that time I had a detail out on a scout in Polk County, the only commissioned officer I had with me was Lieutenant Morris, and he had command of that scout, so the best I could do was to send him ten young men under Corporal Gilbert. They reported to Captain Deaver and when they had served the purpose for which they were sent, they were ordered back. On their return there came a heavy rain, during which they took shelter in a house on Crab Creek, and when the rain was over resumed their march. When about one mile from the house they were fired on by a band of bushwhackers who had taken all the advantage of the boys. They had selected a place in the road where there was a large rock above the road and on the top of a little knoll, they had carefully trimmed the brush out of the way, so that when our boys got within fifty yards they fired with shot guns or muskets and Enfield rifles, killing one man, Thomas Coggins, a brave and good young man. All the others of our detachment except one were wounded, but fortunately all slightly. One of them (Lewis Laughter) was shot in six different places. A minie ball had struck the front part of his pants and cut them from seam to seam, but did not touch him. The boys returned the fire, but the instant the bushwhackers fired they ran and were soon out of sight. Our boys had a slim chance, but it was said that there was a young man missing out of the settlement who has not yet turned up. By the time the boys came into camp the other detail had come in, so we at once took a strong guard, went up and brought our dead comrade to camp, carried him to his home and buried him with the honors of war. A great many of our brave boys were not allowed such a burial.

Henry Perkins had leave of absence to visit his family. He lived in Green River Cove, in Polk County, about sixteen miles from camp. When he arrived at home and had been there but a short time he walked out in the yard and was shot down; he saw the man that shot him and told who he was. He was a vile fellow who made it his every day business to

bushwhack every detail that passed through the country. Word was immediately conveyed to camp and at the proper time leaving camp late in the evening so that our movements should not be known, we travelled nearly all night, arriving before day and having been informed that he was a frequent visitor at a house near the river where some bad women lived, we put our men in ambush to wait for daylight to develop something. Just at the break of day the women came out of the house and began a general search as if suspicious of something. They continued their search till they came upon some of the boys, and they made all the racket they could make and it did seem as if our trip was vain. Two of our men who had not been discovered, walked up a little branch only a short distance from the house, when suddenly a little dog commenced barking. The man we were seeking sprang to his feet and made an effort to get his gun, but was too late. They fired into him one ball cutting the artery in his right arm, and in a few minutes he was dead. Thus ended the life of a man who only a few days before had taken the life of his next door neighbor and that without a cause. From this time on that section was more quiet. Many other raids were made which were necessary to keep down such bands.

The last camp we occupied for any length of time was Camp Woodfin, two miles north of Asheville. While in camp at this place in April, 1865, General Stoneman made his raid on Asheville. One bright day, while we were at dinner, the beating of the long roll commenced and soon every man was in line. The enemy had captured some of our men out on the river road. The Sixty-fourth was ordered to remain in camp, but to keep in line. Colonel Palmer was commanding and formed a line of battle on the top of a ridge between our camp and the River road. The enemy was in the road and in some trenches that had been thrown up there. Several rounds were fired, the Yankee balls passing over our men and rattling on our shanties, which were covered with boards. About 3 o'clock the Sixty-fourth was moved to the front and took part in a few shots, one man of the Sixty-fourth was wounded. This was another game of bluff. Colonel Palmer who had only about three hundred men, moved one company passing a certain

gap in sight of the enemy and round and through the same gap several times. While this was going on, General Stoneman was doing the same thing. Colonel Palmer had his glass looking on and said he saw one claybank horse come in sight a half dozen times. When night came on our men went into Asheville and that night camped where Battery Park Hotel now stands. About 10 o'clock that night we noticed all the enemy's campfires blaze up and in a short time they began to die down. We said "farewell General Stoneman." We moved from there to Hickory Nut Gap, where we met him again, but only the pickets exchanged a few shots. From there we went to Broad river and from there to Hendersonville, stopped there for the night and as the writer of this sketch was in ten miles of his home, it appeared to be a good time to visit it, so he borrowed a horse from a friend and went home. The enemy's account of this raid will be found in *103 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* pp. 31-33. On 10 March, 1865, the Sixty-second, Sixty-fourth and Sixty-ninth were under Colonel Palmer near Asheville and the three regiments reported a total of 488 present for duty.

My wife was living off from the Howard's Gap Road about one mile, so I spent the night with her and we were up early before light next morning to take breakfast at my father's, who lived on the road. When we came into the road we found it full of blue coats. What to do I could not tell. To turn back looked too suspicious, so I decided in my mind to go on to the house and on I went, my wife by my side, but just before we reached the house they arrested me. I was turned over to a guard who was exceedingly kind to me; he seemed to be sorry for me; he told me I would get a parole next morning. He put me on an old poor horse and we started for Hendersonville. I can not express my feelings as I went up town riding that horse following the Yankee army to the music of Yankee Doodle. My guard took me to Dr. T. A. Allen's and had Mrs. Allen to fix me a good dinner (which she knows exactly how to do) after which we took the State road for Asheville, camped that night where the Mills Gap road leaves the State road. We stopped a while before night. Colonel Palmer came out from Asheville under a flag

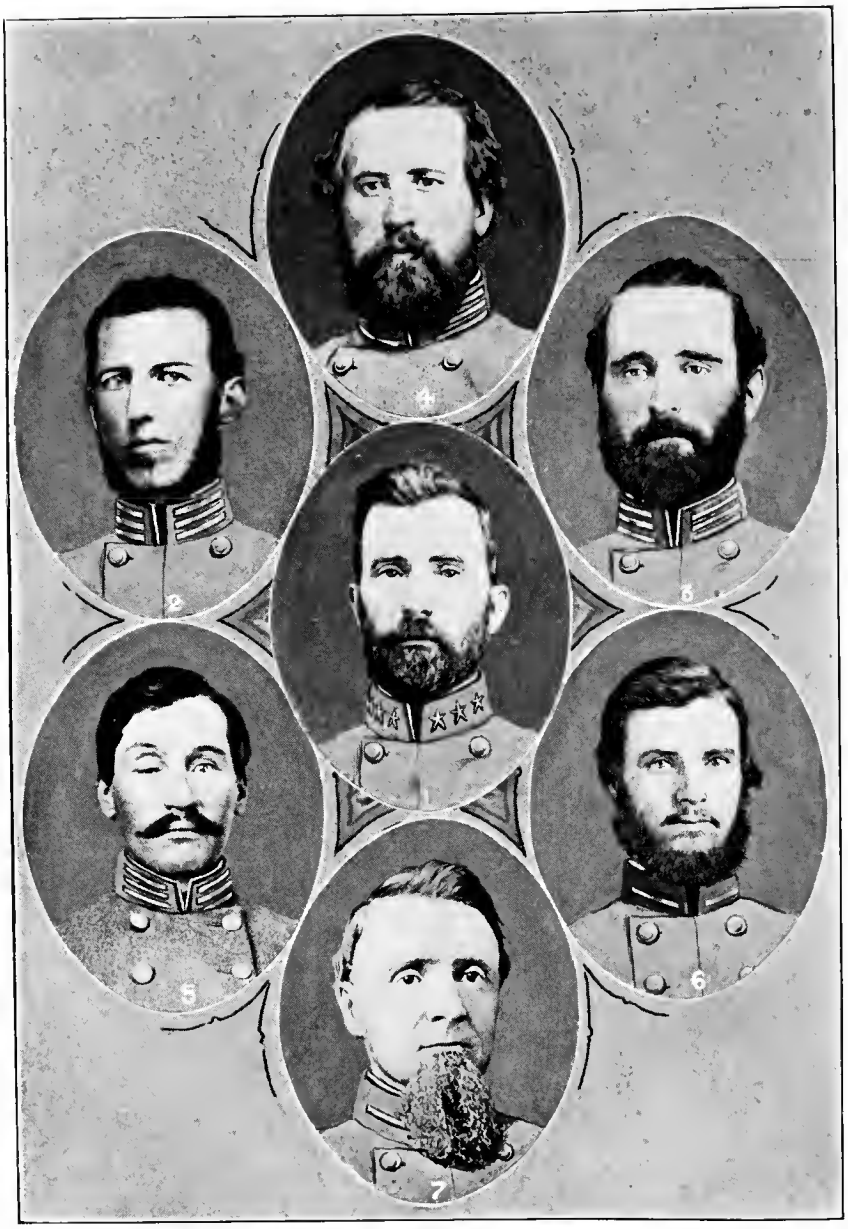
of truce and after he returned I heard the soldiers talking and from what was said they made me believe there would be no parole for me. I then made up my mind to take care of myself. They had two of their own men under guard for some misdemeanor. The man that guarded me all day said to me that if I preferred, he would keep me with their men and not put me with the soldiers they had captured that day. I told him that would just suit me. About 9 o'clock they made their bed and I retired with my shoes and clothes on. We were in a lane and they had all the fences on fire. I heard a conversation with the guard wanting each man to take a prisoner and sleep with him, but my gurd said no, so another guard was put on who took his seat near me and commenced to play with a negro boy who was asleep; I got up, walked through the crowd leaning to the dark side of the road and was soon out of sight without any alarm being raised. I went on the mountain side and stayed till morning and bid General Stoneman adieu, went home and so ended my part of the war. This was a few days after Lee's surrender, but we did not know of it. The other scouts all did good service. Colonel L. M. Allen did some valiant and daring service in the Hot Springs fight. No braver man ever met a foe.

So the sad end came. Those in prison and out of it—not dead of disease, frozen, starved or shot—as long as our flag was afloat, stood by it.

The glorious remnants of the Sixty-second, Sixty-fourth, Sixty-ninth and Eightieth after the broken truce at Asheville, quietly returned to their homes, with and without guns, feeling honestly, yet sadly, "We have done what we could."

B. T. MORRIS.

HENDERSON CO., N. C.,
30 May, 1901.



SIXTY-FIFTH REGIMENT—SIXTH CAVALRY.

1. George N. Folk, Colonel.
2. Martin V. Moore, Captain and A.Q.M.
3. Barton Robey Brown, Captain, Co A.
4. V S. Lusk, Captain, Co. I. (Formerly 5th Batt.) Prisoner, Johnson's Island, 1863–1865.
5. William B. Councill, Captain, Co. B.
6. Stephen J. Brown, 2d Lieut., Co. A.
7. Wiley P Thomas, 2d Lieut., Co. A.

SIXTY-FIFTH REGIMENT

(SIXTH CAVALRY.)

By CAPTAIN M. V MOORE, A. Q. M.

This regiment was organized in August, 1863, by the consolidation of two cavalry battalions, the Fifth commanded by Major A. H. Baird, and the Seventh Battalion commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Geo. N. Folk. These two battalions had rendered efficient services in East Tennessee and Kentucky. The command of the regiment was given to the senior officer, Lieutenant-Colonel Geo. N. Folk, whose commission as Colonel bore date 3 August, 1863. Colonel Folk had been captain of Company D in the famous Ninth North Carolina (First Cavalry), but resigned his position there with the view of raising a new regiment. On the organization of the new command, the Sixth Cavalry, a number of men and officers from his old company and elsewhere in the First Cavalry, sought and obtained transfers to the new command. Among the number were Captain B. R. Brown, who commanded Company A, Sixty-fifth (Sixth Cavalry), and who had been Lieutenant in Company D, of the Ninth Regiment. Lieutenant S. J Brown was transferred from the ranks of Company D, Ninth Regiment, and subsequently elected to a Lieutenancy in the Sixty-fifth. This writer, who was from the organization of the regiment, Private M. V Moore in Company D, of the Ninth (First Cavalry), had been elected to a Lieutenancy in Company E, of the Thirty-seventh North Carolina Infantry Regiment, a company which he had been largely instrumental in raising in Watauga county in 1861; but in the meantime was commissioned Captain and Assistant Quartermaster by the Secretary of War, and, on request of Colonel Folk, was assigned to duty under his old commander in the Sixty-fifth. Captain T. P Siler, of Company K, First Cavalry, was also given a Major's commission and

assigned to duty in the Sixty-fifth Regiment, but in consequence of wounds received in a battle in Maryland in September, 1862, being prevented from active duty he resigned and was succeeded by Major J. J. Spann. A number of privates from Company A, of the Ninth Regiment, were also transferred to the new regiment, these assigned chiefly to Captain Council's Company B, Sixty-fifth. Captain Council himself (a native of North Carolina) came as the commander of Company B from a South Carolina Regiment which had done valiant service in the armies of the Confederacy at Fort Sumter, Manassas, Chickamauga and elsewhere. Major J. J. Spann had resigned a position in the old United States army from a station on the Western frontier; and being commissioned Major by the Confederate Government, came to the Sixty-fifth. Major A. H. Baird, of the Fifth Battalion, was promoted Lieutenant-Colonel of the new regiment.

In the official roster of the North Carolina troops edited by Major J W Moore—a work confessedly defective— there occur many errors, wrong figures and repetitions, especially about the Sixty-fifth Regiment. These transfers from other commands to this regiment as well as the confusion incident to consolidations of the two battalions into the new regiment, and the subsequent reorganizations, have been a fruitful source of many of these errors.

One company appears to have been counted twice, once as B, and then again as F, Captain W P Moore. This error and others must be explained through the confusion incident to consolidations and reorganizations, and in the various changes in the letter designations of the different companies which went from the two battalions into the one regiment. The distinctive organizations of three companies, those originally commanded by Captains Lusk, English and Gillespie, almost entirely were broken up and absorbed by other companies, after the capture of two of these officers by the enemy in 1862. The names of many of the men captured were finally dropped from the rolls. It is due to the memory of these men for me to state that my connection with the command began at a date subsequent to their capture in battle; and I have been unable up to this writing

to obtain from any of the survivors the proper data necessary for representing them fully in this history.

Captain J S. Folk's command was originally an artillery company composed largely of men and officers from Tennessee and Virginia. Captain Folk himself was a Virginian, and never at any time a resident of North Carolina. In the final reorganization of the regiment, his company, merged into a cavalry command, received many accessions in men and officers from the broken ranks of the companies above referred to, this after it had become known that General Grant's orders forbidding further exchange of prisoners was permanent.

In the final reorganization and lettering of the companies of the Sixty-fifth regiment they appeared in the following order:

	Men.	Officers.	Total.
Co. A—Capt. B. R. Brown,	89	4	93
Co. B—Capt. W B. Council,	89	4	93
Co. C—Capt. James Cansler, formerly Capt. Joseph Dobson.	27	2	29
Co. D— apt. J. W Cash,	56	3	59
Co. E—Capt W E. McDowell, formerly Capt. J W Siler,	68	3	71
Co. F—Capt. W P Moore,	46	4	50
Co. G—Capt. J. S. Folk, estimated.	50	3	53
Co. H—Capt. Junius C. Tate, estimated,	55	3	58
Co. I —Capt. V S. Lusk,	13	1	14

In Moore's Roster, Captain Brown's company is given as M; Captain Council's company is L; Captain Dobson's C; Captain Cash's is E; Captain Siler's is A; Captain Moore's appears as both B and F Captain Gillespie appears there as commanding Company D; and Captain English as Company K. Captain Lusk was never with the regiment after its organization. I trust that a history of the operations of his battalion previous to the consolidation will appear from the pen of some one competent to impart justice to the soldiers. What has been said in this sketch in regard to the errors of other reports must not be regarded as the inspiration of a censorious spirit. Major Moore, in the various foot notes and elsewhere in his work, has confessed to his inability to impart clearness and the fullest truth at all times to his subject, and especially in regard to the facts pertaining to the

Sixty-fifth Regiment. Historic truth should ever be held sacred.

Great injustice has been done to the valor of the men who fought for four years the vast overwhelming odds sent to subdue the South. Many erroneous reports have been given to the world in regard to the number of men placed in the field by the Confederacy Many so-called "authorities" maintaining, with much obstinacy, that the forces exceeded a million of men against the three millions of the Federal troops engaged in the war against our people.

IN EAST TENNESSEE.

The Fifth and Seventh Battalions before, and after this consolidation the Sixty-fifth Regiment, performed duty under the military commander of the Department of East Tennessee. The troops were required to assist local authorities in the enforcement of the conscription acts of the Confederate Congress; and also to prevent and quell insurrections among the disaffected and turbulent elements in that department. It was a sore and thankless task; and in its discharge were begotten feuds and animosities not yet entirely effaced from the minds and memories of the families of those who fell victims on either side there. In February, 1863, the two battalions were at Big Creek Gap and Greenville, Tenn. In April, 1863, they were on outpost duty in Kentucky in the brigade commanded by Colonel John S. Scott, and 31 July, 1863, at Bell's Bridge under General J W Frazer.

No troops ever had more bitter and disagreeable duties than were at times imposed upon the men and officers of this command in East Tennessee. One of the first fatal conflicts after the organization came on Christmas day, 1862, at a point on Watauga river, near Dugger's Ferry, in Carter County, Tennessee. A few days before, some citizens of North Carolina had been waylaid and robbed near by, by a maranding band who informed their victims that the troops of the regiment were to be secretly attacked soon by the same band. The attack came from men concealed in ambush on the bluffs above the river bank while the column was on its march. A sharp fight ensued which resulted in the killing of one sol-

dier from the regiment and the wounding of others. A number of bushwhackers were killed outright and several captured. Two of the latter were tried and condemned to death by a court-martial. They were hanged promptly to the most convenient tree near the spot where they were captured. For the execution of these men, some five or six of the officers of the Sixty-fifth regiment were, after the surrender of the Confederate armies, indicted in the State courts of Tennessee on the charge of murder; and for several years afterward, these gentlemen had to fight not only the criminal prosecutions, but other suits were filed against them for damages claimed by the families of the bushwhackers executed.

There were numerous other conflicts with the disaffected East Tennesseeans during the winter of 1862 and spring months of 1863, while the two battalions remained on duty in that country; but none of such a serious character as the one just referred to.

For the subsequent history of the movements and actions of the command, I am indebted to material furnished me by two of the leading officers of the line in the regiment, officers who had more and better opportunities for seeing in person the trying conflicts of the men than the writer, who, as a "quartermaster," is not generally supposed to have been in the *quorum pars* of the fighting corps. The historic narrative which follows is mainly from the pens of Captains B. R. Brown and W E. McDowell. Captain Brown writes:

IN KENTUCKY.

"About 1 May, 1863, we were ordered to Knoxville, Tenn., and thence to Kentucky, where we joined Brigadier-General Pegram on the Cumberland river, near Mill Spring, and where we at once encountered the enemy's cavalry under General Wolford, in our first appearance there on the picket lines, and where Captain Gillespie and about fourteen of his men were captured. We lost three men also at Steubenville, where Colonel Goode, of the Tenth Confederate Cavalry, came to our assistance."

After some months of picket duties on the Kentucky frontier, and in operation against the enemy's raiding expedi-

tions, the command went into quarters at Big Creek Gap, Tenn., and was engaged in picketing along the outposts along the line of the Cumberland river. The enemy threw a force between us and Knoxville, scattering our support (mainly Tenth Confederate); but the Sixty-fifth North Carolina Regiment succeeded in cutting its way through the Cumberland mountains, and reached Knoxville, Tenn., after the evacuation of that city by the Confederate infantry. In an artillery attack upon the command at Loudon the regiment suffered. The command moved down the Tennessee river to the support of Bragg in front of Chattanooga. On 31 August, 1863, the Sixty-fifth Regiment belonged to Davidson's Brigade, Pegram's Division in Forrest's Corps, *51st Vol. Official Records Union and Confederate Armies*, p. 20. On 30 November, 1863, the regiment is reported in Harrison's Brigade, Wharton's Division in Cavalry Corps commanded by General W T. Martin. *54 Vol. Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 453.

IN GEORGIA.

At Braysville, Ga., it met the enemy, capturing a company of the First Kentucky Infantry (Federal) in the advance of General Crittenden's Corps. In the action a portion of Hart's Georgia Cavalry participated. We in this affair had a number of men wounded. Soon after another engagement with the enemy was had, but without important result. Captain Brown continues:

"On the night of 17 September, 1863, Company A was detached, and ordered to follow a portion of Howell's battery. At daylight we crossed the Chickamauga at Reed's Ford, reporting there to General Forrest. The remainder of the regiment had also been moved forward in the same direction; and before sunrise we were all engaged with the enemy at close range in conflicts which lasted several hours. In the meantime the woods between the two lines of battle caught on fire and prevented any advance from either side. Our command was then withdrawn and placed on duty at Alexander's Bridge on the Chickamauga, where we remained during the remainder of the great battle."

CHICKAMAUGA.

In the action of Saturday in the opening of the battle of Chickamauga we lost a number of valuable men and officers killed and wounded. Captain Brown continues: "After this battle the command was sent with other troops in Dibbrell's Brigade with Colonel Morrison, of the First Georgia Cavalry, to the support of Longstreet at Knoxville. When near Philadelphia advance squadrons of the regiment were charged by a brigade of Federal cavalry by which we suffered a heavy loss. A portion of the command also encountered, and for a while successfully resisted the advance of Federal General Wilder's Brigade at a church near Mouse creek. In this action we were assisted by Georgia troops of Rucker's Legion. The enemy's cavalry, however, advanced in force and drove us from our position, inflicting upon us additional serious loss."

In these two engagements the organization of the regiment was seriously impaired. Many of the men dispersed by the onslaught of the Federal cavalry, and in the loss of their horses, and being also practically in the enemy's country, made their way as best they could to their nearby homes in North Carolina. In April, 1864, the regiment was in Harrison's Brigade, Hume's Division, Wheeler's Cavalry Corps, Army of Tennessee. 74 *Vol. Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 650. Soon thereafter, the regiment was in rendezvous camp near Asheville, N. C., to recruit, where orders were received for the whole command to take up line of march, and report for duty to the officer commanding the Department of Eastern North Carolina at Kinston, N. C.

IN EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA.

Arriving at Kinston early in the spring of 1864, the regiment began picketing the outposts in front of New Bern and other points on the coast of North Carolina covering a line about fifty miles long. During the time we had various engagements with bodies of the enemy. One of these conflicts was at Heath's mills, where we captured a number of the Federals. Colonel Folk was cut off from the command and captured in a night attack at this place. In this attack Lieu-

tenants Kilpatrick and Dehart were killed; two brave officers falling at the post of duty. Colonel Folk was released after a few weeks' confinement in one of the Northern prisons, and he rejoined his command at Kinston.

On 20 September, 1864, seven gallant men of this regiment entered the enemy's lines at Deep Gully, near New Bern, routed a company of Federal cavalry, capturing twelve horses with accoutrements and arms, and afterwards suppressed a picket post, killing one and capturing five men, and all without loss to themselves. Their names were Sergeant James Greaver, Privates Murray Brown, Patterson Moss, Hiram Gregg, Thomas Sullivan, John Houston and William Johnson.

The most important of the engagements in Eastern North Carolina was the assault upon and capture of Fort Croatan, near New Bern, and the bringing away of a number of the enemy's guns and the garrison which consisted of Lieutenant Whiting and a company of Rhode Island troops. Another gallant exploit in which the men of the regiment from companies A (Brown) and F (Moore) participated was in the capture and destruction of the Federal gunboat "Albemarle," on the Roanoke river. In the fall of 1864 the two companies of Brown and Pitt were stationed at Williamston, together with Lee's (Alabama) battery and several companies of the Fiftieth Regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel John C. Vanhook, to guard against an advance of the enemy from Washington or Plymouth. Later the Fiftieth were replaced by four companies of the Seventieth North Carolina (First Junior Reserves) under Major Walter Clark, who took command of the post, including the cavalry and artillery. Major Clark was a mere boy of 17 or 18, but he had the bearing and command of a born soldier and displayed the executive talent which he has since shown. The enemy made many attacks, especially at Foster's Mills and Gardner's bridge, but were always driven back.

When the Junior Reserves were called off to meet the enemy at Belfield, Va., the enemy came up from below and a sharp fight between the two companies of cavalry with Lee's Battery and the enemy took place 11 December at Spring

Green, which was very creditable to our forces. Our small force, faced by over 1,000 of the enemy, fell back on the 12th to Butler's bridge near Hamilton, where they were reinforced by four companies under Lieutenant-Colonel Broadfoot, of the Seventieth hurried back from Tarboro, and the Sixty-eighth. Though several hundred of the enemy, piloted by a traitor, crossed the stream below and fired upon us in our rear during the night, they were driven back with small loss to us except the capture of Colonel Hinton and his Adjutant of the Sixty-eighth.

The Sixty-fifth, it may be said, finally covered the retreat of the Confederates from Eastern North Carolina in the advance of Schofield from New Bern. It had been assigned to Dearing's Brigade in the Army of Northern Virginia, but never joined it, being detained by events in North Carolina. On 10 February, 1865, Companies A and F, under command of Captain Barton F Brown, were still on the Roanoke and the rest of the regiment under Major J. J Spann was below Kinston, according to the Official Reports of that date published by the United States Government. On 17 March, 1865, they are reported as being at Goldsboro and on 25 March, after the battle of Bentonville, they were ordered by Gen. Bragg to scout on the Cape Fear in rear of the Federal army, but on protest of Gen. Hampton, this order was revoked. *Vol. 100 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* pp. 691-693. The regiment was then attached to Butler's Cavalry Division and aided to cover the historic retreat of Johnston's army as it fell back from Raleigh to Greensboro and until the final surrender at the latter place. The men disbanded when near Salisbury. The survivors—about 300—wending their way home as best they could afoot and on their half famished horses.

I should like to speak fully of the personnel of this regiment, if the limits of the space assigned me permitted expression. But when we come to consider the principle of patriotism which prompted the organization of the North Carolina soldiery, I am loath to make attempt at any separation of the elements, officers and men. To the heroism and devotion of the private soldiers of North Carolina is largely due the im-

mortal honors achieved by her sons on the many hard fought fields of the war. I place the valor and courage of the humblest private who did his duty on the highest plane beside those whose genius directed. In the bitter and long struggle the men always fought at a disadvantage; they were greatly outnumbered; and they were never placed on an equal footing with their enemies in points of equipment and resources. These facts we all knew. And when the victor lays claim for equal honors in valor in the struggle, we can simply point him to the official records which show that it required three millions of the Federals—among whom were more than five hundred thousand of our own Southern people—and more than six hundred thousand men enlisting from foreign lands —five to one in all—to vanquish in battle and fire, the armies of the Confederacy. These armies never reached six hundred and sixty thousand soldiers, all told, enlistment and conscriptions, from beginning to the end of the war.

North Carolina has her share of the glory, as well as her part in the great overwhelming sorrows of that long struggle. That glory was well achieved as we all know, as much through the heroism of the private, as through the wisdom of her many justly distinguished officers. And hence, I feel that it is half wrong in any writer who refers to one without fully honoring the other, yet as the history of the world is largely the history of a few great leading individuals of genius and strong dominating characters, I must crave pardon of my old comrades of the Sixty-fifth if I mention only a few of the prominent officials of the command. I trust that these comrades also will gladly welcome the brief references to those whom I have space for naming. I would have gladly mentioned others; but as I have been so long separated from North Carolina and her immediate sons; and as some of my old comrades to whom I have appealed for aid in refreshing and strengthening the memory have failed to respond to my inquiries, I shall have to confine my notices to the few of whom I have personal knowledge at this writing.

Colonel George N. Folk, the commander of the regiment, has been so long and so well and favorably known to the people of North Carolina as one of her most eminent lawyers,

that it is unnecessary for me to refer to him at length here. He is a native of Virginia, but when quite a young man, just admitted to the bar, sought his fortunes in Watauga county of this State. He was a representative of that county in the State Legislature at the outbreak of the war. After the war lived in Caldwell county in the enjoyment of a lucrative law practice.

Lieutenant-Colonel A. H. Baird is a Buncombe County man, since removed to Texas, related to the late Senator Vance. He is a man who has always stood high as the impersonation of a lofty chivalry, courage and patriotism.

Major J J Spann is a successful farmer living near Hendersonville. He has always been a genial, conscientious, Christian gentleman. Major Siler died recently at his home in Macon county, N C., a noble whole-souled man without fear and without reproach. The adjutant of the regiment was Lieutenant J. H. Merrimon, since the war a prominent lawyer at Asheville, honored also by judicial honors in his district. The Quartermaster of the regiment was the present writer, Captain M. V Moore, a native Tennesseean, whose present home is Auburn, Ala. After the war he engaged for several years in business in Lenoir, N. C. Later he was on the editorial staff of the Atlanta *Constitution,* and a contributor also to numerous magazines and other papers.

The Surgeon of the regiment was Dr. Thos. A. Houston, (a relative of General Sam Houston, of Texas), of Tennessee.

The Assistant Surgeon was Dr. Leon F. Sensabaugh, a talented gentleman, who died soon after the war. His home was Franklin, Macon county, N. C.

Another Assistant Surgeon was Dr. Robert C. Rhea, of Tennessee. His home, Shown's X Roads, was in that State.

Rev Mr. Porter, a Presbyterian from Charleston, S. C., was Chaplain. I am not familiar with his history.

Captain Brown, of Company A, is a Tennesseean, a successful farmer and stock raiser near Shown's X Roads, Johnston county. He is a knightly gentleman and was a beau ideal among the cavalrymen—brave, dashing, quick and wise.

Captain Council, of Company B, lives at his home in

Boone, N. C., a useful and much beloved physician. He has been in the State Legislature several times.

Captain Dobson, of Company C, died some years ago at his home in Macon county—a noble, high-toned, broad-minded gentleman of the old school. Captain Causler, his successor, has been sheriff of his county a number of years since the war—a very popular bachelor.

Captain Gash, a gallant and spirited young officer, of a splendid impulse and purpose, went west and died in Texas soon after the war.

Captain Siler, an amiable friend and a brave soldier, has also recently died. His successor, Captain McDowell, lives on his farm in Macon county, a quiet conservative citizen of many good parts, to whom I am indebted for much information of historic value in this sketch.

Captain Moore, I learn, is a farmer living near Hayesville, N. C., from which place most of his men were enlisted. He has always been highly and justly popular among those who knew the brave and gentle "Irishman."

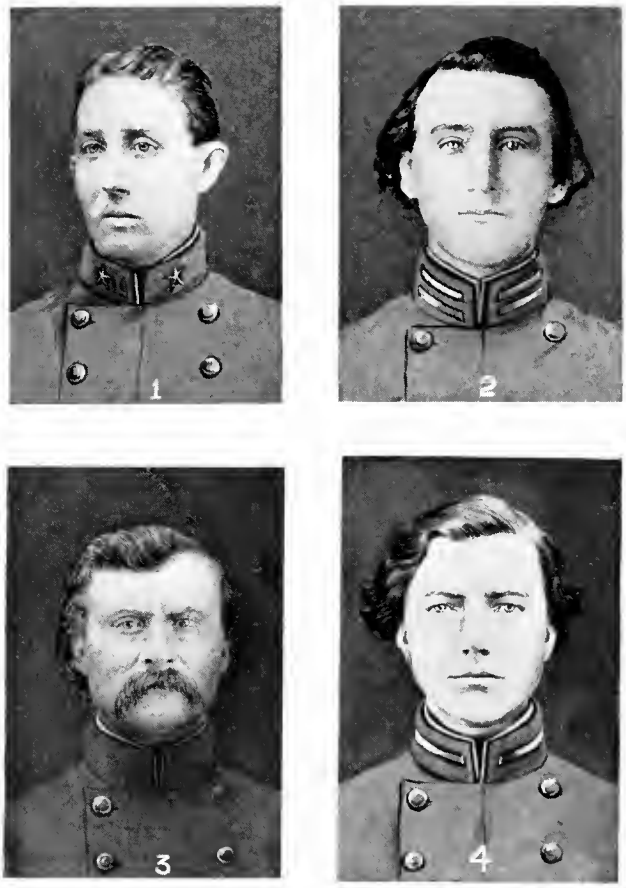
Captain Folk married and settled soon after the war in Sumpter county, S. C., where he has recently died, greatly beloved by all who knew him.

Captain Tate died soon after the war in Burke county—a noble type of gentleman, a sterling representative of one of the best families in the State.

I am unacquainted with the history of the other Captains. It would have given me pleasure to name such of the minor officers and privates whose heroic careers merit the pages of fame.

M. V MOORE.

AUBURN, ALA.,
26 April, 1897.



SIXTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. D. S. Davis, Major.
2. John E. Lynch, 1st Lieut., Co. A (Killed at Petersburg.)
3. R. B. Carrington, Private, Co. A
4. Chas. H. Penney, 2d Lieut., Co. B.

SIXTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

By GEO. M. ROSE, Adjutant.

The Sixty-sixth Regiment of North Carolina Troops was organized at Kinston, N C., in August, 1863, by General James G. Martin, at that time commanding the District of North Carolina, by combining the Eighth Battalion of Partisan Rangers, consisting of six companies, which had done faithful and gallant service in the eastern part of the State as an independent command under Major J. H. Nethercutt, and which had for more than a year been of great service to the army in that portion of North Carolina, doing scouting and outpost service, almost every man in the battalion being from that section of the State and perfectly familiar with the character of the country and the positions occupied by the enemy, and the Fourth Battalion of four companies which had been doing service as bridge guards and, also, doing scouting service under the command of Major Clement G. Wright, of Cumberland county.

Upon the organization of these ten companies into the Sixty-sixth Regiment, A. Duncan Moore, who commanded a battery of light infantry from Wilmington, then stationed at or near Kinston, was made its Colonel. Colonel Moore was a brilliant young officer who had been at the West Point Military Academy and was an officer of remarkable appearance and soldierly bearing. J H. Nethercutt was made Lieutenant-Colonel, and Clement G. Wright was appointed Major of the Regiment. W G. Williams Adjutant and J. H. Kinyoun, Surgeon.

Company A—Was largely from Orange county, and was commanded by Joseph W Latta, Captain; Albert C. Faucett, First Lieutenant; James G. Latta and J C. Lynch, Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY B—Was mostly from the counties of Nash and Franklin, and at the time of the organization of the regiment W S. Mitchell was its Captain; W A. Moore, First Lieutenant; D. N Sills and J B. Bunting, Jr., Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY C—Captain, David S. Davis; First Lieutenant, R. E. Davis; Second Lieutenants, James Williams, Jr., and Jesse Holland. This company was from the counties of Wayne and Lenoir.

COMPANY D.—W T. Robinson, Captain; T. H. Kerney, First Lieutenant; W A. W Askew and Lewis Bynum, Second Lieutenants. This company was from the counties of Jones and Lenoir.

COMPANY E—Steven S. Quinnerly, Captain; I. K. Witherington, First Lieutenant; W M. Dennis and John Hall, Second Lieutenants. This company was from the counties of Lenoir and Carteret.

COMPANY F—Willis J. Raspberry, Captain; Chris. D. Foy, First Lieutenant; Frank Foy and S. Sidney Carter, Second Lieutenants. This company was from Jones and Lenoir.

COMPANY G—E. B. Blackmer, Captain; W J. Williams, First Lieutenant; W C. Brandon and J W. Walker, Second Lieutenants. This company was from Lenoir county, largely.

COMPANY H.—James G. Davis, Captain; Willis W Cherry, First Lieutenant; Robert J Swinson and Edward Williamson, Second Lieutenants. This company was from Duplin and Onslow counties.

COMPANY I—Jesse P Williams, Captain; Josiah W Smith, First Lieutenant; Silas W Venters and Luby Harper, Second Lieutenants. This company was largely from Wayne, Onslow and Jones counties.

COMPANY K—John P Sykes, Captain; Alvin Bagley, First Lieutenant; D. J. Knowles, Second Lieutenant. This company was largely from Wayne and New Hanover counties.

The appointment of Colonel Moore caused, at the time, some friction among the officers, as he was unknown to all

of them, but he had not been long in the regiment before they recognized him as a good soldier, a fine disciplinarian and as brave an officer as ever fought for the cause of his country, and after they had witnessed his conspicuous courage, before his death in Virginia shortly afterwards, he became the idol of his regiment.

IN EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA.

Shortly after its organization, the Regiment was ordered to Wilmington, where it remained some time around the city, doing light picket duty and perfecting the officers and men in drill, and in fitting them for the arduous and dangerous duties which they were very soon to assume.

In the latter part of March, 1864, the Regiment was ordered to Weldon and from there to Plymouth; remaining at the latter place about two or three weeks. It was then ordered to Tarboro, by way of Washington, and thence to Virginia, reaching Petersburg about 12 May, 1864, and was immediately assigned to picket duty beyond that City, and on 13 and 15 May it was first exposed, as a Regiment, to fire, at Port Walthal Junction, where the Regiment, or part thereof, was sent forward to dislodge one or two pieces of artillery which was doing effective service for the enemy upon our lines. The Regiment acted gallantly in its first "baptism of fire" as an organized regiment. That portion of it which had belonged to Nethercutt's Rangers had long since heard the sound of "shot and shell" and knew the dangers of a soldier's life, but this was the first occasion on which the regiment, as such, had taken part in battle, and its gallantry was conspicuous and favorably commented upon by commanding officers.

PETERSBURG.

Upon its arrival at Petersburg, it was assigned to Kirkland's Brigade, Hoke's Division, and ever afterwards formed a part of the division so long commanded by that heroic soldier and remained a part of his division until the final roll was called.

After this fight, the regiment was ordered back to Peters-

burg, and the next day took part in the engagement at Bermuda Hundreds, on the north side of the James. Here it was engaged through three days with heavy skirmishing with the enemy; the third day of which the enemy was driven to its fortifications, with heavy loss in killed and wounded. The loss to the regiment was also heavy. Having repulsed the force with which it was engaged, temporary fortifications were then thrown up, the men using bayonets, tin plates and anything available and which they could put to immediate use. The enemy soon advanced again in heavy force and the charge made by them proved little better than a slaughter pen for them. Lieutenant Davis, of Company C, was disabled while assisting in getting a piece of artillery into position, and was so badly wounded that he was never afterwards able to return to the service.

The regiment remained here and near Bermuda Hundreds until about 1 June, picketing and skirmishing almost every day, Hoke's Division having been ordered to reinforce Lee's army, which had just engaged in the battles of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, it marched to form this junction, and on 1 June reached the bloody field of Cold Harbor in time to take a very memorable part in that battle. On the first day of that fight, the enemy charged our front with three columns, but in a few moments the ground was covered with their dead and wounded, and the few survivors falling back to the woods, could not be forced to the front any more on that day.

In the series of fights which ended on 3 June, Colonel A. D. Moore was mortally wounded by a ball striking him in the neck and he died in a very few minutes thereafter. The writer of this sketch did not have the pleasure of knowing Colonel Moore personally, as he was not assigned to the regiment until after he had given up his life to the cause, but so long as he remained with the regiment, and he did so until it was finally disbanded, the memory of his heroic courage was ever present to the officers and men of his command, and oftimes has he heard them comment upon his gallantry and the soldierly qualities he had always exhibited the short time it was given him to command the regiment.

PROMOTIONS.

Upon his death, Lieutenant-Colonel J H. Nethercutt became Colonel of the regiment; Clement G. Wright, Lieutenant-Colonel; and David S. Davis, Captain of Company C, was promoted to Major, their commissions bearing date 3 June, 1864, the day of the memorable battle of Second Cold Harbor.

The regiment, with Hoke's Division, remained in the neighborhood of the battlefield some ten or twelve days, exposed to the sharpshooters and mortar shells of the enemy, but on the 14th was ordered with the rest of Hoke's Division back to Petersburg. The regiment arrived there two days afterwards, about the 16th, after a hurried march to get ahead of the enemy. When the division reached Petersburg, late at night, it found the army of General Grant had gotten in possession of the outer works before the division could get there; but we immediately went to work and established another line as best we could in the dark.

16 MAY, 1864.

The next morning the enemy came on in force; our pickets were driven in, and the line assaulted and hardly pressed. The assault on the right wing was made in such force and pressed so far back that it was necessary for a part of the line to retire and a break was made, but the division was ordered to assist in driving the enemy out of the breach which had been made, and it was quickly done and the line re-established. Here the troops entrenched themselves and remained for some considerable time, exposed to hardships and privations common at that time to the whole army in front of Petersburg. The troops virtually lived under ground, and it was dangerous for a person's head at any time to be exposed, so near together were the two lines, in some places hardly more than a hundred yards apart. All cooking had to be done in the rear or in trenches; and all rations brought to the officers from their messes had to be brought in the night time. The soldiers frequently, as a matter of amusement, would place their hats on the end of their bayonets or ramrods and raise them a little above the top of the ground and

in a few minutes they would be perforated with bullets from the Yankee sharpshooters; and woe to the man who exposed himself within range or within sight of one of those sharpshooters. The picket lines of the two armies were within speaking distance of each other, and frequent conversations were had between them when the officers would permit it to be done; and at all times, both day and night, solid shot or mortar shells fell in the midst of our line.

Here both armies settled for the rest of the summer, and the regiment remained on Mortar Hill and near the memorable crater, until the latter part of August, when it was moved to the right of Petersburg, where it remained until about 29 or 30 September, when Hoke's Division took up its line of march back to Richmond and down the river to take part in the memorable fight of Fort Harrison. The brigade to which the Sixty-sixth was attached was not actually engaged in that fight, but remained in supporting distance and was ready, if it had been ordered so to do, to take part in the assault.

Upon the resignation of W. G. Williams, who was Adjutant of the regiment up to that time, the writer, who had been a cadet at the Virginia Military Institute, and who had recently been appointed First Lieutenant in the regular Confederate Army, was assigned to duty as Adjutant of this regiment. The facts given above were related to him by the officers with whom he was associated ever afterwards in the regiment until the surrender at or near High Point. It is to be regretted that some one who was familiar with the gallant part the regiment took up to that time in the battles around Petersburg and Richmond, had not been selected to do full justice to the gallant officers and men of this regiment—than whom there were no better in the Confederate Army. He has no personal knowledge, and has only gathered these dates and facts from the records or traditions in the regiment at the time of his assignment to it, and from facts gathered since he was called upon to write a sketch of this regiment. He joined the troops while in winter quarters on the Darbytown road in September, 1864, and from that day until 2 May, 1865, was with the command the whole time, not being absent a single day, and the facts given hereafter in the

sketch are of his own knowledge, and the matters are known to him.

NORTH OF THE JAMES.

Hoke's Division after the battle of Fort Harrison, was kept on the north side of the James, between what is known as the Darbytown and the Charles City roads, and was left there for the purpose of watching the movements of Grant on that side of the river and for the purpose of holding a considerable part of his command there, and preventing it from taking part in the siege of Petersburg. It was assigned to the work of throwing up breastworks, strengthening the approaches, occasionally making demonstrations upon the enemy and repelling assaults upon our line, though no very serious action took place while occupying this position. The division was composed of the brigades of Colquitt, Clingman, Haygood and Kirkland, the Sixty-sixth being part of Kirkland's Brigade.

New and comfortable winter quarters had been built; the line had been greatly strengthened; abatis had been placed in front of the breastworks, and the men were not only ready, but anxious for an attack to be made upon them. Several demonstrations were made and easily and gallantly repulsed.

While occupying these lines in November, 1864, word frequently came that our division was to be ordered to North Carolina. Whenever it became the duty, as was often the case, of the officers to wake up the men at the sound of the long roll in the night time and an order was given to prepare rations for three days, word would be given out along the line that we were going to North Carolina. A shout along the whole line would be raised and Gaston's grand old song, "The Old North State," could be heard from every North Carolina mouth in that division. On more than one occasion, however, instead of going to North Carolina as a division, the order was given to "Unsling knapsacks and go over the breastworks" upon some demonstration, or to engage in some skirmish to direct Grant's attention in that direction.

On 27 October, or about that time, a strong demonstration was made against us, and with a shout and a cheer the enemy

were easily repulsed, leaving a large number of dead and wounded in our front, and not a man in our whole line hurt.

RETURN TO NORTH CAROLINA.

On 22 December, however, an order came in the night time arousing the division for the purpose, really, this time, of going to North Carolina, Hoke's Division having been ordered to Wilmington.

The Sixty-sixth Regiment broke camp on the morning of 22 December, marched to Richmond and crossed the river to Manchester where it remained several hours in the snow and sleet waiting for transportation to Danville. We were placed on and in box cars and flat cars, and the train made its way slowly from Richmond to Danville amid snow, sleet and rain, and the severest bitter cold we had ever experienced. There was no opportunity to have fires, no way to keep ourselves warm and the train worked its way along, the men frequently having to get off and run alongside of it to keep themselves warm, and to fill the tender with water, by buckets, from the mud holes on the side of the track, and to gather wood to keep the fire in the engine burning. In this way we reached Danville about 23 December, and made our way to Greensboro with such transportation as we could get and there took the train for Wilmington. The Colonel of the regiment noting the suffering of his men, telegraphed to the Governor at Raleigh that it was necessary that some stimulant should be furnished his troops for them to stand the bitter cold, and when the regiment reached the city of Raleigh, it found on the old depot a barrel of corn, persimmon or some other sort of "juice" ready for their consumption. It also found that the Legislature of North Carolina had just adjourned, and some of the members were at the depot waiting for transportation home and were willing to take any means of conveyance that was furnished them. The soldiers very soon left nothing in the barrel but "an empty sound," and a more jolly crowd from there to Goldsboro, along with the members of the Legislature, was never seen in North Carolina, I expect, before nor since. The "Solons" did not seem to appreciate their surroundings, and the men had their fun with

them. On reaching Goldsboro the train was boarded for Wilmington, and all along the line from Goldsboro to Wilmington, especially at Magnolia and Mt. Olive, the ladies hearing of our coming, had such provisions as they could spare from their scanty store to give to the regiment as it passed by, the Sixty-sixth being on the foremost train and getting the best share of all that was prepared for us.

WILMINGTON.

Our regiment reached Wilmington during the night of the 24th, and on the morning of the 25th, Christmas day, took up its weary march along the sandy road below Wilmington in the direction of Sugar Loaf Hill. As it went along and drew nearer and nearer to Fort Fisher, the sound of the shelling from the gunboats assembled there could be more and more distinctly heard, and as we reached a point just below Sugar Loaf Hill and near where "Carolina Beach" now is, the shelling from the gunboats became terrific, but as it was impossible to land troops with transports and keep up the shelling at the same time, we were very soon engaged in quite a strong skirmish with those of the enemy who had landed and were about to land and they were soon driven back. Immediately after this first shelling was over, the division commenced to build a line of breastworks from the top of Sugar Loaf Hill diagonally across the strip of land between it and the ocean and in the direction of a battery which was located on the beach.

Here we remained for some days, throwing up the fortifications which we made strong and, to us, seemed impregnable for any land attack that could be made by land forces; but we were not long allowed to remain. General Bragg having been assigned to the command in that locality, we were ordered back to Wilmington and went into camp a mile or two east of Wilmington for the purpose of holding a grand review.

WHY FORT FISHER FELL.

We remained in that camp some days, and while on review the enemy again made his appearance in front of Fort

Fisher; this time not in command of "Beast Butler," but General Terry. We were ordered back to our old line, but before we were able to make the weary march from Wilmington down, the enemy had succeeded in making a lodgment upon the shore, and had thrown up a line of breast works which General Hoke considered it was impracticable for his men to attack, as his division would be exposed to an enfilade fire from the enemy's gunboats. It has always been the opinion of most of the officers connected with Hoke's Division, so far as I have been able to ascertain those opinions, that if his division had been allowed to remain at Sugar Loaf and not have been carried to Wilmington for the purposes of review, that the troops of the enemy could never have made a landing and Fort Fisher would never have fallen into their hands. It is well known that it fell by reason of the land attack and not by reason of the fire from the gunboats. If Hoke's division had been where, it seemed to the officers, it ought to have been, this landing of troops could never have been made and there never would have been a land attack upon Fort Fisher. It is useless, however, to speculate upon what might have been and what might not have been, under such circumstances. General Sherman was going in the direction of the centre of North Carolina and if he had kept on his march, his army would have been in the rear of Fisher and it would necessarily have been abandoned any way, but we would have been saved the loss of the gallant soldiers who met their death at Fisher and would have been spared the humiliation of having had that fort, even after a gallant defence, taken from us.

On the night after its fall, the scene was brilliant; rockets and roman candles were thrown in every direction from the gunboats in its front, and the soldiers of Hoke's Division had to grind their teeth and bear the humiliation of not having "been there" to prevent the fall of Fisher, and to listen in silence to the shouts and huzzas of the enemy over their victory.

The division, after the fall of Fort Fisher, remained on the Sugar Loaf lines, strengthening the same, living amidst sand and dust and on unsifted corn meal and spoiled Nassau bacon until life became almost unendurable, but the spirit of the

troops never flagged; they were always willing to do their full duty, and always glad to see the enemy in their front. Almost every day there would be fighting upon the skirmish line; and sometime in February, I do not now know the date, an attack in considerable force was made upon us by a negro regiment in command of white officers. The fact of seeing those negro troops in front of us exasperated the men and they fought with great gallantry and easily repulsed the attack made upon us. While here, almost every day the gunboats of the enemy were shelling our line, and we could see the shells about the size of the hoop of a barrel, as they left the mouth of the cannon on the gunboat and came bouncing over the water toward our lines. The men exposed themselves frequently in claiming the parts of the shells when they had burst, so as to make rings and other ornaments out of the brass parts connected therewith. As soon as the missile burst you would see men running in every direction toward the place for the purpose of finding the broken parts. We here buried ourselves literally under the ground, and the shelling had little or no effect upon us.

About 18 February the division received orders to move back to Wilmington. This we did, and occupied for a day or so a line much nearer to Wilmington—the breastworks of which can now be seen on riding from Wilmington to the beach on the Seacoast Railroad. About the 21st or 22d, the regiment marched to Wilmington, disheartened and dispirited because we were falling back and leaving our "City by the Sea" unprotected and unguarded.

RETREAT FROM WILMINGTON.

The enemy were rapidly pressing us, and we fell back across the North East river over a pontoon bridge below the railroad bridge, and had scarcely gotten a skirmish line out before the enemy appeared upon the opposite side of the river. The main part of the division had fallen back and established a line on the edge of the sand hills, back of the swamps, but a good strong force was left at the public road crossing and at the railroad bridge. Very soon the enemy, supposing that no troops had been left at all upon the north

bank of the river, came down to the water's edge for the purpose of getting water, with torches and other lights in their hands, and some of their cavalry which was in force on their side of the river appeared on the banks. All at once the sharpshooters on our side opened fire upon them with deadly effect and they soon scattered back to the rear. We were falling back, but the men were cool and deliberate, not hurried at all in their marching and ready at all times to face about and meet the foe. The Sixty-sixth Regiment, part of the time, acted as rear guard of the division and did its full duty in retarding the approach of the enemy's cavalry.

We remained a short time near Northeast river, when we fell back toward Goldsboro and stopped at what was then called "Duplin Cross Roads." Here we remained some days, the division expecting, during its stay here, to receive orders to march to Fayetteville for the purpose of joining General Hardee's army and impeding the army of Sherman in his march northward. But these orders never came, and the division was ordered to Kinston to meet the army of General Schofield, who was moving from New Bern to join forces with General Sherman.

While at Duplin Cross Roads, Lieutenant-Colonel C. G. Wright was taken sick and sent to his home in Greensboro, where he died about the 13th of the month, and Major D. S. Davis was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel in his stead, and Captain W P Robinson was recommended for Major.

BATTLE OF SOUTH WEST CREEK.

We arrived at Kinston on 7 March, and immediately crossed the Neuse river and took position on the railroad some two or three miles below On 8 March a flank movement was made by Hoke's Division to our right and around the left of the enemy's forces, near Cobb's Mill. We took them completely by surprise, and after a gallant attack we effectually routed them, capturing a large number of prisoners and inflicting a great loss upon them. After having driven the troops back upon their lines, we faced about and started to make another attack upon them over the same ground from

which we had shortly before routed them. The field was covered with dead and dying, broken guns, empty saddles, dismantled caissons and artillery and cavalry horses in great numbers. The field officers were afoot, the regiment being commanded by Major Davis, Colonel Nethercutt during this fight, being familiar with the ground, acting as Chief on General Hoke's staff. Seeing two fine looking black horses standing side by side, the commanding officer, Major Davis, and the writer left the line and ran with all their might to capture these horses, and imagine their surprise to find that their ham-strings had been cut and the animals could not move out of their tracks. Some very fine horses, however, were obtained by some of the more fortunate ones.

On 9 March a similar attempt was made upon the left flank, but for some reason it was not carried out; I suppose, because the situation of the country would not permit of it. We, therefore, retired at night to our old position in the line near the railroad and slept comfortably, dreaming of what would be before us on the morrow.

On the 10th another attack was made upon the enemy's left flank, at or near Wise's Fork. For some reason our lines were not extended sufficiently far to our right and his left, and an order was given too soon to charge the enemy's line, and when the charge was made we found that the enemy had prepared for us with his breastworks facing both ways, and the same protected by small pines, which had been cut down, lapped over each other and their limbs trimmed and pointing in our direction. When the Sixty-sixth was within about fifty yards of the enemy, it was ordered to lie down to protect itself from the galling fire from the breastworks. The troops on the left of our line did not seem to take in the situation, and did not come to our support, and we were compelled to fall back, leaving a large number of the men of the regiment dead and dying on the field. How many were killed or how many were taken prisoners, we were never able to find out. We only know that at least one-half of the regiment was left upon that field, and the balance of it, under the command of Major Davis, was cut off from the rest of the army and was in the rear of the enemy's position. But

for his knowledge of the line and the knowledge of others who were with us, we would evidently have been captured. However, by taking the swamps and by-paths we avoided meeting any considerable armed force of the foe, and late in the night made our way back to Kinston, to which place the army had retired.

BENTONVILLE.

On the next day we took up our march for Goldsboro and to Bentonville, crossing the Neuse river near Smithfield. Here we joined General Stewart's Corps in the Army of the West, and took part in the memorable three days' fight at Bentonville, 19-21 March, 1865, the last well organized and well fought battle of the war in North Carolina.

This fight commenced 19 March near the little village of Bentonville. Kirkland's Brigade was well to the front, with its right resting upon a road that ran along the edge of a field, in which was situated a large white house, that was occupied by the sharpshooters of the enemy. The line was rather a crooked one, the Sixty-sixth Regiment being the farthest to the front, at the point of a bow. Here a very severe attack was made upon us in which we lost a number of men, among others the gallant Council Wooten, a young man from near Kinston, who was killed suddenly while bravely and defiantly waving the colors of the regiment in front of the enemy The sharpshooters of General Sherman's army located in the trees, got in their best work, and many a gallant soldier fell during the 19th and 20th from well directed shots of these sharpshooters. On the 20th it became necessary for Kirkland's Brigade to straighten its line and while in the act of so doing, a very severe attack was made by a Pennsylvania division. The men of Kirkland's Brigade were engaged in rolling together logs and making such defences as they could when the attack was made upon us. The men were ordered to lie down behind such obstructions as they could find, and to await the order to fire until the advance came very near to them. When the enemy got within, say 100 yards, the order was given to fire; the men immediately raised upon their knees and fired a volley full in front

of the advancing foe. Their ranks were mowed down like wheat before the scythe, and the attack was repulsed with great loss to the attacking division. Just at this moment an order was given by the commanding officer, Major Davis, to the writer, who was standing near him, to take the picket line to the front, the commanding officer of the picket line having been killed. When the line went forward, the whole front was covered with the dead and dying, and showed the effect of troops obeying the commands of their officers, to shoot low and wait until the enemy was near upon them.

Just at this time, it is said, that General Joseph E. Johnston paid a very high compliment to the troops of Hoke's Division, and Kirkland's Brigade in particular. General Johnston was lying somewhere in the rear, resting after his arduous labors of the three days, when some aide, riding rapidly up, said: "General, they are attacking Kirkland's Brigade." The General quietly rolled over on his pallet and said: "Let them attack. I know of no brigade in the Southern Army I would sooner they would attack."

During the three days' fight at Bentonville, Major Davis was commanding the regiment, Colonel Nethercutt having been assigned to the command of the brigade of Junior Reserves, which took so gallant a part in that fight.

On the 21st, General Sherman's army having been only slightly impeded in its march toward Goldsboro, made a flank movement in the rear of General Johnston's army, which necessitated its falling back during the night across the creek near which the little town of Bentonville was located. After we crossed the creek the enemy appeared in quite a force on the opposite side of a creek and some little skirmishing took place, but no actual harm was done.

They shortly vanished from our front, and our army quietly retired through Smithfield to a camp on the line of the railroad, near where Selma now is, and that was the last armed force that we saw in our front during the war.

THE LAST RETREAT.

We remained at this camp some few days, and on 10 April wearily took up our line of march from there, through Ra-

leigh, Haw River, near Greensboro, and to Bush Hill near High Point.

After the division had arrived at a place near Center church, some eight or ten miles from Greensboro, the armistice of ten days had been agreed upon between General Sherman and General Johnston, and the officers and men saw that the end was not far. Word came to them about this time that General Lee had surrendered at Appomattox, and hundreds of both officers and men did not desire to suffer the humiliation of surrender; they, therefore, left in large numbers during these ten days, knowing that they had fought a good fight, they had kept the faith, and they now desired not to suffer the humiliation of surrender. A part of the regiment, however, when the order to march was given, left Center church and marched to Bush Hill, where on 2 May, 1865, the weary remnant of this regiment, which started out 1,100 strong, now reduced by death, sickness and capture to less than a hundred, signed their paroles and scattered to their various homes.

During the time the regiment was engaged in service many changes had taken place among the rank and file; many had fallen in battle; a record had been made for the regiment which was imperishable; its field officers had changed; its company officers had been killed and captured; and now the flag which had waved over them so long in glory and triumph, had gone down in blood and tears, but, thank God, it had gone down amidst gloom and defeat as pure, as bright, as untarnished in that last decline as when the first ray of morning light proclaimed its rising dawn.

It would be impossible for me to give the times and places where the officers and men were killed and captured, or even to enumerate their names or to refer to their bravery. Where all did so well, it is needless to particularize. Sufficeth to say, that all did the best they could; their cause was lost, and the only duty that now remained to them was to return to their homes and attempt to build up the shattered fortunes of themselves and rehabilitate their State.

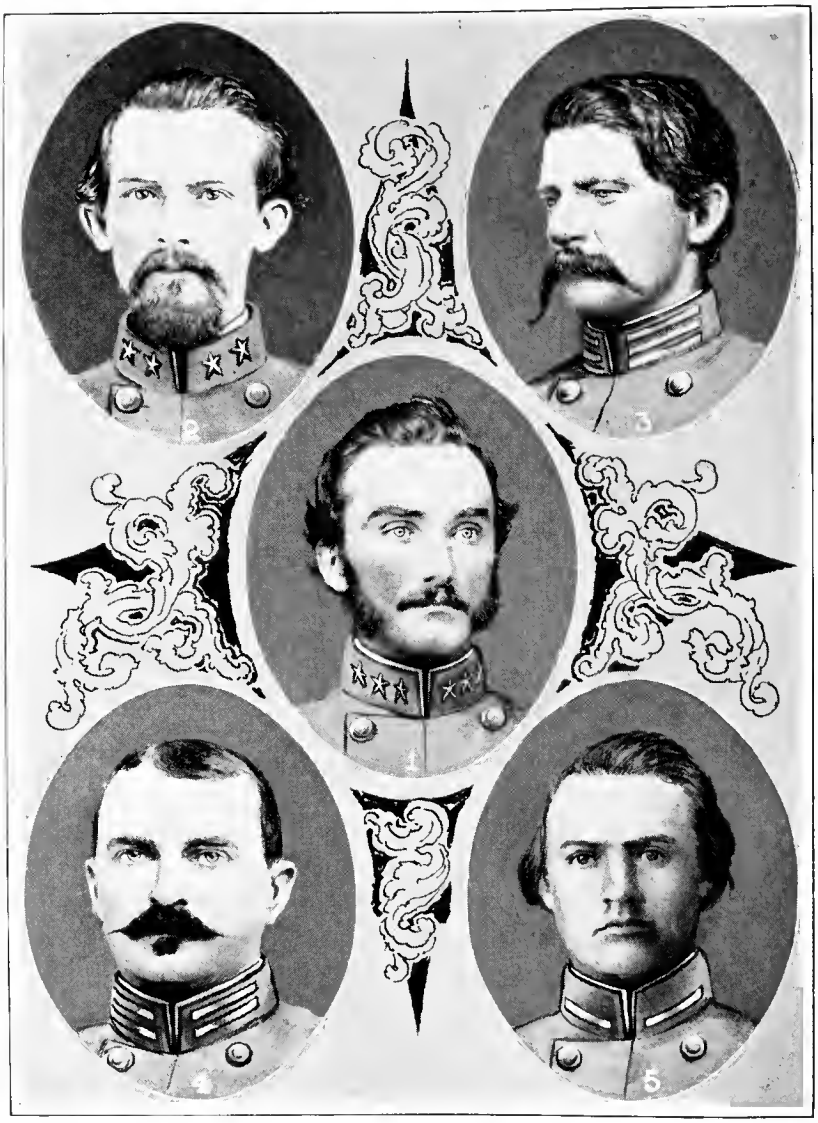
I know, in conclusion, that I have given but a very imperfect sketch of the part that this gallant regiment took in

the war between the States, but when it is recalled that every field officer, but one, has passed away, and that all the company officers, so far as I am now able to find out, except five, have also "crossed over the river," and I have been unable to see or communicate with those left behind, I feel that I have done the best I could.

For the changes in the Company Officers, reference is made to Moore's Roster of North Carolina Troops, Vol. IV, p. 107-132.

GEO. M. ROSE.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



SIXTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

1. John N. Whitford, Colonel.
2. R. W. Wharton, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. J. D. Myers, Captain, Co. K.
4. T. W. Carr, 1st Lieut., Co. K.
5. Wm. P. Lane, 2d Lieut., Co. D.

SIXTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

By RUFUS W WHARTON, Lieutenant-Colonel.

The Sixty-seventh Regiment (N. C. Troops), was organized in January, 1864, and was composed of nine companies of infantry and one of cavalry. The several companies had been organized a considerable time prior to the organization of the regiment. Some of them in the early part of the war, and had been employed on outpost duty in the vicinity of New Bern and Washington, N. C., after those towns fell into the hands of the enemy early in 1862. These companies and the regiment, after its organization, were paid, fed and clothed entirely by the State of North Carolina, were subject to the orders of the Governor of the State and could not be removed beyond the limits of the State without his consent and order. In fact, however, they were under the immediate command and subject to the orders of the Confederate officer in command of the military district of Eastern North Carolina.

The field officers and staff of the regiment were:

John N. Whitford, of Craven county, Colonel.

Rufus W Wharton, of Forsyth county, Lieutenant-Colonel.

Edward Whitford, of Craven county, Major.

Samuel G. Schenck, of Beaufort county, Adjutant.

Thomas M. Robinson, of Beaufort county, Quartermaster.

Wiley F Higgins, of Craven county, Commissary.

Joseph Graham, of Orange county, Surgeon.

William H. Morrow, of Orange county, Assistant Surgeon.

The writer of this sketch, at the time of his appointment by Governor Vance, belonged to the Army of Northern Vir-

ginia, in which he had served from and including the first battle of Bull Run up to that time. He is, therefore, unable to give a detailed account of the services of the several companies composing the regiment prior to the time when he joined the same, which was in February, 1864; soon after the Pickett expedition against New Bern. The regiment participated in that expedition, being a part of the troops intended to attack Fort Anderson, opposite New Bern, on the north side of Neuse river. The conditions under which the attack was to be made did not occur, and no attack was made.

When the writer joined the regiment he found seven companies encamped at Coward's bridge, on Contentnea, twelve miles below Kinston. Company A, from Craven, James H. Tolson, Captain; Company B, from Craven, Stephen Barrington, Captain; Company C, from Wilson, D. W Edwards, Captain; Company E, Charles A. White Captain; Company F, from Craven, David P Whitford, Captain; Company G, Asa W Jones, Captain; Company I, from Pitt, Edward F. White, Captain. The other three companies, viz: Company D, from Craven, Daniel A. Cogdell, Captain; Company H, from Duplin, Jones and Craven, Christopher D. Foy, Captain; and Company K (cavalry), from Wayne, Joseph D. Myers, Captain, were encamped some miles in front, nearer the enemy's lines, and engaged in scouting and doing picket duty in the vicinity of New Bern and Washington. Captain Foy was a man of 60 years, was six feet and a half high, wore a long, flowing white beard that reached to his waist and was unique both in personal appearance and in the influence which he wielded over the men of his company. He was familiarly known in the regiment by the name of "Tecumseh." When the writer first saw him he was marching at the head of his company of 65 or 70 men, who were following him, Indian-like, in single file. As the men had had but little opportunity for company and none at all for battalion drill, the companies at regimental camp, spent the next few weeks in these exercises.

About the last of April, 1864, another expedition against New Bern was undertaken, this time under command of Major-General R. F. Hoke, who had just won his promotion

by the brilliant battle and capture of Plymouth, N. C. In the expedition the Sixty-seventh headed the column. Nothing of importance happened until we reached Deep Gully, eight miles from New Bern. Here we came on a strong outpost of the enemy which made some resistance, but was quickly driven in by the Sixty-seventh, which remained in this vicinity for the next two days, while General Hoke proceeded with the balance of the troops, down the Trent, on the south side, to the vicinity of New Bern. Before the capture of New Bern, which was almost a certainty, was accomplished General Hoke, to his great disappointment, received orders to hasten back to Virginia with his command. He arrived in Petersburg just in time to save that city from capture.

The regiment returned to its former position and continued in the same service as before for a short time, but was soon removed to the vicinity of Kinston, where it remained, doing outpost duty until October, when it was ordered to Washington and Plymouth, N. C., to relieve the troops stationed at those points.

Occasionally we had to repel incursions made by the enemy, outside of his lines and sometimes we made incursions into the territory occupied by him. In one of these raids a squad of men, about fifty strong, led by Major Whitford, proceeded down Neuse river on the north side to a point several miles below New Bern, crossed the river in boats at night and made its way to the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad at a point between New Bern and Beaufort, where it arrived about daylight on Monday morning. The object of the raid was to capture General Palmer, the officer then in command at New Bern. It was understood by us that he was in the habit of spending Sunday at Beaufort, returning to New Bern Monday morning. While arranging to capture the train, our force were discovered by some colored people who notified the Yankee troops at a fort a mile away. The party finding that their presence had been discovered and being many miles inside the enemy's lines, considered it imprudent to await the arrival of the train. It, however, passed

while they were in hearing and, as they afterward learned, had General Palmer aboard.

Another party, under the lead of Levi Howland, of Carteret County, blew up and so damaged the lighthouse at Cape Lookout that it was never of any further use. This enterprise was a daring and dangerous one. The party had to cross the sound, seven or eight miles wide, in small boats, running the risk of capture by a steamer which the Federals kept on guard constantly near the light house. Of course the thing had to be done at night. Arriving at the light house they first notified the persons in charge to keep in door and make no alarm, at the peril of their lives. They then placed a keg of powder, which they carried with them, in the light house and connected it with a trail of powder to which they applied a slow match. The match failed to ignite the powder and as the steamer on guard had begun to move up near to the light house, one of the party procured from the keeper's house a shovel of live coals and running near the door of the light house, threw the coals on the trail of powder. The keg of powder exploded and the tall structure was so badly wrecked as to be unsafe for further use.

In June, 1864, a strong party of Federals and Buffaloes, as the natives who joined the enemy, were called, attempted to capture Captain Cogdell and his company. They were on outpost duty ten miles below Kinston on the south side of the Neuse. Captain Cogdell was on the alert and did not fall into the trap set for him. They did, however, capture Colonel G. N. Folk, of the Sixty-fifth North Carolina (Sixth Cavalry). At the time he was attempting to reach Cogdell.

As before stated, the Sixty-seventh was ordered to relieve the troops stationed at Washington and Plymouth, N. C., in October, 1864. The writer and three companies stopped in Washington while Colonel and Major Whitford, with the other seven companies proceeded to Plymouth.

Plymouth is only eight miles above the mouth of the Roanoke and was protected by the Confederate ram Albemarle, which was anchored a short distance below the town and which had done such fine service the previous spring at the capture of the town from the Federals, though defended by

several gunboats on the river and several thousand troops, well fortified, on the land. It was a part of the duty of the garrison to keep a strong guard on the ram day and night, to protect it from any effort that might be made secretly to destroy or injure it. About a week after Colonel Whitford assumed command at Plymouth, during a dark night, a small steam launch which had approached without noise or any other sign of its presence, was suddenly discovered by the sentinel on duty, very near the ram and approaching it rapidly. The sentinel immediately fired on the approaching boat, but in an instant it struck the side of the ram and at the same time exploded a torpedo or some explosive of great force. The parties in the launch attempted to back it off, but failed. In the darkness and confusion one of the boat's crew jumped into the river and escaped unnoticed. Two others and the launch were captured. A large hole was torn in the side of the ram by the explosion and it immediately sank to the bottom, though a portion of it still remained above water. Two days thereafter several Federal gunboats came up the river and shelled the town until the garrison was withdrawn. The party who escaped by swimming ashore was Lieutenant Cushing, of the Federal navy, and was entitled to the credit of planning and carrying out the attack on the ram.

Immediately after the abandonment of Plymouth, the writer was ordered to remove all the military stores in Washington and withdraw from the place.

There were quite a large number of heavy guns mounted in the several forts in and around the town—some weighing 10,000 pounds, and no means of getting them to a place of safety except by hauling them seven miles into the country. Two weeks were spent in executing the order.

After the evacuation of Plymouth and Washington, N. C., Colonel and Major Whitford, with the greater part of the regiment, returned to Kinston, while the writer with the balance was stationed at Greenville for a few weeks. About this time Colonel Whitford, with a part of the regiment, went to Hamilton, on the Roanoke, to repel an invasion of that section by the enemy who came up the river in gunboats. The en-

emy were soon driven back with the loss of one of the gunboats.

In January, 1865, the enemy made a demonstration in force from New Bern, on Kinston, and came within four or five miles of the town, but were promptly driven back by the Sixty-seventh and other troops then at Kinston.

Nothing else of importance occurred in that district until the latter part of February, 1865, when General J. D. Cox, with a large Federal army advanced from New Bern on Kinston, with the purpose of making a junction, at some point further west, with Sherman, who was coming from South Carolina in that direction.

General Braxton Bragg, with such Confederate troops as could be spared from other points, was sent to meet him. The two armies met at South West Creek four and a half miles east of Kinston, where for two days, 8 and 9 March, 1865, there was sharp fighting and several hundred prisoners captured, mostly by the division of General R. F Hoke, to which the Sixty-seventh was attached. On the first day of the battle General Hoke, with his command, the Sixty-seventh, being in front, executed quite a brilliant manœuver by which he surprised and after a short fight, captured about 700 Federals.

The next day General Hoke made another attempt to outflank and surprise the enemy on another part of his lines. This time the Federals were on the alert and gave him such a warm reception that he withdrew to his own side of the creek. After contesting the advance of the enemy four days, General Bragg withdrew to the north side of the Neuse, destroyed the bridge over the same and marched in the direction of Goldsboro. General Hoke with his division, remained in the vicinity of Kinston two or three days longer and then joined Bragg at Goldsboro. At Goldsboro the Sixty-seventh and Sixty-eighth, the latter commanded by that brave officer and excellent gentleman, Lieutenant-Colonel Edward C Yellowley, were formed into a brigade and placed under command of Colonel John N. Whitford, of the Sixty-seventh. At that time the Sixty-seventh reported 700 for duty and the Sixty-eighth 300; total 1,000, 99 *Vol. Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 1424.

The Sixty-seventh and Sixty-eighth were ordered from Goldsboro to a bridge over Neuse river a short distance east of Bentonville. We reached the bridge about noon, when the enemy appeared in large numbers on the opposite, the south side. On that side the river is bordered by a swamp about half a mile wide. After posting a strong skirmish line on the south side, in the swamp, the balance of the brigade formed a line on the north side above and below the bridge and near the river. Early next morning the enemy attacked in force and gradually drove our skirmishers back, who, when near the bridge, quickly crossed over, setting fire as they did so to some combustible material which had been placed there. The brigade remained near the bridge until it was nearly consumed and then withdrew, the object having been accomplished which was to prevent the enemy from crossing to the north side of the river during the battle of Bentonville. We then joined General Johnston's army at Smithfield a day or two after the battle of Bentonville. We remained at Smithfield one day and then marched Eastward by way of Wilson and Tarboro. Our purpose was to get to the rear of the enemy and interrupt and destroy as much as possible the enemy's transportation, which was by both river and rail from New Bern via Kinston and Goldsboro.

The Sixty-eighth remained near Tarboro. The Sixty-seventh proceeded to Greenville and went into camp in the grove at the north end of the Greenville bridge. These two regiments were accompanied by a battalion of the Thirty-sixth North Carolina (Second Artillery) acting as infantry, and commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John D. Taylor.

IN REAR OF THE ENEMY.

From Tarboro a small company of cavalry was sent over to Greene county in the direction of Kinston, which had several skirmishes with the enemy's forage parties, in one of which Lieutenant Titus Carr, in consequence of the falling of his horse, was captured. From Greenville Company A, of the Sixty-seventh, a large and fine company, commanded by Captain James H. Tolson, was dispatched to Neuse river, between New Bern and Kinston, with instructions to operate

both on the river and railroad running from the former to the latter place. Many of the men in this company were citizens of Craven county and familiar with the country and would doubtless have done good service had not the war practically ended a few days thereafter. They tore up the railroad at one point and captured and burnt a steamer and two barges on the river, all loaded with supplies for the Federals. On 9 April Colonel Jno. N. Whitford made the following report (*98 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies, 1134*): "On 5 April Lieutenant Marshall, Company F, Sixty-seventh North Carolina, burnt the steamer Mystic, near Maple Cypress. On the same day Captain Tolson, Company A, Sixty-seventh Regiment, destroyed a transport loaded with commissary stores near Cowpen Landing, and on the 7th instant four privates of Company A, viz: George Hill, Turner May, William Salter and R. Brewer, captured and burned a side-wheel steamer, the *Minquas,* and two barges, all loaded with quartermaster's and commissary stores. Very little was saved from the boats." The four men named opened fire with their muskets on the steamer which was immediately run aground on the other side of the river. The crew and passengers, of whom there was a considerable number aboard, jumped into the mud and water on the shore side and made their way into the swamp. The captors having no boat, swam over to the steamer and after securing the flag and papers of the steamer and a few other articles, set fire to all three of the vessels and returned to their own side of the river. The flag and papers were brought to the writer of this sketch at Greenville.

In the same report Colonel Whitford further says: "On the 5th instant Captain Joseph M. White, Company E, Sixty-seventh Regiment, captured fifteen negroes and two Yankees at Biddle's Ferry engaged in trying to raise a sunken craft. The reason I have not forwarded you a report of my command is because the companies and regiments are scattered so far apart that it is impossible to get a report from them."

These were bold operations in the rear of the whole Federal army. There were many other daring feats, but the falling back of Johnston's army prevented further official

reports and the lapse of time and the death of so many actors prevent an authentic and accurate recital of them now. It should be remembered that the Sixty-seventh and Sixty-eighth were North Carolina Regiments, which were never mustered into Confederate service and were paid by the State.

About this time some veterans of Lee's army arrived in our camp and told us the sad news of Appomattox. In a few days the country was full of parties of disbanded Confederate soldiers returning to their homes. Knowing that our cherished cause was lost in all things except in the influence which the heroic deeds, the cheerful endurance of hardships and dangers by the Confederate soldiers and the patriotic and unselfish devotion of the women of the Confederacy would exert upon all who should hereafter read the true history of the four years' war, the Sixty-seventh was also disbanded. Most of the officers and men were from the eastern counties of the State and went directly to their homes. The writer with Captain T. M. Robinson, and a few officers and men who were from the counties of Wayne and Green, made their way to Stantonsburg in the latter county, and on 28 April, 1865, were paroled by a detachment of Federals from Goldsboro. The writer had been in the service four years less two weeks.

Many of the men and officers were much affected by this termination of all our labors and sufferings in the cause of self government. The writer well remembers the inconsolable grief of Lieutenant John W Aldridge, now a resident of Pamlico county, a good soldier and man. May he live long and prosper.

RUFUS W WHARTON.

WASHINGTON, N. C.,
28 April, 1901.

SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

1. James W Hinton, Colonel. 2. W. H. Bagley, Major.

SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

By J. W EVANS, Corporal, Company D.

The Sixty-seventh and Sixty-eighth Regiments were raised for the protection of the State, mustered into its service and were never turned over to the Confederacy, though as a matter of fact they were under the orders of Confederate generals like any other, except that they could not be, and never were, ordered beyond the State borders, beyond one slight incursion of this regiment into East Tennessee.

The regiment was organized in July, 1863, with the following Field and Staff officers:

James W Hinton, of Pasquotank, Colonel. He had been Lieutenant-Colonel of the Eighth Regiment.

Edward C Yellowley, of Pitt, Lieutenant-Colonel, who had served also in the Eighth Regiment as Major.

Jos. J Edwards, of Hertford County, was Major, and on his resignation April, 1864, William H. Bagley, of Pasquotank, Captain of Company A, of the Eighth Regiment, succeeded. On the resignation of the latter in June, 1864, Willis B. Sanderlin, of Camden, Captain Company B, was promoted to Major.

Joseph W Hinton, of Pasquotank, Adjutant.

Jno. W Sessoms, of Bertie, A. Q. M.

Lewis C. Lawrence, of Hertford County, A. C. S.

Jno. W Hutchings was Surgeon and was succeeded by Thomas M. Nixon.

Jesse C Shannon, Assistant Surgeon, succeeded by J. T. F. Cummings.

Company A—*From Pasquotank*—Captains, John T. Elliott and Thomas H. Tamplin. First Lieutenant, Wm. J. Munden; Second Lieutenants, Thomas H. Tamplin and Andrew J Turner.

Company B—*From Camden*—Captains, Willis B. Sanderlin and F. M. Halstead; First Lieutenant, F M. Halstead; Second Lieutenants, Enoch Stephens and Willis Morrisett.

COMPANY C—*From Camden*—Captain, Caleb B. Walston. First Lieutenant, William P Walston.

COMPANY D—*From Hertford*—Captains, Hillary Taylor and Levi Askew. First Lieutenants, Levi Askew and Wm. P Taylor; Second Lieutenants, Wm. P Taylor and David A. Parker.

COMPANY E—*From Hertford*—Captain, Langley Tayloe. First Lieutenant, Benj. B. Williams (of Bertie); Second Lieutenants, John Britt and Joseph Holloman.

COMPANY F—*From Bertie*—Captains, John T. Mebane and Wm. M. Sutton. First Lieutenants, W M. Sutton and James A. Leary; Second Lieutenants. James A. Leary, Van-Buren White and Nehemiah Bunch.

COMPANY G—*From Pasquotank*—Captain, Cyrus W Grandy. First Lieutenant, Benjamin McHorney; Second Lieutenant, Francis B. Sykes.

COMPANY H—*From Chowan*—Captain, Richard Keogh. First Lieutenant, Richard Keogh; Second Lieutenants, Jas. C. Warren and James McCoy.

COMPANY I—*From Gates*—Captains, R. H. L. Bond and W M. Daughtry. First Lieutenant, W M. Daughtry; Second Lieutenants, Richard B. Odom and Thos. B. Walton.

COMPANY K—*From Hertford*—Captain, Simon B. Poole. First Lieutenants, Geo. W Thompson and John A. Parker. Second Lieutenants, John A. Parker and Cadmus Capehart.

There were changes among the officers and the names of some officers are omitted, but they can not now be recalled by the writer.

Colonel Hinton was a prominent lawyer and orator and after the war removed to Norfolk, where he died. Lieutenant-Colonel Yellowley was also a prominent lawyer at Greenville and in early manhood had, under great provocation, killed a man in a duel, an event which was thought to have saddened his whole life. Major Bagley was after the war for many years clerk of our Supreme Court. He married the daughter of Governor Worth and was the father of Worth Bagley, the gallant young officer of the United States Navy who fell at Cardenas in 1898 in the beginning of our war with Spain.

The writer cannot recall the date of his enlistment in what became afterwards Company D, of the Sixty-eighth Regiment, North Carolina Troops, but it was at a X roads about five miles from Harrellsville, Hertford County, N C., better known as Bethlehem Baptist Church, and where Watson Lewis, Jr., resided and kept a store, and it was in this store house that I signed the muster roll and that Watson Lewis, Jr., witnessed my signature, about thirty-eight years ago, then not being quite 18 years of age.

The names of the field and staff officers of the Sixty-eighth and the commissioned officers of the several companies recorded in Moore's Roster and above recited are familiar and most of the officers are yet well remembered.

Being clerk of the Superior Court of Dare county at the time the Roster was filed in the office and not finding the names of the privates of the several companies of the Sixty-eighth Regiment recorded therein, I felt much surprised and cannot yet understand why a record of the field, staff and commissioned officers of the companies could be found and no roll of the privates.

I therefore deem it proper to mention here the names of as many of my comrades as I can remember of the company to which I belonged, viz.:

COMPANY D—First Sergeant, John B. Slaughter; Second Sergeant, John H. Perry; First Corporal, William Downing; Fourth Corporal, John W Evans; Fifer, Bartimeus Wiggins; Drummer, Joseph Willoughby. Privates: John Downing, Thomas H. Evans, Judson L. Evans; George W Perry, Jos. Perry (brothers), John Chambray, Julius J Hayes, Perry Mitchell, John W Simons, Richard Baker, Joseph Baker, Wm. H. Eley, John Baker, Sr., Travis J Taylor, Francis L. Evans, Freeman Evans, Thomas T. Taylor, Dewitt C. Miller, Simeon P Saunders, Frank Saunders, Kindred Hollomon, William Hays, Henry Mitchell, Henry C. Sharp, Horatio Taylor, Samuel M. Aumack, Joseph Davidson, Z. W Lassiter, George W Valentine, Henry D. Harrell, Daniel Barnes, all of Hertford county; Richard Rountree, James T. Parish, James Brinkley, of Gates county; Samuel M. Pearce, Simon Todd, Moses Todd, of Bertie county.

ON THE CHOWAN.

This company was encamped for a few months at the Bethlehem church during which time the United States transports which were provided with guns equal to the capacity of the vessel plied the Chowan river and a squad of about thirty of the company were sent out in command of Captain Hillary Taylor and Major Joseph J Edwards, to learn of the movements of these vessels and also to aid those who were engaged in bringing bacon and live hogs across the river from Chowan county for the commissary. Being on the hillside of the river at Coleraine, Bertie county, we saw a large side-wheel steamer steaming down the river and Major Edwards desiring to test our accuracy with our new Enfield rifles, commanded us to occasionally fire at the steamer, which caused her commander to bring her within about three-quarters of a mile of the shore when she fired a small shell at us that came directly over our heads and exploded which created some confusion; but being able to secrete ourselves behind the hills, we were lost to view and the steamer soon sped away with no casualties to either side. This was our first experience. We returned to camp, and soon thereafter at about 1 o'clock, a. m., the beat of the long roll aroused our slumbers, orders were given to be in readiness for marching at once, and the company was hurriedly marched to Harrellsville.

The Federals in the meantime had invaded the village before we could get there, their supposed purpose being to capture bacon and other commissary stores and commit the usual depredations on the citizens.

Our company being only a squad and not knowing the strength of the enemy, our officers did not deem it wise to make a charge in blank darkness but being acquainted with the location of the village they flanked it, and in doing so aroused a suspicion of the enemy's picket guard, that fired a scattering ball at our shadow, but without doing any execution or locating our whereabouts. When we had reached a position to make a surprise attack on them, should they return to the place whence they came before the dawn of day, a miraculous incident occurred. One of our comrades, Mr.

Geo. W Valentine, an elderly man, had lagged considerably in the rear and upon his advance, was discovered by some of our men who commanded him to halt, but the old gentleman not being well drilled in military tactics and this being his first experience in a skirmish, paid no attention to the command and continued his advance that caused, to his great surprise, a volley of bullets fired at him, but fortunately was not hit, and was recognized only when he cried out: "In the name of God, are you going to kill me."

Thus having made our location known to the enemy, a hasty retreat was necessary. We made our way through the fields in the darkness until we reached a pine thicket about one and a half miles down the road towards the river, and there awaited the return of the enemy, with breathless silence until near 10 o'clock, a. m., when their approach brought us to arms. The road was full for quite a distance with the soldier enemy in advance of their pillaged plunder, (consisting of negroes of both sexes, and every size and age, horses and vehicles of every kind and even the contents of the wardrobes of our best people). We gave them a volley that demoralized them and put them to flight toward the river where the vessels were lying awaiting their return. Still not knowing their strength we did not advance upon them, but took a quick step retreat to where there was no danger. Returning to our camp, we passed through the village and viewed the smouldering remains of several valuable buildings and other property.

ORGANIZED INTO A REGIMENT.

Shortly thereafter we were moved and put in quarters for the remainder of the winter and spring near Jackson, Northampton county, N. C., where the companies from Princess Anne county, Va., Currituck, Camden, Pasquotank, Chowan, Gates and Bertie counties and two other companies from our own Hertford County, joined us. We were there organized into the Sixty-eighth Regiment.

No accident or incident occurred while in quarters at the above named place. On or about 1 May, 1864, the regiment was moved to Weldon, and only remained a short time;

but during the stay there a young officer by the name of Stockton, from the central part of the State, who had but a short time previous joined the regiment, was drowned in Roanoke river while taking a swim, and so far as this writer knows, his remains were never recovered. On 1 June, 1864, the regiment then at Weldon reported 548 present. *108 Vol. Official Records Union and Confederate Armies,* p. 988.

MORGANTON.

From this point the regiment was sent in July to Morganton, N. C., to protect property and citizens. We arrived there only a few days too late to meet a band of bushwhacking guerrillas known as Kirk's army. They had made a raid on an encampment of Junior Reserves about three miles from Morganton, near the then terminus of the Western North Carolina Railroad, and on 28 June had captured more than one hundred of them. Hon. W W Avery was killed in the pursuit of Kirk's army. Their attack upon the Juniors was made in a silent hour of night.

After we had been encamped for awhile where the Juniors had been, the Hon. Zebulon B. Vance, who was canvassing the State for the gubernatorial chair for a second term, paid us a call and made an address in his own humorous way. After having delivered his speech relating to public affairs, he said that he was glad that he had had the pleasure of meeting us, and complimented our healthy, stalwart soldierly appearance, and said that he hoped no one of the regiment would have to be sent to the hospital for want of drinking water, as we were from the eastern part of the State, for he had been informed that we had searched the hill and mountain sides, and even the valleys, for tadpole water to drink. This was too much for us to bear, our Colonel Hinton thought, without a retort, who was much like the Governor for wit and humor, and so he related a story that went without contradiction. He said that shortly after the outbreak of the war, while Roanoke Island was being fortified, an additional force of troops being necessary, it happened that the troops sent were from the western part of our State. When the steamer that transported them, having made the run

down the Albemarle sound in the night time, at the dawn of day came in view of the island, the troops arousing from their slumbers, began taking a view of their surroundings and discovered the men at the fort on the island getting out to their work with wheelbarrows. One of them called out to his comrade and exclaimed: "Boys, have those few men over yonder dug this great ditch already?" and then the Governor surrendered himself amidst the cheers of the men, and said he was captured.

EAST TENNESSEE.

Shortly after this event preparations were made under marching orders to raid the section of country from which Kirk's army came, and each comrade being provided with as many rations as he could carry, together with a soldier's other equipment, we moved under command of our Lieutenant-Colonel, E. C. Yellowley, and went along the line most of the way as far as graded, of the Western North Carolina Railroad then turned off and crossed the Blue Ridge Mountains via Bakersville, the county seat of Mitchell County, and on into Tennessee, known as the Crab Apple section. We then returned on nearly the same line of march as we went. Nothing was accomplished so far as the writer has any knowledge, farther than to make an impression upon the people that it would not be wise on the part of Kirk's army to make another raid as herein referred to. We did not meet an opposing foe nor were attacked save one gun shot that was fired by an enemy in ambush, that was impenetrable at night by reason of the campfires that shone against the thickest forest that ever grew on a mountain side, and no pursuit could be made. The shot fired took effect in the thigh of the camp servant of Lieutenant W P Taylor, who was lying on a log bench by a campfire, but the wound proved to be of no consequence.

The marching over the rocky roads was hard to endure, yet the picturesque mountain scenery, the good water, milk, butter and honey that was found in great abundance, will ever be remembered by the members of the Sixty-eighth Regiment.

SALISBURY.

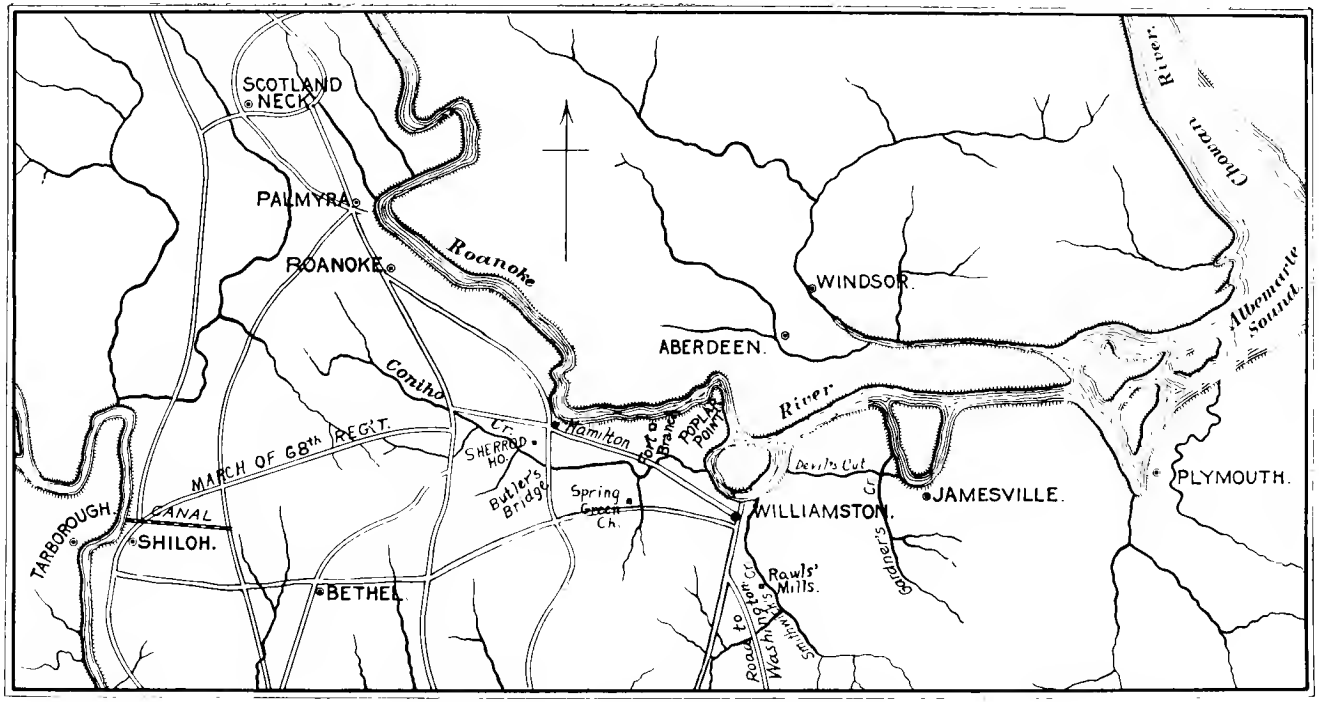
Shortly after our return to camp near Morganton, the regiment was ordered to Salisbury, N. C., to guard a large number of Federal prisoners. Upon our arrival the ground within the prison was covered with men and within three days they had dug themselves holes in the ground covering the entrance to each with a little mound, so that they were most completely protected from the open air and weather. The hardship, disease and death among that mass of human beings this writer prays never to witness again.

We had no casualty or death in our ranks during the time of our service around the Salisbury prison, save the accident that occurred to James P. Roberts, of Company I, in the old prison building. When on guard duty he unthoughtedly, with his right arm resting on the muzzle of his rifle, with his foot fired the rifle which shattered his arm and caused its amputation.

Remained at Salisbury until about the first of December, 1864, when we were ordered to the eastern part of the State, the first stop, as the writer remembers, was at Halifax, where we remained for a few days only. Thence the command was sent to Tarboro, N. C., but only remained a short time.

BUTLER'S BRIDGE, NEAR HAMILTON.

It being learned that the Federals were advancing from the vicinity of Plymouth, N. C., to make an attack on the fort at Rainbow Banks, near Hamilton, N. C., we were ordered on a hasty march in the afternoon of 12 December, 1864, and marched with an occasional rest till dark, when a beautiful pine thicket was reached. Orders were given to rest, as was supposed, for the night. The temperature was falling to a low point; yet the weather was clear, and being very tired, we were very soon snugly retired in beds of new pine straw as comfortably as any squad of soldiers ever enjoyed; but at the hour of midnight, our sound and happy slumbers was disturbed by the beat of the long roll, which all knew meant to be in readiness quickly, and then orders were given to march. At that hour it had become very cold, the road-



MAP OF BUTLER'S BRIDGE AND VICINITY.

bed was frozen hard and a march of about ten miles was made without a rest. At Butler's bridge, two miles from Hamilton, four companies of the Seventieth North Carolina (First Junior Reserves) and two companies of the Sixty-fifth (Sixth Cavalry) and a section of Lee's (Ala.) battery, all under Lieutenant-Colonel C. W Broadfoot of the Seventieth had been stationed at a creek, crossing the public road. The enemy, piloted by some *buffaloes* (traitors), crossed the creek below and took our troops at the bridge in the rear. We had turned off from the main road from Tarboro to Williamston in order to come in by Hamilton to reinforce from the rear our troops at Butler's Bridge. After passing through or near the village of Hamilton, our regiment wearing long cape overcoats, and it being just before the dawn of day, to the surprise of officers and men, we found that we were marching side by side with the enemy. Lieutenant-Colonel Yellowley and the Colonel or officer commanding the Federal troops, were riding side by side. Yellowley supposed the other horseman was Colonel Hinton's body servant who was riding an extra horse of Colonel Hinton. He did not discover to the contrary until the Federal officer gave a command to the person riding by his side, supposing him to be his courier. Colonel Yellowley not obeying the command, caused a suspect that there was a jumble. Immediately the two Colonels separated, each commanding the attention of his troops, and a face to face skirmish took place. Several shots were fired, each side capturing some of their own men as prisoners. Having come together in the way described, and the most of the enemy gotten in advance of us, we had to fall back; but the troops at Butler's bridge, though flanked both front and rear, escaped by the fact that the cavalry being dismounted for skirmishing their horses which were held in the rear were stampeded by the sudden firing behind them broke loose and charged across the bridge. The enemy in front were stampeded by this, supposing we were advancing in force and our forces saved themselves by crosing over and turning to the right up the road to Tarboro. The enemy had turned to the left going back towards Spring Green

church. Colonel Hinton, however, who was at the Sherrod house unknowing of these movements, was captured, as was his brother, Joseph W Hinton, our Adjutant. But Adjutant Hinton made his escape after the break of day. The enemy at daylight fell back to Spring Green on the road to Williamston our forces following and driving them further.

BATTLE OF SOUTH WEST CREEK.

Then only a short time had elapsed when the regiment was ordered to a point just below Kinston, N. C., to reinforce General Hoke's command at a place known as Cobb's Mill, and here a heavy battle, the battle of South West Creek or Wise's Forks, 8 and 9 March, 1865, was fought. Our regiment was in the division of General Hoke and several of the regiment were killed and wounded. After this event the regiment was moved to a bridge across the Neuse river a short distance beyond Goldsboro, N. C., and there remained till the Federal forces had advanced from Kinston and stopped on the opposite side of the river for a night and day. At this place there was a little skirmish engagement. The bridge was burned and two or three of the regiment were wounded. Then a movement was made eastward, making no permanent stop at any place during which time orders were given to the officers of the several companies to return with their men to the respective communities in which they were mustered, seize and take from any neighbor a horse, where he had more than one, for the purpose of mounting each member of their companies and re-enlisting them into cavalry service. But while these orders were being carried into effect the information came that the chief commander of the army, General R. E. Lee, had surrendered. And thus each member of the several companies being at home, remained, with all the paraphernalia of a soldier without being discharged or mustered out of service in accordance with military rule; and so in the month of April, 1865, the career of the Sixty-eighth Regiment, North Carolina State Troops, came to an end.

TWO ADDITIONAL COMPANIES.

The writer deems it proper since the Roster of the North

Carolina Troops fails to give the names of the privates and non-commissioned officers of the several companies of the Sixty-eighth Regiment, to mention the names of a portion of two companies, as remembered by Mr. B. T. Daniel, a native of Roanoke Island, who is still living. He says that two other companies besides those above named were enlisted in the counties of Beaufort and Hyde, and belonged to the Sixty-eighth Regiment, and were supplied with guns, ammunition and all of a soldier's equipment, and that they were kept in these counties to watch the movements of the enemy, and that Laban Bridgeman was their Acting Quartermaster, through whom their military supplies were furnished and that they signed the quarterly pay rolls and same was forwarded to headquarters by Quartermaster Bridgeman, and also says that if the companies were designated by letters, that he don't remember them.

The names given and the county in which they resided at the time of enlistment are as follows:

COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

E. S. Swindell, Captain, and William N Spencer, Captain, both of Hyde County: William Windley, First Lieutenant, Beaufort county; Benjamin Boomer, Second Lieutenant, Hyde county; Dave Credle, Junior Second Lieutenant, Hyde county

NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

Elisha Credle, Sergeant, Beaufort county; Joseph Baum, Sergeant, Hyde county; Samuel Jones, Corporal, Hyde county; Josephus Flinn, Corporal, Beaufort county.

PRIVATES.—Jas. Pledger, Saunders Smith, William Williams, William Davis, John Swindell, Willis Williams, Nathaniel Gibbs, Frank O'Neal, Morgan O'Neal, David Johnson, David Gibbs, Stanley O'Neal, Richard Daniels, Jesse W Daniels, Frank Bell, George Boyd, of Hyde county; John Whitney, of Beaufort county; John Bell, Alvin Swindell, Asa Voliver, James Sadler, Joseph Spencer, Alexander Gibbs, Thomas Watson, Hyde county; B. T. Daniel, Amos R. Etheridge, Daniel B. Austin, John W Meekins, Samuel D. Hooker,

Dare county; Edward Burgess, Frank Credle, Hyde county; William O. Resspass, Fenner Respass, Beaufort county; names of other officers and men of these two companies are not now recalled.

JNO. W EVANS.

MANTEO, N. C.,
30 MAY, 1901.

ADDITIONAL SKETCH SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT

By W T. CAHO, Fourth Sergeant, Company C.

As there seems to be no record of this company on file in the Adjutant-General's office, the writer has undertaken to give a brief history of it. Thirty-six years having elapsed since the war between the States ended, and the writer being less than 18 years of age at the close of hostilities, and less than 16 years of age when he entered the service in this company, the history of the company will necessarily be brief and liable to have omitted a good many facts that would be of value and importance in its history.

IN NETHERCUTT'S BATTALION.

This company was raised or recruited near by and around Goldsboro, N. C., by Wiliam R. Bass, who had formerly held a commission as Second Lieutenant in Company I, Thirty-fifth Regiment, in the winter of 1862 and 1863. The officers first commissioned by the State for this company were: Captain, W R. Bass; Redden C. Barden, First Lieutenant, formerly Second Lieutenant Company K, Twenty-seventh North Carolina; Josiah W Smith, Second Lieutenant, formerly a private in Company K, Twenty-seventh North Carolina; and Erastus Smith, Junior Second Lieutenant. All of the officers were from Wayne county, and from the Nahunta and Saulston sections of the county. The company was first raised or recruited as a company of Partisan Rangers. Soon after its formation it was assigned to Major J. H. Nethercutt's Battalion (Eighth) and remained with that command until the formation of the Sixty-sixth Regiment by the uniting of Moore's and Nethercutt's Battalions, which took place in the latter part of the summer of 1863.

WILMINGTON.

Upon the formation of the Sixty-sixth Regiment, this com-

pany was not included in the regiment, but assigned to duty at some obstructions on the Cape Fear river a few miles below Wilmington, then known as Batteries or Forts Lee, Davis, Campbell and Meares. While here the company performed duty as heavy artillerists and infantry, furnishing details for train guards on the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad, the Wilmington & Manchester Railroad, and the river steamers that plied the Cape Fear river from Wilmington to Fayetteville, and from Wilmington to Smithville, Fort Caswell and other points on the lower Cape Fear river, besides other provost duties in Wilmington. Some time in the fall of 1864, this company was assigned to the Sixty-eighth Regiment of North Carolina Troops as Company C, and after the fall of Fort Fisher and the evacuation of Wilmington in January, 1865, this company was ordered to join the regiment which was then encamped on the Roanoke river near Fort Branch, below the town of Hamilton.

ASSIGNED TO SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

There we first joined the regiment and found it under the command of Edward C. Yellowley, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Pitt County. Remaining there for a few days the regiment was ordered to Williamston, N C., to gather in some commissary stores at that point; from there the regiment was ordered to Tarboro, thence to Goldsboro, and from Goldsboro to Kinston, N. C., where we met the advance of General Schofield's army on their line of march from New Bern to Goldsboro to form a junction with General Sherman. We met General Schofield at Wise's Fork or Cobb's Mill, a few miles from Kinston, on the New Bern road, and the regiment was engaged in that fight 8 and 9 March, 1865. We suffered some losses. I do not remember all of them. Ed. Sasser, of our company, was wounded in the arm; Wm. Taylor, of Wilson, in leg, and one —— Reid, of Company I, was wounded. They were on the sharpshooter line with the writer. There were other casualties. Our regiment was then brigaded with the Sixty-seventh Regiment, Sixty-fifth North Carolina (Sixth Cavalry) and some other unattached troops, and placed under the command of

General Lawrence S. Baker, and in that battle was on the extreme left wing of our army, which was commanded by General R. F. Hoke. We then fell back to Goldsboro and were engaged at the time of the Bentonville fight with Sherman's extreme right wing at Cox's bridge on the Neuse river, between Goldsboro and Smithfield, in Johnston county. Here we had quite a sharp encounter with the enemy. I do not remember the casualties. The men fully realized now that further continuance of the heroic struggle was useless. At this place in one night our Orderly Sergeant with eighty men of our company, went home, leaving only thirty-seven behind. I, with several others of our regiment, was sent off as a guard to the wagon train under the command of Captain S. G. Barrington, of the Sixty-seventh Regiment. From thence we went to Smithfield. At this point the writer was detailed as a guide to a scouting party composed of a part of the Fifty-first Regiment of Alabama Cavalry, a part of General Joseph Wheeler's command, and was with this command at the time of General Joseph E. Johnston's surrender, receiving his parole at the Yadkin river bridge, near Salisbury, and arrived home early in May, 1865. While with the Fifty-first Regiment of Alabama cavalry as a guide he led them through a portion of Wayne, Greene and Lenoir counties to the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad at Falling creek, where they cut the railroad and burned the bridge across Falling creek in the rear of General Schofield's command, and made a successful escape or retreat with some prisoners and stores which they captured.

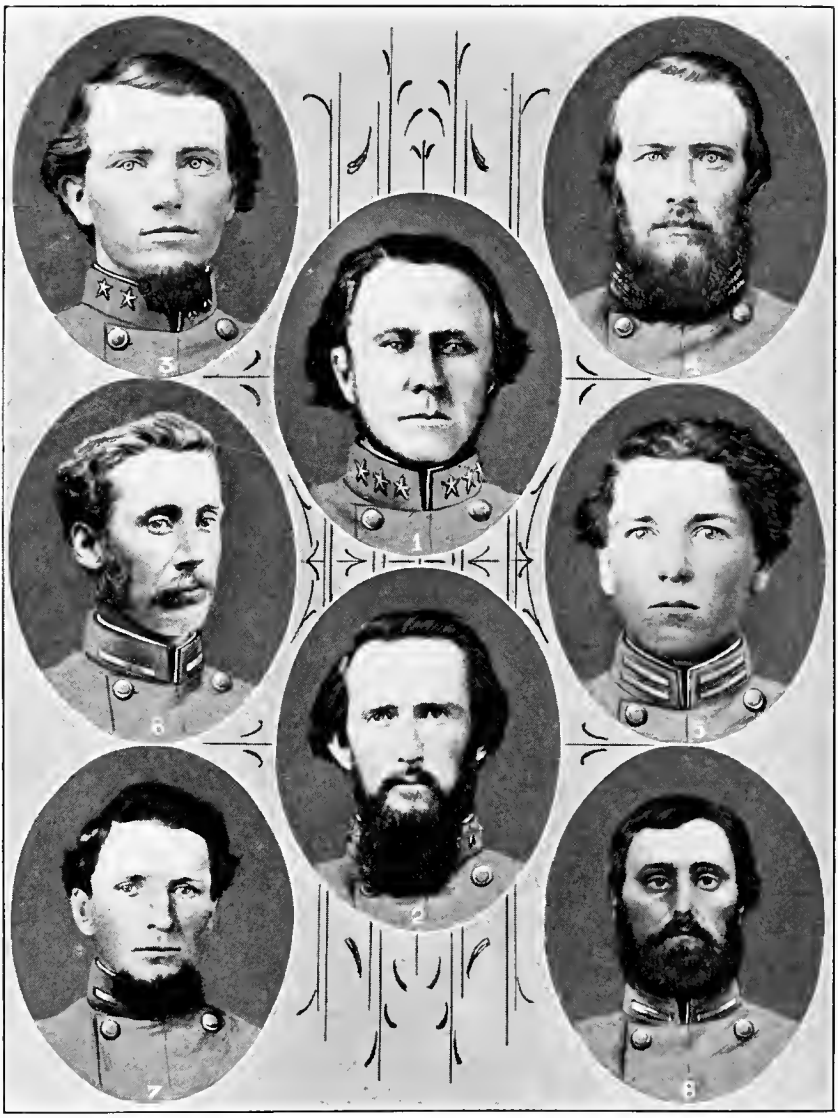
The writer did not rejoin his regiment or company, but learned that the regiment was mustered out of service or disbanded near Wilson, N. C., within about fifteen miles of his then home. While at Goldsboro in March, 1865, and a few days before the engagement related at Cox's bridge, the writer was promoted from a private to Fourth Sergeant in his company. At the time the company joined the regiment at Fort Branch it was officered then as follows: W R. Bass, Captain; Redden C. Barden, First Lieutenant; Isaac V Barden, Second Lieutenant, and Alex. H. Hamilton, Junior Second

Lieutenant, and Erastus Smith, Sr., Second Lieutenant. The company, first and last, had 156 members.

At the time of the enlistment of the writer, 11 July, 1863, he was 15 years, 11 months and 10 days old.

W T. CAHO.

BAYBORO, N. C.,
26 April, 1901.



SIXTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

1. William H. Thomas, Colonel.
2. James Robert Love, Colonel.
3. W. W. Stringfield, Lieut.-Colonel.
4. J. W. Cooper, Captain, Co. H.
5. R. T. Conley, 1st Lieut., Co. F.
6. D. K. Collins, 2d Lieut., Co. F.
7. James Conley, 2d Lieut., Co. F.
8. Wm. T. Welch, 2d Lieut., Co. F.

SIXTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

By W. W STRINGFIELD, Lieutenant Colonel.

This command was originally intended for local defense in the mountains of East Tennessee and Western North Carolina, and was generally known as part of "Thomas' Legion of Indians and Highlanders." Colonel W H. Thomas, its founder, was an old-line Democrat, and a leading citizen and politician in Western North Carolina—was a man of considerable means, and was personally well known to President Davis and Cabinet. He was born in Haywood county and raised to manhood close by the Cherokee Indians and at an early day espoused their cause, and prevented the forced removal to the West, of those in Western North Carolina, by General Scott in 1836 to 1838. He was adopted by the Indians and upon the deaths of their old chiefs, Yona-gus-kee and Juna-lus-kee, he was made chief and for twenty-five years prior to the war was also the Government Agent for these Indians.

When the war had progressed for a year and conscription had become a necessity and a certainty, this command was organized at Knoxville, Tenn., into a regiment and a battalion.

Several of the companies had been in service for several months, but General E. Kirby Smith, commander of the Department of East Tennessee and Western North Carolina (an old West Point army officer), was very much opposed to a temporizing or conservative policy, and would not allow Colonel Thomas the latitude he wanted; but the latter being a personal friend of President Davis, generally carried his points, and often went to Richmond to consult with him.

The organization of the regiment was completed at Knoxville, Tenn., 27 September, 1862, by the election of the following Field and Staff officers:

WILLIAM H. THOMAS, Colonel, Jackson county, N. C.
JAMES R. LOVE, Lieutenant-Colonel, Jackson county, N. C.
WILLIAM W STRINGFIELD, Major, Strawberry Plains, Tenn.
LUTHER C. MAY, Adjutant, Virginia.
JAMES W TERRELL, A. Q. M., Jackson county, N. C.
LUCIUS M. WELCH, A. C. S., Haywood county, N C.
JOHN W LAWING, Surgeon, Lincoln county, N. C.
JOHN C. LOVE, Assistant Surgeon, Jackson county, N. C.
HEZEKIAH WEST, Chaplain, Haywood county, N C.
ALEX. R. CARMACK, Sergeant Major, Pennsylvania.

COMPANY ORGANIZATION.

COMPANY A—*Indian Company*—Matthew Hale Love, Captain, Waynesville, N C.; Wm. S. Terrell, First Lieutenant, Sonoma, Haywood county, N. C.; John Astoo-ga Sto-ga, Peter Graybeard and David Whitaker, Second Lieutenants, all of Swain County, N. C. Total officers and men, 113.

COMPANY B—*Indian Company*—G. M. Hanks, Captain, July, 1862, Monroe county, Tenn.; James Taylor, Captain, November, 1862; H. R. Morris, First Lieutenant; Cam. H. Taylor, Second Lieutenant, all of Cherokee, N. C. Total officers and men, 118.

WHITE MEN.

COMPANY C—*Haywood County*—Dr. Elisha G. Johnson, Captain and Major; Wm. R. Trull, First Lieutenant and Captain; John H. Smathers, First Lieutenant; W D. Hall, E. W Morgan and W H. Moore, Second Lieutenants, all of Haywood county. Total officers and men, 123.

COMPANY D—*Jackson County, N C., and Jefferson County, Tenn.*—Wm. B. Love, Captain, Jackson county, N. C.; Ganium C McBee, First Lieutenant, Grainger county, Tenn.; Thomas R. Smart and Henry Needham, Second Lieutenants, Jefferson County, Tenn.; W W Jones, Second Lieutenant, North Carolina. Total officers and men, 125.

COMPANY E—*Haywood County*—Julius M. Welch, Captain; Thomas J Ferguson, First Lieutenant and Captain; J H. Moody, First Lieutenant, and Wm. C Brown, Second

Lieutenant, all of Haywood county. Total officers and men, 137.

COMPANY F—J M. McConnell, Captain; Wm. T. Welch and Robert T. Conley, First Lieutenants; James West and Jas. Conley, all of Jackson county. Total officers and men, 127

COMPANY G—*Jackson County*—Daniel G. Fisher, Captain; D. M. Raby, First Lieutenant; D. J. Allen and J B. Raby, Second Lieutenants, all of Jackson county. Officers and men, 71.

COMPANY H—*Cherokee County*—Thomas J Cooper, Captain, and Jas. W Cooper, Captain; Lafayette George, First Lieutenant; Eli Ingram and ——— ———, Second Lieutenants, Cherokee county. Number of officers and men, 114.

COMPANY I—*Cherokee County*—Willis Parker, Captain, and Jos. A. Kimsey, Captain; Sol. E. Egan, First Lieutenant, all of Cherokee county; N. G. Phillips, First and Second Lieutenant, and P B. Gailer, Second Lieutenant, both of Graham county. Number of officers and men, 109.

COMPANY K—T. A. Butler, Captain; Lewis Rector, First Lieutenant; D. H. Gallahar, Second Lieutenant, all of Union county, Tenn. Number of officers and men, 91.

Total number of officers and men in the regiment, 1,125.

As above organized this regiment presented quite a formidable array—with a muster roll of nearly 1,200 men—most of them vigorous, patriotic and gallant. The officers were representative men in their several counties, and while unassuming to diffidence in private life and in camp, were a "lion-hearted host" in battle and upon the toilsome march. The officers were chosen from the ranks, but were not of necessity greatly, if at all, superior to their men. The response to this call left few men at home, but stern duty called and its summons was obeyed.

The practical leader of this regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel James R. Love, was a native of Jackson county, N. C., and had seen hard service in Virginia under Jackson, Hill and Lee. He was Captain of old Company L, of the Sixteenth

North Carolina, and at request of Colonel Thomas, he and his entire company was transferred to the Legion.

Colonel Love was a graduate of Emory and Henry College, studied law and was a member of the North Carolina Legislature, also after the war a member of the North Carolina Constitutional Convention (1863), and later of the State Senate; also a member of the Tennessee Senate, after his marriage and removal to that State, where he subsequently raised a family; died twelve or fifteen years since, honored and respected by all.

William W Stringfield, the writer of this sketch, was a native of Nashville, Tenn., and raised near Knoxville, Tenn. He was of old North Carolina stock, being a grandson of Jos. Williams, of Yadkin county. He was a private of the First Tennessee Cavalry, 1861. Captain of Company E, Thirty-first Tennessee Infantry, 1862, and Assistant Provost Marshal at Knoxville, 1862; elected Major of the Sixty-ninth Regiment 27 September, 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel, January, 1865.

After the war, married and located near Waynesville, N. C.—member of the North Carolina Legislature in 1882 and 1883, and of the State Senate in 1901. In 1895 was elected commander of the Confederate Veterans of Western North Carolina, and as a member of Military and Veteran Committee, feels and takes great pride and interest in all that pertains to the fame, fortune, welfare and success of all his old comrades, their widows and children.

Captain Elisha G. Johnson, of Company C., was promoted to Major of the regiment after its return from the Valley campaign in November, 1864. Major Johnson was an intelligent gentleman and a singularly brave soldier. He moved to Florida soon after the war, was elected to the State Senate, and finally was murdered at his own home in 1875 or 1876.

Captain James W Terrell was Captain of Company A, succeeding William H. Thomas and preceding M. H. Love. He was Chief Quartermaster of the regiment and faithful. He had the confidence of his neighbors, and has represented

them (Jackson county) in the Legislature. He now resides in Webster, N. C.

Dr. Lawing was a good doctor and a kind man. Nothing known of him since the war. Dr. John Love was a kind man and good doctor. Died soon after the war from its exposures.

A. R. Carmack, Sergeant-Major, a Pennsylvanian by birth, was the son-in-law of a strong Union man in East Tennessee. He was a man among men, cool, clear-headed and brave; was wounded and captured at Cedar creek; lived in Kansas since driven from East Tennessee in 1866-'67, and died recently, 18 December, 1900, in Texas, beloved by all.

Lucius M. Welch, Assistant Commissary, is a native son of Haywood county. He was quite young in those days, but made a faithful Commissary. He now lives near Waynesville.

The Adjutant of the regiment, Captain L. M. May, was a graduate of the Naval Academy at Annapolis, Md., a Virginian by birth and an elegant gentleman.

Aside from this the entire command was composed of citizen soldiery—educated for peace, but not afraid of war. After the organization and equipment of the regiment the companies were scattered throughout upper East Tennessee, between Knoxville and Bristol. The battalion of our legion whose story will hereafter be told, was sent below Knoxville, toward Chattanooga, and Cleveland, Tenn., and Dalton, Ga., was raised to a regiment (Eightieth North Carolina) and becoming a part of Bragg's army was never reunited to the old Legion.

ENFORCING CONSCRIPTION.

About this time the enforcement of the conscript law was begun in earnest, and consequently it was a serious time in the short life of the Southern Confederacy—and thinking men were fully alive to the herculean task before us. East Tennessee was placed under martial law and many of the most prominent citizens were in rebellion against the South. The celebrated Parson Brownlow, editor of the Knoxville *Whig,* a widely circulated paper, who was afterwards elected

Governor of Tennessee, and after the war was United States Senator, took bold grounds against the South. His paper had some circulation in Western North Carolina, and quite an influence with the old Whig element. Brownlow was a kind man at heart, to those that did not cross him personally. If he had been reasoned with instead of being bitterly denounced he and numerous others would have espoused the Southern cause. But then, as now, party passion often dethrones reason. Brownlow, with such men as Governor Andrew Johnson, then United States Senator, and afterwards President of the United States; Horace Maynard, member of Congress; Thos. A. R. Nelson, John Netherland, R. R. Butler, members of Congress: Rev. N. G. Taylor, also an old Congressman, father of Governor Bob. Taylor, with scores of smaller, but equally determined men, boldly threw themselves into the breach, openly defied the South, and in large numbers daily left Tennessee, crossing the Cumberland mountains and joined the Federal army in Kentucky and Ohio.

The wisest statesmen of the South were divided as to the best policy to pursue, but Southern blood was aroused and Southern men were expected to stand by the South, right or wrong. There was much homogeneousness between these mountain people of Tennessee and North Carolina, and there is an independence of thought, speech and action in the average mountaineer, not usually found elsewhere, superinduced perhaps by their grandly beautiful surroundings, combining as some think, to the development of a high type of physical, intellectual and spiritual manhood.

A great majority of the people were poor and had no interest in slavery, present or prospective. But most of them had little mountain homes, and "be it ever so humble, there is no place like home." So when husband, father and brother went into the army the wife, sister and daughter had largely increased home cares, and often went into the corn field.

No grander type of womanhood is developed anywhere than in these mountains. Neither the men or women were cowards, but when the Federal army occupied East Tennessee and threatened North Carolina, the women in their lonesome homes naturally became restless and timid, made more

so when spies and forays of the enemy penetrated this country. Soldiers in the army would have been unnatural protectors of home, had they not become uneasy also, and oft times desperate, especially when informed, as hundreds were, that their homes had been robbed and the country pillaged, as was the case for two years in all the border counties along the Tennessee line from Ducktown to Watauga, a distance of near 200 miles. No people were more zealous for the South than Western Carolinians, after the rejection by the Lincoln regime of the peace overtures made by the border States. East Tennessee and Western North Carolina had a common heritage of ancestral heroes through the Seviers, Tiptons, Averys, Campbells, Lenoirs, Loves, McDowells, Brittons, and others, who fought at King's Mountain, Cowpens and Guilford Court House; in later years at Lookout, Emuckfau, Horseshoe, and New Orleans, and later still in the numerous battles of Mexico. Such an element may be easily led, but never forced. In Tennessee this anti-war element was fully aroused and as soon as conscription was fully determined upon, Colonel Wm. H. Thomas at once went to Richmond to get a modification of the law. His efforts were unavailing, the law must be enforced; it was enforced and 33,000 were added to the Federals and a few thousand fire-tried veterans to the Southern army. Colonel Thomas largely recruited his own command, forming soon afterwards another regiment, with two companies of Sappers and Miners, and one company of artillery (Levy's Battery).

He had some unique ideas concerning these matters, and while known to be intensely loyal to the South, he had gained the confidence of this East Tennessee disloyal element and several thousand at various times had agreed to form companies for local defense, and for road and bridge building. Not being allowed to do this, these men went to the Federal army and ever afterwards were troublesome enemies.

From September, 1862, to June, 1863, there was little to break the monotony of camp life and provost duty. There was much of an unpleasant nature to be done by men of similar characters. Enforcing conscription—disarming the people—the impressment of property, forcing magistrates and

civil authorities to take an oath of allegiance to the Confederacy, was disagreeable work. Much hard work was done in building block houses and stockades on the entire railroad line, 250 miles. This was a fine agricultural region and an indispensable line of communication between the armies of Lee and Bragg.

President Davis consented to evacuation only as a trap for Burnside's army, but the cowardly surrender of Cumberland Gap by General J. W Frazer, 9 September, 1863, however, proved it a double triggered trap for us. The Federal authorities were fully alive to the importance of grasping from us and holding this section, so fertile for all, and so loyal to them, being urged thereto by the highest consideration of honor, duty and interest.

The Sixty-ninth Regiment was never idle, especially after current rumors of Federal invasion early in 1862, following the defeat and death of the noble Zollicoffer at Fishing Creek. This defeat practically made the Cumberland Mountains our line of defense. The Union element became restless and defiant and many were arrested and sent South to prison.

INDIANS IN BATTLE.

Several companies of the Sixty-ninth were ordered to Powell's Valley in 1862, between Jacksboro and Cumberland Gap —one Indian company at Baptist Gap had quite a battle with some Federals, killing, wounding and driving back their force. The Indians were led by Lieutenant Astooga Stoga, a splendid specimen of Indian manhood and warrior, who was killed in the charge. This noble Indian is worthy of a lengthy sketch, but the writer has not the data, if he had time and space. Like most of the leading Indians of his tribe, he was a professed Christian, and largely by his efforts the New Testament was translated into the Cherokee language by the great American Bible Society. The Indians were furious at his death and before they could be restrained, they scalped several of the Federal wounded and dead, for which ample apology was made at the time. In the Spring of 1863 the regiment in General A. E. Jackson's Brigade was in the Department of East Tennessee commanded by Brigadier-Gen-

eral Daniel S. Donalson. In March, 1863, it was at Strawberry Plains and in April at Jonesboro, and in July at Zollicoffer, Tenn. *35 Official Records Union and Confederate Armies, 711, 792.*

Some time afterwards Bragg's army entered Kentucky from middle Tennessee, and after quite a campaign there, returned to Tennessee by way of Cumberland Gap to Knoxville. This campaign caused a temporary lull in East Tennessee affairs, but the retreat of Lee from Maryland and Pennsylvania and the surrender of Vicksburg was followed by outspoken defiance all over East Tennessee.

Spies and recruiting officers from the Union Army were almost everywhere. Several cavalry raids burned and attempted to burn railroad bridges and depots until finally, on 4 September, General Burnside captured Knoxville, the stronghold of East Tennessee, without firing a gun or meeting an enemy. Some time prior to this all the white companies of the regiment and several companies of Walker's Battalion (of our Legion) were concentrated for drill and discipline at Greenville, Tenn., and were brigaded with the Sixtieth and Sixty-second Regiments and Twelfth Battalion, Georgia Troops, and several Virginia, Georgia and Florida Regiments.

After Burnside's occupancy of Knoxville there was a general "On to Richmond," "On to Chattanooga," and "On to Atlanta" cry in the Federal army. The hopes of this cry were realized afterwards, but at very great cost of life to the enemy. Those were gloomy days to those of us who left our homes and loved ones at the mercy of the enemy. This territory was never reclaimed, afterwards almost every foot of it was fought over, time and again, and its occupancy was costly to the enemy, but of great political significance to them.

Part of the Sixty-ninth and most of the Eightieth (Walker's Battalion, which had been raised to a regiment), with detachments of the Twenty-ninth, Thirty-ninth, Sixtieth and Sixty-second North Carolina Regiments, fell back to the gap of the Smoky Mountains, or the North Carolina line, there to guard against the invasion of that region.

The greater part of the Sixty-ninth, with part of Singleton's, Berry's, Whitaker's and Aikin's companies of the Eightieth, fell back towards Bristol, Va. Immediately upon his occupancy of Knoxville, Burnside sent forces up the railroad which had been surrendered without a struggle, or the destruction of a bridge, to Jonesboro, Tenn., also sent cavalry to Blount, Sevier, Cocke, and Washington counties, Tennessee, guarding against surprises from that direction, and threatening North and South Carolina by way of Murphy, Webster, Waynesville and Asheville, and attempting to capture Colonel Thomas' forces, good turnpike roads penetrating these mountains. But the "fighting end" of Thomas' Legion was not idle in upper East Tennessee, and marched and counter-marched in every county in that end of the State, and up to Saltville, Va., leaving the bones of their comrades (since kindly gathered at Knoxville by the noble women of Tennessee) all over that section.

TENNESSEE ABANDONED.

When Tennessee was fully surrendered great gloom overspread the soldiers from the border States, and many Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama and North Carolina troops returned to their homes. Bragg's army with a muster roll of 83,767, had few over 40,000 guns, and guns are all that count in battle.

General Bragg wrote to General Lee that after seven months of conscription, not a soldier was added to his army; that Kentucky, Tennessee and North Carolina troops could not be depended upon, a very unjust aspersion cast upon all, especially North Carolinians, most of whom, even after leaving their regiments in the East and West, did good service at home. No section of the Union furnished as many soldiers to the Union Army according to the population as East Tennessee. With such surroundings as these it is no wonder that so many were induced to desert, or more properly stated, returned to their homes.

The same day that General Burnside occupied Knoxville, Colonel Thomas, with several hundred men, fell back from Strawberry Plains, passing through Sevierville to the North

Carolina line, taking all the Indians and many whites. He was closely followed by the Federals and had quite a skirmish near Sevierville, on 7 or 8 September, 1863, but he crossed the Smoky Mountains and at once securely blockaded all the roads leading in that direction from near Paint Rock to near Ducktown.

Lieutenant-Colonel Love and Major Stringfield, with 600 or 700 men, were ordered to fortify and hold Carter's Depot at the railroad bridge across the Watauga, about twenty miles west of Bristol.

General John S. Williams, of Kentucky, since United States Senator, then commanded the Department of East Tennessee which was abandoned to the foe, after the shameful surrender of Cumberland Gap 9 September, 1863.

CAMPAIGNING IN EAST TENNESSEE.

Burnside's forces, composed largely of native Tennesseeans, rather recklessly took charge of the country. One regiment of troops (One Hundredth Ohio) went to Jonesboro on the cars 5 September, 1863, and several hundred ventured up to Carter's and demanded the surrender of the fort. The next day Major Stringfield was ordered to take 200 of his men and a battalion of cavalry (McLin) under Captain D. D. Anderson, and reconnoitre the position of the enemy. He took this force to Jonesboro and below. On 7 September General A. E. Jackson came up with the balance of the Sixty-ninth North Carolina, the Fourth Kentucky Cavalry and Sixteenth Georgia Cavalry and Borrough's Battery, and learning that the enemy were fortifying in and around the old limestone blockhouse and a stone mansion near by, the Sixty-ninth was ordered up by General Jackson and at 3:00 a. m. on the 8th, we drove them from Telford's depot to Limestone, where they made a determined stand, evidently being handled by some veteran officers. Closing in upon them on all sides, we forced them to surrender with a loss of 20 killed, 30 wounded and 314 prisoners, with 400 splendid small arms. Our loss was six killed and fifteen wounded. Our regiment was immediately armed with the guns here captured (Enfield

rifles). The enemy were the One Hundredth Ohio Regiment (Infantry) and were a fine looking body of men. Knowing that this capture would arouse the enemy, we fell back towards Carter's. Ten days afterwards the enemy approaching in force with several regiments of cavalry, battle was given them at Carter's. Our cavalry was much weaker than theirs. Owing to the general advance movements by the enemy, the capture of Cumberland Gap, or rather its shameful surrender by General Frazer 9 September, 1863, and advance movements all up to the Salt Works and into West Virginia—a long line of defense—we were compelled to draw in our line and concentrate our forces.

Our position at Carter's on the east bank of the Watauga river, was impregnable, and the enemy, after two assaults, flanked us at Devault's Ford on the north, and Taylor's on the south side, causing us to fall back to Zollicoffer, or "Union Depot," now Bluff City. The enemy about this time hearing about our great victory over them at Chickamauga, hastily retired towards Knoxville. We followed them to Bull's Gap, the Sixty-ninth being the only infantry regiment. On 5 October, 1863, the cavalry had a fight at Greenville, killing seven, wounding twelve and capturing ten of the enemy, with a loss of three killed and seven wounded, General Jno. S. Williams, of "Cerro Gordo" fame, commanding our troops. On 15 October, after several days skirmishing with the enemy, General Williams gave battle at Blue Springs with his 1,800 dismounted men, holding in check Burnside's 7,000 veterans. The Sixty-ninth was ordered to his aid, but hearing of a flank movement of the enemy, we were ordered to retreat towards Jonesboro, and finally to Abingdon, Va. In our retreat three miles above Greenville, our cattle, wagons, artillery and infantry, in order named, were surrounded before we knew it. General Burnside had thrown General Foster with 3,000 cavalry in our front, attempting our capture. The first intimation we had of their presence was in the capture of our Adjutant, L. C. May, and Captain Tip (H. H.) Taylor, Acting Adjutant-General of our brigade. Captain May escaped and gave us warning.

GREENVILLE, TENN.

In a few moments after the presence of the enemy was known Colonel Love turned back the wagons, ordered forward the Sixty-ninth at double quick, threw it in line of battle across the road, and bringing forward the artillery, began at the earliest dawn of day a furious artillery fire upon the enemy in corn fields and meadows confronting us, fortunately for us, bursting shells in their very midst. Before they could realize the sudden change of the situation, the Sixty-ninth, with the "bear hunter's rebel yell," was upon them. Our men realized at once that quick and deadly work must be done, or we would all be captured. The entire 600 men at sunrise dashed forward at the enemy in a heavy skirmish line, Love upon the right and Stringfield upon the left, with company officers all in place, all cheering and directing their men. Lieutenant Welch, of Company F, afterwards killed at Winchester, was shot through the thigh by the side of the writer; very few others hurt. This was a running fight for ten miles. Two Federals were killed in the yard of Senator Patterson, son-in-law of President Johnson. Twelve or fifteen others were killed. General Williams, while slowly retreating before Burnside, heard our artillery open upon the enemy. Dashing forward at a gallop, he materially aided us in the achievement of one of the most brilliant retreats of the war. General Williams was profuse in his compliments, personally and in special orders, to our regiment. We retreated sixty-two miles in thirty hours, fighting and driving the enemy much of the way towards Jonesboro, but not losing cattle or wagons and but few men. The retreat did not stop until we reached Virginia and fortified Abingdon, and covered Saltville, where we were reinforced by the brigades of Corse and Wharton, Virginia troops, under General Robert Ransom. We remained quietly here until 1 November, when we began another forward movement towards Knoxville, Tenn. While here a beautiful Carolina maiden, having heard of the heroism of our men and of complimentary orders about them, sent the following acrostic to our gallant Colonel, J R. Love,

who several years since has "crossed over the river and is resting under the shade of the trees."

"J oined to a gallant band,
'R ound their colors sworn to stand;
L egions 'gainst you, rushing came,
O you drove them back again.
V otes of thanks, so well deserved,
E ver greet such men of nerve."

BLOUNTSVILLE, TENN.

While we were waiting a few days near Blountsville, Tenn., our cavalry under William E. Jones, made a nice capture of twelve or fifteen hundred of the enemy's cavalry at Rogersville, and near 100 wagons of the Second Tennessee (United States) and Seventh Ohio. The citizens here-abouts were mostly our friends, something unusual in East Tennessee, and had noble kindred in our army, mostly with Bragg.

While around Blountsville, company and regimental drill was daily enforced. Lieutenant Thomas Ferguson, a good soldier, afterwards made Captain and captured at Piedmont, joined us here with 75 recruits. A painful example for discipline was made here, one poor fellow of Company K, a Tennesseean, with two others of Tennessee troops, captured at Rogersville, Tenn., by General W E. Jones, in the uniform of the enemy, were court-martialed and shot at the stake. The army then moved down the Rogersville and Kingsport Valley towards Knoxville, on the north side of Holston river, wading the river and creeks in the ice.

General Robert Ransom was a fine disciplinarian and fighter. Sometimes unpopular in camp, or upon the march, but universally popular in battle, where it was an inspiration to see him. He did not "snuff battle from afar," but rushed into the thickest fray, to cheer and guide his men. In all this dread winter campaign the Sixty-ninth were cheerful and obedient. Winter quarters were built near Rogersville in December, but were occupied only one week. After this neither the men or officers had tents or houses, but faced the storms of rain and snow, mud and ice, in tramps several miles above and below Rogersville, down towards Knoxville.

General Alfred E. Jackson was our brigade commander

this winter in all our campaigns. He was a cultivated gentleman and personally a brave man. He was a good man and always managed the men to the best advantage in so hostile a region. He was personally and scrupulously honest, and demanded the same of his men; but he was a little too strict for the "old soldier" ideas of those who wanted to prowl. The marches below Rogersville and down to Blaine's Cross Roads were mostly made in bad, and very cold weather. When we met Longstreet's returning forces after his repulse at Knoxville, and our great defeat at Missionary Ridge, the entire army fell back near Rogersville, and the Sixty-ninth, with others crossed the Holston river and went into camp on the railroad near Russelville on 1 January, 1864. Soon afterwards the Sixty-ninth returned to our old quarters at Carter's Depot, where with that as a base of operations we could "swing around" the mountains on several trips after "renegades," blockade stills and deserters.

CARTER'S, TENN.

About 1 April, 1864, Longstreet's army returned to Richmond and several of Burnside's regiments returned to their old game of annoying us. On 26 April we were assaulted by the Third Indiana and Ninth Michigan Cavalry at Carter's, but we nicely repulsed them. Our loss, one killed and five captured. Theirs, twenty killed and wounded—our regiment alone engaged. At this time and place the writer, with 250 men, was ordered to cross the railroad bridge and reconnoitre the enemy. The troops were left in the railroad cut at the end of the bridge, under Captain J. W Cooper, a brave and gallant Southron, while I looked ahead and around a little, taking Lieutenant Gallahar, of Company K. We walked a quarter of a mile ahead through the fields. While here I discovered a flank movement of the enemy on the ridge, south and west, and ordered the men by a wave of the hand into the fort. In the meanwhile, the enemy seeing their movements discovered, charged up through the fields and woods, 1,800 strong, with yells and the huzzahs peculiar to themselves. Captains Welch, Cooper and McConnell, Lieutenants Conley and Gallahar and the men, every one of them,

acted with conspicuous bravery. Seeing ourselves outflanked on both sides of the fort, I ordered the men back to the friendly protection of an old time saw and grist mill on the river bank, and here in a hand-to-hand fight up to the water's edge, we fought, and finally drove the enemy back, killing a Major of the Ninth Michigan and a Lieutenant and a number of the men at the very side of the water. We were ordered to retire to the east side of the Watauga river, recrossing the bridge, but the enemy were too close upon us, and the river at our backs. It was "hilt to hilt" indeed. We had the right wing of the enemy to fight—four or five to one. Their left wing was upon the north side of the railroad and up to the railroad bridge, thus completely cutting off our route across the bridge; but our friends on the east side of the bridge, while cut off from us, were by no means idle. With six or eight cannon and long range guns, they materially aided us in driving back the enemy. I wish also, in addition to officers named, to add the names of Captains Butler and Phillips, Lieutenants Peck, Raby and Sergeant-Major Carmack and others who were conspicuous for their gallantry.

After this repulse the enemy remained quiet till night, during most of which they "shelled the woods" and our army, flanking our position next day and again forcing us to fall back to Zollicoffer (now Bluff City) and on to Bristol.

SALTVILLE, VA.

The first week in May we were ordered to the Salt Works, Virginia, where we remained till 1 June, when we were sent to the Valley of Virginia. While at Saltville, Va., our men were constantly drilled and disciplined. While here the enemy in the meanwhile were making tremendous efforts to take and hold all of East Tennessee and South West Virginia. The Salt Works were an especial object of interest and around here were raids and fights all the balance of the war. While here the railroad having been cut and held by the enemy, we had double rations of rice, salt and water for near three weeks, and nothing else.

The Valley campaign being one of the most exciting as well as one of the most interesting of the war, is deserving of

a more extensive notice than can be given in this sketch. At the time of our hasty departure from Southwest Virginia for the Valley, orders had been issued by the War Department for our transfer to Western North Carolina. Colonel Thomas had manfully worked to that end. He claimed with truth and much force that troops were needed in North Carolina to protect that section, as well as upper South Carolina and Georgia. Many of the men had joined the regiment upon the express understanding that it was for home defense; but Hunter's raid up the Valley demanded our immediate attention and we must go. Several East Tennessee cavalry regiments went with us. We left horses and "bag and baggage" behind, regimental officers and all. The First, Third and Fourteenth Tennessee Cavalry, under General John C. Vaughn, Colonel James E. Carter and Lieutenant-Colonel Key—the latter since well known as United States Senator, Postmaster-General under President Hayes, and Federal Judge at Knoxville, since dead. Colonel Carter, of the First Tennessee Cavalry, was a brave and knightly Southron, cool, clear-headed and fearless—"*Sans peur et sans reproche.*" The same may be said of General Vaughn. Several Virginia infantry regiments also went with us from New River bridge —the Thirty-sixth, Forty-fifth, Fifty-first and Sixtieth. These were good men and had recently passed through a fiery ordeal in Southwest Virginia, where most of their regimental and company officers were killed, wounded or captured. Colonel Thomas A. Smith, Colonel of the Thirty-sixth Virginia, was also along, and after the killing of Colonel Brown, brigade commander, at Piedmont 5 June, Colonel Smith continued to command us while in the Valley. He was always kind, considerate and knightly in camp or upon the march—in battle he was little less than bridled lightning. He was a great favorite with our men.

STAUNTON, VA.

We reached Staunton via Lynchburg, Gordonsville and Charlottesville in June, on the 2d day of the month in the afternoon. At once drew and cooked three days' rations and marched towards the enemy, brigaded with the Vir-

ginians as above. For several days we were marched around, seemingly in circles, to get at the enemy's infantry, held back behind their cavalry, who were desolating the country, burning houses, barns, mills, grain and frightening the poor unarmed women. About this time it was seemingly agreed between Sheridan, Hunter, Grant and Sherman that they could not whip the men until they had desolated their homes, insulted and driven off their families and destroyed property, as was done in Tennessee, Virginia and Georgia.

But this is a digression, warranted however, we think, by the terrible destruction seen all around. On the morning of 5 June the enemy's infantry having been located, General Wm. E. Jones, after a march and double quick of sixteen miles, threw his army across the valley, crossing the turnpike between the villages of Piedmont and New Hope, eight or ten miles north of Staunton. Our cavalry in the meanwhile was holding the enemy in check till the infantry was in position. The middle or right centre of our line ran up at right angles and eastward, and then south with the Valley turnpike, one-fourth mile or more; thence eastward again, to the Blue Ridge, on the extreme right. The position of the Sixty-ninth as developed in the battle, was the most perilous of any of our forces, being on an elevation facing cleared fields north, west and east, and being at the angle on the turnpike, six companies on the line west of and two running south with the pike.

Generals Imboden and Rosser and other cavalry on our flanks, did noble service, but as all of our general officers were killed and no one left was fully conversant with the country and troops, no one has written any report that I have seen, nor has any special report been made by General Hunter. It is impossible, therefore, to give an intelligent idea of the battle, but from the best information gathered, General Jones kept the most of his troops on his left flank up to, and probably across the Shenandoah river, and with the Sixtieth, Fifty-first, Forty-fifth and Thirty-sixth Virginia Regiments, and such others as he had still further west held the line. Our cavalry had engaged the enemy hotly from early dawn on both sides of the turnpike, and when our regiment got into position, and in haste, threw up breastworks of rails, the en-

emy rushed upon us, but meeting so warm a reception, they retired in disorder. Coming again and again, we drove them back nicely every time. The right wing of our line rested upon and went south with the turnpike.

The enemy's wagons, plainly visible one mile distant, turned back and began a retreat. Our men were jubilant and wanted to pursue, but a flank movement was discovered and the enemy being reinforced by Averill with 6,000 or 8,000 troops, our right flank was turned and we were driven back in some disorder, but with the loss of no wagons or cannon except the small battery of four guns, at the angle of our line and immediately supported by the Sixty-ninth. This battery was furiously fired upon and silenced in the early morning fight by thirty of the enemy's guns. Being defeated all along our lines the enemy attempted this flank movement which was finally successful. General Jones hearing of this movement, bravely ran his horse out between the lines and instantly comprehended the gravity of the situation. Dashing back for aid he called out as he passed us, "Brave Carolinians, I'll bring you help." He did return very soon with the Thirty-sixth and Sixtieth Virginia Regiments; but it was too late. He vainly attempted to repel this assault, now furiously made all along the lines. He was killed in this action, madly dashing at the very guns of the enemy. Upon the fall of Jones, our forces retired, a while in disorder, but soon rallied. Colonel Jones, of our brigade, was also killed, with several other valuable officers. The Sixty-ninth lost a number of brave officers and men. Captain Julius M. Welch, of Company E, a heroic, Christian soldier, Lieutenant James Conley, Lieutenant Adam Peck, Company D; Sergeant Welch, Company F, and several others whose names are forgotten by the writer. Southern men seldom fought better than upon this occasion. Every officer and man seemed to imbibe the dauntless spirit of our leaders.

Our forces retreated slowly and sullenly towards Staunton. The loss of the enemy was very great in killed and wounded, with only two prisoners. Our loss was 100 killed, 250 wounded and near 955 prisoners. Loss of the Sixty-ninth, 20 killed, 30 wounded and 21 missing. Our loss in

prisoners was great because of the loss of our leaders and guides who knew the country and our men were picked up by the enemy's cavalry. Finally Brigadier-General J. C. Vaughn, of the Tennessee troops, succeeded in taking our men off of the field with little confusion and no loss of guns or wagons. A short while after the Tenth New York (Cavalry) charged upon our rear, with sabers glittering in the sunlight, and the cheers of victors. General Vaughn gave them a warm reception with grape and canister in an open field. The rear guard of the Sixty-ninth, commanded by Major Stringfield, also repulsed them in a hand-to-hand fight, and in a personal combat he killed one and captured another of the enemy. This stopped their pursuit.

LYNCHBURG, VA.

After this our army fell back to Rockfish Gap, awaiting another battle with the enemy; but they much preferred burning houses and desolating the country, which they did at Staunton, Lexington and Lynchburg. In a day or so, General Breckinridge assumed command of our army. We then rapidly passed down Rockfish river through Amherst Court House and to Lynchburg. There in the breastworks we were largely reinforced by General Early. He at once assumed command and took the offensive, rapidly following General Hunter, who being greatly pressed and, as he says, out of ammunition, dodged off into and went down the Kanawha Valley, leaving our forces in the undisputed possession of the Shenandoah Valley.

LEXINGTON, VA.

Here began Early's celebrated campaign. The march down the valley was a triumphal one of twenty to twenty-five miles per day. In passing through Lexington, the West Point of the South, the home of Stonewall Jackson, and where his honored remains were buried, our entire army marched through the cemetery and around his grave with reversed arms and bowed heads, and memories thrilled with thoughts of this world renowned hero.

The Federals also seem to have visited his grave in great

numbers, and carried off as individual trophies the flagstaff and head-board—these being literally cut into splinters. What a grand sight to see the soldiery of two great opposing armies honoring this noble dead! Onward marched our army of 12,000 men.

"Proudly they tread, that gallant Southern host.
Forth marched they from mountain grove and coast;
Their hearts beat high, they thunder on the foe,
And like a whirlwind to the conflict go."

ON TO WASHINGTON.

We passed through Staunton, New Market, Harrisonburg, Strasburg and Winchester. At this last place we met an ovation indeed. The entire populace crowded the streets and nearly wild with joy mothers, wives and sisters embraced sons, husbands and brothers, as they marched on—none being allowed to stop. On we went. "On to Washington" was our cry, and on to Washington we went, capturing a splendid 4 July dinner at Martinsburg. We crossed the Potomac 5 July, wading through it and camping on the old battle ground of Antietam. On 6 and 7 July our army went near to, but did not capture Harper's Ferry. On 8 July we passed Middletown; on the 9th, Frederick City. At this place our gallant General Rodes whipped Lew Wallace and sent him whirling a la "Ben Hur chariot race," towards Baltimore.

Our corps (Breckinridge's) camped upon the battlefield at night, although we had no part in the battle as a regiment. On Sunday, 10 July, we marched twenty-two miles toward Washington City, forty miles distant. On 11 July we reached the outer works, Fort Stevens. General Early demanded the surrender of the city, and captured their outer lines. We burned the palatial mansion of Postmaster-General Blair, in retaliation for the burning, by Hunter, of Governor Letcher's residence at Lexington, Va., one month before. It was the universal opinion of the army that we could have taken the city, although those in General Early's confidence say that he was well posted as to the movements of the enemy. As we neared the city and the country and village people saw our army, they were amazed, and many per-

sons told us we would have no trouble to capture the city. The truth is, as developed since, the Federal authorities had no idea of our numbers until after Lew Wallace's defeat at Monocacy two days before. Up to two hours before his repulse he had sent vainglorious dispatches to Secretary Stanton as to how he was going to thrash out "Mosby and his crowd." After that repulse, however, when Baltimore and Washington were both at our mercy, they became really alarmed—Governor Curtin, of Pennsylvania; Governor Dix, of New York; President Lincoln, Secretary Stanton, President Garrett, of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, and others, became frantic.

Our men were much displeased at the tardiness of General Early, who has been severely criticised, both North and South, but notwithstanding all the criticisms of those times, General Early had a warm friend in General Lee, who refused to remove him. In the afternoon of 12 July our army slowly began a retreat towards the Virginia line, taking immense supplies of horses, cattle, mules and commissary stores. On the 13th we marched to Poolsville, Md. On the 14th we crossed the Potomac, back into Virginia, still unmolested by the boastful foe who was going to "gobble up" the whole of us.

Thus ended one of the most remarkable "raids" of the war. General Early deserved much credit for its success, even without the capture of Washington City. On 15 July we rested near the historic battlefield of Leesburg and Ball's Bluff. While here the enemy tried a little "bluff game" upon us, but our regimental sharpshooters and others, under the gallant Captain Robert Conley, drove them into the river at Snicker's Ferry. I am sorry that I cannot recall the names of our twenty sharpshooters. Privates Thomas Love and Kimsey Collins are all whom I can now name. They were all splendid fellows. Collins is a well-to-do merchant of Bryson City, N. C., and was last year commander of the Western North Carolina Veterans.

From 16 to 24 July we leisurely moved back, to and up the Valley, passing Berryville, Newton, Millwood, Middletown, to Strasburg, several days in line of battle.

IN THE VALLEY OF VIRGINIA.

On the 24th the enemy, 16,000 strong, under Cook, Averill and Mulligan, pressing us pretty strong, we turned upon them, our division (Wharton's) making the flank movement and routing them, "horse, foot and dragoons," drove them "pell-mell" through Kernstown and Winchester. General Mulligan was killed in front of the Sixty-ninth, or mortally wounded, and died a few hours afterwards in the tent of General Rodes. He probably would not have been killed but for the persistency of his color guard in waving a flag over his prostrate form. As we made our movements by the right flank, it threw us—in advancing upon the enemy—touching elbows with the "Old Stonewall Brigade" on our left, and when known to our men, a shout rent the air. The fruit of this victory was the capturing of 1,200 or 1,500 prisoners, and several stands of arms, wagons, cannon, etc. Generals Breckinridge, Wharton and Col. Tom Smith, our Corps, division and brigade leaders, and Colonel Love, Major McKamy and all company officers and men did well and were conspicuous for gallantry

On 25, 26 and 27 July, we again went down the valley to and along the Opequon.

On 1 August our cavalry went over into Maryland, where we again took a ten days' tramp from Shepherdstown around to Williamsport, etc. On 8, 9 and 10 August we fell back from Darksville, Berryville and Bunker Hill, to Strasburg, as the enemy was largely reinforced and led by Sheridan, who gave us battle every day. Their cavalry was daring, but their infantry were not of much force, made up of city scum and foreign mercenaries.

KERNSTOWN.

On 18 August we gave the enemy battle at Kernstown and again drove them two miles north of Winchester. Our regiment led in this assault upon and capture of the fort, northwest of the town. General John C. Breckinridge, our corps commander on foot, and wearing a linen duster, was along leading the charge, which continued till after dark, and we became separated from the line on the east of Valley pike and

the town. In this charge a cannon ball passed under the writer, tearing a great hole in the ground.

We halted on the north side of the fort, after capturing a Dutch or Hessian picket of thirty men, and after readjusting our line fell back a half mile to our main army.

On 21 August we had another "spat" with the enemy, our sharpshooters only engaged. This was near the historic town of Charleston, where

> "Old John Brown was hung,
> The last word he sung,
> Oh don't keep me long here remaining,
> So they took him up a slope
> And hung him with a rope,
> And cast him in the happy land of Canaan."

LEETOWN, VA.

On 23 August we fought the battle of Leetown, losing 25 men in an ambuscade. Sheridan's entire cavalry force confronted us. Early expecting only a small skirmish, was leisurely riding along with his staff. Our sharpshooters being severely pressed, were reinforced by the entire Fifty-first Virginia Regiment of our division and brigade. Generals Breckinridge and Wharton, our corps and division commanders, with their staff, were also along. This writer being that day on Breckinridge's staff as officer of the day, was close up to the front, when suddenly a battery of several guns was unmasked close upon us, on the pike. Several men and horses were killed and wounded in the rapid flight down the half mile lane, Generals, Colonels and other staff officers not standing much "on the order of their going," and it would have seemed superlatively ludicrous but for the perils of the moment. In our flight I rode along near General Breckenridge, who was one of the handsomest men I ever saw. He was mounted on a splendid Kentucky thoroughbred and never lost his equipoise of manner or bearing, although his long linen duster, flowing in the wind, resembled a flying kite.

General Breckinridge said to me: "Major, look out for yourself and tell General Wharton to bring up his division and post it behind that hill," pointing to a gently rolling hill

in our front, "and hurl those fellows back over there," pointing to a brigade of Sheridan's cavalry, led by Custer, that neck and neck were advancing through the fields north of us, only a few hundred yards off. Colonels Smith, Love and others, however, were on the alert and at the proper moment rose to their feet and delivered a well directed and destructive fire and sent them whirling back through the field, leaving numbers of horses and men behind them.

On 3 September Sheridan's cavalry ran over ours on the pike in the forenoon, to be themselves hurled back soon thereafter. On 4 September at Berryville we felt the enemy and finding them well posted, after driving them awhile, we retired.

On 5 September, we fell back to Bunker Hill and the enemy following rather closely, our gallant Rodes whirled upon and scattered them. Private E. C Conner, of Company F, Swain county, a bright and brave lad of 17 years, was killed. He was carried back a half mile and buried in an open grave, all within a half an hour and during our retreat.

WINCHESTER 19 SEPTEMBER, 1864.

On 10 September the Sixty-ninth on the Opequon skirmished with the enemy and drove them across the river. During this period there was much rain and disagreeable weather. None of our brigade having tents, officers or men, many were made sick. We were compelled to camp often upon the battle ground of the previous days, and where corpses of horses and men were often exposed and unburied, making horrid the atmosphere and water. About this time fully one-third of our army was detached from us to go to Lee's Army and Vaughn's Tennessee Cavalry also leaving, we were entirely too weak to cope with our foxy adversary So on 19 September Sheridan came at us with fully 30,000 men, all along the line from Berryville to Winchester. We repulsed every assault, but from the force of numbers we gradually fell back upon the hills around Winchester. The enemy had three full corps of infantry, Sixth or Eighth, Thirteenth and Nineteenth. In the afternoon on our left wing, where the

Sixty-ninth had been holding a large force in check, while most of our division had been sent to repel the final assault upon our centre, we were again assaulted in great force and finally surrounded by Custer's and Averill's Cavalry and driven back, losing, however, no wagons and only two cannon. Our men fought like heroes, deploying and fighting as in squad drill and holding the enemy in check till Early could bring back his infantry line; but for this dare-devil spirit shown by our men, and their utter refusal to surrender, great damage would have resulted. We lost numbers of our best men, killed, wounded and captured, 75 in all, in our regiment. Lieutenant-Colonel McKamy, Captains Singleton and Young, and Lieutenants Jones, George and others captured.

In killed we lost numerous good men. Lieutenants Welch, Company F; Jones, Company D, and George, Company K. General Ramseur was also killed. Our army was much dispirited by this defeat, especially the Sixty-ninth, as our loss was greater than that of any other regiment. This was owing to our position on the extreme left where our little brigade of a few hundred had to repel the assault of 7,000 cavalry. We made a hasty retreat up the Valley for two days, followed by the enemy, who took most of our wagons. They attempted to run over us again on the 21st and the 22d, but with the loss of only our sick and wounded, we beat them back.

Sheridan sent wonderfully boastful dispatches back to Secretary Stanton, claiming the capture of Early's entire army. A few days later Stanton asked: "Where are your 5,000 prisoners?" Answer: "One thousand two hundred only, and mostly wounded; my army too exhausted to follow." See *Official Records of Union and Confederate Armies,* Vol. —, page —.

A letter written by Colonel Love from Strasburg, 15 October, 1864, says of this battle: "We have 600 wounded at Winchester, the enemy has 6,000." Our army fell back to, or near Staunton, and after resting there for several days, again turned down the Valley. At this time Major Stringfield was ordered to go to Western North Carolina and take command of that portion of the Legion there and in East

Tennessee. This he did through a circuitous route through the mountains of Virginia and North Carolina, arriving at Asheville about 1 November, 1864.

CEDAR CREEK 19 OCTOBER, 1864.

After turning down the Valley towards Winchester, the Sixty-ninth now reduced to only 150 men, was in all the movements of Early's army, including the ill-fated battle of Cedar Creek, 19 October, where its gallant men again bore testimony of their faith in, and devotion to, the South. In that battle our position was on our left—the enemy's right—and at early dawn we were ordered to carry the enemy's works, and before they knew of our flank movement that was then up and in motion to drive them from behind all their works. This assault was at first unsuccessful and we left a number of our men, killed and wounded, between the lines. Soon, however, the attack was renewed. The flank movement was a success. Our troops bearing down upon the enemy like a Western tornado, carried everything before them. This was followed up for several miles down the valley towards Middleton in the early forenoon, thus gaining one of the completest victories of the war. Our army took sixteen or eighteen hundred prisoners, five or six hundred wagons and thirty-six cannon, with lots of small arms and supplies.

The prisoners were safely taken out, but all the other spoils were recaptured with an equal amount from us. All together we only had ten or twelve thousand men, the enemy thirty thousand. It was the same old story—somebody blundered badly and the battle was worse than vain for us. The few thousand that first drove the enemy followed them for miles, but their rear was not properly protected. Some troops stacked their guns and had a regular picnic for hours. Sheridan coming up with his "long range glasses," soon saw the situation. He did what 500 officers of his army could have done, simply ordered a charge upon those "Confederate picnickers" and gained a victory out of the defeat of the forenoon.

The Sixty-ninth got none of the spoils; received only hard licks and lost some of its best men. After driving the enemy all morning, we repelled their assaults all evening, and away

up into the night, protecting our wagons and guns, as best we could.

A little sober second thought would have *spoiled a lot of war monuments, mounted them differently and faced them the other way.* But such is life and war. Early generally managed his retreats well and did this after the first afternoon.

RETURN TO NORTH CAROLINA.

This was the last trip of the Sixty-ninth up the Valley. Upon reaching Staunton the long delayed order to go to Western North Carolina was received. From seven hundred reduced to about 100, was a terrible tale to tell, a heroic record. Here the war practically ended with these noble fellows, and while the very last to actually surrender in North Carolina (at Waynesville, 10 May, 1865) they came on to their own loved mountain homes and turned up again later on. As mentioned heretofore the writer of this arrived at Asheville about 1 November, 1864, and took command of this part of the regiment, now largely increased in numbers and extending from the French Broad river in the east to Notlay, beyond Murphy, in the west.

The department was under the command of General Jas. G. Martin, with Colonel John B. Palmer in the field. I can only detail operations that connected my men with the commanding general. There had been some friction between the head officials of the various regiments on duty in these mountains. I took no part in any of it. I simply tried to discharge my duty, both to those above me and to those under me. That part of the regiment with Colonel J. B. Palmer that operated in East Tennessee between Hot Springs, N. C., and Morristown, New Market, Newport and Bull's Gap, etc., and along the foot of Smoky Mountains by Sevierville, Marysville, etc., is reported to have done faithful service under Lieutenant-Colonel B. G. McDowell, of the Sixty-second, who had refused to surrender at Cumberland Gap and was a gallant officer.

The enemy in the meanwhile were not idle, but were not having the picnic that they expected anywhere. Raids were

made up all the rivers towards and into the North Carolina mountains. Several parties of this kind nearly reached Asheville. Two reached Waynesville, one came to Bryson City and still others were made up the Tennessee river, Hiawassee and Valley rivers to Murphy, but no permanent lodgment was made or held by them.

KIRK.

Colonel J R. Love after recruiting up a week or so arrived at Asheville and made a trip into Yancey county, heading off the notorious Kirk. About the same time the writer went with 300 men up into Greene and Washington counties, Tennessee, heading off Kirk also, below the "Red Banks of Chuckey," nearly opposite, and about ten miles south of Jonesboro, Tenn., about where the town of Unicoi is now located. This was about 1 January, 1865, and a snow fall of eighteen inches on the mountains and near the same in the Valley, made locomotion quite difficult. It also made the pursuit of war difficult and hazardous. This it will be remembered, was the enemy's country indeed. We were greeted with no cheers from the brave or smiles from the fair. Meeting with neither disaster or success. I felt it my duty to retrace my snow-trodden pathway to Paint Rock and thence soon on to Waynesville, Webster, Quallatown, near Cherokee, in Swain county, on down Tuckaseegee, passing the present site of Bryson City at Bear's Ford, thence to the Tennessee river at the mouth of Tuckaseegee and mouth of Nantahala, up the same crossing the Cowee Mountains and finally the Nantahala Mountains at Red Marble Gap and down the Valley river to Murphy I left behind me all the troops under Colonel Love, who went into winter quarters at Locust Old Field (Canton, N C) This was my task the balance of the war, a lonely, perilous and desolate one, often travelling twenty, thirty to fifty miles absolutely alone. This was then almost a pathless wilderness. Now the pathway of the Western North Carolina Railroad, it was then a wild section, sparsely settled, especially along the route named.

INDIANS FAITHFUL.

Fortunately for our country, the Cherokee Indians inhab-

ited the wildest section and were loyal to us to the last. These big mountains extended from the great Smoky range and the Tennessee line back to the South Carolina and Georgia line on the Blue Ridge. The Nantahala, Cowee, Balsam and Newfound or Pisgah ranges connected these two great ranges, and cut the water courses asunder. This route along the railroad, beautiful and grand now to behold from car windows and rear platforms where "distance indeed lends enchantment to the view" in the hours of peace, was then my rough "field of operations" by day and night.

In January, 1865, while I was in Cherokee county, several hundred Indiana cavalry came up the Tennessee river and captured a small party of my men at the mouth of Deep creek, now Bryson City. This was a surprise but was of little value to them, costing them much more than gained. Ghormley and Everett's Cavalry, of the Eightieth North Carolina (Walker's) Regiment, followed and harrassed them greatly. Clay, Cherokee and Graham counties were protected by that regiment mostly Those counties were much infested by the Union element, some very good men among them. There were some very indiscreet and very unwise men and soldiers on our side in this section. Much bad feeling existed. This was a sort of half-way ground between Tennessee and South Carolina and Georgia. Negroes, horses and other property were stolen in Tennessee, carried to Georgia and South Carolina and sold. My soldiers from the Valley of Virginia did not like this and I had plenty of help to put it down. I gave protection to such as deserved it and ordered the others to leave the State. Several bands of "scouts" caused much of this trouble. I ordered these to their commands, took horses, cattle and other property from them, several times at muzzles of their pistols.

SOCO GAP.

Early in March, 1865, Colonel G. W Kirk invaded Haywood county via Cataloochee. He had about 400 cavalry and 200 infantry It had been reported in Tennessee that Federal troops would be welcomed in North Carolina. They were, but "with bloody hands to hospitable graves." Several

good citizens, however, were killed and numerous horses stolen. Colonel Love met and fought them in Haywood county and Lieutenant Conley fought and drove them across the Balsam Mountains at Soco Gap.

On the morning of 6 March, 1865 the troops located in Jackson county and Swain, met and fought them on Soco creek, thence driving them across Smoky Mountains towards Sevierville, Tenn., the writer travelling all of two nights and one day to get there. This fight, insignificant within itself, was an era with the Indians and was only noticeable from its locality. It was fought upon a historic spot. At or over an old town house there the celebrated creek chief, "Tecumseh," held a council of war with the old Cherokee Chief Yonah-guskee, about the year 1812, when Tecumseh tried in vain to get the Cherokee to join in this great Indian war, but this "Old Father of the Cherokees" flatly refused. And now on the same spot both white and Indian descendants of the noble sires that fought side by side under Jackson, bravely fought the invaders of their soil, and but for the want of ammunition would have badly worsted, if not destroyed Kirk's entire force. It is but fair to say that some of Kirk's men and officers refused to obey many of his beastly orders. This raid had a good effect upon the people, drawing them more closely together and intensified Southern sentiment. The Indians themselves were always friendly to the whites and loyal to their neighbors, which fact had a potent influence ever after in keeping out army raids. Soon after this the enemy everywhere became more active and aggressive. The end was now rapidly approaching, as slow as our people were to believe it.

On 10 March, 1865, General J G. Martin reported 1,745 present for duty, of which the fragments of the Sixty-second, Sixty-fourth and Sixty-ninth North Carolina reported 488.

MILL CREEK, 17 APRIL, 1865.

Colonel Bartlett, of New York, came up the French Broad river to near Asheville, surprising and almost capturing that place. But for the prompt and vigorous steps taken by Colonel G. Westly Clayton, of the Sixty-second North Carolina,

the place would have been taken. This was shortly prior to its final capture. Colonel J. R. Love, of the Sixty-ninth, was ordered to hold the gap at Swannanoa tunnel against the enemy approaching from Salisbury. He met them and drove them back to Mill Creek, McDowell county 17 April, 1865.

About this time rumors of the surrender of General Lee were current, although the people discredited them. Colonel Love returned with his forces to Asheville and there with General Martin went on to Waynesville and Balsam Gap. About 25 April, General Martin sent written directions to the writer to go with a flag of truce to Knoxville, Tenn., to General Stoneman regarding terms of the surrender of this Department. On this very day a soldier of the Ninth North Carolina (First Cavalry) came to my headquarters at Franklin, Macon county, and said that General Lee had surrendered. I put him in jail till that evening or the next morning, when another soldier came in with a proper parole, showing sure enough that Lee had surrendered. The first soldier was, of course, released. The flag of truce went directly on to Knoxville, Tenn., one hundred miles through the mountains, but did not return. The bearers were all thrust into jail for refusing to take the oath after having been grossly insulted upon the streets, and our flag trampled under foot. Captain W B. Reese, Captains Everett, M. H. Love, Thomas Butler, John Henderson and others, twenty-three in all, were in the party

THE LAST FIGHT IN NORTH CAROLINA, 9 MAY 1865.

The day before out a few miles south of Maryville, we were all halted and inspected by a party of eighty-four Federals After quite a parley I was ordered to surrender three of my men, Captains Love, Everett and Henderson, which, of course, I refused to do, whereupon we were severely threatened, but finally allowed to pass on. General Martin hearing nothing from us at Franklin, went towards Waynesville with Major Gordon, of his staff, and while spending the night at John B. Love's, near Webster, Colonel Love, his son, came in from the front and told of his fight with Federals that day,

9 May, above and around Waynesville, and that he and Colonel Thomas had demanded the surrender of Bartlett's forces, and that next day, 10 May, was fixed for a further consultation. *This was the last gun fired during the war in this State.*

SURRENDER AT WAYNESVILLE, 10 MAY, 1865.

During one of these parleys Colonel Thomas, who was usually very cool and discreet, became quite boisterous, especially when told that Bartlett's men were traversing the entire county and taking every horse and fat cow or ox. He demanded the surrender of Bartlett's forces and went into town with twenty or twenty-five of his biggest and best warriors all *painted and feathered off in good old style.* Colonel Love arrived about this time with his 250 men. Colonel Thomas and Lieutenant Conley had three hundred more whites and 200 more Indians, all the Indians making the welkin ring with their war whoop. Terms of surrender were suggested and soon agreed to. All the officers and men were paroled and all allowed to retain their arms, ammunition, etc. This concession was agreed to on account of the disturbed condition of the country. Kirk was told by Bartlett that *he must control his men* and by Love and Thomas that *if he did not that they would.*

Most of the officers and men of the old Legion have gone to their long home. Those still living are numbered with the best citizens of the land, loyal to their State, section and nation and not ashamed of their Confederate record, while there is no bitterness to our late foes.

The writer as the last field officer of the regiment, while feeling it his duty to write, feels his entire inability to do justice to all, especially to the *private soldiers,* whose names even cannot be given here, but nobly generous North Carolina has preserved these in four volumes of Moore's Roster. For ours, see Vol. 4, page 152, etc.

W W STRINGFIELD.

WAYNESVILLE, N C.,
10 May, 1901.